Class 37 Accession

q974.4M382:3 34929

NOT TO BE TAKEN FROM THE LIBRARY

Form 37 3M 12.1.08

COLLECTIONS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Committee of Publication for the Present Volume.

ROBERT C. WINTHROP.
CHARLES DEANE.
CHANDLER ROBBINS.

COLLECTIONS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

VOL. VII. — FOURTH SERIES.

Published at the Charge of the Appleton Fund.

BOSTON:
PRINTED FOR THE SOCIETY.
1865.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1865, by

THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massachusetts.

BOSTON:

PRINTED BY JOHN WILSON AND SON,

15, WATER STREET.

+q974.4 M382:3
37
34929

CONTENTS.

	Page
Officers of the Society, elected April 14, 1864	vii
Resident Members	viii
Honorary and Corresponding Members	x
Editorial Preface	xiii

Letters of John Wilson	1
,, ,, R. Stansby	6
,, ,, Francis Kirby	13
,, ,, Nathaniel Ward	23
,, ,, Thomas Mayhew	30
,, ,, William Goodwin	44
,, ,, Lion Gardiner	52
,, ,, Jonathan Brewster	66
,, ,, Stephen Bachiler	88
,, ,, Thomas Dudley	110
,, ,, Thomas Reade	113
,, ,, Samuel Symonds	118
,, ,, Herbert Pelham	138
,, ,, John Blackleach	146
,, ,, John Endecott	156
,, ,, Sir Matthew Boynton	162
,, ,, John Underhill	170
,, ,, William Hooke (York)	195
,, ,, Hugh Peter	199
,, ,, Ezekiel Rogers	205
,, ,, John Tinker	218
,, ,, Richard Saltonstall	251
,, ,, Thomas Shepard	257
,, ,, Giles Firmin	273

Letters of William Coddington 278
,, ,, Nehemiah Bourne 297
,, ,, Samuel Maverick 307
,, ,, Daniel Patrick 321
,, ,, Sir Ferdinando Gorges 329
,, ,, Thomas Gorges 333
,, ,, Richard Vines 337
,, ,, Thomas Jenner 355
,, ,, George Cleeve 363
,, ,, Edward Godfrey 377
,, ,, Edward Cooke 381
,, ,, Edward Parks 385
,, ,, Lawrence Wright 390
,, ,, John Higginson 394
,, ,, William Paine 401
,, ,, John Mason 411
,, ,, Thomas Peters 428
,, ,, Thomas Harrison 434
,, ,, James Parker 441
,, ,, John Norton 448
,, ,, John Haynes 452
,, ,, Theophilus Eaton 468
,, ,, Thomas James 482
,, ,, John Davenport 487
,, ,, John Hull 533
,, ,, William Leete 538
,, ,, William Hooke (London) 587
,, ,, Richard Bellingham 596
,, ,, Samuel Gorton 601
Letter of Brampton Gurdon 632
Fac-Similes of Signatures and Seals 635

Index 637

OFFICERS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

ELECTED APRIL 14, 1864.

President.

HON. ROBERT C. WINTHROP, LL.D. . . . . BOSTON.

Vice-Presidents.

JARED SPARKS, LL.D. . . . . CAMBRIDGE.
COL. THOMAS ASPINWALL, A.M. . . . . BOSTON.

Recording Secretary.

CHARLES DEANE, A.M. . . . . CAMBRIDGE.

Corresponding Secretary.

REV. CHANDLER ROBBINS, D.D. . . . . BOSTON.

Treasurer.

HON. RICHARD FROTHINGHAM, A.M. . . . . CHARLESTOWN.

Librarian.

THOMAS C. AMORY, JUN., A.M. . . . . BOSTON.

Cabinet-Keeper.

SAMUEL A. GREEN, M.D. . . . . BOSTON.

Standing Committee.

WILLIAM G. BROOKS, ESQ. . . . . BOSTON.
REV. GEORGE E. ELLIS, D.D. . . . . CHARLESTOWN.
HON. HORACE GRAY, JUN., A.M. . . . . BOSTON.
CHARLES E. NORTON, A.M. . . . . CAMBRIDGE.
LEVERETT SALTONSTALL, A.M. . . . . NEWTON.

RESIDENT MEMBERS,

AT THE DATE OF THE PUBLICATION OF THIS VOLUME, IN THE ORDER OF THEIR ELECTION.

Hon. James Savage, LL.D.
Hon. Edward Everett, LL.D.
Rev. William Jenks, D.D.
Jared Sparks, LL.D.
Joseph E. Worcester, LL.D.
Joseph Willard, A.M.
Rev. Joseph B. Felt, LL.D.
George Ticknor, LL.D.
Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, LL.D.
Hon. Charles Francis Adams, LL.D.
Rev. George E. Ellis, D.D.
Hon. John C. Gray, LL.D.
Rev. Nathl. L. Frothingham, D.D.
Hon. George S. Hillard, LL.D.
Hon. William Minot, A.M.
Hon. Peleg W. Chandler, A.M.
Rev. George W. Blagden, D.D.
Rev. Lucius R. Paige, D.D.
Hon. Solomon Lincoln, A.M.
Rev. Chandler Robbins, D.D.
Francis Bowen, A.M.
John Langdon Sibley, A.M.
Hon. Richard Frothingham, A.M.
Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, M.D.
Henry Wheatland, M.D.
Hon. David Sears, A.M.
Thomas H. Webb, M.D.
Charles Deane, A.M.
George Livermore, A.M.
Francis Parkman, A.B.
Ellis Ames, A.M.
Hon. John H. Clifford, LL.D.
William Brigham, A.B.
Hon. Emory Washburn, LL.D.
Rev. Samuel K. Lothrop, D.D.
Rev. William Newell, D.D.
Hon. Lorenzo Sabine, A.M.
Col. Thomas Aspinwall, A.M.
Rev. John S. Barry, A.M.
John A. Lowell, LL.D.
Lucius M. Sargent, A.M.
J. Lothrop Motley, LL.D.
George R. Russell, LL.D.
Hon. Charles H. Warren, A.M.
Rev. James Walker, D.D.
Rev. Edmund H. Sears, A.B.
Oliver Wendell Holmes, M.D.
Henry W. Longfellow, LL.D.
Rev. Frederic H. Hedge, D.D.
Jacob Bigelow, M.D.
Hon. George T. Davis, A.B.
Hon. Stephen Salisbury, A.M.
Henry Austin Whitney, A.M.
Rev. William S. Bartlet, A.M.
Josiah G. Holland, M.D.
Rev. Charles Brooks, A.M.
Leverett Saltonstall, A.M.
Rev. Alonzo H. Quint, A.M.

Samuel F. Haven, A.M.
Hon. Richard H. Dana, jun., A.M.
Hon. Levi Lincoln, LL.D.
Joseph Palmer, M.D.
Hon. George Tyler Bigelow, LL.D.
Hon. Caleb Cushing, LL.D.
Henry W. Torrey, A.M.
Hon. Joel Parker, LL.D.
Williams Latham, A.B.
Hon. Charles Hudson, A.M.
Rev. Robert C. Waterston, A.M.
Hon. Theophilus Parsons, LL.D.
Thomas C. Amory, jun., A.M.
Hon. Benjamin F. Thomas, LL.D.
Samuel A. Green, M.D.
Hon. James M. Robbins.
Charles Eliot Norton, A.M.
Hon. John J. Babson.
Robert Bennett Forbes, Esq.
Rev. Edward E. Hale, A.M.
Rev. Andrew P. Peabody, D.D.

Hon. Theron Metcalf, LL.D.
William G. Brooks, Esq.
Hon. Horace Gray, jun., A.M.
Hon. Charles G. Loring, LL.D.
Charles Folsom, A.M.
Amos A. Lawrence, A.M.
Rev. Edwards A. Park, D.D.
Charles Sprague, A.M.
Rev. William A. Stearns, D.D.
Hon. Francis E. Parker, A.B.
William H. Whitmore, Esq.
George B. Emerson, LL.D.
James R. Lowell, A.M.
Rev. Nicholas Hoppin, D.D.
Nathaniel Thayer, Esq.
John G. Whittier, A.M.
Erastus B. Bigelow, A.M.
William C. Endicott, A.B.
Hon. Eben. Rockwood Hoar, LL.D.
Hon. Seth Ames, A. B.

HONORARY AND CORRESPONDING MEMBERS,

ELECTED UNDER THE ORIGINAL ACT OF INCORPORATION, 1794, IN THE ORDER OF THEIR ELECTION.

Rev. Eliphalet Nott, D.D.
Hon. Gulian C. Verplanck, LL.D.
Don Manuel Moreno, M.D.
Rev. John Hutchinson.
Thomas C. Haliburton, D.C.L.
Hon. Lewis Cass, LL.D.
Theodore Dwight, A.M.
M. César Moreau.
Erastus Smith, Esq.
Joshua Francis Fisher, A.M.
T. A. Moerenhout, Esq.
Usher Parsons, M.D.
Hon. George Folsom, A.M.
Rev. Luther Halsey, D.D.
Rev. Francis Lister Hawks, D.D.
Rev. Leonard Bacon, D.D.
M. Henri Ternaux-Compans.
George Catlin, Esq.
John Winthrop, Esq.
Dom Joaquim José da Costa de Macedo.
Israel K. Tefft, Esq.
Hon. David L. Swain, LL.D.
Hon. James M. Wayne, LL.D.
M. Hall McAllister, Esq.
Rt. Rev. William B. Stevens, D.D.
Henry Black, LL.D., C.B.
Rev. Charles Burroughs, D.D.
Richard Almack, F.S.A.
Sir Archibald Alison, Bart., D.C.L.
Lieut.-Col. James D. Graham.
Robert Lemon, F.S.A.
John Romeyne Brodhead, A.M.
Major E. B. Jarvis.
E. George Squier, Esq.
Miss Frances Manwaring Caulkins.
Thomas Donaldson, Esq.
Hon. George Bancroft, LL.D.
J. Hammond Trumbull, Esq.
Robert Bigsby, LL.D.
James Ricker, jun., Esq.
Henry Stevens, Esq.
Cyrus Eaton, A.M.
Hon. William Willis, A.M.
Frederick Griffin, Esq.
John Carter Brown, A.M.
Hon. Elijah Hayward.
Rev. William S. Southgate.

Hon. Samuel G. Arnold, A.M.
Hon. Charles S. Daveis, LL.D.
John Gilmary Shea, Esq.
James Lenox, Esq.
Rt. Rev. the Bishop of Oxford, D.D.
Winthrop Sargent, A.M.
Earl Stanhope, D.C.L.

Hon. William C. Rives, LL.D.
Hon. Peter Force.
Hon. John R. Bartlett, A.M.
Samuel Eliot, A.M.
G. P. Faribault, Esq.
William Paver, Esq.

HONORARY AND CORRESPONDING MEMBERS,

ELECTED SINCE THE PASSAGE OF THE ACT OF 1857.

Honorary.

François Pierre Guillaume Guizot, LL.D.
Hon. Edward Coles.
Baron Charles Dupin.
M. François A. A. Mignet.
Count Adolphe de Circourt.
Hon. Horace Binney, LL.D.
The Very Rev. Henry Hart Milman, D.D.
William C. Bryant, LL.D.
Lieutenant-General Winfield Scott, LL.D.
Count Agénor de Gasparin.
Hon. Millard Fillmore, LL.D.
George Grote, D.C.L.
M. Edouard René Léfèbre Laboulaye.
Major-General John A. Dix.

Corresponding.

Rev. William B. Sprague, D.D.
Rev. Samuel Osgood, D.D.
William Durrant Cooper, F.S.A.
E. B. O'Callaghan, M.D.
Buckingham Smith, Esq.
Benjamin F. French, Esq.
Francis Lieber, LL.D.
William H. Trescot, Esq.
Richard Hildreth, A.B.
Dr. J. G. Kohl.
Hon. Albert G. Greene.
Hon. John P. Kennedy, LL.D.
Hon. George P. Marsh, LL.D.
Benjamin R. Winthrop, Esq.
J. Carson Brevoort, Esq.
The Ven. Lord Arthur Hervey.
Horatio Gates Somerby, Esq.
George H. Moore, Esq.
Hon. William R. Staples, A.M.
Hon. Hugh Blair Grigsby, LL.D.
W. Noël Sainsbury, Esq.
S. Austin Allibone, LL.D.
William Winthrop, Esq.
Henry T. Parker, A.M.
Rev. Leonard Woods, D.D.
Benson J. Lossing, Esq.
Lyman C. Draper, Esq.
Rt. Rev. George Burgess, D.D.
George Washington Greene, A.M.
Rev. William G. Eliot, D.D.
Henry B. Dawson, Esq.
John Foster Kirk, Esq.
Prof. Goldwin Smith, LL.D.

MEMBERS DECEASED.

The following names of Resident, Honorary and Corresponding Members have been stricken from our Rolls since the publication of the last volume of Collections : —

Resident.

Hon. Josiah Quincy, LL.D.
Rev. Convers Francis, D.D.
Rev. Alvan Lamson, D.D.
Frederick Tudor, Esq.
Hon. William Sturgis.
George Sumner, Esq.

Honorary and Corresponding.

Benjamin Silliman, LL.D.
Carl Christian Rafn.
Rev. Benjamin Tappan, D.D.
John Disney, Esq.*
George Atkinson Ward, Esq.
Thomas C. Grattan, Esq.
Rev. Joseph Romilly, A.M.
Lord Lyndhurst, D.C.L.
Count Jules de Menou.*
Hon. John J. Crittenden, LL.D.
Hon. Robt. Hallowell Gardner, A.M.
Hon. Luther Bradish, LL.D.

* The death of these members took place before the publication of the last volume of Collections; but the fact of their decease has only recently come to the knowledge of the Society.

PREFACE.

The volume of Collections immediately preceding the present one was laid before the Society at its stated monthly meeting, in March, 1863. Like this volume, it consisted entirely of "Winthrop Papers," chiefly from the valuable collection of original manuscripts in the possession of the President of the Society. At that meeting, also, it was voted that the same Committee "be requested to continue their labors in preparing another volume, in continuation, of the 'Winthrop Papers,' to be published at such time as in their judgment may be expedient." The present volume has been prepared in accordance with that vote; and it is believed that the selection which it embraces will be found to be not less valuable and interesting to the student of early New-England history than that in the former volume has proved to be.

These two volumes by no means exhaust the abundant store from which they have been drawn; and they may yet be followed by further selections from it, — sufficient material having been already selected to fill another volume.

The plan of introducing *fac-similes* of the signatures and seals of the writers, which formed an interesting fea-

ture in the last volume, is continued in this. They have all been executed from drawings made by the Assistant Librarian, Dr. Appleton, who also made the Indexes to both volumes. Many of the letters in the present volume were transcribed by him from the originals; and the Committee would also acknowledge his valuable assistance, as well in the preparation of the notes as in securing the accuracy of the text.

The letters of the Rev. Mr. Blinman, referred to in a note on page 83, will appear in a future volume.

Boston, 9 January, 1865.

THE WINTHROP PAPERS,

(CONTINUED).

THE WINTHROP PAPERS.

LETTERS OF JOHN WILSON.*

JOHN WILSON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull his very good ffrinde John Winthorpe Esquire, at Mr. Dŏwning's house in Peterborough Court, these dd.

Good Sir, — My very good respect to you.

The time is nowe come, wherin ther will be and is (as I suppose) great need of your counsell and helpe about Mr. Howes sones wardship, that it may be so disposed of and settled, as may be for the best good of the ward and of the estate, that no hungry catchpole may gett in, to fish there at his pleasure. We are somewhat afrayde still of Hedge, (lest some ffrind may helpe him, for ther owne turne sake and advantage,) but ther will be oath taken sufficient against his prodigall wastfullnes, and extreame

* Rev. John Wilson, pastor of the First Church in Boston, was born at Windsor, Eng., in 1588. He was educated at Eton and at Cambridge. After serving as chaplain in several houses, he was inducted at Sudbury in Suffolk; where he continued ten or twelve years. Becoming disgusted with the "worship of forms and vestments," he united with the company under Winthrop for New England, and came with the fleet in 1630. He went back to England, but returned to Boston with his wife in 1632. He made another voyage "home" in 1634, returning in the autumn of 1635. He was one of the founders of the Boston Church, of which John Cotton, in 1633, became teacher, while he for many years held the office of pastor. He died 7th August, 1667. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.*; *Winthrop's Hist. of N. E.*, i. 169; *Emerson's Hist. of the First Church*, pp. 18–20. — Eds.

pouertie. William Hasell (Mr. Bayley* nowe of Sudbury) hath found the office, and we make account that he is or shall be the Gu[ardi]an, who (if any) is fitt, yea most fitt for the purpose, for the great confidence Mr. Howe had in him for his approued conscience, fidelity, and loue to the ward, singular wisedome and discretion for the managing of his affaires. I beseech you therfore to assist him (and to procure them, where ther shall be need of) your good brother Mr. Downinges assistance, that they may obtayne thinges at a reasonable rate, (they beinge dulie countable for any paynes, aduise, or frindship afforded to them). I need not stirre you vp in so good a busines. You knowe who is the Father of the fatherles, and Rewarder of ther frindes. Howe glad would we be in the like case, that ours should meete with good ffrendes. Ffor my owne part (as Mr. Howe was my very well beloued and esteemed good frind, so) should I be very glad to see a good issue of the matter, and hartily thankefull to the furtherers therof. But alas! what times are these! No man knowes what is his owne, or whither that he hath be not kept for the enemies of God and of our peace.

The good Lord turne our hartes to him, and prepare vs to meete him, in true repentance, and heare the sighes and teares of his people, (so many thousandes) for Christ's sake. What hope is left vs, but his mercie? The Lord be with you.

Your verie louinge ffrind at command,

JOHN WILSON.

FEBR. 3, 1628, SUDBURIE.

* Probably Master Bailiff. — EDS.

JOHN WILSON TO THOMAS WELD AND JOHN ELIOT.

To my reuerend loueing brethren Mr. Tho: Weld & Mr. Jo: Eliott with the rest of the Elders at Roxbury.

Brother Weld & Eliot, — My loue in the Lord.

Vpon G. Comptons* speach with your selues and the Deputy Gouernor, I went to the Gouernor, to desire his favour to that end that he might be licensed to come with his people into these parts, wherby he might himselfe be the more fully satisfied, in case any scruple remayne in the matters betweene him and the church, which doth make your selues vnsatisfied towardes him. Whervnto the Gouernor is very willinge (and thinkes it would be good for the man), only he conceaues it not fitt to receaue such a ones testimony (as touching your consent or encoragement herin) it being his owne case, vnles he had brought hither the handes of the Elders (I meane your selues &c. of Roxbury) as so wishinge and aduising. I tell him I doubt not but yf I had made mention therof it had bene done, nor doubt I but that you will now do so much, that the Gouernor & the Deputie may be the more encoraged to make him the grant.

Your very louing brother, John Wilson.

[This letter bears the following indorsement, in the handwriting of Eliot.]

If in synceryty & vprightnesse he intendeth to listen to, & imbrace the truth of Jesus Christ, we think it will

---

* The writer probably refers to *Goodman* John Compton, of Roxbury, "laborer," who was one of those ordered to be disarmed in 1637. He was admitted to the Boston Church 25 Sept. 1642, upon letters of dismission from Roxbury, "and upon his open declaring of his condicion & profession of his faith in the publique assembly." — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 247, 248; *Boston-Church Records.* — Eds.

much tend to his comfort & ours to remove hither. But if he have a secret reservation in his breast to hould to Mr. Wheelerights opinions, more or lesse, which we much feare, we think otherwise of it:

THO: WELDE.
JOHN ELIOT.
JOHN MILLER.
ISACK HEATH.

JOHN WILSON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his euer honoured deare ffreind, John Winthorp, Esq. at his house in the plantation of the English at or neere Pekote river, these præsent. From John Wilson.

HONOURED SIR, — Having some hint that Mr. William Snelling * (late of Nubery) now soiourning in Boston, & practising in our parts, with very good reputation, is desired by some judicious ones in your parts, that desire to promote the common good there, I could do no lesse then out of my owne good experience of him in that kind, & my loue to that end of the countrey, then to incourage the motion thus ffarre, that I believe that he is an able & experient phisitian, & well studied or versed both in the theory & practise, and that may be very vsefull where their is need, both in præventing & curing of diseases of all sorts, the Lord vouchsafing to goe along with his blessing; & if his advise & help were added to your owne in cases of difficulty, it would be a singular priuiledge to the countrey. Perhaps you know as much or more of him (I know you can discern) much more then I. Only this, I thought good to certifie, that if you ayme at him, and at his residence in those parts for the common good, I think

* For notices of Snelling, see Coffin's "Hist. of Newbury," p. 55; and Savage's "Geneal. Dict.," iv. 137. — EDS.

it will be requisite & necessary for you to propound & præsent vnto him some incouragement, (besids his ordinary practise) for the help of the subsistence of him & his, where he is to become a new planter. They did allow him (while at Nubery) 20*li.* a yeare out of their common purse or treasury, besides I know not what other allottments, & hereabouts there hath ben some good incoragement offered him in another plantation (though new begining), if he would plant himself there. If the honoured Mr. Heines, your self, & other cheife ones in that Jurisdiction could so provide, among the people, as that when he should come, he might be putt in case to live (as wee say) like a man, whereby it might appeare that you did putt a price vpon him (so farr as your discretions shall see meete,) I doe think you might soone come to inioye the settlement of him with you; neyther doth he seeme to ayme at any great matter, but only a competent living, (now growing olde.) So with my humble respects & service (Sir,) to your selfe, the beloued Mris. Winthorp, & the honoured magistrates thereabouts, to whom you shall think fitt to communicate what I haue sayd, — & my loue vnfayned to your reverend pastor, & my deare brother Mr. Blindman, with the rest of the Sts. with you, praying the Lord to take delight in the blessing of you all & yours, I rest

Your most bounden euer in the Lord,

JOHN WILSON.

2 OF THE 12, 53.

I long to heare how the Lord hath blessed your indeavours for the good of the good Mris. Bishop (as he hath miraculously shewd himself in the cure of sweet Mris. Haines *).

* See 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. 359, 360, 361. — EDS.

LETTERS OF R. STANSBY.*

R. STANSBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull my very good friende Mr. Wintropp at his chamber in the Inner Temple in London.

Worshipfull Sir, — Your kinde letter I receiued, & I shall accept of your kinde offer, & not come vp except I were better horsed than I am. My commissioners are yovr selfe, & Mr. Richard Langeton of my parish, but yf you must name two more, then putt in Mr. Thomas Cole of Haveryll, Esq. & Isack Greene of Lavenham, gentleman. The principall man that I would except agayne is Mr. Briant Tuke, my coosens father in lawe, or yf any other Tuke be in, lett them be putt out, I woud willingly have not commissioners ordered vntell haruest be done. I desire my atturny to wryght me what is done, & who be the 4 commissioners. I pray pay hym all his fees, but gett a note vnder his hand what yt is. I shall carefully pay you at your returne, & yf my presence wyll do any good, I will come vp the next weke yf I may heare by you. Your loue makes me bold & therfore I hope that you will pardoune. So with thankes for your letter, & for muche

* The full Christian name of this writer cannot be readily ascertained. Mr. Stansby was minister of the parish of Little Waldingfield, Suffolk, Eng.; and probably succeeded Rev. Mr. Welsh, who died 18th July, 1605, in that place. He was certainly there in 1620, as appears by a memorandum of Adam Winthrop; and preached the funeral sermon at the interment of Rev. Henry Sands of Groton, in November, 1626. He was deprived of his living in July, 1636; and resided afterwards at Mendlesham, a town in the same county, as is noticed in his letters to Gov. Winthrop and John Wilson, published in this collection. See "Life and Letters of John Winthrop," pp. 207, 423, 437; and Robert Ryece's Will, in the "Appleton Memorial," p. 75. — Eds.

other kindnesse, wishing you a good tearme, I commytt you to the Lord, & rest, Jun. 17. 1628,

Your Worshypp welwiller, R. STANSBY.

R. STANSBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull my worthy good friende Mr. Wintropp Esq. at his chamber in the Inner Temple in London.

WORSHIPFULL SIR, — I hartily salute you in the Lord. Your loueing letter I received yester nyght, being sory for the uncomfortable newes of Rochell,* which some of our wise men woud not beleüe, supposing Rochell had layde up for a longer siedge &c. We shall have a new B. one sent me word for a treuth, D. Mourton B. of Couentrie & Leechfield. This morneing word was brought me that my adversary went yesterday to London, whyther to putt in a new bill, or to go on with this, I cannot learne. All that I can heare is to aske counsell. Good Sir, lett me entreate you to speake to my Atturnye, & to haue speciall care that yf the commission be returned, & a Rule given for publication, that he taketh some course to stay it vntell the next terme, when I may eyther fetch vp my witnesses to London, to examyne them ther, or else haue a new commission to be executed at Bury. I am not willing to come vp this dirtye weather, but rather then he should steale publication, I will; for the want of examining my other wytnesses may hazard my honest cause. I am thus ouer bold with you, but I hope your loue & paynes shall bynde me the more to you & yours. I desyre you also to discarge the fees to my Atturny. I hope to see you at your returne, & then to pay all. In the meane tyme

* After the failure of the Duke of Buckingham's expedition to the Isle of Rhé in 1627, Cardinal Richelieu laid siege to the city of Rochelle; and, after suffering great distress from war and famine for more than a year, the French Protestants surrendered the place, Nov. 1, 1628. — EDS.

my prayers shall be for you & yours to the great God, to whose protection I commyt you, & rest

Your worships well willer,

R. STANSBY.

NOUEMBER 18. 1628.

R. STANSBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull my much respected frende Mr. Winthrop at his house in Boaston, these be delivered in New England.

WORSHIPFULL, WORTHY SIR, — Your loueinge letter dated Nouemb. 10, 1635, I receiued, whereof I wrott you an answere & sent yt by the shipp wherein Mr. Roger* of Asington went, but we haue not hard of the safe arriuall of yt at New England. I know that you haue hard of the great losse at Dedham, by the death of that paynefull labourer Mr. Rogers.† One Mr. Comer, sonne of hym at St. Peters in Colchester succeedeth hym, etc. Your old freinds of the Society are all aliue, blessed be the Lord, although we are all out of worke.

Old Mr. Harison gave ouer, & desired the B. to giue him leave so to do, by reason of his age.

Mr. Penching, preaching att Stoake Clare, was desired by the parisheoners to sitt styll, leste they shoud haue byne in trouble for hym, being soare threatened, etc.

Mr. Morgan was inhibited preaching, & after that was taken with the num palsy, whereof he is not yet perfectely recouered, yett had agayne some liberty to preach for a whyle if he had ability of minde & body.

Mr. Lea of Groton is suspended for refusing to reade the King's toleration on the Sabboth, but I lately hard that ther was some hope of his liberty.

---

* Rev. Nathaniel Rogers. — EDS.

† Rev. John Rogers, of Dedham, died Oct. 8, 1636. — EDS.

Mr. Mott of Stoake & Nayland standeth suspended *ab officio et beneficio* for refusing the new Conformitie, as they call yt.

My selfe was deprived of my parsonage July 18, 1636, by our B., for refusing the old Conformity. Many in Suffolk lost ther places for feare, & many stand excomunicated, & many suspended, but none was depriued but my selfe. I desyre your prayers to know what is the Lord['s] will therein: as for other newes, I leave to the passengers to relate to your worship. This bearer, John Stansby,* is the nerest kinsman I haue, except one, being my eldest brothers second sonne. I hope that the Lord have wrought in hym a great change; outwardly yt seameth so, tyme (especially in New England) will tell us more. Oh, how ioyfull shall I be to hear yt to be in truth. Good Sir, if ther be cause, putt hym into some employment: he is both willing & able to work in husbandry, although he have byne lately a clothyer. I would desyre that he might have a convenient lott of ground, which he or his frends comeing after hym might in tyme build on. I would not haue hym any way to be chargabl to you or yours, for I heare & do believe that of your liberality to many, & so will not haue my kinsman to be burdensome to you, & he haue brought some provision with hym, & of a minde to worke for his liueing. My wife & I haue our health & haue a cherfull heart, I prayse God, & notwithstanding our loss. I do liue with my sonne in law at Mendlesham. We both do hartely salute you & your wife & whol family, in the Lord, & rest desiring your prayers

Your loueing freinde, in the Lord,

R. Stansby.

March 17, 1636.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Stansby."

* There is no record of any person of this name becoming a resident here. — Eds.

R. STANSBY TO JOHN WILSON.

To the Reuerent my very loveing & much respected freinde, Mr. Wilsone, pastour of the congregation at Booston, these deliver in New England.

Reuerent & welbeloved Brother in the Lord, — I wrott lately to you by my kinsman, who came with Mr. Andrews of Ipswich, but now haueing so fytt an opportunity by many who come with Mr. Cutting shipp,* & I will not lett yt slipp ouer, in token of my loue & desyre to heare of you, & the rather I am willing to putt penn to paper in regard of some thing[s] that haue lately fallen out amongst vs.

Mr. Morgan is now dead, & I hope at rest with the Lord. Our ministers who have yet ther liberty are in great danger of losing yt all over the lands. Of them I have lately hard much, & so much as I cannot but grieue for yt (yf yt be trve not without cause), especially these 3 particulars, —

1. Ther is great diuision of judgment in matter of religion amongst good ministers & people, which moued Mr. Hoker † to remoue; now we see that yt is Christ speeche, a kingdome diuided, &c.

2. That many of the ministers are much streighted with you, insomuch as although you want ministers (as some wright), yet some amongst you work with their hands, being not called to any place, as Mr. Burdett ‡ of Yarmouth, etc.

Others laye downe the ministry & become priuate members, as Mr. Bacheler, Mr. Jenner, & Mr. Nathan. Ward,

---

* On the return of Mr. Cutting's ship to England, he took with him a Pequot Indian, that had been captured, with three others, near Block Island, in July. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 232. — Eds.

† Rev. Thomas Hooker. — Eds.

‡ Rev. George Burdett. — Eds.

&c. That which grieue me most, your selfe much streighted, of whose faythfullnesse, gifts & diligence I & many others have had so much experience.

3. That you are so strict in admission of members to your church, that more then one halfe are out of your church in all your congregations, & that Mr. Hoker before he went away preached against yt (as one report who hard him) (& he saith) now although I knowe all must not be admytted, yet this may do much hurt, yf one come amongst you of another minde, & they should ioyne with hym.

Good Sir, I pray giue a true, playne, & longe answer, for I assûre you ther is now so much talke of yt, & such certeyne truth of yt, & I know many of worth, for outward estate & abilty, for wisdome & grace, are much danted from comeing. I wish you well, & much longe for your priuiledges. What the Lord have determined I know not. I desyre & wayte vpon Hym for His direction. My wife & I do hartily salute you & Mrs. Wilson & your familyes, & so for this tyme I commytt you to the Lord, & rest Your loueing true friend

R. Stansby.

Aprill 17, 1637.

Old Mr. Hall is yet liveing, but silenced. A letter from Mr. Cotton to hym would chere hym vp in his old dayes, but howsoever, I pray remember my respect to hym.

I, being putt from my parsonage, do not well know wher I shall liue: but I pray direct your letter to Mr. Gurdon of Assington.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Stansby to Mr. Willson."

R. STANSBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull my very good freinde Mr. Winthrop, at his house, be these delivered in New England.

APRILL 17, 1637.

WORSHIPFULL SIR, & LOUEING FREINDE, — Since I wrott by my kinsman I haue receiued your loueing letter dated Jan. 28, 1636, for which I hartily thanke you; since which I heare that Mr. Morgan is dead & at rest, & that your old minister, Mr. Lea, hath his liberty to preache, but vpon what conditions I know not. I am sory much for your diuisions, we heare great speche of them, & I ame sure that they dant many wise, faythfull christians, & men of ability from comeing, fearing lesse a kingdome diuided, & cannot stande. I heare many haue diverted ther thought. But what another yeare may bringe forth, the Lord knoweth. Things with vs are dayly much worser. I desyre your prayers for Old England. I haue wrott more at large to Mr. Wilson.* I desyre your worship to send this letter to my brother Hubbard with all speede, lesse his goods in Mr. Cutting's shipp should miscary: he will pay the messenger. My wife & I hartily salute you & Mrs. Winthrop, with your whol family, & so I rest

Your loueing frend, R. STANSBYE.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Stansbye."

---

* See the letter next preceding this. — EDS.

LETTERS OF FRANCIS KIRBY.*

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his very lovinge and much respected frend Mr. John Winthrop the yonger at the Mattachuset in New England, this dd. Per amicum quem Deus conseruat.

LONDON, this 22th of June, 1632.

LOVING & KIND FREND, — Salutacons &c: You shall receiue per this ship,† 2 fats marked as in the margin, which is goods portable between your selfe, my brother Downinge & my selfe. They containe 400 payre of shoes, 16 peeces clothe, with some other things, of which I haue written you at large per Mr. Peirce,‡ yet, least that letter should miscary, I thought it not amisse to write a word or 2 per this bearer, my contry man Nash, who is imployed in my cosen Moris Thomson§ his buisines. Thus with my harty praiers to the Almighty for you all, I rest

Yours at Comand FFRANC: KIRBY.

---

* Francis Kirby, a merchant of London, was largely engaged in forwarding supplies to the Colonies of Massachusetts and Connecticut, and in commercial transactions with the early settlers. He married a sister of Emanuel Downing. Several of his letters are published in the ninth volume of the Third Series of these Collections. — EDS.

† There is in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society the identical bill of lading which came, by Capt. Peirce, from Mr. Kirby, and dated the same day as this letter. It recites "two dry fats of goods" to be delivered "to John Winthrop the yonger, or to his assigns," &c. See Proceedings of Massachusetts Historical Society for April, 1855, p. 27. — EDS.

‡ The letter "per Mr. Peirce," of the same date, is published in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., ix. 246. — EDS.

§ In a letter of Kirby, of Dec. 1631, he speaks of this person as engaged in "the trade of beaver in the river of Canada." Winthrop, under date of Aug. 1639, says, "A fishing trade was begun at Cape Ann by one Maurice Thompson, a merchant of London." The General Court encouraged the business, and were desirous that Mr. Thompson should settle here; but it does not appear that he ever came over. — 3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, viii. 238; *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 307; *Babson's Hist. Gloucester*, pp. 49, 50. — EDS.

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his very lovinge and much respected frend Mr. John Wynthrop the yonger, this dd. at Boston in New England.

LONDON, this 18th of June, 1633.

MY LOVINGE & NO LESSE LOUED FREND, — I hartily salute you & your second selfe, desireinge you likewise to remember mee to your good father, mother, sisters & brothers, also to my nephew James Downeinge, & my neeces Mary & Su: who I hope ar safely ariued with you ere this time. Although I haue little else to write but salutacones, yet I thought it not meet to neglect any opertunity of writeinge to you. I hope you haue receiud the goods I shipped in the Mary & John per Mr. Collier, wherin I sent all the things you wrote for but sope ashes & old musket barreles, which were not to be had; also to your father were shipped all the things he wrote to my brother Doweneinge for, but only shorlinge sheepskins, 100 which now I haue bespoken & will be dressed within 6 weekes, by which time I thinke another ship or 2 will be ready. I heerwith send you the catalogue of this vernall mart, 1633, packed with some small things which my sister Downeinge sendeth, & I am still in your debt some monies, which I expect aduise from you how to dispose of. The some I wrote you in an accompt per Mary Downeinge. For newes we haue little, onely we heare from Germany that a great battell was fought neer vnto Nice,* for it was about to be beseiged, had not this battell prevented it, wherin the Duke of Saxony got the day, but with the losse of his generall Arneham: but the aduersary Walestein was slayne there † with a great number of his

* The writer probably refers to Neisse, a fortified town of Prussian Silesia. — EDS.

† This was a false report; for neither Arnheim nor Wallenstein was slain in this action. The latter was assassinated Feb. 25, 1634. Arnheim died at Dresden in 1641. — EDS.

Comanders; also we hear that the Prince of Orange hath taken Rhyne Berck. Thus for this time I comit you to God, & rest

Your euer loving frend FFRANC: KIRBY.

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected frend Mr. John Winthrop the yonger this dd. at Boston in New England.

LONDON 6° Augustij, 1633.

Although (most loving frend) I haue not any thinge to write, which may be worthy your paynes to read it; yet can I not omitte this or any other oportunity to write, hopeinge therby to oblige you to write to mee by euery oportunity likewise. I received no letter since that per Mr. Peirce. I should be glad to hear of the receipt of those things you wrote for in that letter, as also of your glasses in the former ship. We expect Mr. Hatherly per the next west-contry ship, & by him I hope to receiue letters. For newes, I haue little that good is. Since the death of the kinge of Sweden,* the Imperialists haue gotten new corage & raised new forces, & are almost as strong in the feild as the Swedish. The latest newes is of a towne or 2 which the Swedish haue taken in Westfalia. For domesticke newes it is bad. The bishop of Canterbury died the last saboth day, & his place (as I hear) the kinge hath bestowed vpon the byshop of London.† Mr. Damport ‡ hath giuen ouer teachinge with vs in London, and there is (I hear) a purseuant imployed for the appre-

* Gustavus Adolphus, killed at the battle of Lutzen, November, 1632. — EDS.

† "Aug. 4 [1633], Sunday. News came to court of the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury's death, and the king resolved presently to give it me; which he did Aug. 6." — *Laud's Diary.* — EDS.

‡ Rev. John Davenport, afterwards of New Haven and Boston, New England. — EDS.

hendinge of him & Mr. Burton, Mr. Ny, Mr. Hewes & Mr. Simson, all which ar not the worst of our teachers, as is well knowne to some of your plantacion who liued in London lately: I pray remember my seruice to your good father & mother, & to your second selfe; also my salutacions to your sisters both, my nephew James Downeinge, my neece Mary, & Su: whom I hope are ere this time safe ariued with you. Thus for this time I commit you to the protection of the Almighty & rest

Your loving frend FFRANC: KIRBY.

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

LONDON this 25 August, 1635.

LOVINGE (& NO LESSE LOUED) FREND MR. WINTHROP, — You shall vnderstand that I haue shipped in Mr. Bab the thinges bespoken at the plummers, & a little barill of shot brought to mee per Ed: Howes, all contained in one firkin marked with your marke. I haue heer inclosed the plumbers bill of parceles, wherby you may know what is in the firkin, also Mr. Peirce his bill, which I haue paid the rest of. My whole disbursement beinge 3. 12. 6, which is more (I fear) then I shall make of your horse, for we pay 1*s.* per night for hay, which maketh horses a bad comodyty, but I will doe what I may therin, & when he is sold I will write you an accounte. I desire to be remembred to your second selfe, my cosen Thomas Goad your seruant, also to my frends at Boston, from whom I haue heard per my cosen James who ariued heer about 10 daies since.

[*Signature wanting.*]

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected frend Mr. John Winthrop the younger, this dd.

LONDON, this 7th May, 1636.

DEARE FREND, — Yours of the 14th January I receiud, & did deliuer the inclosed to Mr. Kepler, but haue not yet provided the things you wrote for, but I pray blame not Mr. Kepler nor my selfe, the cause beinge in the *primum mobile;* that should set vs on worke, — vidz: the want of your mony, which my brother Downeinge can not receiue.

The other things for which you wrote to my sister Downeinge I hope will be with you longe before this letter, they were shipped in the Susan & Hellin. I am sory that Thomas Goad did not proue a fit seruant for you, he is not yet come home to London, but we haue had letters from him where he is in Spayne. Thus desireinge you to remember mee to your second selfe & the rest of my frends with you, I rest

Your loving frend, FFRA: KIRBY.

I paid for the fother & plumbers tooles	1. 10. 0
For the firkin to pake them in, & headinge it	0. 1. 0
Paid Mr. Peirce charges about your beefe & lead & suche like	2. 1. 6
	3. 12. 6
I rec'd for your horse of your uncle Goslin after I saw that I could do no better, for hay was at 1*s.* the night . . .	2. 0. 0
The rest I shall receiue of my bro: Downinge	1. 12. 6

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull John Winthrop, Esquire, at his house at Boston in New England, this dd.

LONDON, this 13th March, 1636.

SIR, — I hartily salute, hopeinge of the welfare of you & yours. I haue sent per Mr. Peirce one barill, with such things for your son as he wrote for, & as in mine & my sister Downeings letters will appeare.

If you can remember it, when you write againe, I would intreat a word or 2, whether Mr. Fountaines affidauit did preuaile, to the recouery of any thinge for the stronge watters which was atached for Dixy Bul* his debt, for Henry Bull liued not to come to England (as I hear) but was cast away, in his way to Virginia.

Thus ceasinge to trouble you more at this time, I comit you with all yours & vs all to the Keeper of I[s]raell, & so rest

Your loving frend FFRA: KIRBY.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Kirby."

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected frend Mr. John Winthrop at his house at Ipswich, this dd. in New England.

LONDON, this 10th April, 1637.

KIND SIR, — I receiud yours, dated 28th January, & haue delivered the inclosed to Mr. Keflar, & haue receiud the glases & the water from him, & haue packed them

* A notice of this person, who, with "fifteen more of the English, who kept about the east, were turned pirates," may be seen in Winthrop's "N. England," i. 79, 96, 104; and in Roger Clap's "Memoirs" (first edition), p. 19. — EDS.

carefully in a runled with 5 or 6 pecks of salte, & delivered it abord the Hector* to John Wood, masters mate, who is my cosen James Downeings aquaintance. I haue made him acquainted with the nature of the water, & danger of it, he hath promised to be carefull of it. Thus with my harty praiers to God for the preseruation of you & yours, I rest,

Your loving frend FRA: KIRBY.

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull John Winthrop Esquire at his house at Boston, this dd. in New England.

LONDON this 10th of May, 1637.

SIR, —I wrote you lately per the Hector, wherin I sent a runlet marked with your marke, contayneinge some things your son did write to me to send him. John Wood, master's mate, did promise mee & James Downeinge that he would be carfull of it & deliver to you.

These are now to intreat you that you would be assistante to the bearer herof (Thomas Hale, my neer kinsman), in your councell & aduise to put him in the way how & where to settle himselfe in a hopefull way of subsisteinge with his family. He hath brought with him all his estate, which he hath heer or can haue dureinge the life of his mother, my sister. He had almost 200*li.* when he began to make his provision for this voyage. I suppose the greatest halfe is expended in his transportation, and in such necessaries as will be spent by him & his family in the first vse; the lesser halfe, I suppose he hath in mony,

---

* June 26, 1637. — "There arrived two ships from London, — the Hector and the [blank]. In these came Mr. Davenport and another minister, and Mr. Eaton and Mr. Hopkins. . . . In the Hector came also the Lord Ley, son and heir of the Earl of Marlborough," &c. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 227–229. — EDS.

and vendible goods to provide him a cottage to dwell in, and a milshe cow for his childrens sustenance. I suppose his way will be to hire a house or part of a house for the first year, vntill he can looke out & buy or build him a dwellinge, wherin as in other things I shall intreat you to direct him, and the courtesy that you shall doe him therin I shall acknowledge, as done to myselfe, & I shall be redy (*Deo assistante* *) to endeuour to requite it in any seruice which I can performe for you heer. Thus for this present I commit you all to the protection of the Almighty, & shall euer rest

Your loving frend FFRA: KIRBY.

I desire to be remembred to Mrs. Winthrop, to your son Mr. Jo: & his wife, & the rest of yours, also to my cosen Mary & Su: Downeinge.

My brother Downeinge will hasten to you, the next springe will be farthest, God willinge; for he seeth that euery year bringeth forth new difficulties; my nephew can tell you how they haue met with many interuptions, prohibitions, & such like, which Mr. Peirce & others that went since Mr. Peirce were not troubled withall.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Kirby."

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull John Winthrop esquire Governour of the Massachusets bay in New England.

LONDON, this 11th of Aprill, 1639.

WORTHY SIR, — I shall only in this paper salute you, refferringe you to this bearer, Joseph Carter, my loue deseruinge son, and faithfull seruant, who so soone as he

* *Sic.* — EDS.

was freed from my seruice had an earnest desire to come to New England. He can better, or at least with more safty, relate to you our condicion heer then I can write it. I knowe his desire is not to be chargeable to any of his frends, neither doth his present condicion require it, but what courtesy you please to do him, I shall take it as done to my selfe, and be redy to requite it in any seruice that I can do for you heer. Thus with my harty prayers to the Almighty for his blessinges vpon you & yours, I rest

Your loving frend FFRANC: KIRBY.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Kerby. Rec'd per Mr. Carter."

FRANCIS KIRBY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull John Winthrop, esquire, Gouernour of the Massacusets bay, this present at Boston in New England.

LONDON, this 22th of Feb: 1639.

KIND SIR, — Yours of the 12th of the 6: month I receiud, with the inclosed to Mr. Tindall, which I sent accordingly; also I receiud yours of a later date, with a packet to Jo: Tinker,* which I likewise deliuerd to him, who is now an vndertaker in a ship bound to Conecticot, but will touch at the bay first & land there some parte of her ladeinge (*Deo assistante* †). This bearer, Mr. Cuttinge, I suppose is freighted wholy (or for the most parte) by Mr. Ffoxcrofte,‡ the next will be Mr. Bab, who will be redy about a month hence, per whom I shall write to you againe, & that I thinke wilbe at least a month before Jo: Tinker. We haue now greate hope of a parlament, and

* John Tinker settled at Windsor, in Connecticut. He afterwards removed to Boston, and became one of the principal settlers at Lancaster. Several of his letters to Gov. Winthrop are published in this volume. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

† *Sic.* — EDS. ‡ Probably George, the London merchant. — *Ibid.* — EDS.

we hartily desire your praiers vnto God to direct the heart of his maiesty and the house of parlament, with one vnanimous consent to aime at glory of God, & saftie of this kingdome. The difference between his maiesty & the Scots is not yet appeased. I pray God put such an end to it as may be most for his glory, & the good of both kingdomes. Your frends at Groton are well, as I vnderstand per Benj: Gostlin who was there lately. Thus haueinge not else to you at this time, I commit you & all yours to the protection of the Almighty, and shall euer rest Your loving frend

FFRANC: KIRBY.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Kirby, per the Desire."

LETTERS OF NATHANIEL WARD.*

NATHANIEL WARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull & his much respected ffreind Mr. Winthrope, Gouernour of the New-English Company, att Mr. Porters in Soaper Lane dd. dd. dd.
In his absence to Mr. Johnson.

Sir, — I purpose to see yow this next weeke att London, if God permitt. In the meane tyme I intreate yow to reserue rooms & passage in your shipps for 2 families, a carpenter & bricklayer, the most faithfull & dilligent workmen in all our parts; one of them hath putt of a good farme this weeke, & sold all, & should be much dammaged & discouraged if he finds no place amongst yow. He transports himselfe att his owne charge. There is a paire of sawyers also specially laborious; all of them will come to yow vpon monday or tuesday. I pray lett them discerne your harty desire of their company. And so I comitt you to God.

Yours in all Christian affection

Nathl. Warde.

Stondon, Jan. 16°.†

* Nathaniel Ward, the son of Rev. John Ward of Haverhill, Suffolk, Eng., was educated at Emanuel College, Cambridge, and proceeded A.M. 1603. He served as curate at St. James's Church, Duke's Place, London; and afterwards obtained the living of Stondon Massey in Essex. Being deprived of his place in 1633, he came over to New England in the succeeding year, and settled at Ipswich; but was dismissed, at his own request, in 1636. He was associated with John Cotton and others in the commission to frame the code of laws entitled the "Body of Liberties," but is more widely known as the witty author of "The Simple Cobler of Agawam." He returned to England before 1647, and preached before the House of Commons at the monthly fast, June 30 of that year. He was afterwards minister of Shenfield in Essex, where he died in 1653. — Eds.

† 1630 N.S. — Eds.

NATHANIEL WARD TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Sir, — I receiued your loving letter in Mr. Hall's behalfe: I was neuer against his having a lott amongst vs, nor to my remembrance haue spoken any thinge to hinder him; only the company that he brought to towne, & his manner of cominge, before the towne knew any such thinge, was obserued & disliked. I neuer heard [a] sillable of that yow mention in your letter concerning a mayde in Ireland, till the tyme of opening your letter; att that instant Mr. Dudley was telling me of it. I dare not beleeue empty rumours aiganst any man: I am & shalbe tender of young & hopefull men, & ready to incourage them. I am bold to say I am & haue bene & shalbe so, whateuer is reported to the contrary. Our towne of late, but somewhat too late, haue bene carefull on whome they bestowe lotts, being awakned therto by the confluence of many ill & doubtfull persons, & by their behauiour since they came, in drinking & pilferinge; I pray, if you speake with Mr. Hall, advise him to suffer no priuate drinking in his howse, wherin I heare lately he hath bene to blame. The reasons which moue our freemen to be very considerate in disposall of lotts & admission of people to vs are thes: ffirst, we conceiue the lesse of Satan's kingdome we haue in our towne, the more of Gods presence & blessinge we may expect. 2ly, we haue respect to the creditt of our Church & towne, from which we heare there are too many vniust detractions in the bay, to serue their owne ends. 3ly, we consider our towne as a by or port towne of the land, remote from neighbours, & had neede to be strong & of a homogeneous spirit & people, as free from dangerous persons as we may. Lastly, our thoughts & feares growe very sadd to see such multitudes of idle & profane young men, servants & others, with

whome we must leaue our children, for whose sake & safty we came ouer, & who came with vs from the land of their nativity, their freinds & many other comforts, which their birthright intitled them to, relying vpon our loue, wisdome, & care, to repay them all in this wildernes either in specie or compensations; but I must confesse it sinks vs almost to the graue to looke vpon the next generation, to whome we must leaue them & the fruite of our adventures, labours & counsells: we knowe this might haue bene easily prevented by due & tymely care of such as had the opportunity in their hand; & if it be not yet remedied, we & many others must not only say, with greif, we haue made an ill change, euen from the snare to the pitt, but must meditate some safer refuge, if God will afford it: but I hope he will cause light to shine out of darknes & glorifie his strenght in the weaknes of men; & do that which seemes to be past all doing. We haue our eyes upon yow magistrats to helpe vs: & now, good Sir, giue me leaue with patience to tell yow, as I did before yow went to England, that your absence hath bredd vs much sorrowe, & your still going from vs to Connecticote doth much discourage vs. I feare your tye or obligation to this state, & in speciall to this towne, is more then yow did well consider when you ingaged your self another way; & I feare your indeauours that way will not be *operæ ac spei pretium.* I am in a dreame, att least not awake, if it be the way of God for so many to desert this place, turning their backs upon vs, & to seeke the good of their cattell more then of comth, & my thoughts are that God doth iustly rebuke our state by the losse of so many men, vessells, & victualls, in a tyme of dearthe, for their facility in giving way to their departure: for your part we looke & long for yow here, & are in a misery for the want of yow. The Lord bring yow in his season, & in the

meane tyme afford yow his presence & blessinge where euer yow are: & so I rest

Your worships in all truth of loue

NATHL. WARDE.

IPSWICH Dec. 24.*

I forgett not my due respect to your father, mother, & wife.

I heare Mr. Coddington hath the sale & disposall of much prouision come in this shipp. I intreate yow to do so much as to speake to him in my name to reserue some meale & malt, & what victualls els he thinks meete, till our Riuer be open: our Church will pay him duely for it. I am very deestitute, I haue not aboue 6 bushells corne left, & other things answerable.

NATHANIEL WARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To our much honored Gouernor att Boston.

SIR,—I thanke you very much for your loue & liberality, by Mr. Rawson, you sent me more then I desired. I haue 2 more earnest requests to you. 1, That yow would please to advise throughly with the counsell, whether it will not be of ill consequence to send the Court busines to the common consideration of the freemen. I feare it will too much exauctorate the power of that Court to prostrate matters in that manner. I suspect both Commonwealth & Churches haue discended to lowe already; I see the spirits of people runne high, & what they gett they hould. They may not be denyed their proper & lawfull liberties,

* We should have no hesitation in indicating 1635 as the year in which this letter was written, were it not that Mr. Felt does not find Mr. Hall (Samuel) a resident of Ipswich till the next year, though this is not conclusive against his settling there the year before. — EDS.

but I question whether it be of God to interest the inferiour sort in that which should be reserued *inter optimates penes quos est sancire leges.* Yf Mr. Lachford haue writt them out, I would be glad to peruse one of his copies, if I may receiue them.*

The other is that yow would not passe your promise, nor giue any incouragment concerning any plantation att Quichichacke or Penticutt, till my self & some others either speake or write to yow about it, which shalbe done so soone as our counsilles & contrivalls are ripened. In too much hast, I comitt yow & your affaires to the guidance of God, in whom I rest

Your Worships in all Christian service

NATHL. WARDE.

M^r. 10^s: 22^o.†

There is a necessity that the Covenant, if it be agreed vpon, should be considered & celebrated by the seuerall congregations & townes, & happily the . . . . .‡ but I dare not determyne concerning the latter. I mean of putting it to the suffrage of the people.§

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Cosin Warde."

---

* See Lechford's reference to this service in his "Plain Dealing," &c., p. 31. — EDS.

† This letter has no date of year; but it was evidently written in 1639, Dec. 22. The brief reference to "Quichichacke" and "Penticutt," subsequently Andover and Haverhill, was explained four days after in a letter from Giles Firmin, the son-in-law of Ward, then living at Ipswich, to Gov. Winthrop, giving full particulars respecting their plans for a new settlement, and craving the privilege of selecting either of the two places named above, so soon as the season would permit an examination of them. — See Hutchinson's "Papers," pp. 108, 109. This informal application was followed May 13, 1640, as we learn from our Colony Records, by a petition from Ward and others to the Government, asking permission to begin a new plantation on the Merrimack, which resulted in the settlement of Haverhill; the Rev. John Ward, the son of Nathaniel, being the first minister of the place. — *Chase's History of Haverhill*, pp. 35–37. — EDS.

‡ A doubtful word. — EDS.

§ Certain portions of this letter undoubtedly refer to some provisions in the "Body of Liberties," which Ward had been employed by the General Court to draw up; the result of his labors having been reported to the Government the November previous. — 3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, viii. 191–237. — EDS.

NATHANIEL WARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull our Gouernour att Boston.

Sir, — We are bold to continue our suite concerning the plantation I lately mencioned to yow; our company increases apace from diuers townes, of very desirable men, wherof we desire to be very choise: this next weeke, if God hinder vs not, we purpose to view the places & forthwith to resort to yow, & in the meane tyme we craue your secrecy, & rest

Your Worships Na: Warde.

We haue alreddy more then 20 families of very good Christians purposed to goe with vs, if God will, & we heare of more.

Our neighbour townes are much greiued to see the lauish liberality of the Court in giving away the countrye. Some honest men of our towne affirme that in their knowledge there are 68 townes in England, within as litle compasse as the bounds of Ipswich: I knowe neere 40, where I dwelt: Rowly* is larger then Ipswich, 9 or 10 miles longe, & will haue other plantations within it, tributaries to it, & intend as, we heare, to stretch their wings much further yet, & will spoile Qutchicqute vtterly, if not Pentucket. We earnestly pray yow to prevent it. We should incourage many to come ouer, if many plantations were not spoiled by the extreame largnes of those that are already giuen. Our purpose is to haue no great bounds.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Na: Warde."

* Rowley was incorporated 4th Sept. 1639, when it was "Ordered that Mr. Ezekiel Rogers's plantation shall be called Rowley." Under date of the 13th day of the 3d month, 1640, it was declared "that Rowley bounds is to be eight miles from their meeting-house in a straight line; and then a cross line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver, where it doth not prejudice any former grant." The towns of Rowley, Georgetown, Bradford, Boxford, and Groveland, are now included within the former bounds of Rowley. See Gage's "History of Rowley," pp. 121, 134. This letter bears no date; but it was probably written in the early part of the year 1640. — Eds.

NATHANIEL WARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Sir, — I thanke you much for your letter & loue, & those also of the plantation for their good esteeme of mee, which I trust I shall not be backward to requite to my poore power. When I came out of the bay, matters were left thus betweene Mr. Shepheard & mee, That if there might be any subsistence there this winter, I should heare from him: speaking both with him & some of the plantation, I discerned that they thought it too difficult to adventure thither till the extremity of the winter were abated. I acknowledge I am tender, & more vnfitt for solitarines & hardshipp then some other, especially att this tyme, through many colds & seeds of the bay sicknesses I brought from thence, yet if God & counsell cast me vpon any worke or condition, I should labour not to wayue his good prouidence. I heare there is no priuate roome there, litle prouision, and not a woman to dresse meate or wash linnen, & the cheif of the men are like to be absent for the most parte att their owne homes. I am much troubled what to doe, but vpon Mr. Shepheards letters I shall take advise, and doe what God shall direct & inable me vnto. In the meane tyme, iterating my thankfull respect to your selfe and them, craving your prayers, I rest Your worships in all Christian services,

Nathl. Warde.

Ipswich 9^{ber}: 26.*

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Nathan. Ward."

* There is nothing in this letter to indicate definitely the year in which it was written. The plantation the writer speaks of, to which his friends "thought it too difficult to adventure" "till the extremity of the weather were abated," may possibly refer to the new settlement at Haverhill, which he was early interested in, and in which his son John became an early inhabitant. If so, the year was probably 1640 or 1641. If such had been his intention, there is no evidence that Nathaniel Ward ever became a resident of that town. See p. 27, note †. — Eds.

LETTERS OF THOMAS MAYHEW.*

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull John Wynthropp this dd in Boston.

Sir, — I doe hereby request your worshipp to deliuer this bearer that hempe yow spake of, for caulkinge the pynnase: and I doe farther intreate yow to lend Mr. Cradock the hellpe of your teeme, a day or two, to hellpe carry the timber for buillding the mill at Watertowne. I haue sent vnto Mr. Doomer.† I hope he will afford me his hellpe; that with the hellpe of our owne wee may doe it in two daies. The reasen I desire to haue it donne with such expedition is for that the cattell must be watched whillst they are about it, in reguard they will be from home, & soe doubtlesse otherwise woulld stray, or at least runn home: I will at any time, yf your worshipp haue occasion in the like kind, fullfill your desire: the time wee intend to goe about it is the second or third day of the next weeke. Thus ceaseing farther to trouble yow at present, saluteinge you with all due respecte, committing you to the Lords protecion, I rest

Your worshipps to commaund, Thomas Mayhew.

Meadeford, the 22th of the fowerth Moneth, June, 1634:

* Thomas Mayhew, a merchant of Southampton, Eng., born early in 1591, came over probably in 1631, and settled in Watertown. He was engaged in trade, and as agent for Gov. Cradock at Medford, for some time. In October, 1641, James Forett, as agent of the Earl of Stirling, granted to him and his son Thomas, by deed, the islands of Nantucket and Martha's Vineyard. Mayhew removed to the Vineyard in 1647; where he acted as governor, and preacher to the Indians, for more than thirty-three years. In 1671, he was appointed governor, for life, of the island. He died in 1681, only six days before the completion of his ninetieth year. — *Hutchinson's Hist. of Mass.*, i. 161; 2 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, iii. 66–70; vi. 118–128; *Bond's Hist. of Watertown*, 857; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† Probably Richard Dummer. — Eds.

I shall gladly pay for it, yf you think good, as willingly to afford the like hellpe: its but hallfe the work concernes Mr. Cradock or me: he is indeede partely content I shoulld doe it my sellfe.

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Sir, — Touching my journey to Ile of Sholes to buy 80 hogsheads of prouission, when I came I fownd noe such thinge as vnto me for trueth was reported: to procure 8 hogsheads of bread I was fayne to lay out one hundred pownds in ruggs & coates vnnecessaryly: and for pease I gott but 1 hogshead & ½, whereof I sowed certain bushells. Had things beene free at the coming in of this vessell, I woulld haue had a greater share of what she brought, yett I confesse, as matters hath beene carried, I haue not ought against that which hath beene donne. I doubt not but that Mr. Peeters hath remembred you. Your father told me that he had shippt in the Blessinge one hogshead of beiffe, in liew of that deliuered vnto Mr. Louell. I shall confer with Mr. Wynthropp when more victualls com in, how wee may steed you: assure your sellfe my hellp you shall not want. I haue made out th accompt betweene vs. Concerning the Bermuda Voyadge, and accompting the potatoes at 2*d.* the corne at 9*s.* per bushell, the pork at 10*li.* per hogshead, orrenges and lemons at 20*s.* per c, wee two shall gaine twenty od pownds. Now that accompt cleared & the cattell wintring paid for, there will not be much coming vnto yow of the 80 od pownds I borrowed of yow. I shalbe ready at any time to advance soe much mony to steede yow, with thankes, yf your occassions shall require it. I salute you respectyuely

with my loue. I commend you to the guydaunce & protecion of the Lord Jesus, and doe rest, in som hast,

Your assured loueing & readyly to be comanded

THOMAS MAYHEW.

MEADEFOARD this 22th of the 2d moneth, 1636:*

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Wynthropp governour this dlr.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, — I am to pay my owne rate, & some 5*li.* for other men, that I owe it vnto, & allthough that I haue had bills due from the Countrey, one yeare and 7 monethes synce, for 70 & od pownds, I must now haue my goods sold, except I pay out this money: which, seeing I haue mony to receive from the countrey, me-thinkes it is verry hard measure. I cannott see equitie in it. I may safely say that if I had had my money as was then fully intended, being then 100*li.*, it had donne me more good, in name & state, then now wilbe made whole with double the money; but yf there be noe remedy but my goods must be strayned & solld, I desire your worshipps aduice per this bearer, which is the Constable, what course is to be taken in putting it of. I thinke he comes vnto yow for counsell in that behallfe: thus with my due respecte, in some hast, I rest,

Your worshipps to command

THO: MAYHEW.

11TH OF THE 3D 1640.

Mony is verry hard to gett vppon any termes. I know not the man that can ffurnish me with it. I coulld not

---

* Winthrop was then at Saybrook. A letter to him from his father, four days after this, may be seen in Winthrop's N. E., i. 388. — EDS.

gett the 100*li.* of Mr. Gibbins. I gott 30*li.* putt of inconueniently: & when I was syck & in necessitie, I could not gett any of the Tresurer. I delight not to compleyne.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Mayhew about his rate."

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Deseruedly honoured Mr. John Wynthropp, and my loueing Freind, — These are to acquaint yow that wee here haue greate want of a mill, and there is one with yow that I here is a verry ingenuous man about such work, that is, Goodman Elderkin,* but wee here yow haue some ingadement vppon him: now these are to intreate yow, yf possible you can disspense a while with him, that yow would be pleased to doe it, & wee shall rest much obleidged vnto yow for it. And thus, not haueing ells at present, referring you to goodman Tabor † for what passeth here touching the Indians, with my respectyue salutations, commending yow to the guydance & protecion of our Lord Jesus, doe rest

Your loueinge freind to serue yow

Tho: Mayhew.

Vyneyard 16th. 6th. 51.

---

* John Elderkin was a resident of Lynn in 1637; was subsequently at Dedham, at Reading, and at Providence. He was at New London in 1651, the year this letter was written; where, it is said, he built the first church and the first mill. In 1664, he settled at Norwich, and there also employed himself in the same labor. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.*, ii. 107; *Caulkins's New London, passim.* — Eds.

† Philip Tabor was of Watertown in 1634. He afterwards went to the Vineyard; and thence, in 1651, to New London; and was probably the bearer of this letter to Winthrop, who was then living there. He subsequently lived at Providence and at Tiverton. — *Bond's Geneal., &c., of Watertown*, p. 956; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.*, iv. 247. — Eds.

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much honourd freind Mr. John Wynthrop at Boston.

Worshipfull Mr. John Wynthropp, & my verry good Freind, — I doe vnderstand that yow are for this present yeare chosen a Commissioner for the Vnited collonies: therefore I thought good to certyfie you that this ten yeares I haue constantly stood ready to atend the work of God here amongst the Indians. Verry much time I haue spent, & made many journies, and beene at verry much trouble & cost in my howse, and I haue reseved one yeare 20*li.*, & the last yeare ten pownds. It is more then when I entred on it I did expecte, but when I consider the greate somes gyuen, and that one maine cause of it was this work; and judging twas gyuen as one maine end for the comfort of those that began it & were now vppon it, I say that they in the first place shoulld be liberally prouided for. Methinks that which I haue had is verry little. Truely yf I were now to be hired to doe ass much yearely as I haue donne, thirtie pownds per annum & more to would not doe it. Till Mr. Eaton came hither I neuer had a penny: yf I had not seene my help had beene necessary & allso muche desired, I woulld neuer haue followed affter them as I haue donne, I pray take it for graunted: but yf such an imployment as myne amongst the Indians be not to be considered, or verry litle, I hope I shall sattisfie my sellffe whether the call of God by the Indians, which is still contynued by them verry lately expressing themsellues to that purpose: I coulld wish your sellfe and Mr. John Higgyson were here a month or two, to see what is to be seene here amongst the Indians, and to hellpe consider of seuerall things for the

future. Yf my sonne be gonne to heauen,* I shall press verry harde vppon Mr. Higgison to come here, as I haue written to the Commissioners. I cannott yett gyue my sonnes ouer:† yf they com noe more, my daughter & hir 6 chilldren will want hellpe. He allso hath had of the Commissioners in all, besides his books, 160*li.*, his bookes were 37*li.*, as I take it. I pray, yf they can find a way to kepe two of his sonnes at schoole, lend your furtherance & to any thing ells for hir good & hir chilldren. The work was followed by him when twas bare with him for foode & rayment, and then indeede there was nothing in sight any waies but Gods promises. Thus much I thought to write vnto your kind, loueing & honoured sellf, which is more then I shoulld haue written to any man ells that I know, but I doubt not of any ylle or imprudent vse to be made of it by your sellf, but that which shall couer any weakenes conteined herein, and allso to apply ought ells for my good, as occassion presents. I salute you with due respecte, and I comend you to Gods blessing and direccion, and rest

Your Worshipps to comand

THOMAS MAYHEW.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jr., "Mr. Mahue."

---

* This reference to the domestic affliction of the writer fixes the date of this letter early in the year 1658. His son, Thomas, sailed from Boston in Capt. Garrett's ship for London in November, 1657, in company with Davis, Ince, and Pelham, "all scholars;" but the ship was never afterwards heard of. See Gookin's "Historical Collections," pp. 62, 63. — EDS.

† Mr. Savage, in his "Genealogical Dictionary," says that "it is not known that he (Mayhew) had any son but Thomas;" but Gookin speaks of the latter as "his eldest son." Mayhew in this sentence may have reference to another son who was on board the ill-fated ship, or to a son-in-law. — EDS.

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthropp, Gouernour of Connectacutte, dd with speede & trust.

Vppon the Vyneyard, this 29th 6: 59.

Right Worshipfull and my approued Freind, — These lines I write least I should not com my selfe, which yett I intend to doe, yf Codnam* comes in here within this 2 daies: to intreate yow to stand my daughters† freind, that hir 3 sonnes may be brought vpp to learninge. I haue written to the Commissioners to that purpose in hir behallfe, & allso for somethinge yearely for hir sellfe. I pray be pleased to consider of it. It is true that shee did vndergoe many hardshipps diverse yeares before they had any thing giuen for this work. Shee can haue nothinge here. Tis not to be had. And for my sellfe, I pray holld forth what lawfull fauour you can, that I may haue a considerable supply for my paines. I haue euer borne the greatest burthen touchinge this work when my sonne was here, hardly euer free, and I haue through mercye taught them this yeare, and doe still goe one, and the Lord hath strengthned me much of late, beyond my expectation. I am sorry that the Comissioners did not send some trustye & considerable person to see how things are carried on here. Mr. Browne of Seacunck, ere he went for England, wrote me he would com on purpose to sattisfie himsellfe about these Indians, whoe had, as I perceiued, many doubts of these & all the rest. I vnderstand there is litle or noe hopes of Mr. Peirson. I am still of this mynd, that a man that will fitt the church here, & the Indians allso, is abundantly most conuenient; though he hath litle or noe Indian languadge, he will soone attaine it, with the hellpes

---

* Probably *Codman*. Robert Codman and family resided at Edgartown, where he died in 1678. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† His daughter-in-law, the widow of his son Thomas. Her sons' names were Matthew, Thomas, and John. — Eds.

that are here now; as I haue wrote the Comissioners, I can clearely make knowne to them by an interpreter, what I know my sellfe. I doe speake to them sometimes about an howre. I ask sometimes where they vnderstand; they say yes; and I know they doe, for in the generall I really know they vnderstand me, but sometimes I doubt my sellfe, & then I ask. Notwithstandinge this, I desire, yf it may be, a sollid man & a scholler for both works. Yf not, for the present the Indians are comfortably supplied. Yf I should be taken of by death, here is hellpe that the Schoolemaster, who hath some languadge, and my sonne Doggett* that hath, I think, much more than any English man vppon the Iland, and is a considerable youn[g] man; & of the Comissioners I much desire, yf I come not, that touching this businnes, that the Commissioners of the Bay may haue some power granted to consider with me, & determine what they shall see good grounds for. I resolue, yf God will, for to goe thither before the meeteing next yeare, either before winter or at springe. I pray, Sir, intymate what I haue written vnto yow, vppon all fitt occassions. I thank you for your loue, the last yeare; my daughter tolld of it. I doe presume vppon your kindnes, and I hope to see yow. I doe salute yow with all due respecte; with my harty desires for your prosperitie, I rest

Yours to be commanded, to my power,
THO: MAYHEW.

Yow may be pleased to tell the Commissioners that I say, & tis true, that I haue great neede to haue what may be justly comminge to me for this work, to supply my wants.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Mayhew, recd Mar: 20."

* Thomas Doggett, or Daggett, the son-in-law of Mayhew, perhaps a son of John Doggett, who probably came over with Winthrop. Thomas married for his second wife, in 1654, Joan, or Jane, widow of Thomas Chillingworth. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.; Hough's Nantucket Papers*, pp. 66–68. — EDS.

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right worshipfull John Wynthropp, Gouernour of Connectacute, this dd.

VPPON THE VYNEYARD this 29 — 7 — 61.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL MY APPROUED FREIND, — I am glad to heare of your arryuall in this Countrey.* I haue a greate desire to see yow, and to conferre with yow vppon diuerse thinges, but at this tyme opportunitie serues not.

Sir, at present I humbly intreate yow to informe me what the Treasurers name is, of the Corporation, & where he dwells; and yf it may suite with your judgment to write a word or two vnto the Corporation in my daughters behallfe, & for some thinge to further hir sonnes in learninge yearely, though not in that chardgeable waye. This I know, that this place was, in the eye of the state to rayse the stoccke; & as I am certainely perswaded is not behind to further the contynuaunce of it to this daye, and rightly: and I am soe informed by manye of good accompt. Yf yow may take liberty to gyue me a word in answere hereto, from your more important auocations, yow will further obleidg him who desires to doe yow seruice as he is able, & at your commaund,

THOMAS MAYHEW.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tho: Mayhew."

---

* We know that Winthrop was not in the country at the time indicated by the above date, having left for England as early as July, on the business of the charter which united the two Colonies of Connecticut and New Haven; and that he did not return from his mission till about June, 1663. This letter possibly is antedated two years. — EDS.

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right worshipfull John Wynthropp Gouernour of Connecta-kutt, these at his howse present with trust.

Right Worshipfull. — These are to testyfie my thankfullnes for your readines in sending that powder for my grandchild, together with the advice, &c., as allso to intreate yow for more of the powder, &c.; for now shee is willinge to take it, and wee are of the mind that shee is now much likely to recouer: but yf shee should not shortly vissibly mend, my daughter doth desire your worshipp to know whether yow are willing shee should com to Conectacute, where shee may be neare yow, and allso the sight of hir may much more informe your judgment touching hir dissease. For the swelling, it was 3 partes of 4 abated lately. My sonne Harlocck shall attend your order in calling for a short answere hereunto, the which I hope yow will vouchsafe to send. Thus ceaseing further to trouble yow at present, with my seruice remembred to yourselfe, whome I much honour, as allso Mrs. Wynthropp, in hast, I rest

Your worshipps to command,

Thomas Mayhew.

Vineyard, 19—1—61.

My wyfe & daughter remember theire seruices to your worshipp & Mrs. Wynthropp. Whether this powder is to be gyuen dayly I pray a word; the quantitie wee know.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Mayhew."

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right worshipfull John Wynthropp Gouernour of Connectacutt, at his howse these present, at Hartford.

15—7—64.

Right Worshipfull and deseruedly honoured Sir, and my approued Freind Mr. John Wynthropp, — I thank you for all your kindnes first & last, especially for that you had thoughts of comming to see me.

Sir, I perceiue now that his Majestie hath sent ouer Commissioners.* I hope the effecte wilbe good. I see at a greate distaunce, therefore can say litle to it. I heare that your worshipp hath much intercourse with the Generall.† I am verry like to make vse of them. I pray, Sir, take occassion to mynde me to him, & to the rest of them, that they would be pleased to doe me all the lawfull fauour they can. I haue written to Mr. Samuell Maueryck my sellfe, whome I heare is one of them.

Sir, I haue not yett made vse of the cordiall powder the which you sent me. I haue beene verry well synce, I blesse the Lord, beyond expectation. That paine I had seised one me in the morning betyme, vppon the right syde; the paine was not so broade as the palme of my hand. It was like to take me of the stage, but it went away in my sleepe that night. When I awoke, I was altogether free of that paine and of other sore paine which came vppon me in vseing menes by a glyster to free my sellfe of that. This God can doe. I am 71 and 5 monthes at present. My sight is better then many

* The Commissioners, who arrived in July of this year, were Col. Richard Nicolls, George Cartwright, Esq., Sir Robert Carr, and Samuel Maverick, Esq. "They receiued a commission from the king for reducing the Dutch at Manhados, visiting the Colonies in New England, hearing & determining all matters of complaint," &c. — *Hutchinson's Hist. Mass.*, i. 230. — Eds.

† Col. Nicolls is probably here referred to. — Eds.

yeares synce. I can write well without spectacles. I wash my head ordinaryly with spring water, yf the weather be neuer soe colld, euery morning. Heate troubles me most, ells I would haue com by land vnto Hartford. Heate doth hurt me. I wash my head vppon the waye sometimes, though I sweate much, I confesse I find much good in it. I was 6 years synce verry weake, yett not syck, but a swymming in my heade, and a noise allso, which hath neare quite left me, and I am strong for my yeares, rarely a man so strong. This is to aduise you of this experience. I pray, Sir, take an opportunitie to doe what yow may with the Kings Commissioners to shew me all lawfull fauour. Not ells, but desireinge the Lord to blesse you & yours, I humbly take leaue & rest

Your worshipps to command,

THOMAS MAYHEW.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Mayhew."

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

5—1—64. VPPON THE VYNEYARD.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL MR. JOHN WYNTHROP, SIR,* — . . . I desire yow to resolue me yf any man can possesse land that he doth purchase of the heathen, without the leaue of the pattentees. Under correction, I thinke not; because the land is absolutely conferred on the pattentees & successours as firme as possible can be, by the State of England, & all that pattentees graunt to such are in freinshipp with them, are assured to holld it: soe it is in this pattent, & in your pattent, as I take it, a coppy whereof I haue seene. I suppose your sellfe can tell yf any such

* The first part of this letter, being merely a request for medical advice in behalf of a member of Mayhew's family, is not here printed. — EDS.

liberty be to be taken or not, in a word or two, by any leaue from his Majestie; to me it annyhilates pattents. Tis my case: I hope to receiue a word about it. Thus with my seruice to your kind & deseruedly honored sellfe, I rest Your seruant to commaund,

THOMAS MAYHEW.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Mayhew."

THOMAS MAYHEW TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Ffor the right Worshipfull Mr. John Wynthrop, Esquire, Gouernour of the Collony of Connectacutt, these present in Boston.

VPPON THE VYNYARD, this 10: 7: 75.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL & DESERUEDLY HONOURED SIR, — The vessell cast away was buillt with pyne, cedar, or such like wood. Not a trennell in hir. Generall Cudworth * was there ere my grandson came, who tooke with him dyuerse things, as two anchors, some sayles, roapes, cables. Its sayed by the Indians, as I was informed, there were 5 men & 2 negars buried verry shallow. For that those of Plymouth had beene there, Mathew medled not with them. The Indians say a letter found, but they coulld not reade it. I had yesterday newes of another man cast on shore at Tarpolyn Coue. It is saied black hayred men all. Such was the vessell that hir maine sayle had 14 breadthes, & 22 foote deepe. Shee was beate in peices, & not one barrell nor hoggshead came one shore whole, seene by those I sent. The maynesayle, & I think, the mainetoppsaile, they had in 9 foote water.

* James Cudworth was an early resident of Scituate, an assistant in the government, captain of the militia, and, in the early part of Philip's War, commander of the whole force of Plymouth Colony. He was deputy-governor in 1681, and died the next year in London, whither he had gone as Colonial Agent. — 4 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, v. 74, 75. — EDS.

Some other cordidg they had, & spikes. I heare of noe other goods as yett.

Truly, Sir, I am much affected with the losse of soe many of our nation, & Richard Beares,* Captaine of those at Hadley, himsellf & 20 slayne. Its sad newes. He was one I loued much. He is with God, who I hope will arise in the behallfe of those that call vppon him for aid, to confound their enemies. I am tolld Captaine Beares & his slew 100 of the heathen, & had but thirty & himsellfe. The temporall sword is good, the spirrittuall is longer & more sharpe. I doubt not but they are both in exercyse, & will bring forth admirable effectes, to the honour of God, & the comfort of his, and to the utter ouerthrow of those heathen that despise him. Sir, herewith my loue is recommended to your sellfe, whome I doe soe highly respect, and whose prossperity I soe much desire as any mans I know. Sir, I desire your prayers for the contynuaunce of our peace. I shall not ad ought at present but rest

Worthy Sir, your humble & affectionate seruaunt,

THOMAS MAYHEW.

My daughter Doggetts elldest daughter hath vsed your phissick with very good successe. The litle ones haue not yett taken any. I hope they will haue the like benefitt. I cease, as before T. M.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Mayhew. rec: Sept: 17."

* Capt. Beers was of Watertown, and had served in the Pequot War. A few months after the breaking-out of Philip's War, he was stationed at Hadley; from which place he marched, with thirty-six men, to convoy provisions to the garrison and people of Northfield. He fell into an ambuscade formed by a large body of Indians; and, "out of the thirty-six, only sixteen escaped back to Hadley." — *Hoit's Antiquarian Researches*, pp. 103, 104. — EDS.

LETTERS OF WILLIAM GOODWIN.*

WILLIAM GOODWIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.†

Good Sir, — I am requested by our neighbores the Dutchmen to mind you of what you willed me to tell them, viz., that if they thought good to call to you as they went out with ther sloope (and did desire so much of you) you would then giue them answer in wryteing to ther protest. The Sirgion is now going to ther plantation, and meaneth to come to you about it, and desired me to signifie so much vnto your worship, which is all I haue to you at this tyme. Thus with the remembrance of my servis I end and rest

Yours Will: Goodwin.

Sekioge, June 22th, 1636.

* William Goodwin came to New England in the "Lion;" arriving at Boston 16th September, 1632. He was representative from Cambridge at the first General Court of Deputies in Massachusetts, 14th May, 1634; but removed, in 1635 or the following year, to Hartford. He was ruling elder both at Cambridge and Hartford, and afterwards at Hadley; and is styled by Winthrop "a very reverend and godly man." After a long controversy with Mr. Stone, the successor of Hooker at Hartford, he removed to Hadley, with a large part of the congregation, about 1659; and, some years afterwards, to Farmington. He died 11th March, 1673. — *Winthrop's Hist. of N. E.*, i. 129, 142; *Goodwin's Genealogical Notes*, pp. vi. vii.; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† John Winthrop, jun., at the time of the writing of this letter, was probably residing, with Lion Gardiner and a few others, at the small settlement (soon after named "Saybrook") at the mouth of the river, in the service of Lord Say and Sele and Lord Brook and others (the Connecticut patentees), from whom he had a commission to act as Governor of the place for one year. The letter, written from "Sekioge," or "Suckiag" (the Indian name of the present city of Hartford), refers to "our neighbors the Dutchmen." It is well known that the Dutch early laid claim to this river on the ground of discovery by Block in 1614. Bradford tells us, that, in their intercourse with the Pilgrims, the Dutch had told them of this river, and commended it "unto them for a fine place both for plantation and trade, and wished them to make use of it;" which finally they did, as early as 1631, and probably earlier; and, in the year 1633, they built a trading-house there, on or near the site of the present town of Windsor; which was the commencement of the English settlements in Connecticut. The Plymouth people had also been solicited by a party of Indians,

I suppose you here by our bretheren of the ariueall of our pastore * & if your request for healp be as it was, you may be pleased to send vs word.

---

who had been banished from their country by the Pequots, to settle on this river; and of them they bought the tract of land on which they built.

This latter proceeding on the part of the English was, however, opposed by the Dutch, who, in the language of Bradford, "began now to repent" their former courtesy, had "got in a little before them" on the river, "and made a slight fort, and planted two pieces of ordnance, threatening to stop their passage;" but this did not deter the Plymouth people from their resolute purpose. They built their house, and maintained it for some years; though in 1635 their territorial possessions were seriously invaded by Mr. Warham's congregation from Dorchester. The fort built by the Dutch was near the site of the present city of Hartford, whence Goodwin addresses this letter to Winthrop. About June, 1633, the "Dutch West-India Company" claimed to have made a purchase, of an Indian chief, of lands on this river, of which, they say, they "had previously taken possession;" embracing the spot where they built their fort, which they named "Good Hope." This they held for a number of years; and, in 1650, their possessions here, as then defined, in a very much abridged form, were confirmed to them by the English, though the jurisdiction of the Dutch over this territory was never acknowledged; and, in 1654, their lands and fort were "sequestered by the authorities of Connecticut." The Dutch, in the autumn of 1635, intended a more formidable assertion of their claims to this river. With the purpose of taking possession of its entrance, and erecting fortifications, a vessel was sent from New Netherland, and appeared off the harbor a few days after a party sent for the same purpose by Winthrop, jun., had arrived, who frustrated the design. This gentleman had arrived at Boston in the early part of October, with his commission from the Connecticut patentees. The next month, he sent a bark of thirty tons, and about twenty men, "with all needful provisions, to take possession of the mouth of Connecticut; . . . for," says Winthrop, "the Dutch intended to take it." The English had mounted two pieces of cannon, and prevented their landing. "Thus, providentially," says Dr. Trumbull, "was this fine tract of country preserved for our venerable ancestors and their posterity." The three towns which afterwards received the names of Hartford, Windsor, and Wethersfield, had been settled by people from Massachusetts before the arrival of Winthrop, jun., and before the design of the patentees was known. Winthrop joined the settlement at the mouth of the river in the spring of 1636. For letters addressed to him during his brief residence at this place, besides those in this volume, see Winthrop's N. E., i. 387–391; and 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. 369–372. The authorities below are referred to for the statements in this note. — *Winthrop's N. England*, i. 173, 174; *Bradford's Plymouth Plantation*, pp. 311–315, 338, 339; *Trumbull's Connecticut*, i. 30, 60, 61, 62, 495–498; *J. Hammond Trumbull's Colonial Records of Connecticut*, i. 254; *Brodhead's New York*, pp. 234, 235, 259–261, 262, 520, 583; *Barber's Hist. Coll. of Conn.*, p. 31; 3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 514. — Eds.

* Rev. Thomas Hooker, who had been settled at Cambridge, removed this year, with the majority of his congregation, to Hartford. They left on the last day of May, "and travelled more than a hundred miles through a hideous and trackless wilderness." They were nearly a fortnight on their journey. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 390; *Trumbull's Hist. Conn.*, i. 64; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

WILLIAM GOODWIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To my worthy good freind Mr. John Winthrop, at his house in Pequoit, these present.

Honored Sir, — I thank you for your kinde vissitation of my wife & daughter in my absenc, & for your care & paines to do them good, which through mercy hath had good success with my wife; for she hath had very much ease of her greife, by atending your direction, but the water she vsed is all spent, & the season such as we canott haue any supply from yourself. I do intreat you therefore (if it stand with your liking) to send vs the ingreedients & direction how to vse it, & we shall carfully atend the same, vntill we can receive other from your owne hands; for we are very loath to breake ofe the vse of such meanes as God hath been pleased to make so vsfull to vs in this case. Sir, though I do thus intreate, yet I shall leaue all to your wisdom to dispose, who better knoweth what may be don. Sir, there is a neighbor of ours at work vpon the ship, viz: Thomas Hubberd,* at whose returne home I pray you to send me your minde concerning my wif; also I do vnderstand you tooke notice of my daughters condition. As she is now, being with child, I much desire your iudgment concerning her, whether you do think of any thing that may be needfull to be don in this turne of providence with her, that may be healpfull to the cure of her palsey. Sir, I am bold with you, I hope I shall endeavor to answer your loue & paines for me & mine. I pray remember my loue to Mr. Blin-

* See Savage's Geneal. Dict., ii 486. — Eds.

man,* & thus with my thankfullnes & du respects to your self, I rest yours to vse,

WILL: GOODWIN.

HARTFORD, Dec: 16th 1651.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Gooddin."

WILLIAM GOODWIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

WORTHY SIR, — My wif doth intreate you that you would be pleased to send her some of that powder wherwith she may make that water, she hath made vse of (by your direction) to wash her legg with all, for she fyndeth more releife & ease of her greife by that meanes than by any other she hath formerly had the vse of. I pray you to do it by the first opportunity you can take. If any of our neighbours be with you now, I doubt not but any of them would be willing to bring it to vs. Sir, that phisick you sent my daughter . . . . . but it seems that it did not affect . . . . . any way. She is much as she was in . . . . . etent health & wellfare, saue onely that . . . . . f any way did appeare to yourselfe . . . . . ure we should be very glad to attend . . . . . do desire to vnderstand your minde . . . . . Sir, I do growe more & more into your . . . . . hope to atend some way of recompenc . . . . . nt; & thus with my du respects to you, ... nes, I rest your worships much engaged,

WILL: GOODWIN.

. . . N 24th 52.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Goodin about his daughters palsy."

---

* See letter of Jonathan Brewster in this volume, dated 27–1657. — EDS.

WILLIAM GOODWIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the much Honored & my much esteemed ffreind, Mr. John Wyntrupp, at his house in Pequoite, these present.

Much honored Sir, — At our parting at Weathersfeild, you enquired of me aboute some linen cloth, but you did not conclude what you would haue of it, you onely ask me if I could spare 20 or 30 yeards of it, & I told you that I thought I might, but, as I say, you did not conclude any thing. I conceaue one reason might be that we were all in much hast to be gon, it being night, but when I came home, & perceauing my cloth to goe fast away, I thought meete to cutt of 20 y. & reserue it for you, which I meane to send downe to you by the ffirst opportunity I can. It is, 10 y. of it of the broadest sort, & the other 10 y. is narower. Sir, you saide somthing to me also about another place for my daughter to be in, & wished me to speake a word with Mr. Blinman about it. In our hast, I, being to goe home on foote, could not atend to do it. I know Mr. Blinman wilbe as healpfull to me in it as he may, if you please to hinte it to him, that it is my desire he would do so, & therefore I intreate yourself & him that in case you see that Ed: Stallions house be not so convenient for her, to do what you can to gett a better. I would haue wryte to Mr. Blinman & also to my daughter, but not knowing of this opportunity of sending till just at this instant, & being presently to goe forth of towne, I could not haue tyme to wryt any more. Sir, the good Lord be with you; so resting Yours

Will: Goodwin.

Hartford, June 1°, 1653.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Goodin."

WILLIAM GOODWIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Honored Sir, — You will heer of the sad dispention of the Lord towards vs, by some other hand, in so suddainly takeing from vs our Honored Governer;* for although death be the way of all flesh, yet the maner of this was such as I haue not knowne the like in my tyme. I was, with some others, in a conference with him in the euening of that night wherein he dyed: & he was as cherefull, & spake as fresh & freely as euer he did (in my hearing) in his life: & the like he did at supper & duty at home, & went so to his bed: and yet not long after the midtyme of the same night, he accomplisht that greate worke of exchanging this life for a better, the which he did so seweet & so silent, that his wife, who lay by him, &, being awake, had no other intimation thereof, but onely his short breathing, & had onely the liberty to aske him how he did, but he gave her no word to answer. Sir, this was a very choise death to him, being allwayes prepared, but the sadder to vs: now the Lord teach vs his meaning heerin, & give vs to make right vse of it.

Sir, I thanke you for your great care for my daughter expressed in your wryting to her husband, & we intend to improue such further meanes as you shall ad[v]ise, when season is fitting, that we may make a full triall of Gods providence this way, but my wife suspecteth that she is breeding child, only she is not certaine, but as things shall apeare I will wryte to you againe, to give you information, that so you may order what you prepare for her

* The date of the death of John Haynes, Governor of Connecticut, is generally recorded as 1st March, 1653–4. The Deputy-Governor (Hopkins) was in England; and the freemen met on the 16th of February, according to Trumbull, and elected Thomas Welles moderator of the General Court; and he was present and acting in that office at the session which commenced 1st March, 1653–4, — the same day on which Haynes is said to have died. It would appear, from the date of this letter, that his death took place in January. — *Trumbull's Hist. of Conn.*, i. 216, 217; *Pub. Records of Conn.*, i. 250, 251; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

accordinly. This letter heerinclosed was left at my house for you, but when or by whom I do not know. Thus with my respects to you, I rest:

WILL: GOODWIN.

HARTFORD, Jan. 10th. 53:

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Gooddin."

WILLIAM GOODWIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the much honored the Governor, Mr Wynthrop, at his house in Hartferd, these present.

MUCH HONORED SIR, — After mine owne & wiues servis remembred to yourselfe & Mrs. Wynthrop, I am bold to present these few lynes vnto yourselfe. Honored Sir, I received a wryting from the Honored Court at Hartford wherein they are pleased to moue me to such a disposall of Mr. Hopkins trust comitted to vs the trustees, as we cannot consent vnto. I haue sent by the same hand which bringeth this vnto your worship my answer thervnto; & the which I do desire may be a fynall issue of these agitations between vs, & the honored Court, which haue been very preiudiciall to that pious act of the worthy donor, as also to vs, the trustees, & almost all the countrey beside, by thus long, & without cause, detaining the estate from vs, who only haue right to dispose thereof, & therby hindering the vsefull emprouement of the same for the glory of God & good of his people. They are pleased to speake much of the settlement of vnity, peace, loue, & freindship, between yourselues & vs. I conceaue this which now I do offer to the Court, is a nearer way to attaine to that, then that which is propownded by them to me, & also may be for the prevention of farther trubble, which otherwise is not like to be avoided, for we ought

not, in duty to the estate & worthy donor therofe, but forth with vse our utmost endeavor to free the same, that it may be vnder the emprouement the worthy donor bequeathed vnto. Thus, Worthy Sir, I committ you & all my good freindes with you to the holy guidance & blessing of heaven, & rest yours most willing to liue the little remainer of my few dayes in loue & peace with you all,

WILL: GOODWIN:

HADLEY, Feb: first, 63.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Goodin, Recd. Feb: 9: 1663."

LETTERS OF LION GARDINER.*

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Mr. John Winthrope Junior Esquire at Bostowne in the bay these present.

Worshipfull Sir, — I have received your letter, whearein I doe vnderstand that you are not like to returne,† and accordinge to your order I have sent your servaunts Robeart and Sara. I wonder that you did not write to me, but it is noe wonder, seeing that since your

* Lion Gardiner, a native of Scotland, after having served as a lieutenant in the British Army in Holland, came over to New England in the "Norsey Bark," of twenty-five tons; arriving at Boston 28th November, 1635. He was engaged as engineer to superintend the erection of the fort at Saybrook, which he afterwards commanded. His wife was a native of Holland. He resided four years at Saybrook; and here his son David was born 29th April, 1636, being the first white child born in Connecticut. In 1639, he purchased the island near Long Island which bears his name, and which he called the "Isle of Wight." He removed to Easthampton, on Long Island, in 1653; where he was chosen a magistrate, and where he continued to reside until his death in 1663. He wrote, in his old age, an interesting account of the Pequot War, which is published in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., iii.; and a Memoir, by a descendant, is in the tenth volume of the same series. See also Winthrop's N. E., i. 174, 212; Thompson's Hist. of Long Island, pp. 199, 200; 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., iii. 131–160; x. 173–185. — Eds.

† See page 44, *note* †. Winthrop had left Saybrook some time before the date of this letter, as we find him present at the Quarter Court holden at Boston, 6th September of that year. Indeed he appears to have made a visit to his wife (Elizabeth Reade) at Ipswich, soon after the birth of her first child, the July previous; and possibly he may not have returned again to Saybrook. Winthrop's commission was dated 18th July, 1635, constituting him "governour of the river Connecticut, with the places adjoining thereunto, for and during the space of one whole year, *after his arrival there.*" Although Winthrop appears not to have entered upon his duties *on the spot* until the following spring, yet he sent out men, and began the fortifying and settling of the place, the November following his arrival (Oct. 6) with his commission. At the date of this letter, he may have considered his authority as governor about expiring; though Gardiner still continued to give him intelligence of the condition and progress of affairs at Saybrook, which seems to have been in a necessitous condition. — *Mass. Col. Records; Felt's Ipswich*, p. 310; *Trumbull's Conn.*, i. 50, 51; *Gardiner's Pequot Wars, in* 3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, iii. 137–139. — Eds.

and Mr. Phenix departure, there hath beene noe provison sent, but, one the contrary, people to eate vp that small, now noe store, that wee had. Heare hath come many vessells with provison, to goe vp to the plantations, but none for vs. It seemes that wee have neather masters nor owners, but are left like soe many servaunts whose masters are willinge to be quitt of them; but now to late I wish that I had putt my thoughts in practice, that was to stay and take all such provisions out of the vessells, as was sufficent for a yeare; summer goods God's good providence hath not onely brought, but allso stayed, but if the could have gone, I did intent to have taken all the victualls out, and kept them for owre necesitie; and seeinge that you, Mr. Peeters, and Phenwicke* knowes that it was agaynst my minde to send the Pequitts present agayne, and I with theas few men are, by your wills and likeings, put into a warlike condicion, there shall be noe cause to complayne of our ffidelitie and indeavours to you ward, and if I see that there be not such care for vs that owr lives may be preserved, then must I be fforced to shift as the Lord shall direct. I wish that it may be for God's glory and all your credits and proffitts. Heare is not 5 shillings of money and noe bevor. The Dutch man will bringe vs some corne and rye, but we have noe thinge to pay him for it. Mr. Pinchin† had a bill to receive all the wampampeige we had; we have not soe much as will pay for the mendinge of our ould boate. I have sent your cowes vp to the plantations with 2 oxen; 2 of them we have killed and eaten, with the goates: a ramm goate was brought from the Manatos, but the enemie gott him and all the greate swine, 22, in one day, and had gotten all the sheep and cowes likewise, had we not sallid out. It was one the Saboath day, and there was 4 men with

* Hugh Peter and George Fenwick. See 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. — Eds.

† William Pynchon, who this year founded Springfield. See his letters to John Winthrop, jun., in 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. 369–372. — Eds.

the cowes with fierlocks. For the sheep, I have kept them thus longe, and when the pinckes comes downe I hope the will bringe hay for them, for I haue not hay for them to eate by the way, if I should sent them to the bay; but now for our present condicion; since Mr. Phenwicke is gone for England, I hope you will not be fforgettfull of vs, and I thinke if you had not beene gone away and he had not come, we had not as yet beene at warrs with the Indians vppon such tearmes; they vp the river when I sent to them how it stood with vs, & in what need we weare, did jeare or mocke vs, but time and patience will shew the efect of it. I heare that the Bachelor is to bringe vs provison, I pray you forgett vs not when shee comes from the Bermudas with some potates, for heare hath beene some Virginians that hath taught vs to plant them after a nother way, and I have put it in practise, and found it good. I pray you when you pay or recken with the owners of the pincke which brought the gunns heather, to shorten them for 3 weekes time and diet, for Sergant Tilley* for pilateinge the pincke vp with the cowes. I have, instead of your man Robert, hired Azarias for 20 shillings per moneth, or else I should not have let him come away. Heare is 2 men and ther wifes come from the Duch plantation, a tayler and a shipp write, and I sett them boath to worke, but I have neather money nor victualls to pay them. I doe intend to sett the Duch man to worke to make a Dutch smacke sayle, which shall carry 30 or 40 tun of goods, and not draw 3 foote and a halfe of water, principally to tranceport goods and passengers vp the river in safety. I pray lett us not want money or victualls, that some things may goe forward. Mr. Peeter sayd when he was heare that I should sell victualls to

* John Tillie, who was soon after killed by the Indians on the river above the Saybrook Fort. Winthrop notices the incident under date of October, "about the middle" of that month; but his entry must be out of place, as it occurred in the following spring, about April. See Gardiner's Pequot Wars, 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., iii. 148. — Eds.

John Nott,* Richard Graves, and them that came from the Duch plantation, out of that little we had, and if all fayled he would supply vs with more, and fish like wise, to sell, but we have neather fish nor flesh to sell for others nor yet for [ourse]lves. Your wisdome will vnderstand the meaneinge of this writeinge.

At the closing of this letter came the cetch from the Naragansets with corne, and I haue tacken one hondard buchils of it, be caus I do not know whether we shall haue anie relief or not. Sum other small things of goodman Robbingson and John Charls † I haue resauid, I pray yow fayl not to pay them. Thus with my loue to your selfe, your wife, ffather, mothar, and brethren, I reste yowrs to cumand

LION GARDINER.

SAYBROOCK, this 6 of Novem. 1636. 1636.

We haue great cause of fear that William Quick‡ with all the men & barke are taken by the Indians, coming downe the river; the Hope & they came downe togither from Watertowne, & came togither 20 mile. William Quick stayd there behind, & we fear went ashore a fowling. The Hope came in yesterday at noone, the wind hath been very faire to haue brought them downe ever since, & yet they are not come. We sadly fear the event: Pray for vs & consider, &c. &c. &c.

NOV: 7, late at night.

Immediately after the writing this they came in dark night beyond expectation: but I thinke it would be good if no vessels may be suffred to come, but the men knowne & fitted with armes suitable, charg'd not to goe ashore, for they venture not onely their owne liues but wrong others

* John Nott was a resident of Wethersfield for many years. — EDS.

† John Charles was of Charlestown this year. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

‡ Quick was a mariner of Charlestown. — *Ibid.* — EDS.

also. The Indians are many hundreds of both sides the riuer, & shoote at our pinaces as they goe vp & downe, for they furnish the Indians with peeces, powder, & shot, & they come many times & shoot our owne pieces at vs, they haue 3 from vs allready, 5 of Capt Stones, one of Charles his, &c. Pardon our hast, &c. &c.

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Mr. John Winthrop at Boston, Ipsidge, or ese where, thes deliver.

Worshipfull Sir, — These are to certyfie you how the Lord hath beene pleased to deale with vs this winter: it hath pleased him, of his goodnes and mercy, to give vs rest from the Indians all this winter, butt one the 22th of the last moneth* I, with tenn men more with me, went abou[e] our neck of land to fire some small bushes and marshes, whear we thought the enimie might have lien in ambush, and aboute halfe amile from home we started 3 Indians, and havinge posibility to have cutt them short, we runinge to meett them, and to fire the marsh, but whylest our men was settinge it one fire, there rushed out of the woods, 2 severall wayes, a great company of Indians, which though we gaue fire vppon them, yett they run one to the very mussells of our peices, and soe the shott 3 men downe in the place, and 3 more men shott that escaped, of which one died the sam[e] night; and if the Lord had not putt it into my mind to make the men draw ther swords, the had taken vs all aliue, soe that sometime shouttinge and sometime retraightinge, keepinge

* Winthrop (i. 212) relates this incident under the same date; and perhaps he made his entry from an inspection of this very letter. He, however, errs in saying there were "nine" men besides the lieutenant. Gardiner tells the story more at length in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., iii. 143, 144. — Eds.

them of with our sword[s,] we recovered a bayre place of ground, which this winter I had cleard for the same vse, and they durst not follow vs any further, because yt is vnder command of our great guns, of which I hope the have had some experience, as we heare by the relation of other Indians, and your freind Sacious* and Nebott are the cheife actors of the treachery & villainy agaynst vs. As concerninge my sheep, which you writt to me of, I tooke order with Mr. Gibbins about them, but if he be not yett come home, I would intreat you that the may be kept with yours, untill you heare from him. Thus hopeinge that you will be a meanes to stirr vp our freinds in the bay, out of there dead sleep of securytie, to think that your condicon may be as ours is, vnles some speedy course be taken, which must not be done by a few, but by a great company, for all the Indian[s] haue ther eyes fixed vppon vs, and this yeare the will all joyne with vs agaynst the Pequtt, and it is to be feared that the next year the will be agaynst vs. We have vsed 2 sheets of your lead, which was in square $\frac{64}{40}$ $\frac{}{104}$ foote. I hav writ to the gouernour to pay you soe much agayne. I haue sent you your bead steed, and would haue made a better, butt time would not permit, for we watch every other night, neuer puttinge of our clothes, for the Indians show them selves in troupes aboute vs, every day, as this bearer can certyfie you more at large. Thus committinge you, your wife, father and mother, Mr. Peeter, and the rest of our frends, to God, I rest

Your asured frend to command

LION G[A]RDINER.

1636.

SEABROOKE this 23th of the first moneth, 1636.

---

* Or "Sashious" (not Sassacus, the Pequot chief), the Sachem of the Western Nianticks, with whom Winthrop, jun., had established friendly relations, and with whom he entered into a verbal contract for a considerable portion of this chief's territory; a claim subsequently not confirmed by the Commissioners of the United Colonies. — *Hazard*, ii. 93, 94; *Caulkins's New London*, p. 27. — EDS.

I mentioned that your lead was the one shiet 16 foot longe and 4 brood, the other 10 longe 4 brodd.

16	10
4	4
64	40
40	
104 square foot.	

Indorsed by J. Winthrop, jun., "Leift Leon Gardiner:"

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much honored ffrend Mr. John Winthrop at Nameag, dd.

Honored Sir, — I haue receiued yours by the Duchman, with the newes, for the which I humbly thanke you. I sent you a bushell of hay seeds by Dauid Provost, a Duchman; if you thinke that it will proue and sute your ground, you may haue more, if you please. I heare you haue gotten sheepe: if you haue not a compleat English rame for them, I can lett you haue one which will bee a great advantage to you. This bearers, beinge our frends, desired me to write to you that thay might leaue their canow with you in safty, whilst thay goe to Mohegan, which I desier, and you shall command me as much in the like respect. I pray remember me to your wife and sister. Soe I rest

Lion Gardiner.

Wight, this 14th Aprill, 1649.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Leift: Gardiner, Recd. Apr.: 16:"

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worthyly Honnorid met. John Wthorp at his hows at Pequit, theas present.

1650, FROM THE ILE OF WIGHT, Aprill 27.

HONNORID SER, — I resavid yours by the Indian, with the hay seed, for which I kindly thanke yow; and for the cows that I have to sell, yow may have them. Thay ar ten, 5 on thier second or 3d califf, 5 heffers redi to calve. If yow will have all, when their calves ar wenid, yow may, or 5 now, the rest 10 weeks hence, for fiftie pound, in good marchantabl wampem, bever, or silver; but if yow wil have them now, before the hefers have calvid, then I wil keep the 5 first calves, and their price is 55*li.* If my ocations wear not great, I wowld not sel som of them for 8*li.* a peece. As consarning the yong man yow writ of, this is our determination: not to have aboue 12 fafmilies, and wee know that we may pay as much as 24 in othar plasis, by reson of the fruitfulnes of our ground, and by reson that we ar to be but few, we ar resolvid not to resave anie, but such as ar fit for Cherch estate, being rethar wiling to part with sum of theas hear, then to resave more without good testimonie. Att present wee ar willing to giue this man you writ of 20*li.* a year, with such diat as I myself eat, til we see what the Lord will do with vs; and being he is but a yong man, hapily he hath not manie books, thearfore let him know what I have. First, the 3 Books of Martters, Erasmus, moste of Perkins, Wilsons Dixtionare, a large Concordiance, Mayor on the New T[e]stement; Some of theas, with othar that I have, may be vcefull to him. I pray you, for the Lord sake, do what you can to get him hathar, and as I am ingagid to you allredie, so shall I be more

Yours to comand in the Lord,

LION GARDENER.

I pray you send me word speedily about the cows, for els I must dispoes of them othar ways.

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worthyly honnored John Winthorp Esquire, at Pequit, theis present.

Honnorid Ser, — My loue and sarvis bing remembrid to yow and al yours, ar theas to intreat yow to send me word whethar thear be anie hope of the man of Sitient, whome yow writt to me of; if not him, whethar yow hear of anie othar that might serue vs. I pray yow consider our conditon, and though wee might be forgit of yow loue and care for vs, yet the Lord wil not, whoes caws it is. Thus, in haste, I comit yow to the protextion of him that watchith over Israell, and rest

Yours by his help,

Lion Gardener.

Wight, this 10th Agust, 1650.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Leift: Gardener."

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

From the Ile of Wight, this 22th November, 1651.

Honnored Sir, — My loue and sarvice being remembrid to you and yours, ar theas to let you know that I am myndid sudenly to sell 20 or 30 pounds worth of sheep, and having this opertunitie, I thought to profer them to yow, knowing that thay ar of a better kinde then yours ar, espeshally if yow think fit to take a ram or 2 of mine,

& sarve your other sheep with them, but that at your owne choys. Now if yow pleas to haue them, the pay that I desyar for them is marchantable wampem, or buttar at the ordenarie price, 6 pence a lb., the wampem to be payd to Martin Cruyer,* the Duch man, when he cums in the s[p]ring to Goodman Stanton, or buter to him when he thinks fit to fetch it; but if you minde not to have them, then, let Goodman Stanton have the next profer, and let me have a flat yea or nay by this bearar, Goodman Bond. Thus in haste, I rest

Yours to be comandid,

LION GARDENER.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Lt. Gardiner."

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his worthily honored John Winter, Esq. at his house in Pequit, these present.

FFROM THE ILEAWEIGHT, this 21 Ffebruary, 1651.

HONERED SIR, — My loue and seruice being remembred to you and yours, hoping of your health, as we are all at present, God be praysed; these are to let you know that all yours sheepe ewes which were marked for you, according to your order, by goodman Bond, on Saturday last were all well and in good case, and we looke for lambes the begginning of March, therefore you may order it as you see good, for the fetching of them away. I desire that you would satisfie Captaine Cryar with 30 pound of good wampom, for I haue depended upon it, and, if there be any oppertunity, I pray you to send me ten or twenty bushells of Indian meale, and I shall returne you, either

* Capt. Martin Crygier, a merchant of New Orange, who was in command of Fort Casimir (Newcastle, Del.), in 1656. After the surrender of New Amsterdam, in 1664, he took the oath of allegiance to the English. — *Docs. rel. to the Col. Hist. of N. Y.* — EDS.

barly, molt, or wampom. I should intreat you that these bags of wheat that I now send may be returned the first oppertunity, for we are in want of meale. Thus hoping to see you heere when you fetch the sheepe, I committing [*sic*] you to the Lord and rest

Yours by his helpe,

LION GARDENER.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Leift. Gardiner, wherin his order for the payment of 30*li.* to Mr. Creiger."

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worthyly honord John [Winthrop] Esqr.

HONORED SIR, — I expected you heere the last weeke. The Miantaquit Sachem told me, that you would come to fetch the sheepe, but, hauing this oppertunity, I sent these 3 bags more, that if you haue any corne, I desire you to fill my bags, and send them by Joseph Garlicke, and if you haue none, speake to Thomas Stanton to fill them; and when you come for the sheepe we will make all strait on all sides. If there be any salt, I desire you to send me 2 or 3 bushells: thus hoping to se you heere, I rest Yours to command,

LION GARDENER.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Lion Gardiner."

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

FROM THE ILE OF WIGHT, this last of Febrewari, 1652.

HONORID SER, — My loue and sarvis being remembrid, ar theas to thank you for the hay seeds you sent me. I sowid them then, and sum came up. I have sent you a rariti of seeds which came from the Mouhaks, which is

a kinde of milions, but far exelith all othar. They ar as good as weat frowar to thikin milk, and swet as sugar, and bakid thay [are] most exelent, having no shell. You may keep them as long as anie pumkins. And whearas you formarly spake to me to get you sum shels, I have sent you nou by Goodman Garlick 1200, and allso 32 shilings in good wampem, desyaring you, if posible, to send me 2 or 3 bushils of sumar wheat that is clean, without smut, for seed; for I plowid not a foot of ground the last year, and now would fain sow sum that is clear of smut. I have one bagg with you still, and have sent 3 more, desiaring to fill them with meall and no peas, and if you wil be pleasid to balance our small acounts, what is dew to you, I will send, or if yow wil take anie goods of Martin Cruyar, charge it on my acount, and I wil pay him, and if anie opertewniti aford, hearafter, you may send me meall at all times, and I shall be redie to make pay to your desiar. Thus hoping to see you shortly, I comit yow to the Lord, and rest, evar

Yours, LION GARDENER.

My wife desiarith Mistris Lake to get hur a dusen of trays, for shee hearith that thear is a good tray maker with you, and shee or I will send him pay, or let Martin Cruyar, if he lyke anie thing he brings.

The shels cost me 30 shillings, the wampem in the bag, 32.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "L: Gardiner."

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his worthyly honnorid frind, John Winthorp, Esqu. theas present, Pequit.

HONNORID SER, — My loue and sarvis being remembrid, ar theas to let you know that I resavid the 2 bushils of

Indian meall by Cap. Sibada,* in your sak, and have sent in it 3 bushils of malt, and 4 more in a sak of myne oune, and is all that I have at present. I thought to have sent yow sum barly to have maltid thear, becaws it is far better then the last year, but not knowing your minde, let it alone. I pray you send me what Indian meall yow can in the bags and emti barils, and what is in the bags and what in the barils a part. Conserning your sheep, thay ar all alyve, and though I have lost a great manie lambs this year, and never lost anie before, yet yours is a sofitient increas. Thus in haste, I rest yours to vce,

LION GARDENER.

APRILL 5, 1652.

If you have no store of Indian, I pray you speak to Thomas Stanton, to send me 8 bushiles.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Leift. Gardiner."

LION GARDINER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the much honored Gouernor John Winthrope att Conetticutt, these dd.

HONORED SIR, — I haue made bould to write vnto you a line ore to. So it is, that, by a neybour of yours it was propounded unto me the sale of my Iland, but I hauing children and children's children, am not minded to sell it att present; butt I haue another plac, (I suppose) more

* Kempo Sybada, the Dutch captain, who was granted a lot in New London in 1650–1. He had also a grant for a fishing-station on Block Island; and here his vessel was seized in 1653, which act was the occasion of a protracted lawsuit against Edward Hull. Sybada was fined ten pounds, the same year, by the General Court of Connecticut, for bartering powder and lead with the Indians. He is spoken of by the Commissioners of Jamaica, in 1655, in a letter found among the Winthrop Papers, as "a person that hath bin honestly very seruiceable to his Highnes and the Common-wealth of England in these affaires in the Indies." — *Caulkins's New London*, pp. 68, 350; *Public Records of Conn.*, i. 242; 4 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 289. — EDS.

convenient for the gentleman that would buy, liinge vpon Long Iland, betweene Huntington & Setokett: onely I thought good to make you aquainted with it, because I would not willingly be a means of bringing any into these parts, that would not like you and my ould freinds in this riuer; and therefore, if you & Mr. Willis & Mr. Allen, Mr. Stone, & other of my freinds like nott the buisnes, I can yett stop. If it be thought he wilbe as cordiall to you as I haue beene & yet am, it shal be, otherwise not. So desiring, when you can haue opertunty, to lett me vnderstand your mind hearin. I rest

Yours in what duty and service I can,

LION GARDENER.

His name is Mr. Daniell Searle.

NOVEMB. 5. 1660.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Lieft: Gardiner about sale of land vpon Long Iland betweene Huntington & Setuket, to the Governor of Barbados that then was, Mr. Serle."

LETTERS, &c., OF JONATHAN BREWSTER.*

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Woorshippfull John Winthrope Gouernour of the ffoortte in Cunnitecutt Riuer† ddd. these.

Woorshippfull Sir, — This is, (If I maye make soe bould with you) that you would be pleased, as to lett some of your servants to be a meanes of sending two hogsheads of provisiones, marked ST, with thes at the Riuers mouth, by any vessell that comes vp the Riuer, eyther to Watertowne or Newtowne or this plantation;‡ and if my brother Oldam§ be at the Riuers mouth, I suppose if he knowes that it is myne, he will doe me that curtesye.

---

* Jonathan Brewster, the eldest son of Elder William Brewster, was born in Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, Eng. He emigrated with his father to Holland, and was left there by him when the Pilgrims embarked from Delft Haven in 1620; but he came over to Plymouth in the following year. He removed, about 1632, to Duxbury. In 1635, and also in June of the next year, as appears by the following letter, he was in command of the Plymouth trading-house in Connecticut. He was representative from Duxbury in 1639; removed to New London as early as 1649, and died in 1659. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.; Bradford's Plymouth Plant.*, p. 339; *Caulkins's New London, passim.* — Eds.

† See p. 44, note †. — Eds.

‡ The three towns on Connecticut River settled by persons from Massachusetts were first named "Watertowne," "Newtowne," and "Dorchester," after those towns in the Bay whence the emigrants came. On the 21st February, 1636–7, the Connecticut Court directed that they should be called "Wythersfield," "Harteford Towne," and "Windsor." — *Conn. Col. Records*, i. 1–7. — Eds.

§ John Oldham, an early resident of Plymouth Colony, whom Bradford has immortalized in his "History," afterwards a respectable citizen of Watertown. He was much engaged in trade with the Indians, and was killed by them at the entrance of Narragansett Bay, July, 1636. — *Bradford's Plymouth Plant., passim; Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 189–191; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

Thus fearing I am ouer bould with your Woorshipp heerin, with my duty remembred to your selfe, I take my leave and rest

Yours to vse to his poore power

JOHNNATHAN BREWSTER.

MATTAMUKE,* this 30th Aprill, 1636.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster. Aprill: 30th: 1636."

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull John Winthrop, Governour at the mouth of the river Coniticutt.

Haveing 4 dayes agoe had occasion to send my man, who hath the Indian language, to a place called Munhicke,† distant from the Pequents 12 myles, partly vpon busines of my owne, & partly to discover the proceedings of the Pequents, as also there present abode, in great secrecy, the sachem thereof, called Won case,‡ sent me word that upon the 23d of May last, Saso cuse,§ cheife sachem of the Pequents, with his brother Sacowauein, & the old men, held consultation one day, & most part of one night, about cutting off of our Plymouth Barke, being then in their harbour weakely manned, who resolving therevpon, appoynted 80 men in armes before day to surprise hir: but it pleased the over ruleing Power of God to hinder them, for as soone as those bloody executjoners arose out of ambush with their canoes, the deserned her vnder sayle with a fayre winde, returning home; which

* Subsequently Windsor. — EDS.

† On the Thames. See p. 71, note. — EDS.

‡ Usually called Uncas. — EDS.

§ Sassacus. — EDS.

act of theirs (circumstances considered) is intolerable for vs to putt vp.

I vnderstand likewise by the same messenger that the Pequents have some mistrust that the English will shortly come against them (which I take is by indiscreet speaches of some of your people here to the natives) & therefore out of desperate madnesse doe threaten shortly to sett both vpon Indians & English, joyntly. ffurther by the same Sachem, (whom I have found faithfull to the English) I am enformed that Saso cuse with his brother, vpon consultation with their own men, was an actor in the death of Stone,* & thes men, being 5 of the principall actors alive, 3 living at Pequent, & 2 at Ma ham le cake,† his brothe[r] Saco wa uen, with another of his men, cheife actors in the death of the 2 last vpon the Iland.

I am informed also by the Dutch that this weeke into the River from Manhatas, that 2 English men that dwells there went in a canoe to Long Iland to looke for goods that was cast away in the Barke that came forth of the Bay, who noe soone landed neare the wracke, but was sett vpon, & immediately one slayne. The other, recovering his peice, killed one Indjan, & presently recovering the slayne mans peice shott another, who recovering his canoe, gott safe againe to Manhatas: & vpwards of 2 yeares agoe the Pequents confessed that if our Barke had but stayed 6 houres longer in their harbor, they had cutt hir off, or at least had attempted it.

Yours in all love & service,

JONATHAN BREWSTER.

PLIMOUTH HOUSE IN CUNITECUTT, this 18th of June, 1636.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster, 1636."

---

* The death of Stone occurred in the early part of the year 1633–4. — EDS.

† Perhaps "Mamacock," the neck of land on which Fort Trumbull is now situated. — *Caulkins's New London*, p. 122. — EDS.

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Sir, — I haue by this bearer sent you a parcell of ore, which I haue tryed in the Bay, and find it good & profitable; therfore, if you, vppon tryall, fynd it soe, I will bring you as much as you please, for it lyes neare the sea. I haue owing mee by William Bartlitt 56*li.*, 10*s.*, 8*d.*; or thereabouts, the which receaue for me & giue him a dischardge, & I will at spring of the yeare accounte with him; the which I pray you receaue & keepe for me till the spring: onely by an Indian sende me 10*li.*, with your aduise about the siluer ower. Also I purpose the next spring to remove my dwelling to you, if I can haue encouragement from your towne, which I praye you send me word ouer land by an Indian to Duxborow, and I will content him. Thus presuming of your loue herein, I salute you, and in great hast take leave and rest

Yours to be commanded

Johnnathan Brewster.

Rod Iland, this 1 Dec. 1648.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster."

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Worthy Sir, — I haue written to you formerly, but not knowing that it shall come to your hands, this is to intreate you doe me the kyndnes as demand & receaue of William Bartlitt the sume of 56*li.* which he owes me, & keepe it for me, onely sende me by an Indian over land to Duxborow, 10*li*, with a letter, desyring you to trye the siluer ower I now send you, as I haue done at Boston; that soe I may knowe whether it will be advantage or noe

for mee; and accordingly I shall at Spring of the yeare bring a tounne or 2: which I can doe, lying neare the sea. Also, Sir, I haue a purpose to remoue my abode to your plantation, which, if your towne please to accomodate mee, I will at Spring come to you; of which, Sir, I pray you send me worde of by an Indian, & I will contente him for his paynes. Thus desyring you to be myndfull of me in the premises, I leave you, with my best love remembred, & taking leaue rest

Yours to be commanded

JOHNNATHAN BREWSTER.

RODE ILAND, this 2d Decem. 1648.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster, rec. Dec: [20."] (The figures erased.)

JONATHAN BREWSTER'S ACKNOWLEDGMENT TO WILLIAM ALFORD.

Memorandum that I Johnnathan Brewster doe acknowledge my selfe indebted to Mr. William Allford of Boston, the sume of one pound, eighteene shillinges, 9*d.*, the which I bynde my selfe to pay or cause to be peayed to Mr. John Winthrop of Pequett, as his Assyne.

In wittnes wherof I haue sett to my hand this 29th Julij, 1650.

JOHNNATHAN BREWSTER.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewsters bill to Mr. Alford."

JONATHAN BREWSTER'S BOND TO ISAAC ALLERTON.

Be it knowen to all men by these presents, that I Johnnathan Brewster, ffreeman of Cunitecutt, and inhabitant of Pequett, doe by this present writing bynd ouer to Mr.

Isack Allerton, Senior, of Newhauen, Marchant, my house & home lott lying next to goodman Nicholles his home lott in Pequett, with all my lands, irreable and meddow, lying within the boundes of Pequett, with my trading house and landes thereto belonging at Manheken,* with three milch cowes and sixe sowes; all which I make ouer with out anny fraud or deceit, all my right and interest vnto the aboue sayd Isack, to him & his heires, for security of payement of a Bill of 165*li.* and 50*li.* per accountes, which sayd being peayed and satisfyed, that then this abouesayd housing, landes and cattell to returne to me the sayd Johnnathan, and then this instrument to be voyde and of none effect. Wittnes my hand & seale this 29th November, 1651.

JOHNNATHAN BREWSTER.

Wittnes herevnto.
JOHN WINTHROP. [SEAL.]
REBECCA SMITH.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewst[*torn*] gage [*torn*] to [*torn*] rton."

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrop, Esquire, ddd. Pequett.

WORSHIPFULL SIR, — Here is a great rumor of warres amongest these Indians. I would intreate you to send me what intelligence you haue, that soe I might the better secure my selfe here. Since that the Captain & Cary

* "Mohegen," or "Monhegen." Brewster had set up a trading-house there as early as 1649, and laid out for himself a large farm, still called "Brewster's Neck," on which the house stood. The deed of the land was given him by Uncas, April 25, 1650; and was confirmed by the town of New London, Nov. 30, 1652. It contained six or seven hundred acres. The place was subsequently included in the town of Norwich. — *Caulkins's New London*, pp. 65, 66. — EDS.

came hither to trade corne, I cannot gett one bushell of corne, insomuch that I am forced to send my sonn vp to Cunitecutt to bye for my family, which faulles out very ill for me, for I purposed to haue sente you some, but am now hindered. Therefore, Sir, you had best provide your selfe aboue, whilest the pinace [*torn*] are aboue. Thus with my duty remembrd, in hast I take leav[e] and rest,

Yours to comand

JOHNNATHAN BREWSTER.

MANHEKEN,* this 12th Aprill, 1653.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster."

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Efor Mr: Winthrope Esquire, Newhauen.†

HONNORED SIR, — I am much obliged vnto your Worshipp that at last you were myndfull of me, & sent the boke soe much desyred by goodman Staythrop, by which I haue gott much satisfaction & some further light, and would haue, in requitall, haue imparted some light to the onner thereof, if he had bene ignorant that it came to me; but fearing that, I forbeare. The booke it selfe gives such light as I wonder that wise & learned men fyndes it not. My worke goes on very well as can be desyred. The many synes giuen in this booke I really fynd trew, from the begining to this present; also some opperationes I see now, as formerly, which before I vnderstode not, now I doe by Artephius' booke, as the head of the Crowe, Vergines milke, &c., but espetially the 2d worke (which is most

---

* See p. 71, *note*. — EDS.

† Mr. Winthrop, as is well known, had been frequently solicited by citizens of New Haven to take up his residence at that place. He appears to be living there at this time; but, as will be seen page 84, he soon after became a resident of Hartford. — EDS.

difficult) is now mad plaine, as also in the tyme, wherein I was deceaued, for now I vnderstand that it is farr longer tyme then I thought of, all which, with many other particulars, I shall imparte, when it pleaseth God to bring vs togeather. Sir, I, with the rest of myne earnestly desyres your returne, with your family, if [it] might stand with your profitt & conveniency. Wee, & the whole Towne & Church wantes you. We are as naked without you, yea, indeed wee are as a body without a head, & that we might inioye your presence. I feare God sees us not worthy of such a blessing. My praiers to God is & shall be to him for that end; and my poore ability shall not be wanting to further the same. I haue therefor stirred the Townesmen to grant you what encouragement they can afford you to sett vp a forge here, which if you please here to settlle, may be one meanes to bringe you backe againe. I haue sent your worshipp, by John Elderkin, the booke you sent, intreating you not to vse my name, which, if you haue not, I will write as cleare a light, as farr as I dare to, in fyding the first ingredience; yet tell them, if you please, & as I say before, they are ignorant to whome the booke came, that the first figure in Fflamonell doth plainly resemblle the first ingredience: what it is, & from whence it comes, & how gotten; as there you may plainly see sett forth by 2 resemblances held in a mans hand: ffor the confectiones there named, is a delusyon, for they are but the operationes of the worke, after some tyme sett, as the scume of the Red Sea, which is the Vergines milke vppon the topp of the vessell, white. Red Sea is the sunn & mone calcinated, & brought & reduced into water minerall, which in some tyme & most of the wholle tyme is red. 2dly., The ffatt of mercuriall wynd, that is the ffatt or quintecence of sunn & mone, earth & water, drawen out from them both, & flyes aloft & bore vp by the opperation of our Mercury, that is our fyer, which is our aier or winde. Also for the threefold vessell, there ar three, without which three can-

not be done: the one for the first mas, or crias (?) out of which comes sunne & mone, earth & water; and the other 2 for our Mercurie or fyer ardent, which cannot be prepared without 2 vessels; which fyer is three, as Artephus, 203 page. First, the fyer of the lampe. 2., the fyer of ashes. 3ly, the fyer against natuer. The first is geometrically to be putt to the first masse, that is sunn & mone; the 2. is fyer, augmented, strenthened to a more fervent, yet moderat temperate heate; and the 3: is the fyer of fyer, that is the secett fyer drawen vp, being the quintescen[ce] of the sunn & mone, with the other mercuriall water ioyned with & tougeather, which is fyer elementall, or that that is against natuer; which fyers are & doth contain the whole mistery of the worke; & indede such a mistery that if you had the first ingredience, & the proportion of each, yet all were nothing, if you had not the certain tymes & seasons of the planetts & synes, when to giue more or lesse of this fyer, namely, a hott & drye, a cold & moist fyer, which you must vse in the mercuriall water, before it comes to blacke, & after into white, and then red, which is onely done by these fyers; which when you practise you will easily se & perceive, that you shall stand amased & admyre at the great & admirablle wisdom & power of our great God, that can produce such a wonderfull, efficatious, powerfull thing as this is, to convert all metallick bodyes to its owne natuer, which may well be called a first essence. I say by such weake, simplle meanes of soe littell vallue, & so littell & easy labor & skill, that I may say with Artephus, 200: page, it is of a worke soe easy & short, fitter for women & yong children then sage & grave men; but these thinges I write to your Worshipp, onely to giue a hinte of them to your selfe, who may command more of me by word of mouth. And I would write to others, as I sayd before, in larger manner, if, as I say befor, my name be not knowen to them.

Sir, I cannot but exced in writing beiond that that is fitt

& [*torn*] out of love and respect vnto you, I would haue kept this booke longer, but your letter to me desyres to haue it sent spedily & carfully; & therfor, hauing this opportunity, I could retaine it noe longer. It may be the owner therof is a student in this worke, & therfor dare not be to bould. I thanke the Lord I vnderstand the matter perfectly in the sayd booke, yet I could desyre to haue it againe, 12 monthes hence, for about that tyme I shall haue occasion to pervse, when as I come to the second working, which is most dificult, which will be some 3 or [4] monthes before the perfect white, and afterwardes, as Artephus sayth, I may burne my bokes, for, as he sayth, it is one regiment, as well for the red as for the white. The Lord in mearcy give me life to see the end of it. I feare nothing soe much as warres with our Indianes about vs, who stands ready to encounter with the vpland Indianes. What saffety I shall haue amongest them I knowe not, & to remove I cannot. I will rest vppon God, & lett him doe with me as seemes him good; onely I intreate you giue me what intelligence you haue of any danger approching. Thus Sir, being too bould, my prayers to God for your health & sprosperity, with all yours, shall not be wanting. I end with my duty & respectes to your selfe & 2d selfe, & love to all yours, and rest

Yours as my selfe,

JOHNNATHAN BREWSTER.

MOHEKEN, this 14th Jana: 1656.

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO ELIZABETH WINTHROP.

To his honored and much respected good frind Mrs. Winthrop, ddd Newhauen.

MRS. WINTHROP, — When I or myne has occasion to come to Pequett and behold your house, and nether you nor any of yours there, it makes vs sad & sorrowfull,

insoemuch that were it not in other respects, we should seldom come from Moheken to Pequet, but content our selves to live amongest my blacke neighbors, to mourne & lament our condition & our losse of such worthy & honnored frinds & endeared frindes: yet when I consider of youres & worthy Mr. Winthropes engagements of returning againe to your old habitation amongest vs, your poore neighbors, it is as lyfe from death, & gives spiritt to me & myne to rest contented till that tyme, that there will a tyme come to enioye your swete society once more, which will be made more pleasant, & I hope profitablle then before, as oft tymes it faulles out soe, that the goodnes of a thing is not soe well knowen as when it is wanting & longe absent from vs: therfor I desyre you to prove vs once more, whether we will amend, & make apparent our love & good neighborred towardes you & yours; that you may noe more haue cause to complaines of vs that way. O that I were able to perswade you to returne, & were of ability to doe any good to you for this end; I thincke, if I might haue my will, you should not be from Pequett one month. Alas! what haue we lost? we are naked, & ar as barren brests, desolat & disconsolate. We will therfor waite & see what God will doe for vs.

In the meane tyme, I beseech you, be noe meanes to hinder your honnored husband from retur[n]ing, but rather perswad & further him in soe a desyred thing, thoughe of vs not deserved, therfor saye & doe as Rachell & Lea sayd to good Jacob, when he was to departe her fathers house, & frinds & kindred (even now doe as the Lord hath sayd vnto thee, and doe it.) Be willing, if God put into Mr. Winthrop hart & mynd to come, to consent & be ready to forward him thervnto: and not to put any rubbes in the way to hinder & perswad to steay where you are. You know weomen are very strong & powerfull to act this way, & overcoume the strongest & wisest men that euer where or are in the world, by perswations

& swete allurements to draw as an adamant their husbands will to theires. I knowe & am assured better of you, that you will hearken to councell & reason, thoughe disadvantaigabll to your selfe; in which confydence I much satisfy my selfe [in] my greatist sadneses of spiritt, & hope once more to see you heare, which will [be] very much to the joy of my harte, & great comfort to all myne: therfor craving leave of my boldnes, I certify you by the blessing of God, I with my wyfe & children are in health, & all of vs doe kindly salute you & all yours, & doe commend you to the blessing of God vppon you all; who shall not be wanting to pray to him day & night for that end. Resting

Yours to vse to his power whiles he remaines

JOHNNATHAN BREWSTER.

MOHEKEN, this 14th Jana: 1656.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster to my wife."

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

For Mr: Winthropp: New Hauen.

WORSHIPFULL SIR, — I may seeme too bould soe oft & so largely to write vnto you. It is presuming of your love to me, which, as you expresse in your letters, is reall, and wher that is, there will be a willingnes & gladnes to heare from them, & of them, how it is. I mynd it to you & yors; if I were of ability to make it knowen by dedes, as words, & therfor presume once more to write vnto your worshipp: sending to you a gift in writing, which I haue had by me sometyme, but could not send it till now. You are the first man that sees it; if you thinke it worthy of acceptance, imparte it to any of your frinds, or any other, whom in your wisdom you thinke mette & fitt for

the knowledg of such a great mistery; howeuer, I intreate you of all love, & that which you promised me formerly, to keepe both my name & my worke secrett to your selfe; for I assuer you vppon a word of an honest man, there is neither man, woman, nor child knowes of this writing, but your selfe; therfor I intreat you vse not my name, directly nor indirectly, but keepe it to your selfe, & to lett others see it (as I sayd before) whome you thinke worthy; espetiall to him or them to whome that booke belonges you sent me, which gaue me such light in the second worke, as I should not readily haue found out, by studdy. Also & espetially how to worke the Elixer, fitt for medicine, & healing of all maladyes, which is cleane another way of working then we hold formerly. Also, a light giuen, how to desolve any hard substance into the Elixer, which is also another worke. And many other thinges, which in Ribley I could not fynd out. More workes of the same, I would gladly see; which shortly I hope to receave by a frind that hath promised me; for Sir, soe it is, that any booke of this subiect, I can vnderstand it, thoughe never soe darkly written, hauing both knowledg & experience of the world, that now easily I may vnderstand their envious cariadges to hyde it. Sir, if I haue write any thing too plaine, correct it, blott it out, if any thing be not congreous, or not well pointed, or truly writte; Sir, helpe it before you giue a coppie; ffor Sir, first you knowe my weaknes that wayes, vnfitt for any such worke; as also, Sir, you knowe my condition, of my dwelling, how inconvenient I dwell, many disturbances by the Indianes, & my owne family; togeather with the vnseasonabllenes of the winter season; all which consydered, I could not doe it so well as otherwise I might haue done. Sir, once againe I informe you that my worke procedes very well, as I can exspect. You may marvell why I should giue any light to others in this thing befor I haue perfected my owne. This knowe, that my worke

being trew thus farr, by all their writinges, it cannot faylle; which, if you had the knowledg of the practicall parte, you would confess the same with me; for if, first, the body be desolved into water minerall, all the ingrediences thereof, that the water be bright & cleane, and that then this water soe drawen forth putrifye & turnes blacke, you cannot misse if you would, except you should breake your glasse. I was wholy ignorant of the tyme of perfection, which made me runne into error, exspecting, & giuing out a shorte tyme, when as inded I speake it to you, it is 5 yeares, wanting two monthes, befor the red Elixer be perfected, and 4 yeares before the white, soe that my worke will be yet till December next, befor the coullers bee, & 5 monthes after before the white apeare; and after the white stands a working till perfected by the hott fyerey imbibitiones, one whole year after till September. I ffeare I shall not liue to see it finished, in regard partly of the Indianes, who I feare will raise warres; as also I haue a conceite that God sees me not worthy of such a blessing, by reason of my manifold miscariadges: therfor, Sir, out of the loue I beare to you, I will shortly write all the whole worke in few wordes, plainly, which may be done in 20 lines, from the first to the last, & sealle it vp in a littel box, & subscribe it to your selfe, and leave it at my house at Pequett, in one of my chests, that if it please God I should suddainly be taken away, you may call for it. I will so write it that neither wyfe nor children shall knowe thereof. And if it please God that you receaue & worke it, & bring to perfection, remember my poore wyfe & children as your owne, which I doubt not but you will be a cordiall, faythfull frind to me herein, as alwayes I haue found you; I meane if this my worke should miscarrie by warres of the Indianes, for I may not remoued it till it be perfected, otherwise I should so vnsettlle the body, by removing sunn & moone out of their setled places, that there would then be noe other after working. It is

as if the world which God mad at first should be moved (as I sayd) in my new Creation, & the station of the heauens & earth should be displaced, what would or could growe after. It is the same, for here in our worke, as I there showe, is heauen, firmament, with clowdes, & earth, & sea, vnder. Therfor, Sir, if in case God should eyther take me away, as I sayd befor, suddainly, or that my worke should be spoyled, I will fully leave in writing the full worke, & leave it to your selfe, before I would betrust it with any of my children; for it is such a secrett, that is not fitt for euery one, either for secrecy, or for partes, to vse it, as Gods secrett for his glory, to doe good therewith; or els they may doe a great deall of hurte, spending & imploying it to satisfy sinfull lusts. Therfor, Sir, I intreate once again, spare to vse my name, and lett my letters I send, either be safely kept, or burnt, that I write about it, for inded, Sir, I am more then before sensiblle of the euill effectes that will arise by the publishing of it. I should neuer be at quiett, neither at home, nor abroad, for one or other that would be enquiring & seking after knowledg thereof, that I should be tyared out, & forced to leave the place; naye, it would be blased abroad into Europ.

Thus Sir, desyrous to heare from you, if your leasuer will admitt, who should be glad to heare of youe & yours health, welfayer, & sprosperity; desyring, if it were the will of God, you with your family were with vs, but as thinges stands for present, I see littell hope therof; therfor I with myne must rest contented, God's pleasure, and with my duty to your selfe remembred, with Mrs. Winthrop, with all yours, I comend you all to the blessing of our good God, & rest

Yours unfayned, JOHNN: BREWSTER.

MOHEKEN, this last Janu: 1656.

Sir, I made bould to write both to Mrs. Winthrop & your daughter, which if I had heard had been well accepted, I should haue attempted once more to sett pen to paper, to whome I desyre my respects & love to them, with the rest of all yours, may be remembred. My wyfe & children are, by the blessing of God, in health, & knydly salute your selfe & wyfe & all yours: soe againe I take leave. *Vale, valete.*

Sir, I pray you send me some sealing wax, if there be any to be had with you, for I am in want. I sent your booke by Elderkin, I hope you haue it safe againe. We heare not any newes here from forrain partes; if you doe, I pray you imparte it, & send your letter to my sonn Brawly * at Pequett. Sir, you might doe me a great kyndnes to send me, per first, some powder, whatsoeuer I giue for it; that if the Indianes come downe, I may the better stand vppon my defence. If possiblle you can, faylle me not, for I am in great want. Lead I haue, by any that comes to Pequett.

Sir, I pray you parte not with my booke, least my hand be knowen by one or other; but onely coppies.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster."

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the honnored and Worshippfull John Winthrop, Esquire, ddd. Newhauen.

Honnored Sir, — It would glad my harte to heare from you & yours, but much more to see you heare: espetially with your family. I spoke to your worshipp at the Riuers

* Peter Bradley, of New London, married Elizabeth, daughter of Jonathan Brewster. He died in 1662; and his widow married Christopher Christophers. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

mouth about the same, & then you seemed willing, if your house could but be in any waies comfortablle, therfore I with some more here, & generally the whole Towne, are willing to helpe for that end, which will be both shortly & substantiall[y] finished. I take it, the stone worke will be in 4 (?) dayes tyme, onely we must gett the lime stone burned to pointe the house, if it be your mynde so to haue it done, without which will not be neither handsome nor safe. If your stone chimneyes could be finished afterwards, you might comfortably dwell in this, thoughe your new framed house be not finished, which I feare John Elderkin cannot doe before the spring, he is so intangled about the millere & want of bordes. I pray you, Sir, lett vs enioye your presence, if it be possible here to be at our next Towne meeting, which is appointed to be the next Munday come sennett, some 13 dayes hence, to end & conclude with Pakatucke & Mestecke & Pequett about the old difference, which is by the last Corte ordered to agree, if possible, amongest our selves; if not, they haue ordered a Comittie of Magistrats to come downe to end the sayd difference, or els to referr it to the Courte againe. The persons are first, your Woorship, Maior Mason, Captain Cullett, Mr. Talcott, & Mr. Allin. I intreate you therfor to come ouer to vs, that if possibliely you can come to helpe vs heerin, that so chardges may be saued, & scandall may be remoued, which will [be] occasioned by our head strong, violent spiritts of some of our inhabitants, whose presenc would much restraine.*

Ffor the state of our Towne, I suppose you haue intelligence, most in health, & at present in peace. The Indians round about vs all of ffyer, fighting & quarrelling vppon all occasiones & opportunityes, insoemuch that all commerce with them is stopped, to all our hinderances & losses. Mr. Blyndman is not returned from the assembly

* See Connecticut Colony Records, i. 300. — Eds.

of Elders.* Young Mr. Newman † supplied his place in the ministry, a man very hopefull, and inded beyond exspectation, did wonderfully satisfy the spiritts of his hearers, but is returned home againe.

Your servant Edmund, with his wife, now at my house, desyred me to informe your worshipp, that they ar all well vppon the Iland ‡ [*torn*] one nother in fighting, that one is killed: desyres to knowe what he shall doe with them; your maid likewise wants vessells for to sett milke in, & some chesse clothes, & would knowe your mynd about your wooll, & wantes a siffe, & some mealle, for our mille is in repairing, & will not be finished in 3 weekes longer. Goodman Parkers eldest daughter is extreamely taken with conveultion fites, oft, & strong. My wyfe feares much falling sicknes, & desyres your helpe, if it were the will of God, here. My glasses yet sprospers. If you could bring that booke with you, you might doe me a pleasuer. More of that when I speake with your worshipp. My family is in health, & saluts you & all yours. Thus with myne & my wyfes duty remembred to your selfe, with Mrs. Winthrop, I take leave and rest,

Yours unfeained:

JOHN: BREWSTER.

P[EQ]UETT, this 28. June, 1657.

---

* By authority of the Colonies of Connecticut and Massachusetts, an assembly of elders met at Boston, 4th June of this year, to discuss important questions relating to church discipline, &c. Mr. Blinman was a member from Connecticut. He came to New London from Gloucester about the year 1650. A number of his letters will be found in this volume. — *Conn. Col. Rec.*, i. 288; *Trumbull's Hist. Conn.*, i. 302, 303. — EDS.

† Antipas Newman, who in 1658 married Elizabeth, daughter of Winthrop. — EDS.

‡ Fisher's Island, which was granted to Winthrop, in 1640, by the Massachusetts Colony, so far as in their power; reserving the rights of Connecticut and Saybrook. The next year, in April, the grant was confirmed by Connecticut; and Mr. Fenwick's consent, in behalf of Saybrook, appears to have been granted the following month. In 1664, the islands in Long Island were all included in the patent of New York; and, as Connecticut then relinquished her title, Winthrop obtained from Gov. Nicolls, of New York, a *patent*, bearing date March 28, 1668, confirming to him the possession of this island, and declaring it to be "an enfranchised township, manor, and place of itself, in no wise subordinate or belonging unto, or dependent upon, any riding, township, place, or jurisdiction whatever." This island has continued in the possession of the Winthrop Family until now, and has been sold only while this volume is going through the press. — *Mass. Col. Rec.*, i. 304; *Conn. Col. Rec.*, i. 64, 65; 4 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 368; *Caulkins's N. Lond.*, pp. 40, 41. — EDS.

I intreat your worshipp would be pleased to sende word as spedily as you can to your man, that I may haue one of his sythes; for I am in a great straite, & can gett none, neither east nor west. Good Sir, faille me not in this small thing, which I am ashamed to be so earnest in.

JONATHAN BREWSTER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

*To the Honnored Gouernor, John Winthrop, Esquire, ddd. these, Hartford.**

Honnored Sir, — I receaued your kynd letter, for which I humbly thancke you. I had comed to your Worshipp, but the season will not permitt. I therfore desyre & intreate you seriously to consyder what I write of, concering Mr: Blinman, who standes in a distance from manie in our Towne, as well as from my selfe, vppon small grounds; but his perverse will, who can endure noe opposition or contradiction, but in a way episcopall & tirannicall, if he had power to his will, both in Church & Towne, that I

* There is no date of month to this letter. At the Court of Election in May of this year, Winthrop had been chosen Governor of the Colony, and soon after was requested by the Court "to come and live in Hartford while he governs;" and he probably removed to Hartford soon after. Winthrop's brief residence at Saybrook, in 1636, has already been noticed (see p. 44, *note* †). After serving the Connecticut patentees as governor for one year, but a small portion of which time he resided on the spot, he returned to his family at Ipswich, which he appears to have made his home till his removal to "Pequot" in 1645 or 1646; he having, in the mean time, made another visit to England. He built a house on "Fisher's Island;" and in October, 1646, his father addresses letters to him at that place. At the same time, or soon after, he was a resident at "Nameag" (New London), of which town he was the chief founder. In 1645, and the two following years, he continued to be chosen an assistant of the Massachusetts Colony, as the Pequot country, where he resided, was claimed to be under the jurisdiction of that Colony, as their proportion of the country conquered from the Pequots; and, by their consent, Winthrop was authorized to establish a plantation there. But after the decision of the Commissioners, in July, 1647, in favor of Connecticut, "the jurisdiction was quietly conceded to her;" and, in September following, the latter Colony issued a commission to Winthrop as magistrate, in which office he was continued till his election as governor in 1657. — *Conn Col. Rec.*, i. 297–301, 306; *Caulkins's New London*, pp. 57–90; *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 31, 351–353; *Acts of the Commis. of the United Colonies*, i. 96, 97. — Eds.

professe he is noe way qualifyd for a pastor in way of gouerment. The first rise of differenc riseth in reading publickly the agreement of the Elders at Boston,* espetially in the 10th articlle, which mildly & respectively I debated with him before the Towne, & opposed his judgment. Some of the towne manifested, that except he would practise that conclusion, the would not paie his maintenance: he broke then into wordes, that he would leave the place, with expressions of discontent, with fury. Goodman Morgan, after I had done, spoke some few wordes to the pointe, about the priviledg of the children of the Church, the which he so persecuted, that they cast him out, without any forbearance or convincing him of syne, but taking advantage of wordes, & reportes, censered him, to the greive of many amongest vs. After Mr. Blyndman gaue out to diuers he would not steay, the Towne mett again, desyring to know his resolution: he would not come amongest vs, but sent vs word, that he would haue the Towne to vote whether they would haue him to departe. I would not suffer the voate to pass, but vppon debate, I suffered the Towne to voate whether they was willing he should steay, which was frely & fully voted, that they desyred him to steay. After, in his publick teaching, he throwed balles of fyer against particular persons, & espetially against my selfe, thoughe not named; that gaue great offence, receauing reports, & neuer admitting private debate; one day aboue all other, he mad an invective sermon, namely that the puerest churches are many tymes most troubled with such as are among themselves, to the disturbance of their peace: he came to showe wherin these troublles consist, in 5 particulars. One, in men pressing to come into the Church; 2, in children of the Church pressing to come in without confession; 3, in children of the Church chalenging their right from

* See preceding letter, p. 83, *note* *. — Eds.

their grandfathers covenant: but lastly, in the imperious members of other churches, in pressing the vse of the ordinances; all which to me was very grevious & offensive, & I could not forbeare, but I must then, & did after the exercise manifest my dislike of the last particular, & desyred leave to speake. I spoke submissively, moderatly, & in few words, as followeth:

We haue heard that by the imperiousnes of members of other Churches great troublle comes to the Church, that if any such cariadges be amongest vs members of other Churches, that they would amend & reforme. But I desyre that this Church would well mynd & loke into themselves, that they be not the cause of their owne troublle. Nay further, I feare that they will be the cause of our honnored Governor not coming amongest vs.

To which Mr. Blinman aswered breivly, & so departed suddainly, & would admitt of [no?] debate to knowe my reason of soe speaking, nor neuer synce, either private or publick, but behynd my backe reprocheth me in his teaching, & otherwise.

Sir, the reason why I soe spoke, to you I now declare: namely, by their act that the Church hath lately made, to haue noe publick communion with members of other churches, in either of the sealles, except dismissed to them: which to me seemes to be a meanes to hinder the growth of Church & Towne; yet because I wou[ld] be noe meanes to haue the Towne lye vnder blame to putt away their minister, I called a Towne meeting. I there manifested that for my owne parte I would sitt downe in sylence & not act any thing that might disturbe the spirittes of any; nay, would rather remoue from the place; & therefore aggreed to send 4 men, to see if they could remove the grevances that lyes in Mr. Blyndman brest, if he would make them knowen, & then knowing to admitt debate; to which he sent vs word that 4. or 5. men, whom he named, if they would come to him & giue him satisfac-

tion, he should admitt of them, & wheras we by them sent our willingnes for him to steay,* he thancked the Towne, & wheras he had a call to another place, & the next day was thither going, he promised he would not engage himselfe befor he returned, &c. What the issue then will be, I feare not for our good or peace, being too well acquainted with the frame of his spiritt. The Lord giue him a better mynd & spiritt, for peace. I feare his cariadges will be complaned to the Generall Courte, espetially by Morgon & Allin, whose wyfe will also be cast out, & I fear Avery & others, & where my selfe in his power should farr little better. But for my selfe I waie not what he can doe; but shall be ready, as I haue offered once & againe to answ . . . befor whom, & whear he pleases, but I am resolved to p . . wronges, & meddll as littell as I can, but . . . . . men, the Lord deliuer me. Sir, pardon . . . . . & lett me haue advise from . . . . . vse thereof publickl . . . . . my words, that I . . . . . sayd before . . . . . .

Sir, I am too bould. I desyre your helpe for this poore Towne, to helpe vs to compose differences. And with my duty remembred to your worshipp, & wyfe, with my respects to all yours, I take leaue & rest,

Yours, JOHNN: BREWSTER.

PEQUETT, 27th: 1657.

Sir, in the sealing vp of [thi]s letter, my sonn Picket,† with h[is] wyfe, desyres to remember his servic[e to] your worshipp, with Mrs. Winthrop: he is one of the 4 or 5 before spoken of.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Brewster, about Mr. Blinman, 1657:"

---

* Mr. Blinman soon after left New London; for we find him, in the following March, as "of New Haven." — *Caulkins's New London*, p. 115. — EDS.

† John Picket, who married Ruth Brewster. — *Ibid.*, p. 285. — EDS.

LETTERS OF STEPHEN BACHILER.*

STEPHEN BACHILER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull my very loueing ffrend & our Gouernour, at his house in Bostone, these.

The wisedome of Gods spirit direct & guide you in all your affaires, now & for ever. Amen.

Right Worshipfull and my loueing Ffrend Mr. Gouernour, — I haue sent you this inclosed letter † from

* Stephen Bachiler, born in England about the year 1561, and "who had suffered much," says Winthrop, "at the hands of the bishops," came to New England in the "William and Francis;" arriving at Boston 5th June, 1632. He appears to have had some connection with the "Company of Husbandmen" of London, which, the year before, had sent out a ship, with a patent, as noticed by Winthrop under date of July. He went immediately to Lynn, where he informally gathered a church of six persons, — his relatives and friends, who had belonged to his church in Holland, and a few others who united with them. He early fell under suspicion; as the General Court, in October following his arrival, forbade "his exercising his gifts as a pastor or teacher publickly, in our patent, unless it be to those he brought with him, for his contempt of authority, or until some scandalls be removed." The next March, this restraint was removed. He was dismissed from Lynn, and left there in February, 1636. He failed of securing a settlement at Ipswich, and also at Yarmouth; and went to Newbury in 1638. In September of that year, the General Court granted him and others permission to begin a plantation at "Winicowett" (Hampton). He was pastor of the church there till 1641, when he was excommunicated. Two years after, he was restored to the communion, but not to the office of minister. In 1644, he was invited to preach at Exeter; but the Court laid their injunction upon the call. In 1647, he was at Portsmouth, where he resided three years. In a few years after, he left the country, and died at Hackney, near London, in 1660, in the one hundredth year of his age. His irregularities of conduct rendered his ministry generally unsuccessful. Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," addresses him as follows: —

> "Through ocean large Christ brought thee for to feed
> His wandering flock, with's word thou oft hast taught;
> Then teach thyself: with others thou hast need,
> Thy flowing fame unto low ebb is brought."

— *Winthrop's N. E., passim; Lewis's Hist. Lynn* (2d ed.), pp. 92, 97; *Mass. Col. Rec.*, i. 100, 103; ii. 68. — Eds.

† The first of the two following letters in small type, now printed for the first time from the originals in the volume of "Davis Papers," is probably the one here enclosed to Winthrop. It is dated the day before the "William and Francis," in which Bachiler came

our Company at London to that part of our Company which was then supposed to be here, the last yere, to cer-

---

to New England, sailed. The "Company of London" referred to was the "Company of Husbandmen," who, about the year 1630, had procured from the Council of Plymouth a grant, called the "Plough Patent," from the name of the ship which brought it to New England. Hubbard, who assigns 1630 as the date of the instrument, says it was "signed by the Earl of Warwick and Sir Ferdinand Gorges, and sealed with the common seal of the Counsel." The names of the grantees, he says, were "John Dye, Thomas Lupe [Jupe], Grace Harding, and John Roach, of London;" and the grant, "a large tract of land on the south of Saga de Hock, forty mile square, by the seaside, and so up into the country. John Dye aforesaid, and his partners," continues Hubbard, "took in another as partner and associate with them, Mr. Richard Dummer of Newbury, in New England, in the year 1638; to whom they delivered the original patent, with an order from them and in their name to take up the land described in the patent: but he being denied opportunity to effect it, and also a ship formerly sent by the patentees for that end not accomplishing their desire, they not long after sold all their interest in the said patent to one Mr. Rigby, a Lancashire gentleman, who made Mr. Cleaves his agent to manage the business of his purchased interest in the said patent, to whom Mr. Dummer was ordered to deliver the original patent; which accordingly he did. What trouble was occasioned soon after between the said Mr. Cleaves and Mr. Vines, agent for Sir Ferdinando Gorges, is well known to the inhabitants of the place," &c.—*Present State of New England* (*Second Part*), pp. 9, 10.

The ship referred to by Hubbard, "formerly sent by the patentees," is thus noticed by Winthrop under date of July, 1631: "A small ship of sixty tons arrived at Natascott; Mr. Graves, master. She brought ten passengers from London. They came with a patent to Sagadahock; but, not liking the place, they came hither. . . . These were the company called the Husbandmen, and their ship called the Plough." He subsequently wrote, "Most of them proved familists, and vanished away." Under date of 19th August following, Winthrop writes, "The Plough returned to Charlestown after she had been on her way to the Christopher Islands about three weeks, and was so broke she could not return home."

The early history of the Plough Patent, which, after its transferrence to Rigby, formed the "Province of Lygonia," and played so important a part for a number of years in the early history of Maine, has been involved in some obscurity. By whose influence was so large and important a grant obtained, and why was it so early abandoned, are questions which may still be asked. Willis says ("History of Portland," p. 17, *note*), "I have never been able to discover this patent, nor ascertain its date, nor who were the patentees;" but he cites the names we have given above from Hubbard, and two others from Sullivan ("History of Maine"), as having been interested in the grant as patentees. From the papers we now print are furnished many more names of persons connected with this undertaking; but some of them may be supposed to have come into the company after the patent was issued. Hubbard says the grant was "forty miles square;" and the patentees may have thus interpreted it, if its terms were not thus expressed. We see, in the letter of the company below (of 8th March, 1631–2), that a misunderstanding early arose between them and Gorges respecting the breadth of their patent on the coast. They say, "Many rough words we have had from Sir Ferdinando at the first; and to this hour he doth affirm that he never gave consent that you should have above forty miles in length, and twenty miles in breadth; and sayth that his own hand is not to your patent, if it have any more." Gorges also told them, if their grant covered what they claimed, it would "include divers of their former plantations, which they never intended." If Cape Porpoise was named or indicated as its western boundary on the coast, even *twenty miles* eastward or north-eastward would embrace the patents on the Saco, which, Vines says, were issued a year before the Plough Patent. Under Rigby, and Cleeves, his deputy, the bounds appear to have been established. Sullivan ("History of Maine," p. 311) says,

tify you that the 4 hogsheds of pease (which are assigned to my brother Wilson, in the right of the youth that is

---

"The acts of possession done, the grants made under the Province of Lygonia, the claims supported, and the acts of its government, prove, beyond a controversy, that the Province extended from the west side of Cape Porpoise to the east side of Cape Elizabeth, and forty miles back from the sea;" but Winthrop (ii. 257) says that Cleeves, in 1646, before Massachusetts referees, failed to make good his claims respecting this patent, the question of boundary being one.

In the company's letter of March, 1631–2, it will be observed that they speak of "one Bradshaw that had procured letters-patent for a part, as we supposed, of our former grant, and so we think still; but he and Sir Ferdinand think it is not in our bounds." Bradshaw was then about to sail for New England; and Capt. Neale was to be written to, to bound his grant and that of the Plough Company. The only notice we find of Bradshaw elsewhere is in the record of a court held at Saco in 1640, under the authority of the Province of Maine, in the case of Cleeves *vs.* Winter, giving the deposition of the plaintiff, who says, that about the time he joined himself in partnership with Richard Tucker, then at Spurwink, Tucker had a right of inheritance there, which he had purchased of Richard Bradshaw (see Willis's "History of Portland," i. 22, 23, 221). We will say, in passing, that the inference which has been drawn from this is, that this purchase was made, or was alleged to have been made, in 1630; but we find Bradshaw only ready to sail with his letters-patent in March, 1632.

The attempt of the "Company of Husbandmen" to erect a plantation proved a failure. We may not be in possession of all the adverse circumstances which conspired against them. When the "William and Francis" and the "Whale" left England, in March and April of 1632, the members of the company in London appeared to be prosecuting the enterprise with spirit. They must at that time, certainly, have had advices from the persons who came out in the "Plough," and have heard also of the fate which befell their vessel the August before; but we learn from the second letter of the company, which we print below, dated "From London, the first of December, 1632," that the scheme had then been abandoned. Some of their members had proved unfaithful; and the purpose of the letter to Winthrop was to secure the property which had been sent over from misappropriation.

After the charter of the Province of Maine to Gorges had been granted, confirming the title to "New Somersetshire," and a government set up under its authority in 1640, Cleeves, one of the first settlers of Casco, now Portland, went to England, and induced Alexander Rigby, a "lawyer and Parliament-man," from Wigan, Lancashire, to purchase this abandoned Plough Patent; which he did 7th April, 1643 (see Sullivan's "Maine," p. 312). Cleeves had a commission, as deputy, to administer affairs within its bounds; and came over this year, landing at Boston. On his arrival, he solicited the aid of the Massachusetts Government against the authority of Gorges. But that Government refused to interfere with either. Cleeves claimed that Casco was in the bounds of this grant, which, says Sullivan, had the powers of a Colonial government annexed to it; and he immediately set up his authority as "Deputy-President of the Province of Lygonia," extending his jurisdiction over a large part of the Province of Maine, which was then under the administration of Richard Vines, as deputy for Gorges. This produced a collision. Both parties appealed to Massachusetts; and some letters of Vines and Cleeves, now published in this volume for the first time, will be read with interest. Massachusetts declined to act; but finally, in 1646, after Vines had left the country, she consented to serve as umpire for both claimants. Jocelyn and Robinson appeared on the part of Gorges, and Cleeves and Tucker for Rigby; but no conclusion was arrived at. Winthrop (ii. 257) says, "Upon a full hearing, both parties failed in their proof. The plaintiff [Cleeves] could not prove the place in question to be within his patent, nor could derive a good title of the patent itself to Mr. Rigby (there being six or eight patentees, and the assignment

with him *) do no way belong to him, but to me & the rest of our Company, & to speake the truthe, to me only

only from two of them). Also the defendant had no patent of the Province, but only a copy thereof attested by witnesses, which was not pleadable in law." As an appeal had been made by both parties to the Commissioners for Foreign Plantations, they were advised to live peaceably till they heard from England. Rigby's position, and influence with the Parliament, secured a decision in his favor. The poor old knight, "Sir Ferdinando," was a stanch royalist, had been in arms for his sovereign, and was in no condition to protect his interest. The decision of the Commissioners, which was in 1646, terminated his jurisdiction over that part of Maine included in the "Province of Lygonia," embracing the towns or plantations from Casco to Cape Porpoise, and including both. The last General Court under the authority of Gorges, of which any record exists, was holden at Wells in July of this year. At length, in 1649, the inhabitants of the western part of his Province, between Cape Porpoise and Pascataqua River, including Wells, Gorgeana, and Pascataqua, having had intelligence, in 1647, of the death of the proprietor, and finding no one in authority there, formed a combination among themselves. This state of things continued till 1652–3, when these towns were annexed to Massachusetts (see Folsom's "Saco and Biddeford," 60, 61; 1 "Mass. Hist. Coll.," i. 103). The inhabitants then living in that part of Maine between Casco and the Kennebec were inconsiderable. Thomas Purchase, one of the owners of the Pegipscot Patent, in 1639, conveyed a large tract of land, on both sides the Androscoggin, "to the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts," with "full power forever to exercise jurisdiction there as they have in the Massachusetts" ("Mass. Colony Records," i. 272, 273). The people living within the "Kennebeck Patent" were considered as belonging to the jurisdiction of New Plymouth (Williamson's "Maine," i. 266). Rigby died in August, 1650; and the proprietorship of Lygonia fell to his son Edward: but the government was soon at an end. The majority of the inhabitants of Cape Porpoise and Saco submitted to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts in 1652. "Cleeves contrived to keep up some show of power in the eastern part of the Province till the submission of the remaining inhabitants in 1658" (see Willis's "Portland," i. 55, 56). Thus was accomplished what the Massachusetts Government had for some time been aiming to effect, — the bringing of these eastern settlements under her jurisdiction.

These letters of the "Plough Company," which have been the occasion of this long note, will explain some passages in the Massachusetts Court Records which have hitherto been unintelligible. The orders respecting "the estate of Mr. Crispe and his company," and John Kirman, on pages 92 and 143, and for the binding over of Brincks (Bincks) and Johnson and Smith, on page 98, will now be more easily explained. — Eds.

Grace and pese be multeplyd for eure.

From London, 8 March, 1631.

Cristen Bretheren, —

Mr. Crispe, John Cermen, John Smith and the rest of our Sosiate, — Wee as members of the same bode send gretinge in the nam of our Lord and Safuair Jesus Crist: hopinge and wishinge your hellth as our one: and as at this tim wee all are, thankes be vnto God. Mane thinges we haue to wright vnto you of, but our

* The following from our Colony Records, under date 3d July, 1632, may refer to the youth here spoken of: "John Smith is bound as an apprentice with Mr. John Wilson for five years from this Court, during which term Mr. Wilson is to find the said John Smith meat, drink, and apparrell; and, at the end of the said time, is to give unto him the sum of forty shillings."

"It is likewise ordered, that those goods which were sent over with the said John Smith shall remain in the hands of Mr. Wilson, for which he is to be accountable to those that sent them over." — Eds.

& properlye, by reason of the Companies debt vnto me, which all that I haue (by your favour) seazed on, will not

---

tim hath bin so taken vp with fordringe, hillpinge and providinge thinges fittinge for these our bretheren that are now to com vnto you, that wee shall not posible exprese, or put that to incke and paper which wee desiared, but wee hope they will relate vnto you anne thinge matteriall that wee forget to wright; and furst let vs not forget to remeber you of yours and our dute that wee return humble and harte thainkes vnto All mighte God, that hath filld the hart of our reuerent pastor so full of selle, of loufe and extreordenare affection towards our pouer sosiate, that not with standinge all the oposition, all the suttell persawations of abundens of oposers, that hath bin sturd vp against vs, partly through sellfe loufe, not affectinge this genarall serfetud, and partly through that vntimly brech of our brother Cermen; yet he remayneth constent, perswadinge and exortinge, yee and as much as in him lyeth, constrayinge all that lufe him to joyn together with this sosiate; and seinge the cumpane is not able to bere his charges ouer, he hath straynd him sellfe to prouid prouision for him sellfe and his famally, and hath dun his vttermost indever to hellp ouer as mane as posible he can, for your further strainketh and incurigment: and although it may be, if he had stayd one yer longer, you mayt haue better bin prouided to haue receued him, yet through his gret care of all your good, will by no mense stay longer from you. O let vs neuer forget this unspakeable marce of God towerds vs: we hope the Lord will mak him an espeshell instroment to vnit you all together in trw loufe vnto God, and vnto one another, which will be our strongest wallse and bullworkes of defens against all our enemise; and wee hope you will not forget to shew your loufes vnto him, and to tak nottes of the charges he is now at, and to apoint for him or his as he shall desier, such shares or parts of shares as shall belong vnto him for the charges he is now at, and that his man seruent and his mayd saruent may be receued as members of the cumpane, and haue such shares or parts of shares as in that case prouided for euer membr. As for his naibours that now cum with him, they proumise all to joyne with you, but becase they do desier furst to see how you agre together in loufe, they are not joyned to our bode, and therfor wee haue toak no pertickuller nottes of them nor therse, desiaringe you to do it ther, if they joyn with you; and the Lord of his merce grant that ther may be no ocation on your parts but that they may joyn with you. Mr. Dumers promise is allso to joyn with you, if ther be anne resen for it. The Lord vnit you all together, if it be his will; then shall you put to sham and silanse mane that do now shamfulle ris vp against vs. Thomas Jupp hath allso sent you a pledg of his one cuminge in du tim, his eldest sonn, vpon his last 20*li.* in goods and monese disburst for the Cumpanes vse. Ther is allso Nathanell Harrese, which wee haue sent you vpon a new adventure of ten pounds by his father, whoe is now Sargent of the roall, and a member of our cumpane. Ther is allso John Smith, sunn of Ffrances Smith, miller, vpon a new adventer of ten pounds by one John Asten, mellman; and ther is Nathenell Mereman, vpon the adventur of Petter Wouster, beinge now mad vp ten pounds; all which, beinge members of the Cumpane, acordinge to ther yers and adventures. Wee desier you to recefe them and emply them. 2 of them are vere able to work, and wee hop will be willinge. Wee desier they should be put vnto it acordige to ther abillets, and the other 2 allso acordinge to ther strainckte, wee desier they shuld be emplyed. Ther is allso Ann Smith, our brother John Smiths wife, and hur daughter; shee beinge incuriged by Mr Dumers promise to giue hur hur pasige in part, hath resolued to cum vnto hur husband, whom wee can not deny, and haue put hur in vpon the oalld adventur of Mr Dumer for hur sellfe and hur dauther.

All these are cuminge in the Whalle, with Mr. Dumer; they are all ffurnished with bedinge and aperell vere soffeshently, and beinge all able to labor, wee hope will be hellp full to the cumpane. Ther is allso one Thomas Payn of Sandwige, experensed in the makinge of sallt, which hath brought in ten pounds, and cumeth in the William and Ffrances, whom wee desier you to recefe, as a member of the cumpone: only in regard he hath a wife and 4 small chilldren, which he desierth to be transported 12 month hense, wee haue

countervayle my debt by a great deale, in case I could sell the goods presently, which I know not how long they

---

only conditionly receud him, that if betwen this and that tim you do find that he will not be a mor hellp vnto the cumpane, then his charge will be hindarns, beinge he can bringe in but 20*li.* mor for his wife and 4 chilldren, that then he haueinge sarued the cumpane one wholl yer for his pasige, the Compane shall pay him his ten pounds again, and so let him shift for him sellfe.

Sum prouisions for these wee haue sent you: what prouisions you ellse want, wee desier you to tak of Mr Dumer, and send vs ouer your comodetes, that wee may pay both for that and sum oulld dets which wee haue mad hard sheft for vnto this tim. Pray neck-lect not, but by what mesenger so euer Mr. Thomes, master of the William and Ffrances doth send ouer his letters, to haue his ffraight payd, let vs by the sam mesinger, if not befor, recefe sum goods from you, for wee wer constraynd to mak vse of the tunige mone of 20 pasingers to pay oulld dets, tell a sertefecat be sent ouer. The goods you shall recefe in the William and Ffrances, that is the cumpanes, is 4 hogshds of pese, which cost, cask and all 6*li.* — 5*s* — 0*d*; the caske as markt with 2 plouse markt one one hed, wher as all ther go[o]ds haue 1 plou one ech hed; and 12 yards of brod cloth at 5*s.* 6*d.* cumes vnto . . . . . 3— 6—0

200 yards of list at 7*s.* 6*d.* per hundred, which lest we think may be good to mak Indin breches or blankits. I pray send woard if it be a comodete worth sendinge anne mor . . . . . 0—15—0

1 fryes coat, 1 payr of briches, boath at . . . . . 0—19—0

5—0—0

These thinges are packt vp into hogseds amonkst sum of Mr Bachellers thinges, and sum thinges of Thomas Juppes, which he hath sent vpon his pertiquller adventur. So soun as you can sell them, ther is to the valle of ten pounds ad mone, as you shall see by his pertiquller letters Mr Hardinge hath sent, allso a persell of comodets vpon his pertiquler, as by his letter you shall recefe derection.

We gaue you nottes by Mr. Allertun, and wee hope you haue long since receued it, that wee haue had much ado abought our patten, and that there was one Bradshaw that had proquired letters patten for a part as wee soposed of our fformer grant, and so wee think stell, but he and Sir Fferdinando think it is not in our bouns. He was ffrustrat of his ffurst purpose of cuming ouer, but is now joyned with 2 vere able captens and marchants, which will set him ouer, and wee sopowse will be ther as soun as this shipe, if not befor. Wee can not posible relat vnto you the labur and truble that wee haue had to establishe our former grant; mane rufe words wee haue had from Sir Fferdineando at the ffurst, and to this houer he douth afferm that he neuer gaue consent, that you should haue abouse forte mills in lenkth and 20 millse in bredth, and sayeth that his one hand is not to your patten if it haue anne more: so whe haue dun our good wellse and haue proqured his louse and mane promases that wee shall haue no wronge. Wee bestoud a suger lofe vpon him of sum 16*s.* prise, and he hath promisd to do vs all the good he can. Wee can proquer nothinge vnder his hand, but in our heringe he gaue order vnto Mr. Aires to wright vnto Capten Neyle of Pascatoway, that Bradshew and wee maight be bounded, that wee mayght not truble ech other, and hath giuen the Capten comand to serch your patten, what it is you haue vnder my lords hand and his. Wee ned not counsell you what to do in that case, only wee giue you nottes of it, desieringe God to derect you that no just ocation may be giuen one our parts to be euell spoken of.

Wee gaue Sir Fferdingand this resen whey wee desierd so larg a patten, becase that the grettest part of it was not habetable, beinge rocke, wer no man could life; and he ansored wee shoulld not dout but be allowed enofe for vs all, and in the best part of it, acordinge to our desier; but if wee should haue so much as wee say they haue granted vs, then do

will lye & [*torn*] worse & worse before they will make any satisfaction to me. The goods which are looked after

---

wee includ difers of ther former plantations, which they neuer intended. This conterfers must be ended between your sellfes and such guferners of their of Pimequed as they haue apointed. Wee will pray to God to derect you and to hellp you. This besenes doth requer the astens of all of you to joyn together in one. Wee hope the Lord in marce will so dispose of it.

Wee haue sent in the Whalle 70 ston of ocum at 10*d.* and the carig . .	2—19—8
3 c wayt of cassell, all charges cost	1—14—0
1 fferken of flouer of 5 peckes, and a ferken of pese	0—14—0

There is allso a vere pour Yarksher man, is nam is John Banester; he hath mad such extreordenary mone to com ouer, that Mr. Bachellr and Mr Dumer hath had sum compasion, and payd for his pasage: if you thinke you be able to receue him, and do so think good of it, wee then do desier you to let him be the cumpense saruent, and put him to such emplyment as you thinke good, and vpon such conditions as you shall see mit. Goodman Tamage and his wife tak it vere vnkindly that you should kip his mollt, and not let his sunnes haue a small quantetie of plattewer at his requst to be payd at return. How you will anser this vnkindnes wee know not; we would desier you to giue no ocations of such vnkindnes. Her is now the people them sellfes com vnto you: wee asuer you they be vere honest, playn, doun right dellinge people. If they find you louinge and kinde and vp wright towerds them, then will you haue ther cumpone; if not, I pray consider you will not only lise them, but wounderfully discurigment it will be vnto diuers others for tim to cum. It may be vpon furst fue you may sopose them to be a charge in regard the men louck aged, and the chilldren younge, but yet wee sopose they haue porfessd to bring it for to anser that wee refer the acount to tak of them if they do joyn; and by the next ship you shall haue our acount for the wholl yer; and so the Lord proteckt you and defend you now and euer.

Your louinge brethern

John Dye
John Roch
Grace Hardwin
Tho. Juppe.

Indorsed, "8 March 1631-2."

To the right worshipfull the worthy Gouernour at Mattachucetts, John Wynthropp, dd. in New England.

pr or good ffrend Mr. Allerton, whose voyage God psper.

Grace, mercy and peace bee multiplied.

ffrom London, the first of Desember, 1632.

Right Worshipfull Sir, — Wheras ther hath cum ower from New England, of late, divers reports of the harsh dealeinge of Master Dummer against our lovinge breathren, Bryan Binkes, Petter Johnsonn, and John Smith, in that hee hath not only taken from them that which was left them for their mainetenance by the Company, but alsoe retained that which wee sent; and doe keepe in there hands all that is there left of the Companies and retaine it, contrary to that order that wee sent ouer by Master Allerton. And whereas wee haue received the day before the wrightinge heareof, one letter from John Smith, which doth for the most part justifie that which wee haue heard, and alsoe another from Mr. Batchellor, not denyinge the same; and haveinge received incoragment by divers, that there is justice to bee had, we therefore appelle vnto you for justice. There is other letters sent in this shipp, which were written 3 weekes before this, wherin wee dyd, by all the power wee haue, command them to deliver our goods backe againe, to bee disposed accordinge to the order of the Company: but beinge now certified that Bryan Binkes and

for the boye, came not in the ship wherin these pease came, but (as I take it) in the Whale,* if any were sent.

Petter Johnsonn are gone to Vergenia, accordinge to the Companies order, wee desire you that whatsoeuer is there left of the Companies estat, should bee theire sould and returned into England, either by Billes of Exchange or in marchantable goodes, vnto John Dye, dwellinge in Ffillpott Lane, or vnto John Roach, Grace Hardinge, or Thomas Juppe, dwellinge in Crooked Laue. Those thinges that are there of the Companies, to our knowledge, are these: ffirst, there is the 6 ordnance with there carriges, 4 ankers and cables, which stand vs heare in England in littelle lesse then . . . . . 160—0—0
There is alsoe a parsell [*torn*]izion sent by Mr. Allerton . . . . . 030—0—0
A parsell of pease [*torn*] . . . . . 013—0—0
And a parsell of broade cloth and a coate and list . . . . . 05–10—0
And a parsell of plate wairs of Thomas Juppes owne perticuler adventure . 011–16—8
And a parsell of Master Hardings goods . . . . . 016—0—0
There was a parsell of the Companies goods vetaced by one Muzze . . 010—0—0

There is much other goods there of the Companies, which wee cannot give you notice of. Wee desire you to call John Smith to account; by his owne letter hee hath 20*li.* worth of the Companies estat, which although wee desire not that it should be presently taken from him, because wee pitty his poore estate, yet wee leaue it vnto your wise consideration to order, or to dispose towards the payment of Master Batchellor if you see fitt, vnto whome wee doe ough 60*li.*, it was sumthinge more, but the rest wee haue layd out for him in his frayt, to the vallewe of 7*li.*; wee therefore desire that hee should bee payde 60*li.* There is goods allsoe to the vallewe of 40*li*, as wee are informed, that Mr. Dummer hath taken from Bryan Binkes and Peetter Johnsonn; ther is alsoe the ould shipp, and divers debts oughinge vs, which wee intreate you to call John Smith to account for. And forasmuch as ther is oughinge 200*li.* by the Company in London, vppon bond vppon our securitie, and is yearely a great burden vnto vs; wee desire you therefore that our goods may not bee there retained any longer, ffor the debts vppon bond the Companys goods must paye; although wee lose all, lett them not dishoner God, and disgrace Religion. Heare hath binn a greate deale of complainte, and much euell sirmizinge of the dealeinge of our brethren departed to Vergenia, but we wish we may haue noe worse from thence. Wee haue faire account, and good reason for what they did, and for profitt or losse, Gods will bee done. Wee hope wee shall find that that part of our estate carried away to Vegenia, shalbee as well improued for all the Company, accordinge to that proportion, as they will improue ther owne in New England that doe soe surmize of there brethren. Time will try all things.

Wee desire you farther to take notis that when Master Batchellor dubled his adventure, and made his adventure vpp 100*li.*, it was vppon condition, that wee and Master Dummer should doe soe likewise. Wee at London did duble our adventures, and wee received alsoe 40*li.* of Master Dummer, for his duble adventure; yet, after some farther consideration, Mr. Dummer sent his mony into the hands of a freind, that would not deliver it vs, without bond to paye it againe. Now Mr. Dummer promiseinge, as well as wee, to duble his adventure, and to have a part of losse, if it soe fell out, as this inclosed letter will testifie, beinge the letter of his owne hand, sent with the mony; wee desire to referr our selves vnto you, there to judge what is fitt for him to haue; if to venture it, as wee are constrained to doe, then at the end of the termes of yeares, wee shalbe countable. At the least we think he should bare a part of losse, as well as wee. This hopeinge that out of your pious mind and [*torn*] are to execute justes betwene vs, you wilbee pleased to take

* The "Whale" arrived 26th May (a few days before the vessel in which Mr. Bachellor came), and brought Mr. Wilson, Mr. Richard Dummer, and others. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 77. — Eds.

Besides, these pease comming with my goods in the William & Frauncis (the ship wherin I came) with the 12 yards of cloth mentioned in the letter, & 200 yards of liste, &c., I payde both for the tunage of it to the shipmaster, & for the carryinge of them from the ship to New Towne. The cloth also, & the liste I tooke into my keeping, & weare of it; & wraping vp the letter amonge many others, forgot to seaze vpon these pease; till within these 8 or 9 dayes, reading over the letter for some other occasion, I light vpon that passage which mentioneth the pease & the clothe & liste, &c., whervpon I demanded of my wife, What became of these pease mentioned? She answered, Certainely they are the pease which lye vnowned at New Towne: whervpon I sent to compare the markes of the letter, with the markes vpon the pease hogsheds, & found them perfectly to agree; & there vnderstood that the pease (for want of an owner) were, by your authority, committed to my brother to be disposed of, in right of his servant, & that this day (being the .3. of this 4th moneth) my brother sent me this message, that forasmuch as these pease were assigned to him by the autho: of your worship & the Court (thoughe he sawe the contents of this letter the last weeke) he would sell them, & stand answerable for the monny that they yelde. My request therefore is vnto you, that forasmuch as the pease do cleerely appeare to be no goods of the boyes, but to

---

this paines fo[r] vs, to put an end vnto these controversies there, which is a greater greife vnto vs, then all those other croses that hath befallen vs. There was, in all, 14*c. li.* in jointe stoke; of this but the vallewe of 250*li.* caried to Vergenia, accordinge to your praiseinge when you paid Carman. Wee leaue all to your Christian wisdome; the Lord direct you, and soe wee rest

Your Christian ffrends for ourselues & the rest of the Companie of Husbandmen,

John: Robinson	Joh: Roch
Daniel(?) Binckes	Grace Hardwin
Roger Binckes	Tho: Juppe
Nathaniell Whetham	Jo: Crispe
Henery Ffowkes	John Dye.
Brian Kipling	

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Plough Comp:" and in another place, "The Comp: of Husbdmen;" and again, "Roch, Hardwin, &c."

belonge to our Company, & that I lay claime to them (as to the rest) not in respect of my adventure, but for the debt of (neere) an hundred pownds, which I lent the Company, in as good gould as can be waighd with scales; & that I haue payde both for the tunage & portage of them, & only thoroughe forgetfullnes lefte them thus longe, & diverse other circ[u]mstances of reason, which I forbeare for tediousnes to vrge — that you would be pleased to prevent the withhoulding of them from the right owners; at least to stay the sale of them, forasmuch as I haue disposed part of them, & the residue are exceedingly wanting in myne owne congregation; who, vpon the vnderstanding of the busynes thus comming to light, haue ben earnest with me for them, & I accordingly haue graunted their requests. There being equity in all that I require (as I trust will appeare vnto you vpon the sight of that passage in the letter,) I trust I shall not doubt of your vprightnes towards me, & betweene my brother & me; whose care for his servant I do much approue, tho' I cannot see the meanes which he vseth to recouer his servants doubtfull goods, to be so right as I could wish: for my parte, were it my case, as it is his, I should easyly yeld vpon the sight of such evidence as I conceave doth appeare, that the goods can no way belong to him. One thing more, wheras I vnderstand, that you put the last day of this weeke apart, for enquire of God to discover a great & difficult secret, we will, by Gods grace, assist you vpon that day in like manner. And thus with my loue, service, & Christian respect vnto you (with myne & my wiues harty salutations to your blessed & beloued yoke fellowe) I cease any further to trouble you, & rest, at your service & commandment, in Christ his moste vnworthy servant, STEPHEN BACHILER.*

* The writer was at this time residing at Lynn. — EDS.

Sir, I vnderstand, since the writing of my letter, that it is conceaued that the goods of the boye came wholly or in parte to me, which, if it may but probably appeare, I will make 7 fould satisfaction. Verely, it is not so; nether did I (but my wife) meddle with my owne goods; & my wife saythe (from Mrs. Smyth of Watertowne) that the boyes father, & an vncle of his, or some such frend, did adventure 10*li.* into [the Co]mpany with the boy;* so that I cannot conceaue how any such goods should be ex[*torn*]d, but for my parte I [*torn*] them; & these goods belonging to our Company, I hope they shall not be d[*torn*] them & vse them [*torn*].†

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Batcheler & the Comp: Lre."

STEPHEN BACHILER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To my worshipfull frend John Winthrop, Esqr. at his howse in Ipswitch, thes.

WORTHY SIR, — I commend me to you & yours in the Lord. So it is, that we are resolued (God so consenting) the second working day of the next weeke to set forward towards our plantation,‡ preparing therto the day before. We intend to go by a shallop, so that as our hope & de-

---

* Mrs. Smith is probably the "Ann Smith, our brother John Smith's wife," mentioned in the letter of the "Company of Husbandmen" (dated from London, 8th March, 1631–2, on page 92) as coming in the "Whale." The boy who came with the 10*li.* adventure was John Smith, the "son of Francis Smith, miller." — EDS.

† This letter is printed from the original in a volume of "Davis Papers," in the archives of the Historical Society. It bears no date of year; but it was probably 1633. The writer, in the text, speaks of the day he was writing, "being the .3. of this 4th month" (*i.e.*, June). — EDS.

‡ Mr. Bachiler was at this time a resident of Newbury, but was now preparing to visit his intended plantation at Hampton; the General Court having, in September of this year, granted him and his associates liberty to begin a plantation there. "And Mr. Bradstreet, Mr. Winthrop, jun., and Mr. Rawson, or some two of them, are to assist in setting out the place of the town, and apportioning the several quantity of land to each man," &c. — EDS.

sire is to haue your helpe & our Christian frends, Mr. Brodstreet, so we pray you both to be with vs (if possibly you can) the first working day, so to be ready to accompany vs, the day following. We were there & vewed it cursoryly, & we found a reasonable meet place, which we shall shew you: but we concluded nothing. This day, had not an hindrance falne out, I had brought your father in lawes two stales of bees to you, for that one of them hath robbed & spoy[l]ed a stall of mine (as the manner of bees is) and I cannot tell how to proceed against the offenders, to haue lawe & justice against them, but by remoueing the theveishe stall, & keeping in the innocent till they be remoued. I pray you acquaint Mr. Bradstreet with our desire & purpose, that we may lay some foundacion, & the better by your helpe & assistance. The Lords good eye be ever vpon you & yours. & so I rest in Him that is alsufficient.

Yours in all Christian office & service,

his most vnworthy STEPHEN BACHILER.

THIS 9. OF THIS 8TH MONTH. 1638.

STEPHEN BACHILER TO ALICE [MARGARET] WINTHROP.

*To my very loueing & worthy Christian frende Mrs. Alice Winthrop, wife of our Worshifull & Reverend Governour these.**

Grace, mercy & peace in our Lord Jes. Christ.

AUNCIENT & CHRISTIAN FRENDE, — I present my great respect & thankfullnes vnto you, in a little token. And though it be little in it selfe, yet doth it conteine greater waight of true worth then can easyly be comprehended,

* The name of Gov. Winthrop's third wife, who was living at this time, was Margaret. The writer may possibly have associated her with Alice Winthrop, the sister of Adam Winthrop, and aunt to the Governor, who married Sir Thomas Mildmay, and died in 1607. — EDS.

but of the spirituall man. As God gives you leasure to reade any thinge that may further your piety, & hope of a better lyfe then this, if you shall please to vouchsafe a little part of that tyme to reade this by degrees, I shall judge it more then a sufficient satisfaction to my loue & desire of furthering you [in] the waye of grace. And as I do, both dayly [and] dulye pray the God of heaven (& that by speciall [*torn*] & remembring of our worthy Governour, your selfe [& the] blessed fruites of your loue) & I blesse the Lorde without many (if any) fayleing,—so shall I ad this to my prayers, that my token may in some thing helpe you forward (as a sweet gale of winde in your back) in the way of God. Looking among some speciall reserued bookes, & lighting on this little treatise of one of myne owne poore children, I conceaued nothing might sute more to my loue, nor your acceptance. I desire my seruice in Christ may be remembered to Mr. Governour, with blessing on you & all yours, & so I cease, & rest

Yours euer in the Lorde Jesus, his vnworthy servant

STEPHEN BACHILER.

THIS 17. OR 18TH OF THIS 8TH MONTH. 1639.

STEPHEN BACHILER TO THE CHURCH IN BOSTON.

Grace, mercy, & peace in our L. Jes. Christ.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL & REUEREND BRETHREN,—Myne humble duty & service in Christ remembred. I had no sooner written and ended this inclosed letter to my brother Cotton, for some satisfaction to certaine cases, waiting for a convenient messenger, but Casco-messenger came with your Christian & carefull letter, of my good & Gods glory (I should haue first said), was deliuerd to me, which inclosed letter (tho properly belonging to my brother Cot-

ton, yet because it may concerne you all, in respect of a reason or motiue, (which after will appeare in the sequell of this letter) for my furtherance to that work & place, wherto your advice & perswasion seemeth to ayme) I thought good to inclose it, & send it to you all (vpon my second thoughts, as before I intended it to my brother Cotton alone), & this I desire you all to vnderstand to be the true cause of communicating it vnto you all. Now, as touching the maine thing it selfe of my calleing to Casco, the reasons & motiues which you vse to further me, were all presented vnto me, & were runing dayly in my consideration of the said calling, in so much, as it caused me to remember a passage of a sermon of my brother Cottons (speaking long since vpon thos words in the Acts, of Christ being made the Corner stone), he vttered words to this effect (& I do think he will remember & owne the very words themselues), That all the proceedings of the Scribes & Pharisies, & all their adherents together, that by them all, they did but thrust & shoue at Christ, till they had thrust him into that very place, (vidzt. — of being the corner stone of the Fathers building, for the strength & perfecting of the same) to which the Father had appoynted him: So, said I to my wife, considering what a calling I had, some 14 yeres agon, (by that Company of the Ploughe), there to sit downe with them, (not as a Planter only, but as a Pastor also), & considering how the Lord, (thinking to haue rested at New Towne (then so called), vpon that disaster which happened to the goods of the Company, by the false dealeing of thos entrusted by vs with the Ploughe ship, & our goods therin), I say, how the Lord shou'd me thence by an other calling to Sagust, then, from Sagust to Newbury, then from Newbury to Hampton; & now seemes to do the like from Hampton to the very place it selfe, (all the former shoveings & remoueings being still directly towards that place, which, I thought in my minde, might

haue some resemblance to the Pharisies dealing with my Lord & Master.) Howbeit, I thought with all, I could not certainely conclude any such secret counsayle of the Lorde, seeing the intervenient callings were also of God, & the last to Hampton, not least certaine to me to be of God, as (also) that the two last remouealls (N. from Sagust to Newbury, & from Newbury to our Hampton), not being so proper from God, as from Satan & some vnjust instruments, & this now from Hampton to Casco to be (after a sort) forced by like vnjust proceedings, as well (or as much) as by an honorable calling from Casco, & like honorable advice from you, &c., I was, & am, the more doubtfull in my selfe, & [it] is to my speciall frends, whose harts I haue cause to satisfye, why I should remoue against so many reasons objected against me. But (I feare) I am too tedious & large, taking vp too much of your tyme, from imployments of greater moment. I will therfore come to the very poynt, and to the maine stick of all, which is this: — I see not how I can departe hence, till I haue (or (I meane), God for me) cleered & vindicated the cause & wronges I haue suffered of the church I liue yet in; that is, from the Teacher* (indeed) who hath don all, & ben the cause of all the dishonour that hath accrew'd to God, shame to my selfe, & griefe to all Gods people, by his irregular proceedings, & abuse of the power of the church in his hand, by the maior parte cleaveing to him, being his countrymen & acquaintance in old England. Whiles my cause (tho looked sleitly into by diverse Elders & brethren) could neuer come to a judiciall searching forth of things, & an impartiall tryall of my allegations & his defence, *secundum allegata et probata*, which if (yet) they might, I am confident in God (vpon certaine knowledge & due proufe before your selues, whose hands are subscribed to this letter or calling of advice). The Teachers

* "His fellow elder," Rev. Timothy Dalton. For an account of their troubles, see Winthrop's N. E., ii. 44, 45. — Eds.

act of his excomunicateing me,* (such as I am, to say no more of my selfe), would proue the foulest matter, both for the cause alleged, of that excommunication, & the impulsive cause (even wroth & revenge) & also the manner of all his proceeding thorough out, to the very ende: & lastly his keeping me still vnder bonds, & much more then here I may mention, for diverse causes (Christes wrongs & sufferings excepted) that euer was committed against any member of a church. Which (to beare on my shoulder in going hence) is so vncomfortable: tho I can refer it to God's revenging hand, & wait vpon him, (Eccles. 4. 1. 2. & 5. 7. with Psal. 10. 13. 14. verses) yet (then) I am taught againe, that such sinnes, endangering the very state of church & commonwealthe, for neglecting of the complaintes of the afflicted in such a state, as wherin, both Magistrates, Elders & brethren, all are in the sincerest manner set to finde out Sin, & (with Lebia?) to search into the complaintes of the poore, not knowing father nor mother, Church or Elder. In such a state (I say), in such a wine seller to finde such a cock-atrice, & not to kill him, — to haue such monstrous & fearfull proceedings passed ouer, without due justice in proceeding, &c., this againe stirs vp my spirit to seek for, and labour to obteine a writ *ad melius inquirendum*, towards which, the enclosed letter tendeth (as you may perceaue.) Yet (notwithstanding all that I haue said of my burthen & temtations), if your wisedomes shall think it & judg it more safe & reasonable to refer all my wronges (conceaued) to Gods owne judgment, I blesse the Lord for His grace (if I know myne owne hart herein) I can submit my selfe to be over ruled by you. And (here) I give you all more thanks then my pen can expresse, for that aboundant vndeserued care, you plainly shew forthe, in this your letter of advise. Whervpon, I presume, that in

* Which Winthrop records under date of 1641. — *Ibid.* — Eds.

case the Lord shall so prevayle with me & vpon me, as (in your worships short postscript you suppose I will not engage my selfe so fully & sodainly, till I shall haue had good experience, both of place & persons), you will ever haue me in your memories (as occasion shalbe offered) for my gloryfying of God there, & to be ayding & assisting to that whole Province, because I am there by your encouradgment, that I may still depend vpon you for your Christian loue and faithfullnes to me & mine. The truth is, I haue sent them of Casco this answer, brieflye. 1. That their necessityes, hunger & thirst after Ch., there so free choyse of my selfe (so vnworthy) there offers of reverence, credence & subjection to Christes ordinances administred (according vnto God) &c., I purpose (God willing) to come & confer with them about the last week of the next monthe (our first), & that the will of God shall over rule me against all the difficulties of this case (which are many) if that will, or as that will shall cleerlye appeare vnto me, against which I shall not willfully or hypocritically shut myne eyes. This I haue promised, & so far I haue engaged my selfe, & no further.* And (indeed) the being of that (my deare brother Jenner) and Mr. Wheelwright † stablished in thos partes is not a weak motiue to drive, or a cord to drawe me that waye. And now (to conclude), if the Apostle's words should be objected, that this is thankes worthy, if a man (for conscience sake towards God) shall endure griefe, suffering wrongfully, — that (therfore) I ought (in this afforesaid cause of mine, to endure the greefe therof, in what soeuer I suffer wrongfully, without seeking for any redresse or justice against the offender), I confesse it was more absolutly necessary so to suffer, when the church had no civill power to seek

* It does not appear that Mr. Bachiler ever was settled at Casco. The invitation must have come from Cleeves, who, shortly before this period, had returned from England, with a commission as Deputy President of Lygonia. — Eds.

† Jenner was now at Saco, and Wheelwright at Wells. — Eds.

vnto, then (as affore is said) in such a land of righteousness as our New England is. But I ende, & commending you all to God, with my poore selfe & cause, I rest

Your worships at commaund in the Lorde,
his moste vnworthy servant
STEPHEN BACHILER.

HAMPTON, this 26. of this last M. 1643.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Batchellor Rec (1) 8, — 43."

STEPHEN BACHILER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right Worshipfull Gouernour, John Winthrop Esqr. at his house in Boston, thes b dl.

Grace, mercy & peace be multyplied in our Lord Jes. Christ. Amen.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL & MUCH HONOURED IN THE LORD, — Vpon the reading of the letters lately receaued from your Worship & (my speciall frends) the Elders with you, about your judgment in the disposeing of me, ether towards Casco, or the people of Exiter: as also vpon the account which our messenger (Sam. Greenfield) sent vnto you, made of the judgment of such other frends (both Magistrates & Elders betweene your parts & Exiter, missing (I suppose) no one in all the waye to whom your letters referred him, to enquire of, & my selfe to take counsayle from, to which of the callings I should incline vnto, no one misliking mine inclination to Exiter, being cleerly free from any engagment of promise to Casco, I say vpon the consideration of the afforsaid premises, as the 1. 2. or 3. opposites had no one word to oppose further, so were the whole resydue of the plantation (brethren, & others) thoroughly satisfyed, & encouradged presently to go forward in the worke, that, vpon my promise to accept of their caling & desire, they resolued to pich vpon the day of their Constitution & comming into

order, & sending forth their letters for helpe & advice vnto the churches. Whervpon, they pressed me for answer to their calling: which, whiles I desired to delay for some further short tyme, they answered, that all that tyme would hinder the work of Christ, whervpon, I yet demaunded, whether they all (who had subscribed their names, & giuen their consents to the afforesaid calling, & therin their promise of Christian subjection to the work & gouerment of Christ in me & by me as their Pastor) did yet continue firme in that their desire & resolution? To which they all consented with one vote & voyce: whervpon, I could see no sound reason to desire further tyme, but freely consented to their desire & calling: only, earnestly exhorting them, that as I founde them & tooke them in a state of peace, & earnest desire to enjoye each other, so we should forever be carefull to liue in loue & peace, & so to redeeme whatsoeuer ill opinion the country had conceaued of them & wherby the God of peace (& hater of contention) might dwell amonge vs. Whervpon they called a meeting, agreed vpon the persons & materialls of their intended Church, & the day of the helpers meeting, which is the 18. of the 4. & next month succeding; which if it shall please your worship to communicat (with this poore relation, to your Reverend Elders, to saue me a little paines in wrighting) I shall stand thankfull to you, & double thankfull to my brother Wilson (as the ablest to travill) in case he would honour vs with his presence, & mak it a progresse of recreation to see his ould frend, & so to do me this laste service, saue to my buryall. And now (Sir) I haue one speciall busynes to communicat vnto you, for advice, which is this, as briefly as I can. I must expect that so soone as I am translated to my new place, the people of Hampton will lay what rates they can, vpon my lot & state (which I haue) in Hampton, whether (now) vpon these true & reasonable considerations following, I may not obteine fauour from our Go-

verment, to be favoured & exempted, ether for the short tyme of my life, or for some certaine yeres, as shalbe thought fit, from any rate. 1, for that I procured the plantation for them, (as your worship knowes, I think) & haue ben at great charges many wayes since, for the vphoulding & furthering of the same. 2ly, for that I neuer had any maintenance from them hitherto. 3ly, I haue had great losse by fire, well knowne, to the vallue of 200*li.*, with my whole studdy of bookes. 4ly, for the establishment of a Church-estate in Exiter, I haue, of mine own accord, freely consented to allow (out of the wages which they purposed to haue allowed (& I think payd) to Mr. Rashly, yerely) 40*li.* to the purchaseing of Mr. Wheelwright's house * & accommodations therto, to be mine for my terme only, & so to be lefte (at my ende of terme) to such as shall succeede; without which providence I cannot see howe they should expect any succession long, if that be not layde for a foundacion to the church: by reason wherof, I haue (in effect) little or no other meanes or maintenance to depend vpon, but from my lot in Hampton. 5tly, It is considerable, that I voluntaryly remoue for peace sake, and that my remoueing (tho to so neare a place) cannot be but both troublesome & chargable. And lastly, that it can detract but a matter of 3*li.* or ther vpon (happely a little more, I do not knowe) from the Teacher's maintenance or otherwise, which yet may be a comfort & benefit to me, if I may be free. This I do propound only to your consideration, whether I may not lawfully & reasonably desire such a favour of the state? if not (in your wise & conscionable judgment & of my brother[s] your Elders,) I sit down in silence. If yes, then I shall beseech you (as a frend &

* Wheelwright removed to Exeter in 1638, and was one of the founders of that town. When the New-Hampshire plantations came under the Massachusetts Government, in 1642, he removed to Wells. The call which Bachiler had received from the church at Exeter was not sanctioned by the Massachusetts authorities. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 177, 211, 212; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

father) to propound my humble suit [to] the Court (as you best know how) with my reasons & considerations, & cast the successe vpon the Lord aboue. And were it not, that I know your worship respecteth no trouble, so you may do any service for God, or any of His poore servants, I should not be so bowld as I am, thus to trouble you with my letters of complaint and advice. And even so I conclude, with my wiues & my poore service premised to your worship & your Christian consort (myne auncient frend) with our faithfull prayers for you & my Reverend brethren, I cease, & rest in the Lorde,

Yours to commaunde, his most vnprofitable servant

STEPHEN BACHILER.

THIS 18. OR 19. OF THIS 3. M. 1644.

Beare with my blotted paper, my maid threw down myne ink glasse vpon it, & I had not *resc[r]ibendi tempus.*

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Batchellor."

STEPHEN BACHILER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To myne honored & right Worshipfull Gouernour, John Winthrop Esqr. be thes dd at his house in Boston.

Grace, mercy & peace in our Peacemaker the L. Jes. Cht. be multypled vpon you & yours.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, — I can shew a letter of your worships, occasioned by some letters of mine, craueing some helpe from you in some cases of oppression, vnder which I lay & still do, wherin (also) you were pleased to take notice of thos oppressions & wronges; that in case the Lord should giue (or open a dore) of oportunity, you would be readye to do me all the lawfull right, & christian service, that any cause of mine might require. Which

tyme, being (in my conceit) nere at hand, all that I would humbly craue at your hands, is this, to read (as your important busynesses may permit) this inclosed letter to my two beloued & Reuerend brethren, your Elders, & in them, as you & they shall see cause (on whose judgments & wisedom I much depend) to the whole Synode — wherin you shall fully knowe my distressed case & condicion: & so (as you shall se cause) to joyne with them in counsayle, what best to do for my releefe. It is no newes to certifye you, that God hath taken from me my deare helper & yoke fellowe. And wheras, by approbation of the whole plantation of Strabury Banke,* they haue assigned an honest neighbour (a widdowe) to haue some eye & care towards my family, for washing, baking, & other such common services; it is a world of woes to think what rumors detracting spirits raise vp, that I am marryed to her, or certainly shalbe; & cast on her such aspertions without ground or proufe, as that I see not how possibly I shall subsist in the place to do them that service, from which (otherwise) they cannot endure to heare, I shall departe. The Lord direct vs & guide vs joyntly & singularly in all things to his glory, & our rejoyceing in the day & at the appearing of our Lord Jes. Cht. And so with my humble service to your worship, your blessed & beloued yokefellow (myne auncient true frend), with blessing on you both, yours, & all the people of God with you, I ende & rest,

Your Worships in the L. to commaund,
his vnworthy servant,
STEPHEN BACHILER.

3. M. 3. DAY. 47.

* The writer was now living at Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth). He had at this time lost his second wife, Helena; and in 1650, being then eighty-nine years of age, married his third wife, Mary; and was, soon after, fined ten pounds for not publishing his intention of marriage according to law, half of which fine was subsequently remitted. His connubial relations appear after this to have been very unhappy; for a full account of which, see Lewis's "History of Lynn," pp. 95, 96. After he left the Colony, he is said to have married a fourth wife while the third was still living. — EDS.

LETTERS OF THOMAS DUDLEY.*

THOMAS DUDLEY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrop, Esqr. Governour.

Sir, — In answeare to yours, and to what Mr. Coddington hath by word motioned, I say as followeth, that I am content himselfe, Mr. Wildboare, Mr. Coggeshall, Goodman Ffreeborne, & Richard Cander shall haue lycence to departe out of this Patent within a moneth from hence following, and after to retourne at their pleasures to remoove their famyles, soe it be with in half a yeare from this day, — onely Mr. Coddington & Mr. Wildboare are to come & goe, & trade & comerce, & take their owne tyme for remoovall of their famylyes. Likewise for Serieant Huchinson & Serieant Boston,† and for John Porter, I consent to their departure and the release of their ffynes, provyded that they shall departe before the thirteenth day of the next moneth, and not retourne any more, which if they doe, they are to be lyable to the payement of their

* Thomas Dudley, the son of Capt. Roger Dudley, was born in Northampton, Eng., in 1576. There is a tradition that he served under Henry IV. of France, at the siege of Amiens, in 1597. He resided from 1606 to 1621 at Northampton; was afterwards steward to Theophilus, Earl of Lincoln; and, in 1627, was of Boston in Lincolnshire. He was one of the signers of the Agreement at Cambridge in 1629, and came over to New England in 1630; was chosen Deputy-Governor the same year, and served in that office for thirteen years, and as Governor in 1634, 1640, 1645, and 1651. He died 31st July, 1653. Winthrop speaks of him as "a man of approved wisdom and godliness, and of much good service to the country." — *Winthrop's Hist. of N. E.*, ii. 1; *Dudley Genealogies*, pp. 17, 18; *Adlard's Sutton-Dudleys of England*, &c., pp. 21–39. — Eds.

† William Baulston. See the order of the Court respecting these persons, in Colony Records, i. 223. — Eds.

fynes and all three to such further censure as the Court shall thinck meete. Thus with my service remembred, I take leave & rest

Yours at command THO: DUDLEY.

19. OF YE 12, 1637.

[The following order, in the handwriting of Gov. Winthrop, is found on the next leaf of this letter.]

Mr. Wm. Coddington, Mr. Jo: Coggeshall, & Mr. [*blank*] Wildbore, are licensed to depart out of this Jurisdiction, and they haue liberty to remove their famylyes, & dispose of their estates heere in convenient tyme, at their owne liberty, & to goe & come at their liberty, except they, or any of them shalbe otherwise limited by the General Court.

Wm: Baulston & Edw: Hutchinson have license to depart out of this Jurisdiction, provided that they submitt to the Order of the next Generall Court in regarde of the censure they lye vnder.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Brother Dudley."

THOMAS DUDLEY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrop, Esqr. Governour at Boston.

SIR, — I thancke you for your gammon of bacon, the outsides whereof I was forct to cutt of, it smelt soe restyly * of the old Saxon reesings. I meant in my censure of your last booke noe resurreccon of unreasonable individualls, but a contynuance of those, or some of them, which should be alive at the consummacion, which I thinck is the same with your species. The breaking open of your lettres was presumptuous if not hostile. ffor Mr. Gibbins, I thinck I shall satisfy you at my next coming to Boston. ffor Mr. Lechford and his booke,† you say nothing, and I haue since heard that the worst opynion in his book

* "Much bacon is reesty." — *Tusser.* See Moor's "Suffolk Words and Phrases," p. 311. — EDS.

† See another reference to Letchford's book (which must not be understood to be his "Plain Dealing"), in a letter of Dudley to Winthrop of 11th December, in "Proceedings Mass. Hist. Soc." for March, 1858. — EDS.

(which I thinck I shall proove to be heresy) is taken vpp by others. Nowe seeing that this is the way Sathan invades vs by (viz. new opynions & heresyes,) it behooves vs to be the more vigilant, & to stirr vpp our zeale & stopp breaches at the beginninge, least forbearance hurt vs as it did before. I desire to see the lettre Capt. Vnderhill wrote to Mr. Cotton. I take leave, resting ready to doe you service. THO: DUDLEY.

DEC. 29: 1638.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "My Brother Dudley."

THOMAS DUDLEY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To my honoured brother John Winthrop Esqr. at his howse at Boston.

SIR, — I haue received the 20*li.* you sent now by your man, for which I thanck you. The truth is, I owe the whole 50*li.*, to be paid the end of this moneth, and haue noe other money to pay it. The money is not yet gathered vpp here for you, and how much will be in money I yet know not: ffor the other things you wryte of I likewise retourne thancks and purpose to conferre thereof with you at my cominge to Boston, and in the meane tyme and ever shall rest Yours very assured

THO: DUDLEY.

ROCKSBURY, 4. mo: 15 day, 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Bro: Dudley, Gouernour."

LETTERS OF THOMAS READE.*

THOMAS READE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrop esquire, ...

ROTERDAM, th 7 Mearche, 1635.†

DEARE SIR, — I cane not chooes but trobell you withe thes feaue leynes, to let you for to vnder stand that I should a bean very glad for to a spoke withe you at London, but the shipes coming a way so sone that I could not inquier you ought (thoe I was at deyveres places to heare of you). Touching Mr. Endecot's house, I thinke he dead wryt to you a bought it, in the letter wiche I brought. I ould in treate you that you ould not sell it wryt ought be fore I speacke withe you, for I had all moste sould it before I came a way, by his order, but I hope for to se you heare be fore feaue deayes be peast, for my father ‡ hath writ to you all for to com hether. We should be glad of your company to ouer desyered porte. If so be that you doe not come soddonly, I preay

* Thomas Reade, the youngest son of Edmund Reade of Wickford, Essex, Eng., was a colonel in the Parliamentary Army, and for some years Governor of Stirling Castle. He appears also to have served under Gen. Monk in the proceedings connected with the Restoration. His sister Elizabeth was the second wife of John Winthrop, jun.; and Fitz John Winthrop, to whom several of these letters are addressed, was a captain in his regiment. The widow of Edmund Reade married Hugh Peter. Col. Thomas Reade died before December, 1677. — *Winthrop's Hist. of N. E.*, i. 65; *Proceedings of Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 1862–63, pp. 254–258. — EDS.

† This letter, unlike those generally in this volume, is dated according to new style. Winthrop, jun., at this time, was in London. — EDS.

‡ Father-in-law, Hugh Peter. — EDS.

let me heare a word or to frome you, what youer resolushons ar abought the viege. I thinke for to be in England with in this forte nyte at the furtheste, but I hope for to se you heare, or for to heare frome you before that teyme. Thus in great haste I comeit you to [the] Ceaper of the Isrell of God, and rest

Yours to command to my pouer

THOMAS READE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, Jr., "Mr. Tho: Read."

THOMAS READE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Ef[or] his Honnered Brother Mr. John Winthroppe at Pequett in New England, Thes.

STERLING, the 9 March, 1656.

HONNORED BROTHER, — I received yours of the 24th October, and in deade we ar very glad two heare from you, espeshally of your good helthes. Thurogh the Lordes goodnes we injoye the licke mercy. I am at present in Scotland, and my wife with me. Itt hath plessed the Lord two giue vs 6 children, 4 nowe liuing, Prissill, Samuell, Thomas and John; two of them borne in this Towne. The youngest is abought a quarter oulde. Ower two eldst died in England. As for my cousin Lakes bissines, with my cozen Cooke, I should be very reddy two doe any thing which lay in my pouer, but you knoe I am very fare from him; two my best remembrance, when I was last in England, he tould me he had nothing of hures in his handes, and that the lece was longe sence sould. As for the other bissines of the 100*li.*, I can say noe more then what I haue sede all redy for thear sattisfaction. Mine and my wifes due respecks two yourselfe and my sister, with yours. My wife is troboled that she can not

send my sister a tocken, we hauing [. . .] in sending very seldom but by the packett.

Your affexonate loving brother,

THOMAS READE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Col: Read."

THOMAS READE TO FITZ JOHN WINTHROP.

Ffor his loving Nephew Ffitz John Winthrope, at Coll. Winthropes in James Treate, not ffare from Westamastr, Thes, London.

GOOD NEPHEWE, — I am very glad that it hath plessed the Lord two giue you a seafe ariuall in thes Estrene peates, wheare I hope you will resolue two continew; ffor sence you are plessed two desire my aduice, I shall so aduise, and could wishe it ever in my pouer two giue you a moore fulle incurgment then at present I can, hauing at this time noe vakencye in my Regiment. But you may be assued that in any thing I may serue you, I shall be very redy, and so I am assued will Coll. Winthope * be. And if it may not be an hindrence of your better preferment with him, you shall be hartily welcom hether, and we very glad two se you. In the intreme, my selfe and wife desire ouer loue and seruis remembred two yourself and Coll. Winthope and his wife, I remayne,

Your assued loving vnkell,

THOMAS READE.

STELING, the 15th ffeb. 1657.

Indorsed by Fitz John Winthrop, "Coll. Tho: Reade, Rec'd Feb: 1657."

---

* Stephen Winthrop, son of Gov. Winthrop. — EDS.

THOMAS READE TO FITZ JOHN WINTHROP.

Ffor Leiftennant Ffitz John Wentropp, Gouernour of Cardres these.

Sir, — My wife & my selfe receiued yours by the last post from Cardres and are very joyful to heare of your good health and all with you. As for the deale & nailes you writt for, I haue ordered the post to call to Mr. Suldham for them, and the quarter of beefe you desired is sent by the post. Soe with mine & my wiues, & the childrens loue and seruice to you, I remaine,

Your assured loving vnckle,

Thomas Reade.

Sterling, the 17th Ffeb: 1658–9.

Hereinclosed is a letter I received this afternoone by the post.

Indorsed by Fitz John Winthrop, "Coll: Tho: Reade, Starling in Scotland."

THOMAS READE TO FITZ JOHN WINTHROP.

To his honored kinsman Lt. John Winthrop Governour of Cardrosse.

Sir, — I received your letter, and have written a letter or 2 to New England, which desire your care for sending in yours. I'm verry glad of your safe arriveing at Cardros[s,] & of your health. (I remaine) with mine, my wifes & childrens loveing respects to you

Your assured loving vnckle,

Thomas Reade.

Ster: March 5, 1658–9.

Inclosed is a coppy of a letter this weeke received from the Generall,* which desire you to peruse & observe.

Pray add to the superscription of your fathers letter.

Indorsed by Fitz John Winthrop, "Collonell Tho: Reade, Sterling in Scotland."

THOMAS READE TO FITZ JOHN WINTHROP.

For Lt. Fitz John Winthrop, Governour of Cardrosse, These.

Sir, — I am glad the scalwes (?) are ready. Your time being so short to be at Cardrosse, Capt. Callant being to releeve you the next Munday, I shall give him order to take care for the sending of them hither. I desire you to take account of the necessaries & amunition that are in the garison of Cardrosse, & take Capt. Callants receit for them. I remaine Your affexonate loving vnkell,

Tho: Reade.

Ster: 29. Apr. 1659.

Indorsed by Fitz John Winthrop, "Coll: Thomas Reade, Governour of Sterling."

THOMAS READE TO FITZ JOHN WINTHROP.

Thes ffor Capt. Winthrop at the 2 Lyons & Croun, Thes.

Sir, — The greate desire I haue two speake with you, meade me two teake this accation one purpose two a spoken with you.

I thinke I shall continue in twoune this 2: or: 3 dayes. You may find me herby in the morninges, at my howses. In the entreme, I remayne

Your loving vnkell, Thomas Reade.

May 13th, 1661.

Indorsed by Fitz John Winthrop, "Coll: Tho: Reade."

---

* Monk. — Eds.

LETTERS OF SAMUEL SYMONDS.*

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull his much honored brother John Wenthrop of Ipswich, Esqr: speed this I pray.

Good Sir, — I have received your lettre, I thanke you for it: it hath bin my earnest desire to have had an oportunity longe ere this to have bene with you againe, but was hindered by the weather, and still my desire lasts, but now I cannot by reason that my wife her tyme draweth very neare. Concerneinge the bargaine that I have made with you for Argilla, my wife is well content, & it seemes that my father Peter † hath imparted it to the Governer, who (he tells me) approves of it very well, alsoe, soe I hope I shall now meete with noe rub in that businesse; but goe on comfortablely, accordeing as I have & daily doe dispose my affaires for Ipswich. Concerneinge the frame of the howse, I thanke you kindely for your love & care to further my busines. I could be well content to leave much of the contrivance to your owne liberty vpon what we have talked together about it already. I

* Samuel Symonds, a gentleman of ancient family at Yeldham in Essex, and a cursitor in chancery for that county, married, first, Dorothy, daughter of Thomas Harlakenden of Colne, and had ten children before coming to New England in 1637. His second wife was Martha, daughter of Edmund Reade, and widow of Daniel Epps. He settled in Ipswich; was representative in 1638; an assistant in 1643, and by successive elections for thirty years after. In 1673, he was chosen Deputy-Governor; and died in that office, 12th October, 1678. Felt ("History of Ipswich," 161–163) makes honorable mention of him. — *Pedigree of Symonds in the "Diary of the Marches of the Royal Army," &c.; Savage's Geneal. Dict.; Proceedings of Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 1862–63, 254–258. — Eds.

† Hugh Peter had married Elizabeth, the widow of Edmund Reade, and the mother of Martha, the second wife of Symonds. — Eds.

am indiferent whether it be 30 foote or 35 foote longe; 16 or 18 foote broade. I would have wood chimnyes at each end, the frames of the chimnyes to be stronger then ordinary, to beare good heavy load of clay for security against fire. You may let the chimnyes be all the breadth of the howse, if you thinke good; the 2 lower dores to be in the middle of the howse, one opposite to the other. Be sure that all the dorewaies in every place be soe high that any man may goe vpright vnder. The staiers I thinke had best be placed close by the dore. It makes noe great matter though there be noe particion vpon the first flore; if there be, make one biger then the other. For windowes, let them not be over large in any roome, & as few as conveniently may be; let all have current shutting draw-windowes, haveing respect both to present & future vse. I thinke to make it a girt howse will make it more chargeable then neede; however, the side bearers for the second story being to be loaden with corne, &c. must not be pinned on, but rather eyther lett in to the studds or borne vp with false studds, & soe tenented in at the ends; I leave it to you & the carpenters. In this story over the first, I would have a particion, whether in the middest or over the particion vnder, I leave it. In the garrett noe particion, but let there be one or two lucome * windowes, if two, both on one side. I desire to have the sparrs reach downe pretty deep at the eves to preserve the walls the better from the wether, I would have it sellered all over, & soe the frame of the howse accordengly from the bottom. I would have the howse stronge in timber, though plaine & well brased. I would have it covered with very good oake-hart inch board, *for the present*, to be tacked on onely for the present, as you tould me. Let the frame begin from the bottom of the seller, & soe in the ordinary way vpright, for I can hereafter (to save the timber

* Luthern. — Eds.

within grounde) run vp a thin brickworke without. I thinke it best to have the walls without to be all clapboarded besides the clay walls. It were not amisse to leave a dore-way or two within the seller, that soe hereafter one may make comings in from without, & let them be both vpon that side which the lucome window or windowes be.

I desire to have the howse in your bargaineing to be as compleatly mentioned in particulers as may be, at least soe far as you bargaine for, & as speedily done alsoe as you can. I thinke it not best to have too much timber felled neare the howse place westward, &c. Here are as many remembrances as come to minde. I desire you to be in my stead herein & what euer you doe shall please me.

I desire you would talke with Mr. Boreman, & with his helpe, buy for me a matter of 40 bushells of good Indian corne, of him or of some honest man, to be paidd for now in ready mony, & to be deliuered at any tyme in the sumer as I please to vse it. I would deale with such a man as will not repent if corne rise, as I will not if it fall. Thus acknowledging my bouldnes, I desire to present our respectfull love to you, my sister, & your litle one, not forgetting my daughter. . I cease, committing you to him that is mercy & wisdome it selfe, & soe rest

Yours ever, S. Symonds.

My wife desires her spetiall love to be remembered to you both, & to let you vnderstand that she is very glad that she shalbe your neighbour at Ipswich.

I have herewith sent you inclosed 50*li.* for yourselfe, in part of payment, as my father Peter willed me from you to doe; & twenty pounds more to be disposed in corne, & to workemen as you please ; & for the payment for the rest, as you are willing to let my father Peter set downe the tyme, soe am I.

My wife & I desire to be kindely remembered to your

good neighbours, Mr. Boreman & his wife & the rest of our frends. I could haue wished he had written one word by Mr. Tuttell how those 3 bullocks be disposed of. Our desire now is to hasten to Ipswich as fast as we can, at least our servants.

I heare that your Church hath setled the choyce of your ministers in their offices, & that now things are likely to goe on very well & comfortablely, which ministers matter of great ioy to all that love Jesus Christ. And truely the peace of any Church (because pretious) is soe difficult to preserve, in respect of the subtilty & mallice of the common enymy, that it requires answerable cautelousnes on all hands, every one waighing well that one sentence of the Apostle, Let every one esteeme an other better then him selfe, & studdy the vally-way to rise to true honour.

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Sir, — After I had dispatched my letters & busines to you by my father Peter, it soe came to passe that a kinde neighbour & an understandeing man came into the howse where I was, & after some discourse about imploying of servants this winter tyme, & of my particuler case about my sendeing any servants to Ipswich, I resolved to take the oportunity of my father's barke, now at Boston, to send certaine necessarie things by it, as far as Salem, that soe by some meanes or other, they may be gotten to Argilla.* I have alsoe sent Daniell & two men, to sett forward (what they can) my businesse there. They are rawe planters as yet, they want experience, but we doubt not but you will be pleased to councell & order them in their businesses. While the hard weather

Dec: 14th: 1637.

---

* The name of Symonds's farm at Ipswich. — *Felt's Ipswich*, 163. — Eds.

last[s], I suppose that their worke wilbe to deale in woodworke, as stubbing of trees, cleareing of grounds, &c. and as soone as any open weather come, not to omit breakeing vp of grounds for Indian corne this yeare. Its indiferent to me whether they cleare in the mowed plow ground, or in the other, onely this I take it to be best, to begin where most grownde may easliest & spediest be cleared. I would faine get as much corne growing this yeare as I can, & then seed being gotten into ground, we shall attend breaking vp & tilling of ground for next yeare. They will want direccons alsoe, I feare, for their lodgeinges to be warme, for provideing besides Indian corne, some other cheape provition, as garden things, fish, &c. Albeit I shalbe glad to find some good entrance made in my businesse against my comeing, yet if with a litle matter done, it please God that I meet them in health, I hope I shall rest well content. The Lord God prosper all our enterprises. Amen. *Vale.*

Yours ever in all brotherly affeccion,

S: Symonds.

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Mr. John Winthrop these present, in Boston.

Good Brother, — I am sorry you cannot come to Ipswich this tyme, nor that I have oportunity to see you at the Bay, by reason of our harvest. I heare a little how your matters goe at your plantacion, by Jo: R: I could wish that Vncas may be kept a frend still to the English, but yet soe that he be not suffered (in bearing himself vpon the English) to insult or wronge other Indians, ffor that will provoke the Narragansetts, &c., and wilbe offencive even to God himself, & may be a meanes of vncomfortable worke to the English. But the matter is better understood

by such as are (it may be) now in dealing about it: God guide them therein, &c. If you intende to settle at your new plantacion, in case it be agreed, on all hands, that that place shall belonge to the government of Connecticott, & not to the Bay, I would not have you strive about it, but ioyne with them in the worke of God, as one of them; and hereby you may be a meanes to reconcile the Indians amongst themselv[es]. And it may be done in such a way as that they may be sencible of their dependance still on the English, & acknowledg their fidelity, wisdome, & power. Wisdome, & policy are good; yet only soe to be vsed as it be with the doves inocency (however some states put much in fomenting a differing party,) &c. I pray present our love to my sisters, both, & all my cosens. The Lord direct & prosper you all. —Amen.

Your ever loving brother,

S: Symonds.*

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Brother Symonds."

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right Worshipfull John Winthrop, Esq. Governour, present, Boston.†

Good Brother, — I presume you doe heare what is the yssue of the triall of the title of Castell-Hill; ‡ but had not the castle beene grounded vpon records & full testimony by the then Recorder, it might have bene shaken, as it wanted noe battering to doe it. There came in such testimony & pleadings (as I doe assure my selfe) you never dreamed of. The case was debated in Court the Tewsday

---

* About 1645. — Eds.

† See postscript. — Eds.

‡ Winthrop, jun., once owned this estate, and conveyed it to Symonds, Jan. 1, 1645. — 3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 103, 104. — Eds.

after noone, & the fore-noone the next day. The second grant was that which was endeavoured to have bene made voyde, & the first difficultly obtained.

It was vrged that you were denied a vote all the former part of the day, albeit your writing & the thinge it selfe speaks that the land was not now the Townes to giue, but that you yeilded, to part with the greatest part of the neck to them. There were (as I remember,) 4 that did testifie concerning the number of the freemen &c. present, all variously from each other, when they did deliuer theire testimony *viua voce:* one, before he was sworne, said it was done an houre, &c. within night, by candle light, but did not deliuer it soe vpon oath: 2, that it was very late, but not by candle light. You & I are noe wittnesses in this case: we know it was in the after noone, & the Record agreeth with vs; another act being done at same tyme which must require a little debate before it was written, which was your grant of 300 acres, which is well approved of.

But I did know it would require some skill to make one act of the same meeting after the other good, & the former null; soe it was said that your said farme was given before, only the quantity appoynted now; which, (though tyme must be given to beleive) yet they confesse enough to make the meeting valid in determinyng the number of acres; alsoe to confirme this & nullifie the other, it was tendered to be testified that this farme, part of it, you had plowed before this grant. Tis nine yeares since the grant, Aug: 6th last. I suppose you may call to minde who did plow it & when. Though it makes nothing to the case, yet I would willingly let them see their mistaks. It was testified that the meeting was called for an other purpose, but next day when they brought in their testimonies in writing, one of the Jury minded them that this meeting (as before did appeare) was called or warned by the man that did vse to warne the meetings.

It was alsoe said that this last grant was voted in the meeting howse, at that tyme mentioned in the record indeed, but it was written in an other howse, & at an other tyme, & this is a thinge alsoe (I suppose) you never dreamt of. Whereas besides one knowledg & presence at the doeing of it, *res ipsa loquitur*, for in grants where there must be describing of bounds soe & soe, limittacion hither, & a line soe, it will require to be written before it be voted, according to reason & vsuall practice. Mr. Bartholmew was a cleare & full wittnesse, agreeing with the Recorde. There was noe necessity of any. I summoned none; I did expect him, & he did well to be present.

Concerning the poynt in law touching the presedent order or grant of this land to the Towne by the freemen, this did not hold longe debate in the Court.

Their last plea to save the accion & charges at least, was that I have not sett the fence right: soe there are three Commissioners appoynted to vew it, if they be found to have broken the fence vpon my ground, then I am to have 3*li.* dammages.

After all the rest was pleaded, &c., poynt of Chancery or equity was pleaded, the argument whereof I suppose is generally knowne to be vpon a grosse mistake. It was to this effect, that you left the Towne when Mr. Ward was leaving his place, the Church settling our present officers, & the Church ready to crack: how longe these things were done before, you know better then I; but sure I am, I was a member of the Church first by our present elders in office, &c. &c.

An other thinge was on the second day testified, I having touched the strangnes of averring against a Record, & not soe much as a protestacion against it, at that tyme made. The next day one of them remembered, vpon his oath, there was a protestacion. I know not whether he well vnderstands what it is, but vnlesse had there bene one, yet if not recorded, what would it effect to prevent

any purchasser from deceiving himselfe, building vpon the Record for the Grant, & finding nothing to question the same?

Ffor as much as I was present, & there is Mr. B: his oath to the recorder for a full consent, for ought appeared to him, & by their owne confession, by the maior part it was done, this seemes very strange; save that the space of tyme since doth help to make the most charitable interpretacion, &c.

A protestacion doth not overthrow an act, noe more then when 2 or three doe enter their dissent vpon an act of Court, it doth render the matter more doutfull, &c.

Vrgent occasions doe call me off. I pray God send you a prosperous iourney.. Our love to you, my sister, & all my cosens. I rest

Your ever loving brother,

Samuel Symonds.

October 6th, 47.

Sir, This I have written to my brother, your sonne, but fearing he may be gone, I thought good to direct it to yourselfe, desiring you wilbe pleased to convay it when you write to him.

Indorsed, "Mr. Symonds, Ipswich, 1647."

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his very loving brother John Winthrop, of Salem, Esq. this, Salem.

Good Brother, — Having this oportunity, I thought good to let you vnderstand God's providence towards vs: my daughter Epps,* vpon the 22th of this instant, was

* His daughter Elizabeth married Daniel Epps, 20th May, 1644. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

deliuered of a sonne; & thanks be to God, both mother & sonne are comfortably well. We would gladly know what day you will agree vpon to bring my sister, that accordingly we may send you a horse to the water side. I thanke God my wife hath bene better in respect of the paine in her stomack this weeke then formerly: good wine (as you say) is the best cordiall for her.

I have endeavoured this day to sett that businesse, Cosen Downing wrote to me about, on foote, here. I wish earnestly it may be attended, &c. My wife desireth thanks to be returned to my sister for her token. Thus with our love to you both & yours, & to my Cosen Downing & his, I rest

Your ever loving brother,

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

IPSWICH, 24th 12th, 1647.

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

A letter of Attourny for Mr. John Winthrop, at Pequott.

GOOD BROTHER WINTHROP, — The Generall Court of the Massachusetts having granted vnto me 500 acres of ground in Pequott;* in respect of my great distance from that place, I am disabled to see the land laid out; & being vnwilling it should be any longer deferred, this is to desire & authorize you to act for me, & in my name, in that behalfe, whether in the prosecucion thereof it doth or may concerne the obtayning the assistance or authority of any Court, Magistrate, or helpe of any other party. And what you shall doe or procure to be done, I shall freely & fully confirme & establish. And herewith you have included a

* "Upon the request of Mr. Samuel Symonds, he also is granted to have five hundred acres of land in the Pequot country, next adjoining to Mr. Wilson and Mr. Rawson; provided it be of such land as falls to our portion." — *Mass. Col. Records*, iii. 126. The land granted was "at Paquatucke, near the Narragansett country." — *Ibid.* — EDS.

coppie of the aforesaid grant of the Generall Court. Dat. the 9th day of the 5th month, 1651.

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

Signed & deliuered as the act of the said
Samuel, in the presence of vs.
DANIELL EPPS:
JAMES CHEWTE.

Brother, I pray commend me lovingly to my cosen Haynes, & my cosen his wife; & tell him, I desire he would be pleased to assist you in this businesse.

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

For the worshipfull his very loving brother John Winthrop Esqr: this: Pequott.

DEARE BROTHER, — I cannot say but its besides my intentions that I write not more frequently vnto you; I can onely plead this for my excuse (soe farr as it will goe) the multitude of occasions I have, & the vncertenty when, & how, to convey lettres. We have not heard from you now this longe tyme: we heare some tyme of you which doth reioyce vs. We are generally in health, but my wife hath bene very ill of a cold above this seavenight. I have little news at this tyme to acquaint you with, because its longe since any ship came from Engl: there is speach (how grounded I cannot soe well discerne) that there is warr betweene England on the one side, and Holland & France on the other. If soe, how troublesome are the seas. I make account that my sonnes Harlakinden & John, shall have my land at Pequott. My sonne H: intendeth to come to your quarters in the spring, to seeke for & sett vpon farming, for himself. I doubt not but you will advise him for the best. I have received a lettre this yeare

from my brother, Col: Reade,* there being something coming to him from Capt. Hathorne, vpon the accounts; he doth appoynt him in his lettre to pay my sister Lake a certaine summe, viz: 9*li.*, 3*s.* 7*d.* I pray commend me to her, to my sister, with your self & all yours, & soe doth my wife desire; & she hath sent my sister, by Richard Scofeild, six pounds of hopps, hopeing he wilbe carefull to deliver them. My cosen Harris & all there are in health. I pray remember our love to my cosen Gallop. Thus desiring God to guide vs in our pilgrimage, I rest

Your ever loving brother,

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

IPSWICH, 10th 7th, 1652.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, Jr., "Brother Symonds."

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull his very loving brother John Winthrop, Esqr: this present: at Pequott:

DEARE BROTHER, — I received yours a while since, & did intende to write vnto you, but I am very sorry to have such an occation to hasten me as now there is. If I were present with you & my sister, in these two things I should endeavour; first, to help support your spirits vnder such a stroke, then to cast which way may be best for spirituall improvement. For the first, it tends to support to consider who it is that hath done it: he that is bound to give noe account of his matters: & not too much to pore vpon this, or that, which might have prevented, as its likly you are apt to conceive; and secondly, that you therewith labour to apply that generall soule comforting promise, viz: All things shall worke together for the good of them

---

* See p. 118, note *. — EDS.

that love God. And for spirituall improvement, such providences may well minde vs of the vncertainty of all earthly enioyments, therefore to put vs on the move to obtayne assurance of such as are both full & lasting. When, through spetiall grace, the heart, seing the emptines of the creature, rests in the fullnes that is in Jesus Christ, it is in spirituall health. Health you know is sweet, though the pill that procureth it be bitter. I might add, you have many children still; count you have none, give them all to the Lord; & then shall you be sure to have them againe with advantage. News we have little, Maior Sedgwick & Capt. Leveritt are lately arrived; but I suppose you had the news from Engl: from the former shipps. We are in health in the generall, I thanke God; but my wife is very ill oft tymes, & spetially in the fore part of the day. I pray remember my love & respect to both my sisters & all my cosens, and tell my sister Lake* that the former news concerning her husband to be dead was vntru; they now write it was mistaken, & that he is living. I know not how my sonne H. doth improove his tyme. You know, if you have not forgotten, how I desire he may. I pray instruct him to better his writing, spelling, reading, & inditing, &c; and tell him withall I am glad he can doe it soe well, fearing that he doth practice soe little.

The good Lord comfort all your hearts. Amen.

Your ever loving brother,

Samuel Symonds.

Boston, June 11th: 54.

My cosen Harris & all theirs are in health.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Br: Simonds."

---

* Margaret Lake, who had made her home with her sister Winthrop for many years. Her husband's name was John Lake. See Proceedings of the Mass. Hist. Soc. for 1862–63, pp. 254–258. — Eds.

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the rigt Worshipfull John Winthrop Esqr: Deputy Governour this present. Connecticott.

Deare Brother, — I gladly imbraced this oportunity to salute you with these few lines. My cosens (all three) were in health, & as merry as very good cheere & Ipswich frends could make them, on sixt day last; wittnes my wife, sister Lake; Sam: M: R: Mris. Rogers, 3 of her sonnes, besides her sonne Hubberd & his, my sonne Epps & his, &c. We see nothing but matter of hopefullnes & incouragment concerning my cosens new condicion. He carrieth himself soe that he gaineth more & more love & respect, amongst such as know him. We hope they will live comfortably together, & that both you & we shall have cause to blesse God in theire behalf. We desire my cosens to be with vs this winter as much as they can. My wife spoke to her. We thinke she may affourd vs her company now better then afterward. My daughter M. desires to be excused in not returning an answere to your loving letter at this tyme. She hath received your phizick, for which she humbly thanks you. Neither she nor her sister R: have had them since you were here. They did follow your direccions. Thus presenting our love & kinde respects to yourself, my sister, & all my cosens, I commend you to the direccion & proteccion of our blessed Saviour & soe rest,

Your loving brother, Samuel Symonds.

My wife desires to be remembered to my cosen Waite, & would intreat him to follow his studdy hard: but above all to feare God & keep his commands.

Argilla, 9br 29th 1658.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Brother Symonds."

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right worshipfull John Winthrop Esqr: Governour of Connecticott, this present.

Good Brother, — I have received your wellcome lettre, being very joyfull to vnderstand of your recovery &c. Concerninge your questions, I must now suddenly speake to them, (the messinger being ready to depart). A man may make his will, & good in law, where ever he liveth & dieth; but it must be prooved or legally certified in that common wealth where the estate lyeth: there being none to execute the judgment of a Court in any suit about it out of the Jurisdiccion; and the lawe of the country where the estate is, doth regulate the same diversly: for example, in England noe lande passeth by will paroll: to be good in lawe it must be given in writing.

Where there is an executor named in the will (it being noe will without it be soe) he living out of the Jurisdiccion where the estate lyeth) though he accept, yet it is as if there were none (vnles he can make an Atourny in such a case) else a Court as to that part of the estate must order the estate, & give power to an administrator. And our Courts in such cases doe ordinarily follow the words or minde of the Testator in disposing of the estate.

Now to speake more particularly to your questions.

1. In New Engl: yea, & in Engl: alsoe, the minde of the Testator is attended, & the forme of words are not soe stricly held to as in deeds, & the like, where a man giveth lande to such a person for ever, its good in a will, but without the words, his heires, it maketh noe estate of inheritance in other deeds.

2. Where an estate is give to persons joyntly, they are joynt tenants, holding by one title; in which case the survivors carryeth it as tenants in common, (if divers).

3. Except you have a law to the contrary, the last survivor in such case will carry all. And if they will faile in their trust, there seeme in the case you putt to be none to call them to account, but a Court of equity, & their owne conscience.

4. I suppose there is noe necessity (in this case) that they should all concurr in the disposing of this estate. Its sufficient, (being by will) that it be done by the company, which is the major part, according to the nature thereof; otherwise it is in Commissions, where they are joyntly expressed.

5. Vnles I see the will, I conceive there is noe need of any power to these legatees to be put forth, to enable them. The will prooved is sufficient authority to them, being recorded here.

My sonne H: is comeing to New London; & having bought & paid for my sisters farme & six acre lott there, desires your aide in the perfecting of the busines in making out, recording &c. And alsoe I desire it in laying out, cleare making, recording, &c., my 500 acres. Mr. Richardson (I hope) will take this oportunity to see it done. Pray commend me to him, & desire him to doe it. My wife & daughter Martha are now better (I thanke God) then they have bene. I hope we shall see you here shortly. Our love & respects presented, I rest

Your loving brother, S: Symonds.

July the last, 60:

Present our love alsoe to my sister & all my cosens.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Brother Symonds about wills."

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To my honored brother, John Winthrop, Esqr: this present in London.

Loving Brother, — We should have bene very glad of the advantage to have seene you before you had sett saile for Engl: we might have spoken of many things, but that oportunity is past. We suppose you will make search for our father Mr. Edmund Reade his will.* Its thought to be prooved at Billery-key in Essex, neare Burnt wood. If not there, you may learne, its likly, where to finde it. It may be worth the looking after, & to take a coppy thereof. My sister & cosens are amongst vs, & in health; but you will heare more largly from themselves. You are earnestly expected & desired with the first in the springe. The Lord be with you, both by land & sea. Thus our love & due respects presented, he commends your guidance & safty to the great Lord of lands & seas that is

Sir, Your ever loving brother,

Samuel Symonds.

My daughter Martha calls vpon me againe & againe, to present her duty & respects to you. Commend vs all to my cosens.

Argilla, 7bre: 23th, 1661.

I hope you will see my brother Reade, & soe deliuer my lettre directed to him.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Sam: Symonds."

* See Proceedings of the Mass. Hist. Soc., 1862–63, pp. 254–258. — Eds.

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

For his honored frende, John Winthrop, Esqr: be this presented in London.

Deare Brother, — We are not willing to let this oportunity passe without saluting of you. My sister & cosens are all in health, as you wilbe given to vnderstande more amply by an other hande. We doubt not but you will fully search out our father Mr. Edmund Reade his will, & take out a coppy of the same. Where it was prooved you may there learne, whether at Billerikey, Dunmore, London, or elswhere. It is of some concernment to vs (as you know). My wife thinke he died about 38 yeares since.* My wife presents her love to you & my cosens. She is very crazy, but if you returne in safty, be a good man, & bring good tidings (she saith) you will much refresh her. If Mr. Bradstreet & Mr. Norton † commith to London, I feare not but you will speedily see them, by whom you may vnderstand of our affaires. I heare what a dangerous passage you had; it may put vs in minde of the extreame difficulties & hassards doe attende our pilgrimage to that heavenly country. We had need labor with all our might, to get a sure & safe arrivall at that haven. I did formerly write to my brother Reade, & now againe. I pray let care be had of speedy & safe deliuery of it. It doth concerne him in reference to what he hath done. I have still one brother living. He hath a good estate; he is a batchellour. When I was in England he loved me well. I know not now, how I am in his minde; but brother, if you did make a journy to see him, & (as occasion may be taken) to speake of me, as you shall see

* Edmund Reade's will is dated 20th November, 1623. He must have died soon after. — Eds.

† These gentlemen were chosen agents of the Massachusetts Colony to London. They sailed 10th February preceding. Concerning the object of their mission, see Hutchinson's Mass., i. 219–221. — Eds.

good, I shall add this courtecy to the heap of your former high deservings. The rest of my cosens are (I take it) well provided for. I am loath to be as one vtterly forgotten by one soe related (if God see meet). But I confesse it is a tender stringe, & he hath need of wisdome that can finger it well. He dwelleth at the Poole in Much Yeldham, neare Castle Heningham in Essex, about six miles from Erls Colne, where my kinrid of the Harlakindens live, which if alsoe you please to vizitt, kindly commending me to them all & every one of them, it wilbe very gratfull. I shall trouble you noe further at this tyme, but to conjoyne my daughter M: her duty with what is due from him that is

Sir, Your ever loving brother, &c.

S: Symonds.

If you could procure a likly boy & girle, about 14 yeares old* apeece, for what tyme you can to youre selfe & assignes, & soe assigne the indentures to me, you shall doe vs a very great courtecy. Its said about Yorkeshire, or remote places, they may easly be had. We shall make full satisfaccion, with many thankes.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Br. Symonds, Rec: Mar: 26: 1662."

SAMUEL SYMONDS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the honorable John Winthrop, Esqr. Governour of Connecticott, These present.

Honorable Sir, — My love & due respects presented, I had hope to have seene you in these parts longe err this, and to have commemorated your great losse, though to her eternall gaine.† Our frends at Salem, Wenham, & Ipswich, are all in health, blessed be God. You heare of

* 15 or 16 yeares old, rather. — Symonds.

† The writer, perhaps, alludes to the death of Mrs. Elizabeth Winthrop, the wife of John Winthrop, jun., which took place 24th November, 1672. — Eds.

the rebellion, & barbarous actings of the Indians at Swansey & other places. The Lorde rebuke them. I heare alsoe of your forces conjoyned with ours at or about Narragansett, but not of their sucesse (as yet.)

I heare alsoe of the extraordinary favour of God to your Colony, & soe to vs all joyntly concerned. That one came in a sloop to surprise your fort, or place fitt for a fort, at your Rivers mouth, (which is the key of your country) and was mett with a company of souldiers there provided for an other designe. A mercy not to be forgotten.* If a man pretends frendship, & to helpe against the Indians, you will consider how his accions sute with his words, and act accordingly. We have his Majesties Riall Charter, which we acknowledge to be a high favour in many respects. It is a confirmacion of our right, which we enjoye partly by possession, & partly by purchasse, &c; and having these, tis hoped we shall not need to voyage to England to dispute our right. I have heard that your selfe was intended for England; but I hope you wilbe better advised. I earnestly desire to speake with you, before you resolve vpon such a motion. I write onely to your self, therefore, Sir, I forbeare mentioning any other which deserve commendams, I hope you vnderstand my meaning. The good Lord direct & prosper all your counsells & conclusions, to the advancement of his glorious name, & the religious advantage of the cause of his gospell settled amongst vs. Amen.

Sir, Your honors humble servant, & loving brother,

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

BOSTON, 14th July, 75.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Symonds, Senr, rec: July 26:"

---

* This refers to the attempted hostile invasion of Connecticut by Major Andros, on the 8th or 9th of this month, which was resisted with spirit by the Connecticut authorities. Andros demanded the surrender of the fort on the Connecticut River to the government of the Duke of York. — *Trumbull's Connecticut*, i. 328–330. — EDS.

LETTERS, &c., OF HERBERT PELHAM.*

PETITION OF HERBERT PELHAM AND RICHARD SALTONSTALL TO THE GENERAL COURT OF MASSACHUSETTS.

To the Honord Generall Court.

In the last Session of this Court, ther was a motion made unto us, by some of the Magistrates, that we would attend the servise of the Countrie in England;† which (in the presenc of all the Magistrates, (or most of them) for divers reasons of weight which were then given by us) we utterly refused:

Afterward the Court concluded upon Mr. Winslow,‡ and notwithstanding our former refusall, with the reasons therof, yet our names are inserted with Mr. Winslowes, in a letter directed to the Earle of Warwicke & the rest of the Committe for Forraigne Plantations, to act in the occasions of the Countrie; which (being such, & soe circumstanced) we can not assent unto.

---

* Herbert Pelham, a native of Lincolnshire, matriculated at Magdalen College, Oxford, 12th November, 1619, in his eighteenth year; and, according to Hutchinson, was of the same family with the Duke of Newcastle. He was probably a lawyer in London; and, after promoting the interests of the Massachusetts Colony for some years as a member of the Company in England, came over to Massachusetts in 1638. He was actively engaged in the plantation of Sudbury, where he had a grant of land. He was chosen the first Treasurer of Harvard College in 1643, and was made a freeman and an assistant in 1645. He returned to England in 1647, as appears by his letters in this collection, living at Bures in Essex; but was buried in Suffolk, 1st July, 1673. His daughter Penelope married Gov. Josiah Winslow. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 19, 150; *Hutchinson's Hist. of Mass.*, i. 144; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† See the last letter of Pelham to Gov. Winthrop in this collection; and also Mass. Col. Records, iii. 48. — Eds.

‡ *Ibid.*, p. 79. — Eds.

Wherefore we desier that our names may be withdraune out of that letter, and all other writeings (if any be) to that, or the like intent.

Yours in all Christiane respects,

HERBERT PELHAM.
RICHARD SALTONSTALL.

17TH OF THE 9TH MO: 1646.

The Deputies thinke it but reasonable to graunt these honnoured gents. request, with reference to our honnoured Magistrates consent heereto. EDWARD RAWSON.

Indorsed, "Mr. Pelham, Mr. Saltonstall, Pet."

HERBERT PELHAM TO JOHN WINTHROP.

LONDON, May 5th 1647.

GOOD COSEN, — I desire that in any things I could expresse that loue & respect that I owe unto your selfe & familie, whose affections to me & myne I have euer fovnde.

I know not as yett when my occasions will give liberty to have thoughts of returning, as I unwillingly departed from yow, for I know noe place where I more desire to be then amongst your selves, but we have not the disposeing of our time, nor appoynting the bounds of our habitation. The Lord hath beene very good to us ever since we left yow to this day; my wife only hath beene some time very ill, but is now in good health.*

Your old freinds at Assington Hall were in good health not long since; the old man† lookes very well: yow will understand more by my cose[n] Saltonstall.

---

* This was the second wife of Pelham, who was daughter of Godfrey Basseville, Esq., of County York, and widow of Roger Harlakenden. The first wife was a Waldegrave. *Savage's Geneal. Dict.*, iii. 385. — EDS.

† Brampton Gurdon, several of whose letters are published in the sixth volume of the present series of these Collections, and one among the miscellaneous letters in this volume. He was, at this time, in the eighty-first year of his age. — 4 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 568. — EDS.

Very many of Bures are dead since I was last in England, but the most of them enemies to goodnes, that ther is scarse left, (that now lives in the Towne) one malignant spirit that is of any qualitie.

For the busines of the Countrie yow will be more fully informed by my cosen Winslow,* who takes great payns, but as yet can not come to a hearing.

The House yesterday sate long, & are at present in as great a streight as they have beene some yeares past. I thinke the wisest heads in the Kingdome see more cause for serious humiliation in regard of those new aproaching dangers then formerly, the Army much adoe to be quietted, the Kingdome much discontented with the House, & they one with an outher. I have sent the printed news to your brother Dudley, wher, if ther be any thing yow have not seene, yow may command them. The Lord in mercy keepe you & yours, & the whole countrie in peace. I hope yow will every day more & more see lesse cause to repent that the doore hath not beene sett soe wide open as some would have had it, for the letting in of such as likely to prove troublers of the peace, both of Churches & Commonwealth. Thus with the continuance of prayers, with an earnest desier of yours for me & myne, I rest & remayne Your loving cosen,

HERBERT PELHAM.

HERBERT PELHAM TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull and his much Honored Kinsman John Winthrop, Governour of the Mattachussetts, these present.

FERRNS 19th (2) 48.

GOOD COSEN, — Yours the 17 (9) 47 by Mr. Trevise I received, by which I perceive in the generall visitation

* Edward Winslow, having been appointed agent for the Massachusetts Colony in England, had sailed from Boston about the middle of the December previous. He never returned to New England. See Bradford's Plym. Plant., pp. 442–444. — EDS.

through the Countrie your selfe had a share, as also the losse of your deare yoake fellow,* whom the Lord hath taken to himselfe. Though your owne & the countries losse therin be very great, yet our comfort is, when the streames fayle, we may goe to the Fountayne.

The Lord was pleasd to visitt my selfe the last August with a sicknes, which held about six weeks; and this spring, about the midle of the last month, I was agayne held in my bed about 8 dayes, & as yett have not recoverd my selfe, but on two severall days gate cold at the meeting which held me yet at Bures, that I have not had libertie to returne to London, nor write to my frends as I desierd by the former shipe.

The last intelligence I had from London from a good hand, I shall impart to you. The 9th of this month, being Lords day, a Captayne of the cittie comeing out of Moore feildes to the Lord Maior, enformed him of a tumultious company of young men & aprentises that were gathered together; † order was given him to draw out his company, & to see if [he] coud gett them to ther severall homes, but he mett with such resistance from them as he was forced to fyer upon them, hopeing by that to have effected that which he was sent for. The rioters heere upon were much enraged, and unanimously fell upon his company, & forced them into the cittie, & he & his companie were soe dispersed that the rioters enterd with him, and then turned ther furie towards Blacke Tom and his courtiers, as they cald them, & with great hast repay[r]d towards the Generals quarters & White Hall. The courtiers heareing of ther ententions, were ready to receive them, but the Generals horse overtaking them in their passage, took from them their coullers, & about some 3 or 4 of the apprentices were slayne, and severall

* Margaret Tyndall, Winthrop's third wife, had died the 14th June previous. — *Hist. N. E.*, ii. 310. — Eds.

† See notice of this riot in Heath's "Chronicle," second edition, p. 170. — Eds.

wounded, beate them into the cittie, & haveing ride up & doune till ten a clocke at night, reterned to ther quarters, hopeing all had beene quiett. But about 12 that night they drew themselues into great bodyes in severall parts of the cittie, threatned to kill the Lord Maior, & severall other honest Aldermen. The Militia was then sitting at the Lord Majors. They sent forth ther orders to severall of ther officers, but such was the basenes of the cittie, although it were for ther owne deliverance, that not two entyer companyes coud be raysed, one of which was sent doune to the Lord Maiors for his [and] the Militias securitie. The rioters endeavoured to have surprised the keyes of the cittie, but they were prevented, the Lord Major having before sent to have them layd where they could not be found, which accordingly was done.

About 2 of the clocke in the night, they came in great companys to the Lord Majors house. The Sherriffe went out to them, made proclamation, commanding them upon payne of death to depart to ther severall homes; but soe soone as he had ended his Proclamation they cryed fall on, fall on; the Sheriffe was fayne to retreate to the house, & the companie that came before for my Lord Majors securitie ran away, save some few that gatt in to the house, and some halberteeres. The Sheriffe he mayntay[ne]d the wickett, till such time as some that were in the house came to him. The rioters fired upon the Shirefe, & they within upon those that were without. Two without and one within were slayne.

A gunner being comanded to thrust forth a small peice he had within, & forceing it forth some what further then was entended, was taken from him by them that were without, & turned upon them within. But it pleased God soe [to] order it that none amongst them had skill to use it, or rather being over joyed that they had gotten such a prize, went their wayes to Leaden Hall to the rest of ther companions.

This made way for the Lord Major & the Militias escape, who were soe much eyed by these rioters. But I should have let you know that in regard of the citys unwillingnes either to save themselves or the Lord Major, & the numerousnes of the ryoters, the Militia was forced to send to the Generall for his assistance, letting him know where his men should be letten in, which was at Moore Gate & Criple Gate; Moore Gate being kept by Colonell Roes souldiers. The Generall nor none of his men was any whit idle. The rioters were in great numbers about Fleete Street & Temple Barr, joyning with them up as farr as Ludgate, and up also in greate numbers at Leaden Hall. Some few parties of the Generall['s] horse kept them together at Fleete-streete, by ther shewing them selues now and then: till the rest of the horse & foote were gott into the cittie at the two gates before mentioned, and then fell upon the[m] at Leaden Hall, who were filling there Bandileers [with] powder out of the cittie magazine, which they had bro[ken] open. This was about six or seaven in the morning. The rioters made heade agaynst them for about an hower, some were kild & some wounded. Captayne Merinen, the Generalls officer of horse, dangerously wounded in the shoulder. A woman was slayne who was rayling against the Parliament, saying she hoped to see them all destroyd, by a shott that was made by the rioters out of the drake they took at the Lord Majors doors. Severall of the cheife of the rioters were taken. The rest of the horse & foote fell upon them in Fleete Streete, & routed them, and about 9 or ten a cloke had finshd ther worke & marchd backe to their quarters, save some few that were left, to gaurd the Lord Major & the Militia to theirs, not prejudiceing one citizen to the least hayer of ther heads.

The Militia gave the officers & souldiers 300*li.* for their servise. The next day there was a Common Councell, which before they mett talked bigly, but when they mett

passed these votes unanimously. First, they aprehended them selves in great danger: 2dly, that the ministers next Lord's Day should give God thanks for their saftie: 3d, that the Generall should [be] wayted upon to returne him hartie thankes for his care & readines: 4th, that thankes be given to the militia for the 300*li.* they gave to the souldiers: 5th, that some doe attend upon the Parliament for a full commission, that these rioters which are taken may be brought to condingne punishment. And now the cittie is mad that they them selves did not rise to quell the aprentises, but the Militia should be forced to send to the Generall for reliefe.

The Lord Inchequin is wholy fallen of from the Parliament & declares himselfe for the King & Presbitterie; Wales wholy up, & Scottland prepareing agaynst the Par: The Kings partie not idle. You see what need we stand in of all the prayers of the churches with yow, which is the earnest desier of

Yovr Loveinge Kinseman

Herbert Pelham.

Post Script. I heare a whispering from some knowing men as if some great ones in the House had a hand in it, & that it is feared it will not thus end, but that ther is feard a more generall rising through the whole cittie.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Cosen Pelham per Mr. Graues, 2, (3) 48."

HERBERT PELHAM TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull & much Honored the Governour of the Mattachusetts Bay in America. These present.

Sir, — I doubt but yow are fully informed by my cosen Winslow in those things that concerne the affayrs of the Collonies, the care of which busines you have committed

to him; who as he was fitly chosen by your selfe & the rest, soe he hath as faythfully discharged that trust you have reposed in him. I could from my owne observation say much concerning his care & dilligence in improveing every opportunitie, and his many wearisome journeys and attendancys for the dispach of the busines he came about, & his earnest desire to have returned before, and at this time with Captayne Haukins, but I shall leave it to the relation of some now returning to you. As the busines now stands, I can not see how he can leaue it to any other, without discomfort to himselfe, and apparant prejudice to those that haue be trusted him.

I wish such supplys as by returnes yow intended to furnish him withall, for to goe through with busines, have not miscarried, for I heare not as yet of any that hath come to his hands. Expences are greater then happilie yow can conceive; nor doe I thinke that yow intend that he should make use of his oune creditt to take up money for the use of [the] countrie, but hope that such a course is taken by them as will by the next returne fully satisfie him, & reach the ends aymed at.

If the great wheeles of the Kingdome breacke not, and all things run backward, I hope he will, the next summer, himselfe give yow a good account of all his labours.*

Thus with the tender of my best respects to your selfe, and heartie love to all the Asistants, I rest

Yours to be commanded

HERBERT PELHAM.

BURES 14th of the 5th: 48.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Cosin Pelham. 48. per Capt. Hawkins shipp."

---

* See p. 140, note. — EDS.

LETTERS OF JOHN BLACKLEACH.*

JOHN BLACKLEACH TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Greate and many are the reasons (Right Worshipfull) that mooued vpon the vast and trobled ocean sea, to study, and commit to writinge, this followinge discourse:

ffor first, conscideringe the estate and condicion of some particular cases of conscience which weare dependinge and not thoroughlie resolued, when I left the confines of America, to saile into Engelande:

And allsoe conscideringe the sad, many, and lamentable breaches, that haue bene, and continued, in some other partes of the worlde, not onely betwene Churches, but allsoe betwene deare and louinge freindes.

Theise and other thinges beinge taken into consideracion, I deemed my tyme not vnprofitably spent, to enquire

* John Blackleach, a merchant, was of Salem as early as 1634, and representative in 1636. In May, 1644, as we learn from the records of the General Court, "Mr. Blackleach his petition about the Mores was consented to, to be committed to the elders, to enforme us of the mind of God herein, & then further to consider it." We have no further information as to the subject of the petition. He afterwards removed to Boston, where his house was consumed in "the great fire," 14th March, 1652–3; and where his daughter was married in 1660. But he appears to have spent the winter of 1658–9 in New Haven. He was "presented for freeman," at the General Court in Hartford, in May, 1669, as of Stratford. At the same Court, he presented his application for their approval of "his endeavours to make known to the Indians . . . something of the knowledge of God;" which was favorably received and encouraged by the authorities. He was afterwards of Hartford; and appears, from one of his letters in this volume, to have made a voyage to Jamaica in 1671. Mr. Savage says that he "probably" went home in 1678, but returned the next year. It appears, from the first letter here, that he had made an earlier visit to England. He died at Wethersfield, 23d August, 1683. — *Mass. Col. Records*, ii. 67; *Public Records of Conn.*, ii. 105, 111; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

booth diligently and exactly, booth what might be the true resolution of those cases then dependinge, and allsoe what might be the ocasion of those many breaches before spoken of.

Togeather with the motiues aforesaide, I takinge into conscideracion my owne estate and condicion, togeather with the estate and condicion of many poore soules, which haue to theire greate hazard, and expences, trauelled into theise parts of the vast willdernesse in America.

ffor theise aforesaide causes I haue (with some difficulty) enquired & searched into the Holy Scriptures: to see if that (by the assistance of Gods Hoely Spirit) I might finde out the way of peace.

Which after I had diligently endeuoured, truely, and plainely to resolue some cases of conscience, and had endeauoured likewise truely, and plainely (as the place, tyme, and Gods assistance would) to shew the originall of the aforesaide breaches, and the way to preuent the future that might arise.

I was forced further to resolue this question, in what cases, and how far wee may differ in iudgement, and yet neuerthelesse cohabitation, peace, and loue may (accordinge to the Rule of the Hoely Scriptures), continue amongst us.

The cause that mooued mee to present theise my laboures to your veiue, in the first and principall place; is for many and (as I conceiue) very weightie reasons:

To instance in one or two moouinge causes.

ffirst, in regarde that I haue obserued, (soe far as I coulde) that the Greate God hath enriched you, with a large portion of Spirituall Graces, wheareby (I hope and pray) that God will direct you vprightlie, wisely, and thoroughlie, to scann, and peruse the contents of this treatise.

2ly. ffor that cause, because that God haueinge preferred you aboue many of your brethren, in place of Gouerne-

ment, you haue theireby occasion to doe much good, to many a poore soule. I vmblie pray you let not the truth be dispiced, although the person that tendereth it be weake. I hope God hath giuen you wisdome to receiue the truth in loue of the truth, not hauinge respecte of or to persons: in such cases:

Try all thinges, refuse the bad, hould fast the truth to the death: remember (I pray you) that not many wisemen (accordinge to the worlde) doe vnderstande the hid mistery of the Gospell.

The Bereans are commended (for that they did not reiect, but they tryed the truth diligently), and a blessinge from God was vpon them, theirefore many of them beleeued.

These followinge notes haue cost mee much paines, and some tyme, to gather them togeather, and to commit them to writinge.

I pray you let it not be greiuous to you, aduisedly to read them: it may bee that somethinge hearein may seeme harsh (I am but a mortall man, theirefore subiect to error) yet I beleeue what I haue written, to be truth, otherwaies I would not haue tendered it to your consciderацion:

And allthough the troublesomenesse of the sease, togeather with the shortnesse of my tyme, haue not suffered mee to explaine my selfe soe fully as I desired:

Yet I beleeue the truth of euery parte (that is of moment) doth playnely appeare.

Weare it soe that the matter hearin contained, weare such as did alltogeather runn with the current of the tymes, I beleeue that I should get more grounde, with lesse tyme, and with lesse paines.

But in regarde that I am forced to goe vphill, I shall haue the more difficulty, and purchase lesse grounde then other waies, howeuer, my lyfe is not deare unto mee, I must runn or goe the rase that is set before mee.

And this I doe ensure you (in the presence of Him that is my lyfe & cheifest ioy) that (soe far as I knowe my owne heart) my ende, and onely ende, in what I haue written in this treatise, is the Glory of God, the benefitt of His people, and the discharge of my owne duety: I durst doe noe lesse.

It is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that giueth the successe.

I pray you in loue couer my infirmities, and let your fauorable helpe bee to assist mee.

Beloued Ser, be stronge in the Lorde, and in the powre of His might, take vnto you (which I pray God to bestow vpon you and to girde fast vnto you) the whole armore of God, that soe you may be in this worlde, an instrument of His Glory, and after this shorte, brittle, and unconstant life is ended, you for euer may behould the bewty of His Countenance, and the brightnesse of His face, the knowledge of whome is lyfe eternall:

He that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

Yours as you are Christs, J: B:

I vmblie pray you that when you haue perused the followinge treatise,* that you will restore it to mee againe.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Blackleach, 3: of mo: 6: 1637."

JOHN BLACKLEACH TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull Mr. John Winthrope, Deputy Gouernor at Harforde, theise present.

Mr. John Winthrope, honored Ser, — My due respect remembered to you, this is to certefie you that at my cominge to New Hauen, I enquiringe for a commo-

* The "treatise" referred to is not found among these papers, nor is there any clew given concerning the subject of it. — Eds.

dious place to be in, I pitched my thoughts to abide at Mrs. Guddiers, but diuerse persons aduised mee rather to be at your house, theirefore I went to the man that dwells in part of your house, and findinge that he was willinge, I likewise went to Mr. Dauenporte, and he likewise consented; thus I presuminge that yourselfe would be willinge & approoue of the matter, I haue brought my goods into your house, and haue the vse onely of one low roome. I purpose to winter heare at New Hauen. I would request you to haue the use of the garrets to lay some corne in, and that I may lay some barrells in the seller, and if you please to write a word or two, to signifie your minde to Mr. Dauenporte about this matter, I shall be engaged to you, & shall be willinge to pay you what shall be reasonablie required. If I can, I purpose to see you at Hartforde before winter, & if I faile of that I purpose more firmely to come to Hartforde the first oportunitie, when the riuers are open, about March next. Thus desiringe the Lord to blesse, guide, and keepe you & yours, I rest

Yours to my powre, JOHN BLACKLACH.

NEW HAUEN, the 18th of October, 1658.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Blackleech, Senior."

JOHN BLACKLEACH TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Grace, mercie, & peace be to you from God our Ffather, and from our Lord Jesus Christ:

MR. WINTHROPE, MUCH HONORED GOUERNOR, — My due respect presented to you, Ser, you may remember that at the last Generall Courte, God gaue mee soe much ffauoure in the hearts of the Court, that they approued mee to speace & act to and with the Indians, in order to reduce them to ciuilitie & Christianitie.*

* "Mr. John Blackleach Senior moueing this Court for their approbation that he might use his endeauoures to make known to the Indians (in the best way he can) something of

I haue studied & taken some paines in this matter, & in my thoughts & actings I doe endeauour the further progresse theirein. Mr. Elliot gaue mee an Indian Bible, and diuerse other books in the Indian tonge, and added his prayers for my good successe theirein, & promised mee to mencion my name to the Commissioners, & to them in England. I know some of them in England; namely, Mr. Hutcheson and one or 2 more. Now, Ser, this is to request you to be a freinde to mee; it will cause me to proceede with more ease; howeuer, my purpose is to do my endauour hearein, because I doe delight in the worke, beleeuinge that the worke is acceptable to God. Thus desiringe God to blesse, guide, and keepe you, I rest

Yours to be commanded in all Christian duetie,

JOHN BLACKLEACH, Senior.

Laus Deo.

NEW YORKE, 10: Nouember 1669.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. John Blackleech, Senr. received Nov: 18, 1669."

JOHN BLACKLEACH TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the honorable Mr. John Winthrope, Esqur: Gouernor of Connecticut, theise present.

MUCH HONORED SER, — My due respects presented to you, to your wife, and to all yours.

Ser, knowinge your ingenuitie, I thought it might not be vnacceptable vnto you to impart to you a breife of passages obserued by mee duringe this present voiage hithertwo; one month from Nantasket neare Bostone, very temperate & good winds & weather, otherwise I feare

---

the knowledg of God according as he shall haue opportunety. This Court grants his desire therein, with theire desires that he may through the blessing of God be an advantagious instrument to the end proposed." — *Public Records of Conn.*, ii. 111. — EDS.

I should very hardlie bene able to endure it. Wee fell with the eastermost parte of Highspaniola, entendinge to haue first made Portericoe, but theireby wee weare nessessetated to passe by on the north side of Hispanioly, which in probabilitie tended to our safetie, for another vessell from New Yorke passinge on the south side, was take by a Spanish ship, and plundered of parte what they had.

Accordinge to my veiue, Highspanioly, all alonge, was very high & steepe mountaines, soe was Gimmaicoe from the easter part, about 15 leagues, tell wee came to the harbour, but heare and theire some more leuell lande habitable, for I iuge the hills to be soe steepe, as hardly to be inhabited. He that entendeth a plantation not before subdued, had neade to be in strength, and of some good abilitie to procure seruants & other nessessaries. The land being subdued brings at the present great profit by Indicoe, which is the principall profit, which I beleeue in shorte space will come to be low in prise. All matters conscidered, I iudge our husbandmen in Connecticut doe liue better then the greater part of the inhabitants heare.

The heate of the weather heare is offensiue, and vnhoulsome, and the diet of the common sorte of people is not soe houlsome nor soe good, in my apprehension. Yet heare many doe get welth, and more, I iudge, doe liue very poorely & meanely. I haue my health indifferently well hithertwo. Ould men doe endure best heare. Touchinge the fleete bound out (which intelligence you heard) they went, & weare about 500 men. The landed at a forte or castle gaurdinge a riuer leadinge to a towne within lande; they preuailed, tooke the Castle, one of theire company was taken, and by land carried to the towne intended, aboue a weeke before they could come thither. The prisoner related theire number and strength; soe the Spaniards had time enough to prouide. At first it was propounded by the Spaniards to giue the English a

hondred pounds a man, and to pay the Commanders besides, but two Captaines of the Spaniards disdained soe to doe, resolued to feight the English, & prouided about 3 times soe many as the English weare, foote and horse, of which about ⅓ weare Indians, all armed.

Thus the Spanierd met them in the feilde. The English weare armed with one carabine hanginge at theire back, and 2 pistolls, 2 boxes with powder, and about 20 shott a man. Thus they met in the feilde. After some s[h]ort space the Indians fled, and then the Spaniards and English tryed it. Shortly after the horsmen fled; the victory remained to the English, but before the English could get possession of the towne, the Spaniards fired it, which consumed about halfe, before it was quenched. The English lost about 50 killed, and 50 or 60 wounded, of which few escaped, wounds beinge hard to heale in this hott contry. The booty extended not to 100 pownds a peece. Its saide the souldiers weare cheated. This relation receiued from Mr. William Paddy his sonn, one in the accion.

Surly Ser, heare languisheth many, in a way of high presumptuous sinninge, which I iudge to be in a greate measure for want of liuely dispensations.

I haue bene by diuerst that haue caled for damnation, confusion, and that the diule sould come and take them. In those raginge fitts I haue taken occasion to exhorte them to repentance, and haue founde that all, or all but one haue falen under and manifested some repentance, and that one I could not discerne the contrary. It is a difficult matter to come at any number of people heare to fasten a word of exhortation, because many care not for hearinge; and the bishops worship hath soe preuailed that noe man by puplike allowance may dispence a worde, without orders procured from Englande. Our New Englande ministers may not preach with allowance heare, without the bishops licence from Englande. Heare are a consciderable number that are not soe rude. You may

guesse how matters now doe stande, since the former Gouernor left the place:* it was not soe before. The muskitoes and a greate stinginge fly in the country doth much afflict, except in places well cleared.

I cannot write much by experience, because I haue not bene abroade in the lande.

I omitted this, that in the designe before mencioned, the two Spanish Captaines refused to accept of quarter, theirefore they weare shott to death.

I am informed that the Commission of the former Gouernor was much larger, hauinge power to make peace, or war, with the Spaniard; but allthough the Spaniard now should wronge us, the Gouerner must sende to Englande for orders.

I haue learned some skill in meltinge, refininge, & seperatinge mettalls, but I doe not attempt to meddle heare with the practice, in theise parts.

It hath pleased God to exersise mee with various and sharpe afflictions, for diuerse yeares last past, as you cannot but be sencible of, yet I am not theireby soe discouraged as to dispaire, because afflictions are not euidences of Gods hatred. Had wee a full cup, a large portion of the voluptuous pleasures of the vaineglorious matters of this world, wee know that the graue takes those matters away. I could patiently haue borne, and waited for deliuerance, and not haue comne to this place, but I beleeued I might please God in this voiage; the whole neade not phisision; Christ came to call sinners to repentance. It is easie and usuall for men eagerly to pursue matters that promise & present worldly honors and profit; but it is more rare for men to act, wheare danger & afflictions present, & little other profit. I pray you censure my actings in charetie. I endeauour to doe the good will of my beloued Lorde &

---

* Sir Thomas Modyford was succeeded by Sir Thomas Lynch as Governor of the Island of Jamaica, and sent prisoner to England, in August, 1671. — Eds.

Master, desiringe that when he shall come, I may be founde soe doeinge.

Remember my loue & respect to Capt. Talcott, Mr. Jo^{n} Allen, Mr. Willis, to all our liuinge freindes. I vmblie request you to cause this letter enclosed to be deliuered to my wife. Thus desiringe God to blesse, guide, and keepe you, I rest

Yours to be commanded in all christian duetie,

Jo^{N}: Blackleach, Senior.

Jammaico, October, 1671.

If I had stayed in New Englande this winter, my present condition conscidered, I could not see other then that I was like to be a burden to my selfe and freindes.

The losse which the Spaniards had by those privateeres, is said to be many millions, & the greatest losse which the Spaniard ever had in the West Indies, which hath so exasperated the Spaniards, that although they concluded peace since, on some conditions, yett the Councill in Spaine allowed not the conditions, fearing some further attempt vpon their gold mines, (as it is rumored); but this severall intelligences by letters credibly informe, written to persons heere, that the Spaniard hath prepared a fleete, & hired many ships, & many thousands of men, & that the fleet is sayled from Spaine, with intent to take this Islande, and there is expectation what the issue wilbe. This I heard one of the weightiest men heere seriously relate, dayly expecting the issue. The Spaniard keepes not his conditions, but plunders, or takes our English vessells in these parts. It is thought, therfore, the peace will not long continue. I should advise our vessells not to trust French or Spanish vessells.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr J: Blackleech, Senr. rec: Mar: 1:"

LETTERS OF JOHN ENDECOTT.*

JOHN ENDECOTT TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Wourthie Sir, — I ame sorrie to heare of your afflic-con in this visitation of God; though you know that whom he loueth he chastiseth. Let that comfort yow; & you will see, through Gods goodnes towards you, that it will turne to good, & yow will say with that good kinge & prophet, It is good for mee that I was in trouble. The Lord sanctifie this his hand to yow. I haue sent you of all I haue, or what I can gett: viz. Syrup of Violetts, Sirrup of Roses, Spirit of Mints, Spirit of Annis, as you may see written vppon the seuerall vialls. I haue sent yow Mrs. Beggarly her vnicorns horne, & Beza stone I had of Mr. Humfry, who is sorry also for your exercise. I haue sent you a Be[z]oar stone, & mugwort & organie, if you should haue neede of it. They are both good in this case of your wife, & also I haue sent yow some Galingall roo[t]. Mrs. Beggarly knowes the vse of it. If the fitt of the mother come verie violently, as you write, there is nothing [bette]r to suppresse the rising of it then sneezing: a little pouder of tobaccou taken in her nose, I thinck is better then Helibore. If I knew how or which way in this case to doe her good, I would, with all my heart, and would now haue come to yow, but I ame altogether vnskilfull in theise cases of weomen. Mr. Humfry & his

* A notice of Gov. Endecott may be seen in 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. 131; in which volume many of his letters are printed. — Eds.

lady remember them to yow. I came from thence last night, at 12 of the clock at night, for I was from home when your letter came. Mrs. Williams doeth the like, & if you please to tell Mrs. Beggerly that all her family are well. My wiefe remembers her heartie loue to you & your wiefe, & Mrs. Ffeake. The Lord in mercie looke vpon yow, & send you comfort from aboue, & strengthen yow in patience & in humilitie to vndergoe his hand, to whom I comitt yow & rest

Yours vnfeigned Jo: Endecott.

Your man parted heere halfe an hower after seauen in the morning.

JOHN ENDECOTT TO JOHN WINTHROP.

*To the right Worshipfull John Winthrop Esqr. Governour dd.**

Dearest Sir, — Your kinde lines I receaued by Mascanomet, & your lovinge token formerly, of trees; for both which I humblie thanck you, as also for your kinde intertaynement of my wiefe. The Lord requite yow for all. I cannot but acquaint yow with my thoughts concerning Mr. Peter, since hee receaued a letter from Mrs. Sheffield,† which was yesterday in the eueninge after the fast; shee seeming in her letter to abate of her affeccions towards him, & dislikinge to come to Salem vppon such termes as hee had written. I finde that [s]hee begins now to play her parte, &, if I mistake not, you will see him as greatly in loue with her (if shee will but hold of a little) as euer shee was with him; but hee conceales it what hee can as yett. The begininge of the next weeke you will heare further from him.

* This letter appears to have been written April 13, 1638, — the day after the general fast in Massachusetts Colony, mentioned by Winthrop (Hist. of N.E., i. 264). See also the second letter from Hugh Peter to Gov. Winthrop, printed in this volume. — Eds.

† Who, in 1639, had become Peter's second wife. — Eds.

I ame sorry to heare of Mrs. Winthrops sicknes, & Mrs. Downings feare of sicknes. The Lord doe good to them both, & raise vp the one, & keepe vp the other, if it be his will. We had yesterday, blessed be our God, a comfortable day of it. Mr. Humfryes voluntarily did acknowledge, with many teares, his cariadges of rashnes & hastines, &c., in such a manner as hee drew teares from diuers. The Lord in mercy cary him further on in euery way of his, to Gods glorie & his owne peace. I shall not further trouble yow at present, but committ yow to him who is able to doe for vs all aboue what we can ask or thinck. With him I leaue you & your deare yoakefellow, & all yours, beseeching him neuer to leaue yow, till hee hath brought yow home to himselfe in Glory. In whom I ame, Yours euer whilest I ame

Jo: Endecott.

My wiefe remembers her seruice to you & Mrs. Winthrop & Mrs. Downing.

All heere are well, blessed be God.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Endicott;" and in another place, "Keepe this to your selfe."

JOHN ENDECOTT TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Dearest Sir, — I ame at your disposing about Plimmoth busines* both for tyme & place, & shall attend vppon yow for direction in that busines. I question whither we shall be able to determyne any thinge this first meetinge, for it is to be doubted whither in a Generall Court they haue giuen any such full commission to any as the Court

* This letter was probably written in 1639; Endecott having been appointed one of the commissioners, on the part of Massachusetts, to settle the bounds between that Colony and Plymouth, 13th March, 1638-9. — Eds.

hath giuen vs. If you please to write a wourd to that effect, & that we might see their Patent,* (they shall see ours, I haue the reduplicate,†) I thinck it will not be

---

* The "Warwick Patent," granted to William Bradford and his associates, of 13th January, 1629, O.S. The Plymouth Colony never obtained a charter from the Crown. See Bradford's Plym., 250, 251. — Eds.

† This "reduplicate" of the Massachusetts Charter is the one sent over to Endecott, and referred to in the Company's letter to him under date of 17th April, 1629, — about six weeks after the charter was obtained. "Since your departure," they say, "we have, for the further strengthening of our grant from the council at Plymouth, obtained a confirmation of it from his Majesty, by his letters patents, under the broad seal of England; by which said letters patents, we are incorporated into a body politic, with ample power to govern and rule all his Majesty's subjects that reside within the limits of our plantation, *as by the duplicate thereof under the broad seal, which we have delivered to Mr. Sharp to be delivered to you, doth fully appear*" (Mass. Col. Rec., i. 386). And in the postscript to the letter, written four days after, mention is again made of "our patent under the broad seal, and the Company's seal in silver," which they had sent "by Mr Samuell Sharpe, passenger in the George" (*ibid.*, 396, 397).

Endecott had then been at Salem since the 6th of September previous; having been sent out by his associates soon after the grant from the Plymouth Council, of the previous March, had been obtained.

Gov. Bradford ("Plymouth Plantation," p. 238), and Morton ("Memorial," first edition, p. 71), who follows him in the same language, say that Endecott "*brought over* a patent, under the broad seal, for the government of the Massachusetts;" but we have seen that this is not strictly correct. The parchment which was *sent over* to him is now in the Library of the Salem Athenæum.

The instrument brought over by Gov. Winthrop, on the resolution of the Company to transfer the government to New England, is now at the State House, in the Archives of the Commonwealth. Although both these parchments were issued under the great seal, and therefore had equal authority, yet, as the Salem copy is called the "duplicate," and bears such a designation upon it, the other — the first received by the Company, the one kept by it at home, and subsequently brought over with the great emigration to share the fortunes of the adventurers to the New World — must be regarded, as it was called, the "original." The two parchments differ in this respect: the Winthrop copy at the close reads thus, "Per Breve de Priuato Sigillo;" the Endecott copy reads the same, but with the addition of "dupl;" signed, in both, "Wolseley" (not in his hand, but in that of the engrossing clerk). The former has this indorsement upon it, "A perpetuity graunted to Sir Henry Rosewell & others, of parte of Newe England in America;" signed, in his own hand, "Wolseley" (Sir Robert Wolseley, Bart., Clerk of the Patents in Chancery). The latter has the following indorsement, "A Duplicate vpon a Patent graunted to Sir Henry Rosewell & others;" also signed "Wolseley," in his own hand. The Winthrop parchment has also this indorsement upon it, which is not upon the other, being the oath of Cradock, the first governor of the Company appointed by the charter: "PRÆDICT' Matthæus Cradocke Juratus est de Fide et Obedientiâ Regi et Successoribus suis, et de Debitâ Exequutione Officij Gubernatoris iuxta Tenorem Presentium, 18o Martij, 1628. Coram me, Carolo Cæsare, Milite, in Cancellariâ Mro;" signed, "Char. Cæsar," in his own hand. In every other respect, these parchments are alike. They are beautifully engrossed on four sheets, the initial letter "C" containing a well-executed representation of the king, Charles I. The seal which was affixed to the duplicate is lost; but the party-colored string by which it was attached to the parchment remains.

This Massachusetts Charter passed the seals 4th March, 1628, O.S. It was enrolled in chancery, "and thereby made a matter of perpetual and public record" (see "Proceed-

amisse. I will leaue it with you whither yow thinck it not better to be at Hingham then Scituate. There are 2

---

ings Massachusetts Historical Society" for 1858–59, p. 155; Chalmers's "Political Annals," 147). The parchment first issued to the Company bears upon it, as we have seen, the record of the oath of Cradock, taken before Sir Charles Cæsar, Master in Chancery, the 18th of the same month. The duplicate to be sent to Mr. Endecott was procured soon after. In the Company's Records of the 6th of the following month (April) is an order for "Mr. Whetcombe to get the exemplification of the letters patents" (Mass. Col. Rec., i. 37e, *corrected edition*); and, by the 17th, the parchment had been delivered to Mr. Sharp.

Soon after the Restoration, the liberties of the Colony were esteemed to be in danger from the Crown, and great solicitude was felt for the patent; and at length, in 1664, at a meeting of the General Court held at Boston, 18th May, at which Endecott was elected Governor, the following record was made: "Forasmuch as it is of great concernment to this Commonwealth to keep safe and secret our patent, it is ordered, the patent and duplicate belonging to the country be forthwith brought into the Court, and that there be two or three persons appointed by each house to keep safe and secret the said patent and duplicate, in two distinct places, as to the said committees shall seem most expedient.

"It is ordered that the Deputy-Governor, Major-Gen. Leverett, Capt. Clarke, and Capt. Johnson, are appointed to receive the grand patent from the secretary, and to dispose thereof as may be most safe for the country.

"The secretary, being sent for the patent, brought it into the Court, and delivered it to the Deputy-Governor, Richard Bellingham, Esq., and the rest of the committee, in presence of the whole Court, and was discharged thereof" (Mass. Col. Rec., vol. iv., part ii., p. 102).

Up to this time, 1664, it would appear that the Winthrop parchment was in the keeping of the Secretary of the Colony. The duplicate may have been in the possession of Endecott, who had it in 1639. If we are to suppose that "the duplicate" was brought into Court at this time, agreeably to the above order (which is not expressly stated), it would be interesting to know in whose charge it was deposited for safe keeping, and by what means it found its way back again to Salem, where it now is.

In following the records a little farther, we find an order of the Court, 28th May, 1679, directing the treasurer to purchase of the executrix of the late governor (Leverett, who had died the March previous) the new seal and screw which had been procured by him; and also "receive of the said executrix the old seal, together *with a duplicate of our patent lying now in her hand;* which seal, duplicate, and screw henceforward shall remain in the governor's hand for time being, for the use of the country" (*ibid.*, vol. v. p. 223). Bradstreet had just been elected governor.

The patent in Mrs. Leverett's possession was probably the Endecott parchment, the "duplicate;" and may we not suppose it to have come into the late governor's keeping as one of the committee of 1664?

A little farther on in the records, at the same Court, we find the following order: "The securing of our original patent being matter of great importance, and the former provision in that respect, made in the year 1664, being at an end by the decease of most of the persons betrusted in that order, this Court doth therefore order that the patent be forthwith sent for, and committed to our present honored Deputy-Governor [Thomas Danforth], Capt. John Richards, and Capt. Daniel Fisher, with Major Thomas Clarke, one of the last committee who are to take care of the same; to whose wisdom we refer it, to dispose of it as may best tend to prevent any inconvenience relating thereunto" (*ibid.*, 237).

By these several entries in our records, it appears that the plan of a committee with whom to intrust the parchments for safe keeping was adhered to; that, in 1679, all the original members of the committee of 1664 had died, except Clarke (Capt. Foster had succeeded Capt. Johnson on the committee in 1672); that the Endecott duplicate was this

men not so peacefull as I could wish, & I rather incline to the first, Hingham, & so doeth Mr Peter, who I thinck will goe alonge with mee.

Sir, If you please that Davies* his punishment be deferred till the next Court, it beinge desired of many, vpon his humble cariadge since his first punishment, I shall consent. The Lord in mercy keepe yow for euer, in whom I ame

Yours truely, Jo: ENDECOTT.

---

year supposed to be in the possession of Mrs. Leverett, and an order passed authorizing the treasurer to receive it from her, and place it with Bradstreet, then governor; while the original patent was directed to be sent for (there being no indication where it was then reposing), and committed to the deputy-governor and his associates of the committee.

We have no means of knowing whether the treasurer succeeded in procuring the duplicate parchment from Mrs. Leverett, agreeably to the order of Court above cited. The impression prevailing at Salem is that the document found its way into the Salem Athenæum through the Saltonstall Family, and that it came to them from Gov. Leverett. (In fact, it is positively stated that it was presented to that institution by the late Hon. Leverett Saltonstall.) The order of Court was that it be deposited with Bradstreet. He was the last governor under the old charter. He served till 1686, when the process against the charter took effect here. For three years, Dudley and Andros bore sway under special commissions: but, after the Revolution, Bradstreet took his place again, for a short time, as charter governor; and in that year there was printed, for the first time, we believe, "A Copy of the Kings Majesties CHARTER, for incorporating the Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New-England in America. . . . Boston in New England. Printed by S. Green, for Benj. Harris at the London Coffee House near the Town-House in Boston, 1689." It is printed also from the "*dupl.*;" and who so likely to have procured its publication as Bradstreet? He died at Salem in March, 1697, aged ninety-four years. — EDS.

* John Davies. See Mass. Col. Records, vol. i. pp. 248, 269. — EDS.

LETTERS OF SIR MATTHEW BOYNTON.*

SIR MATTHEW BOYNTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To my verie worthy friend John Winthorpe the yonger Esqr: att Boston in the Massachusetts Bay in New England, present this.

Sir, — Mr. Jacye deliuer'd a letter to me which was inclosed in a letter to him selfe, which had like to haue miscaried after itt came to his hand, he nott understandinge by the superscription to whom you had directed itt, and in this doubtfulness, comminge to enquire of me if I knew of anie such gentleman in Yorkshire or Northumberland, that had made anie such aduenture, itt fell into his thoughts, that the letter was intended to my selfe, and that the direction was purposelie made soe obscure for preuention of discouerie, in case the letter had miscarried, & theyrfor he intreated me to reade the letter, and to consither itt: & then I did (*prima facie*) discerne that itt was to my selfe. The reasons why I relate all these circumstances are these; first, to shew you that letters are in

* Sir Matthew Boynton of Barmston, in Yorkshire, created a baronet, May 25, 1618, was a member of Parliament in the reign of Charles I., and acted with the Republicans in the civil war. He married, first, Frances, daughter of Sir Henry Griffith; and second, Catherine, the widow of Robert Stapleton, Esq., and daughter of Thomas, Lord Fairfax. When the Rev. Henry Jacie was ejected from the living of Aughton, in 1634, Sir Matthew received him into his family, and engaged him to preach at Barmston, and at Rowsby, a neighboring parish. In the following year, the subject of our notice removed to London, whither Mr. Jacie accompanied him: and it appears from the following letters that Sir Matthew sent servants and cattle to New England at this time, and intended coming over himself; but he soon relinquished the design, and removed to Hedgley House, near Uxbridge, and about twenty miles from London. He died in 1646. — *Calamy's Continuation*, &c., i. 46; *Burke's Hist. of the Commoners*, ii. 115; 4 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 452, 459. — Eds.

uerie greate dainger of miscarriage by such obscure directions, and secondlie, though they fall butt into the handes of friends, yett I had rather haue the free enioyment of my owne thoughts & purposes to my selfe, then that all should lye open to theyr eyes. Sir, I beseatch you mistake me nott: for I infer nott from hence that I conceyue anie fault in you att all, for I know well, the cause of this proceeded from my owne tenderness, butt onelie to aduertise you of the inconuenience which I finde, and the dainger of miscariage which may arrise this way: this is all I meane, onelie to intreate you that for better certaintie, as alsoe that my owne brest may be the sole cabinett of my affayres (which I desire nott to communicate with anie butt your selfe and your worthy ffather: nor that anie other should haue anie intelligenc from you of anie thing that concernes my owne particular), theyrfor that you would be pleased to direct your letters to my selfe, well seald, onely this, if itt please you, inclose them in a letter directed to Mr. Henrie Darley, att the signe of the Lamb in Grays Inn Laine, because it is a knowne place, and he will deliuer them to me. For the cowes, my desire is to preserue the increase by all the [*sic*] that may be, for I shall bringe ouer a greate ffamilie, & if itt were possible, I would be soe well furnished with that I might haue beeues to kill as soone as I comm. What charge you haue beene att with them, hitherto with them, I will thankfullie returne you upon the receypt of your noates of disbursments. Sir, I doe acknowledg my selfe exceedinglie obliged to you for all your paines and care for me, giue me leaue, I pray you, still to repose myselfe upon you; your trowble is like to be the greater, because I haue so few acquaintance in your contry, butt my thankfulness shall be the greater, if euer I haue an opportunetie to express itt.

I intend, (if the Lord giue leaue,) for ought I yett know, to send ouer a carefull and a painfull godlie seruant, if not

two, besides some sheepe from Holland, and goates from hence. I pray you, if the seruants come, lett them haue your best helpe and direction, and when the sheepe or goates come, lett them be carefullie disposed of, for I feare whether my seruants cann come att the same time. I desire to heare from you as often as possibly you cann, how my stocke prospereth; and I shall long to heare how they haue increased this yeare.

I pray you aduertise me what course I shall take for prouidinge a house against my comminge ouer, where I may remaine with my ffamilie till I can be better prouided to settle my selfe, & lett me haue your best assistance; and withall, I pray you, lett me receyue aduice from time to time what provitions are most commodious to be made theyr, or to be sent from hence, that soe I may make the best aduantage of my time before I come, as alsoe what things will be moste expedient for me, both for my necessarie use & benefitt theyr, to bring ouer with me when I come. Thus confidinge in your loue I rest

Your euer assured friend MATT. BOYNTON.

LONDON, FFROM PAULS ALLIE IN RED-CROSS STREETE,
ffeb. 23th, 1635.

Sir, I haue remooued my ffamilie out of the contry, and ame now constantlie att London.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, Jr., "S[r] Mathew Boynton."

SIR MATTHEW BOYNTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To my uerie worthy friend John Winthorpe the yonger Esqr: att Ipswidge present this.

SIR, — I haue now accordinge to my former intendment sent ouer two seruants, tenn ewe sheepe and a rame. I haue directed them to your father, because, I suppose, you

will be eare this, att Connecticutt. Twentie goates I haue alsoe sent with them, and a bucke: I haue written to your father to entreate him that they may be conueyd to Ipswidge,* as soone as they may conuenientlie be remooued without dainger, because I perceyue by your letter that the cattle are theyr. Sir, you know what neede theyr is that seruants should haue eyes ouer them, espetiallie when they are att soe far a distance from theyr maister, tho, I hope the menn be honest, yett I pray you theyrfore that you, hauinge occasion your selfe to be absent, you will be pleased to intreate some ffriends of yours att Ipswidge, that they will both aduise them and examine them & direct them. I pray you lett me haue notice from you of what you shall conceyue shall be expedient for me to send ouer for my prouision. I would be glad to heare from you as often as you cann, & how you like of the contry aboute Connetticutt, & how our businesses goe on theyr. I writt to you by the first shipps that went from hence this yeare, that I intended by all meanes to preserue the increase of my cattle, & now I haue, for that purpose, sent ouer these seruants: I intend (God willinge) to send ouer by the next shipps that come, twentie goates more, which I haue alreddie bought, & would haue sent them now, if I could haue gotten them caryed as I was promissed, butt after disappoynted. I haue noe more to say, butt to giue you hartie thanks for all your loue & kindness, which shall euer deepelie engage

Your trewlie louinge and assured friend

MATT. BOYNTON.

LONDON: FFROM PAULS ALLIE IN RED CROSS STREETE
Aprill 8th, 1636.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "S^r Mathew Boynton."

---

* See a letter from Gov. Winthrop (to John Winthrop, jun.), printed in the Appendix to his Hist. of N.E., vol. i. pp. 390, 391. — EDS.

SIR MATTHEW BOYNTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To my uerie worthy friend John Winthorpe the yonger Esq: giue this in New England.

Sir, — I haue none, upon whom I cann relye, butt your selfe, beeinge, as you know, a strainger in your contry, & to those that are theyr. I ame theyrfor the more bould to entreate your helpe, which I hope you will not onelie pardon, knowinge how I ame necessitated theyrunto; butt alsoe that you will be pleased to afford me your best assistance, my businesses now increasinge, both in regard of stocke, which I haue now sent ouer, and of seruants, as alsoe of the good increase (I hope) of those cattle which I had before: and theyrfor, itt beeing soe, as I suppose, that some other occasions haue, eare this, required your remoouinge to Connetticutt, soe that I cannott hope for the benefitt of your owne eye upon my seruants, to whose trust alone itt is uerie daingerous committinge soe great a charge: for experience tells me, that seruants (tho of the best sorte) will neglect, or lett slipp manie aduantages for theyr master's profitt, if they be nott some times called upon, and except they know that theyr doeings are obserued, by those that haue authoritie to call them to accompt: theyrfor Sir, I intreate you earnestlie, that you will be pleased to interest some friends of yours (in what place you shall thinke fitt, that the cattle & other stooke of sheepe & goates shall remaine) that are both able to direct, & such as you may be assured will be carefull to obserue & rectifie what they shall see att anie time to be amiss: els, I know, I shall sustaine much loss, and discouragement from future adventuring: butt I ame uerie confident of your helpe herein, hauinge alreddie had good testimonie of itt: for which I desire I may haue anie occasion where-

by I may express the trew than[k]fulness which is reallie acknowledged to you by

Your euer assured friend

MATT. BOYNTON.

LONDON: FFROM PAULS ALLIE IN RED CROSS STREETE,
Aprill 13th, 1636.

I haue sent by this Shipp 23 goates and two seruants.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Sir Mathew Boynton."

SIR MATTHEW BOYNTON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To my uerie worthy friend John Winthorpe Esqr. att Boston in New England giue this.

SIR,—I desire to express that thankfulness to you which your continewed kindnesses require of me; with which beeing soe well acquainted, though unknowne to your selfe, itt may be soe much a stronger engagement, nott onelie to moue me to acknowledg them, butt to striue to deserue them, wherein I assure you I will nott fayle, howsoeuer I may come shorte, in that which may be worthy of your acceptance.

I haue here-inclosed sent some letters, which I desire you will doe me the fauour, by the first conueniencie you cann, to send to my seruants. Sir, I shall alwayes continew, as I ame, exceedinglie engaged

Your assured and thankfull friende

MATT. BOYNTON.

AUGUST 26TH, 1636.

Sir, Amongst the rest here is one letter to Mr. Ffenwicke, which I beseatch you, if [you] cann conuenientlie, conuey to him.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "S[r] Math. Boynton. Answ:"

SIR MATTHEW BOYNTON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To my uerie worthy friende John Winthorpe esqr att Boston in the Masachusetts Bay in New England present this.

Sir, — Itt will be a greate deale of charg to send ouer more seruants, or to make such prouisions as you speke of for carts and oxen, and theyrfor I thinke that will be my best way which you propound, to lett out my cattle, reseruing the whole increase, for that I desire to preserue. Sir, I will wholie relye upon you for your direction, since you haue giuen me leaue to be soe bould with you, and what you would chuse to doe for your selfe, if your case were mine, is that which I desire you would direct for me, and if the Lord giue me leaue to see your contrie, I shall then endeauour my selfe to acknowledg all your kindnesses: in the meane while I rest

Your much engaged friend

Matt. Boynton.

Sep. 9th.

William Spofferd I hope will be carefull ouer the cattle, if they be letten forth as you thinke itt will be conuenient.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Sir Math : Boyinton. Answd."

SIR MATTHEW BOYNTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To my uerie worthy friende John Winthropp the yonger, Esq. att Ipswidge in the Massachusetts Bay in New England, giue this.

Sir, — Hauinge considered the uncertaintie of my condition, and the more, by reason of manie difficulties which I dayly meete withall, my businesses alsoe, which are manie, beeing yett undisposed of; I haue thought itt nott conuenient to be att anie further charge with my stocke, butt

ame upon these considerations fullie resolued to lett them out, to be kept for me for a third parte of the increase, which I haue heard to be the usuall rate of the contrie, butt if I be mistaken therin, I refer itt to your selfe to make such an allowance out of the increase of the cattle, I meane my whole stocke, as you shall iudge to be equall and proportionable: and because theyr will be noe employment for my seruants when my stocke is thus disposed of, I will leaue itt to theyr choice, whether they will returne into England, t[he c]harge of which theyr passage I will uerie willinglie beare, if they thinke itt conuenient, which notwithstanding I suppose they will nott, (if they understand the condition of things here) or els to make use of theyr liberties for theyr best aduantage in the place where they are. Your kindeness in the disposinge of my businesses for me shall much engage

Your affectionate and assured friende

MATT. BOYNTON.

LONDON April 12th, 1637.

I haue se[nt] eyther of my seruants halfe a yeares wages by Mr. Hopkins, which I pray you deliuer to them. I haue heard nothing from you nor them since the last yeare; soe that I know nothing how my stooke prospereth: I haue giuen your vncle Downing satisfaction for thirtie pound, concerning which you writt to me. I gaue my seruants a yeares wages before hand when I sent them ouer in May last. I haue alsoe intreated Mr. Hopkins to use his endeauoures for the disposing of my stocke for my best conueniencie, soe that I may be free from anie charge att all in keeping of them, and that itt may be alsoe in my power to deliuer them, upon occasion of anie present bargain to anie to whom I shall thinke fitt to sell them here att home.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Sir Mathew Bointon."

LETTERS, &c., OF JOHN UNDERHILL.*

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP.†

To the honourable gouerner John Winthrupp, att his howse in Boston, give these.

Sir, — Yow knowe how powerfully our Lord Jesus hath lately appeared in the ministrye, exhorting vs to passe by personall wrongs; nay, though they were such as might greately redounde to the dishonour of a mans calling, yett as Moses mekely [to] overlooke them, & to the ende, deare & honoured Ser, thatt we mightt once m[o]re (if itt be the will of God) enjoye our wonted hermonye, without any certaine objeckts which for the preasentt doe hinder the free passage of thatt Christian love thatt should [be] founde amongst vs. Ser, yow know I once tould yow in regarde of my inward troubles & myne absence three illieon[ac]ion in affection. I presume to acquaint you with moneths, I was almost a nuter betwene booth, not well knowing where the differences lay, further then God was pleased to teach me by his word & spiritt, and therefore

* John Underhill came to New England with Winthrop's fleet in 1630, and was employed as captain and instructor of the military force of the Colony; he having served under the Prince of Orange in the war of the Netherlands. He was active in the Pequot War, of which he wrote a history entitled "Newes from America," &c., London, 1638, pp. 44; prefixed to which is a map of the Indian fort attacked by the English. In November, 1637, he was, with many others, disarmed for the Antinomian heresy, and sent from the jurisdiction. Previous to this, he had been before the church at Boston for irregularities of conduct. He went to Dover, N.H.; where he was chosen governor, in place of Burdett, in 1638. Soon after, we find him again at Boston, confessing his sins to the church, who considered him insincere, and cast him out. Subsequently, he went to live with the Dutch; becoming, in 1644, a resident of Flushing, L.I. He afterwards resided at Oyster Bay, where he died in 1672. He was a man of great activity and of equal eccentricity. His manuscripts show him to have been very illiterate. See Savage's Genealogical Dictionary; and Thompson's History of Long Island, ii. 353. — Eds.

† This letter is not in Underhill's handwriting. — Eds.

was the more silentt, hoping that God, in his owne tyme, would lighten the minds of men, soe as to be convinsed of the trueth, att leastt some, for though Israell were [as] the sand, yett a remnant shall returne; and the God of peace now [beg]ininge to appeare amongst vs, to cause peace to abounde amongst vs boo[th] in Church & Comune wealth, giue me leaue alitle to sertifie yow of [the] speach of people: nay, should I make itt my humblest request, I sh[ould] expresse noe more then the earnest desire of my hearte; & that [f]irst to putt yow in mynde thatt Mr. Whelewrightt being in conv[*torn*] before the Judgementt seate, in the behalfe of Christ & the peace of his [ch]urch, which of vs all is much desired, thatt yow would sweetely lett his [ce]nsure faull, & manifest the forbearance of God in that particular; the [m]atter now depending but in poyntt of honour, yow knowe conse[rn]es your persons, & sopose yow should be offended that way, which I se[e] nott soe to be, yett passe itt by; for prefering the honour of Christ, & his spouses peace; & I dare say itt wilbe safer to forfitt your honour then proseede to disunion for sedition. Yow see he intented noe d[is]turbance amongst vs, how ever accidentally all this shaking follo[wed] vpon itt, for we may easilie disscerne thatt where the sworde of G[od's] worde comes sharpened, itt seperats a man from himselfee, there[fore] lett this suffice, thatt itt hath donne more good then evill, many haue endeavored to manifest there vnion more & more, bec[ause] God onely can bringe good outt of evill; giue him leaue to tak[e his] owne way, which doubteles we must, doe we whatt we cann. Se[r, gi]ue me leaue to make a serious protestation for yow, withoutt any ins[*torn*] ated, I haue seene thatt in yow thatt hath confirmed me that yow [are] as deare to God as the aple of his eye; though these late pas[sag]es haue much stumbled me, yett I hould yow the same man as before, as deare to God as ever, though perhaps, for the tyme being yow were left to temptation, as Hezechia, to see whatt was

[*torn*] yow; therefore, good Ser, goe on in pursueing peace to pur[*torn*]se itt. Ser, to an vnmortified heartt my bouldnesse might see[m] teadyous, espetially your selfe, being Gouernour and Generall of o[ur] forces, & my selfe butt a meane Captaine, butt when I mee[te] with the spiritt of Christ, I dare be the boulder.

2. My [sec]ond request is, yow would be pleased, in the bowells of mercie ali[ke] to consider the estate of Stephen Greenesmith:* yow partly knowe [t]he infirmityes of the man, which I hope will moove yow to a serio[us] pondering of his præsentt condition. Remember it is a day of [trou]bille, wherein we are to lett the oppressed goe free.

Yow knowe itt is nott an offence against Christ, butt the callings of me[n,] & I hope for peace sake God will moove your hearte to preferre the peace of his Church before the rightt of your owne cause.

3. My third request is that yow would soe farre respectt the glory o[f] God & the safetie of vs all, as to pardon thatt same vnaduised speach of [h]is in Corte, & that by his sodaine returne to England he may stopp the [c]lamors may there be rased. Ser, I doubte nott, if the man had vnderstoo[d] him se[lfe] he would nott haue vttered such provoakeing speaches, for he mig[ht hims]elfe gesse that the kings eare will not be opne to resceiue every clam[ou]r; for my owne partt I am aptt to thinke he lookes att itt as a part of his honour to haue such a people vnder his soueraintye, & soe much the rather, seeing he is not charged by vs, & we acknowledge him our Kinge, & therefore, good Ser, consider the mans ignorance, which is pardonable [*torn*] all l [*torn*] booth of heauen & earth. Itt is the first offence of this nature [he ev]er fell into, & being the man came hether to seeke after C[hris]t, & [in] his corse

* At the session of the General Court which commenced (1) 9, 1636, Stephen Greensmith, "for saying that all the ministers, except A, B, C, did teach a covenant of works, was censured to acknowledge his fault in every church, and fined £40." — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 214, 215. — Eds.

he hath ronne vpon this shelfe, lett itt suf[torn] the po[torn] that is past, least, if he lye longe in prisson, booth [he &] other[s who] are vpon the poynte of closinge with Christ, be driuen [torn] see [torn] much sorrowe the treasure of Christ be sand swallowed [torn] or 2 [torn] shipwrack be made of cause & persons, booth att once. T[her]efore [torn] be pleased in the behalfe of Christ to release the prisone[r] & to l[et the] oppressed goe free, which is the true purtrature of a solom[n] fast. Es[ai. 5] 8. 6. Otherwise, to be zealous for God, with neglectt of mercie w[ill] prooue noe lesse dangerous then sinfull. Eccl. 7. 16. Mercie & pitt[ie,] espetially to ignorantes, which, by reason of that infirmity, are gone oute of the way, is soe approved booth of God & nature, as thatt Alexander could s[torn] the prases of these prinses that ruled a free people [wi]th a spiritt of mercie, nay further, Cirus, an hethen prince, yett in re[war]de of thatt mercie & cleamencie he shoued to his captiues, they were forsed to blesse the God of heauen, that seing they were [f]allen [torn], that it was there happ to fall into the hands of soe [ki]nde [a prince.] Therefore, thatt all may be att peace, manifested by the [torn]ntas [torn] day of humilliation, lett me once more craue your Ch[torn] po[torn] & afforde me your juditious eare, in these propositions which till [torn] be [torn] my spiritt will remaine still burthened. And the first [is] whether [you] thinke itt according to rule to deale in Corte with an officer as [torn] were [torn] to doe. To chose me to the place of a muster master, & ro[s]termas [torn] way of subsistance, & then, because it appeared thatt a m[ust]er maste[r] was more superior then the former, had almost broughtt m[e] to noethinge, when yow all pretended my aduancement. Ser, I knowe not myne owne heartt, butt suer I am itt is proone to all evill, natur[allie] as a[torn]e is to fall downeward, which judgementt is just from God vp[torn]e asp[torn]d beames of pride, butt yett I hope the Lord will mortif[ie &] treade downe Sathan vnder all our feete shortely:

therefore blame m[e n]ott for speaking, butt vpon whatt just grownde yow should be soe fearefull [to] aduance me, I knowe nott, when as yow haue had soe many pledges o[f] my fidelity.

1. As first, my deepe ingagementt in Corte, openly promissing to stand for the libertie of Gods ordenances against all vnlawfull p[o]wers.

2. My returne from my natiue cuntrye & refusinge profers of prefermentt there. Thirdly, my open subscribing the last yeare to repell all vnlawfull [po]wer that should come against vs. Ser, I haue euer professed your [en]emyes to be myne, and will yow yett be afeard of me? I professe, Ser, till I know the cause, I shall nott be satisfied, butt I hope [G]od will subdew me to his will; yett this I say, that such [*torn*]ande[*torn*]ing of officers in forraine parts hath soe farre subuerted some of them, as to cause them turne publique rebbells against theire state & kingdome, which God forbid should ever be founde once soe much as to appeare in my breast, for as for personall wrongs & impedyments to callings are nott soe much to be stood vpon. Butt [m]ake itt your owne case; would itt nott trouble your spiritt to sp[end] all your dayes aboute a callinge, & hauing noething else to liu[e] vpon, & yett booth to be slighted, & such as never serued onely [*torn*]ansed? Nay, would itt nott be a greater tryall to haue [*torn*]ge castt in a mans dish to his dishonour? I pray yo[u] [c]ons[ider] of itt, & judge charitablye of my expressions. And [f]urth[er,] (good Ser) lett me tell yow the trueth of my hearte, to avoy[de] those desperate temptations I haue hereby bene exposed too, [sinc]e I haue bene the lands seruantt, I would farre rather lay [dow]ne my place then be exposed to such miseries as I haue [kn]owne many commanders faull into. Thus humblye craving pardon for my rudenesse, I leaue you to God & rest [*torn*]

Yours att commande,

John Vnderhill.

PETITION OF JOHN UNDERHILL TO THE GOVERNOR AND ASSISTANTS OF MASSACHUSETTS.

To the right Worshipful the Gouernour and Assistants in this present Courte.

I AM sorry that there is so iust occasion of offence giuen in this Patten, by them of Salem, not only vnto vs, which are inferiour vnto the Gouernour and Assistantes, but allso vnto the whole Courte, and the Authoritie that belonges vnto you, in that they haue appropriated vnto themselues, without order, that which properly belonges vnto you, as may appeare by the relation of this petition. To lett you vnderstand the circumstance of the offence; it is this. How they haue of their owne appoyntment made them a Captaine, Lieutenant, and Ensigne, and after such a manner as neuer was hearde of in any schoole of warre, nor in no Kingedome vnder heauen. The Company standinge togither, as they were ordered, the Constable comes vp to the Company, takeinge the authoritie of the maiestrate vpon him, delivers the partisan to Mr. Turner, and tells him that he is chosen Lieutennant to this Company, and so bids God giue him joye. Mr. Turner vnderstandinge himselfe better then he that broughte it, would not accepte of the place, without order of Courte. Wee may thinke it strange that theire should be suche officers made in the Patten, without order, eyther from the Gouernour or from the Courte; intreatinge the Courte to take it into their wise considerations: ffor my parte, if there should not be a reformation in this disordered practise, I would not acknowledge such officers. If officers should be of no better esteeme then for constables to place them, and martiall discipline to proceede disorderly, I would rather lay downe my commande then to shame so noble a Prince, from whome wee came. Thus intreatinge the Courte that they

woulde both satisfie themselus and vs in rightinge this cause, I rest,

Yours at command in the Lord,

CAPTAINE VNDERHILL.

I desire to give one touche withall concerninge your forgetfullnes of the Gouernour in not vpholdinge him, and supplyinge him with a watche, which may tend to the preseruation of his life and all our good, besydes his further encouragement. The course which you mighte take in this case may be this, without any great diffyculty, to send a coople from Charlestowne, a coople from Rockesberry and Boston, to make vp the compleat number. I thinke I am in conscience bounde to enforce this vpon the Courte, seeinge it tendes to his preseruation and further encouragement, his life beinge more pretious to vs then many others, and therfore the care of it to be preferd before so little labour and trouble, as such a busines imports. Such was the care of the children of Israell towards their Gouernour, that they esteemed his life worth tenn thousand of the common people; secondly, the practise of other countries commends this course vnto vs, who are so prouydent in such cases, for the vpholdinge of there gouermente with peace and safety. I desire to putt you in minde of theise thinges, leaste wee smarte for our securitie, not knowinge what time may bringe forthe; and thirdly, wee may take an example from our neighbours of Plimmoth, that are not negligent in theise affaires: and so I leaue theise thinges to your consideration, desireinge to be excused in any thinge that you may except againste, and intreateinge the Lord that he would direct your heartes in all thinges for the best, and prosper what shall be vndertaken for His glory, and the good of this people.*

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt Vnderhill his Petition, &c."

* Probably 1637. This petition is not in the handwriting of Underhill. — EDS.

PETITION OF JOHN UNDERHILL TO THE GENERAL COURT OF MASSACHUSETTS.*

Wheare as itt is somewhatt questionable whether the three moneths I was absentt, as well in the service off the Contrie, as otherr perticular persons: my request therefore is, thatt this honoured Corte would be pleased to disside this controvercie, my selfe alledgeing itt to be the custome off Nations, thatt if a Commander be lentt to another State, by that state to whome he is a servantt; booth his place & meanes is nott detayned from him, soe longe as he dooth nott refuse the call of his owne state, to which he is a servantt, in case they shall call him home; but I leave itt to your wisdomes. And further, thatt this honoured Corte would be pleased to answer my antyentt suite that 250 acres off land promissed me in my first Covenants, which some of our honoured Magistrats vndertooke to performe in the name of the whole. And if the honoured Corte shall vouchsafe to make some addition, thatt which hath nott bene deserved, by the same power of God may be in due season. Thus leaving my request to your wise consideracions, I rest

Yours in all service whatt I may to be commanded:

John Vnderhill.

The tyme was when a little went far, then much was not knowne nor desired, now the tyme is that a great deale goeth but a little way; the reason of the difference lyeth

* This petition is probably the same mentioned by Winthrop under date of (7) 1638, in which "Capt. Underhill (being about to remove to Mr. Wheelwright) petitioned for three hundred acres of land promised him formerly." The Records of the General Court, 6th September of this year, mention that "Mr. John Vnderhill had promise of his 200 acres of ground, beside what hee hath had before." At the same session, Underhill "was committed for abuseing the Court by his gross & palpable dissimulation & equivocation, or mentall reservation, in his petition, & after saying his failing was onely in the manner," and was banished the jurisdiction. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 269; *Mass. Col. Records*, i. 237. — Eds.

only in the error of judgment, for nature requires no more to vpholde it now then when it was satisfied with lesse.*

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Jo. Vnderhill Demand of the Court."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO THE GOVERNOR AND DEPUTY GOVERNOR OF MASSACHUSETTS.

To the Right Worshipfull John Wenthropp and Tho: Dodli, Goforner and Depoti of the Macetusetes, these in Boston.

Honnored in the Lord, — Youer silenc onc more admirse me. I youse chrischan playnnes. I know you loue it. Silenc can not reduce the hart of youer love, brother: I would the rightchous would smite me, espeschali youer slfe and the honnored Depoti to whom I also dereckt this letter, together with youer honnored slfe. Jesos Christ did wayt; and God his Father did dig and telfe bout the barren fig-tre, before he would cast it of: I would to God you would tender my soule so as to youse playnnes to me. I wrot to you both, but now answer: and I here I am dayli abused by malischous tongse: John Baker I here hath rot to the honnored depoti, how as I was dronck and like to be cild, and both falc, vpon okachon I delt with Wannerton for intrushon, and findding them resolutli bent to rout out all gud a mong vs, and advanc there superstischous waye, and by boystrous words indeferd to fritten men to acomplish his end, and he abusing me to my face, dru vpon him with intent to corb his insolent and dasterdli sperrite, but now danger of my life, alth[ough] it might hafe bin just with God to hafe giffen me in the hanse of youer enimise and mine, for thay hat the wayse of the Lord, and them that profes them, and therfore laye trapes to cechte the pore in to there deboyst corses, as ister daye on Pickeren

* This paper is not in Underhill's handwriting. — Eds.

their Chorch Warden caim vp to vs with intent to mak som of ourse dronc, as is sospeckted, but the Lord soferd him so to misdemen himslfe, as he is likli to li by the hielse this too month. I latli was with Mr. Williamse which here we would goyne with youer State, but serious protestachons ar made to pregise vs in case we gife you intrest in this Riffer. My hombel request is that you will be charitabel of me. When the work of the Lord is don, you shall, I trost, hafe all these clammors to sese with satisfaccthon to Gods pepel. Let justies and merci be goynd. Bannisment is past vpon me, and by the apoyntment of the Lord. I freli confes my contumeli to the Cort, but more here after of this. By this barer I am requested to hafe a full answer from vnder youer hanse, that cuch percons as we shall send to tret with youer State maye hafe free egres and regres with out mollestachon. Youer letter sent to Mr. Knolse we hafe sene, and both of vs labred to advanc the work, which we hope will redound to the glori of God and the sopresing the wicked among vs, but we are prifat in our prosedingse tel a conkluchon, and so desier you: for we ar threttend. You maye plese to soggest youer will to this barrer, you will find him tracktabel. We shall not rest vntel this work be finnist, and youer slfes pouer here. In hast, I rest

Youers to comand, Jo: Vnderhill.

Dover, 12 of 8 mont, 1639.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Vnderhill, (8) — 39."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Wenthrop Esquire, Goferner of the Macetusetes, at Boston, these I praye.

Right Worshipfull and much honnored in the Lord Jesous Christ our Lord, — Vnderstanding by Mr. Elms, Mr. Calkard and Ed: Starbock, that Mr. Knolse had from

hear wrot a letter for Ingland, wherein it justli aperse that God is dishonnored, youer commonwele and cherches cast vnder reproch, we cald him to acount, as in equiti we were bound, to answer this offencif paschegs of his. He not fulli abel to answer the pertickelers, I am apoynted by the cort hombli to crafe the coppi of his letter of you, that we maye the more thorrily dele with him, whom we find injenious to confes his falt, and gif du satisfacechen not only to vs, from whence he wrot it, but to youer whole state, which we shall dilligenli furder him in, and shall be willing to my power to dow the like, to the glori of God, and my farther humelyachon ; not that we intend to weaken youer pouer by bringing it dependant in oure Cort, but this we were forst too, in regard it was not aneackted vnder this jurisdicchon, so as the Chorch and combenachon might be thorroli informd of his ofenc, so that by his repentance the Word of God might hafe free pascheges without pregedice. Thous much I am bound to signifi to youer honnored slfe and take lefe, comending you to the infinit merci of God in Christ.

Youers to comand

Jo: Vnderhill, *Gouer:*

Douer, 22 the 11 mon. 1639.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Vnderhill (11) 39."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Wenthrop esquier, Goferner of the Macetuchets baye, these present I praye.

Right Worshipfull and much honnord in the Lord, — A mong the rest of my aflickchons, jusli imposed by my sinnfull lif and backsliding prodigalliti in my whole corce, this is on that doth and will agrefate my grefe, thut I am deprife of that chrischan liberti I once had, boght

by the preschous blud of the Lord Jesous; but I hafe made the blod and deth of Christ of non efeckt, therfore I am justli depriued of liberti to visset you, nor dare I aproch youer presenc, tel the Lord mofe you there vnto: to here the rumers and fliing reportes gon out agaynst me ar not so much admirabel to me, becase it is Sathan's time, now or nefer, to wage ware agaynst my soule, and prefent my reconsilement with His pepel by his falce alarmse: which sound ale the contri ofer. Sir, be plese to here mee, in the matters of Exceter and Douer, and let not mallics and fare words take place in the bosem of the wise. I know it doth not yet with youer slfe. I am trobeld that chuch hard reportes should gooe out agaynst me, and my slfe not thorroli vnderstand mense displesure, tel this morning: I came simpli to satisfi the chorch, not thincking to haf herd cuch hard reportes agaynst me, thogh som smale ingling I had before: and therfore was aduised to bring with me that which will both satisfi youer slfe and the chorch, in those late rumers. I expeckt the mind of God at youer lesure in this matter, I request of you, and rest

Youers to comand, JOHN VNDERHILL.

FROM CAPT: GIBONS HOUSE, BOSTON: 20 of 2 mon., 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Vnderhill."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull: and my much honnord frend John Wenthrop, esquier, Gouernor and Generall of the Masetusets, at Boston in New Ingland.

MOST NOBELL SIR, — Bi your last where with youer worship was plesd to honnor youer vnworthi sarfant, I persefe the Lord has plesd to restore youer helth, to his glori, and his pepels gud. Blesced be his name. We haff littil nuse in these parts, oneli that Fanse and Hol-

land ar enterd into a perpetuall pece. The Spanyad and Hollander haf made a truse for the sea, and cald in there men of ware, and that the State of Holland has sent 10,000 men to Brassiele; the Westinge compani not abell to mannigse the work, wantting mense. This is the som of alle we herd with the last chip arifd Nofember last, and was but nine wicks in her viagse.

I am sorri for the late diffrencs betwin Nuhafen and our Gouornor. The inhabitancs wish for muchall pece and gud naborhoud betwine Nueingland and our parts. I pray God, if it be his will, grant it, so fare as it will stand with justice. Sir, I pray let me hombli intret my seruice and wifes to be presented to Mr. Cotton and Mr. Wilson; and if youer worship will be plesd to bestow a smale peretrie and plomtrie or too, I shall rest youers in what I am abell, praying God to bles you in alle youer afarse, I take lefe, and rest efer

Youers to comand, JOHN VNDERHILL.

FLAT LANSE, the 22 of Desember, 1647.

My wife and daghter hombli present you with there seruice.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Vnderhill, 22 (10) 47."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull Mr. John Wenthrop, Esquier, at his house in Pequot, these present.

NOBELL SIR, — As God hase made you an instrument of the gud of mani disesed, so I hombli request his gudnes to mofe youer hart to be an instrument of reliefe vnto my wife, whom dayli continnuse in gret payne, resefing last yere a payne in her back with alift of a wayti stone,

and dayli increses her payne, and desense in to her left hip, so that shee can not torn her in bed, nor gooe vp rit' in the daye. If bi the barer, Mr. Herbert, I shall obtayne youer helpfull dereckchon, I shall efer rest obbliged and reddi to serfe you to my power. Sir, I wase latli at Flusching. Hanna Feke is to be marrid to a verri jentiele young man, of gud abilliti, of a louli fetture, and gud behafior. The nuse latli com out of Barbates, the barer is abell to informe you more exsacktli; so if you plese to deni youer slfe, in a word or too, what desine Capt. Goggin is vpon for the Inyes, and what sockces, I shall be thanckfull vnto you. With my seruice to youer slfe and Mis Wenthrop, and my wifes, I take lefe and remayne Youers to comand

JOHN VNDERHILL.

SOUTHOULD, 12 of Aprill, 1656.

Oure du respeckts vnto Mis Lake and youer eldist dafter.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt. Underhill."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Wintthrop Esquier, Gouornor of Conectecok Coloni, present, Harford.

CROMWELL BAYE, 6 of Agust, 1659.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL AND MUCH HONNORD, — I presumd not long since to trobell you in a fewe linse conserning the Dutch lanse I sould to Mr. Lad. My hombell request is you will plese to fafor me in that legal right I hafe disposd to Capt: Lad by reson I sesd it before ani. I past my sesure June 27, 1653,* — Aprill folloing, the Cort se-

* See copy of proceedings in relation to this seizure, on pp. 193, 194. — EDS.

questerd it from my sesure. What nesesciti and vnexpeckted trobbels hafe broght me to is admirabell conserning this sesure. The Dutch Gouornor laste yere disposd of my just right in his Jurisdickchon; in vallu about one hondered pounds in lanse. He owse me monnis, and delse as it pleseth him; he is with out controule; and alle this is simpli com vpon mee bi reson I declared. The intended consperrise as the Inyens reported; and wase profd vpon oth: then Gouornor Eton and Capt: John Leueret, wich the incorigmentse bi letter sent me vpon my one ruen, or gret dammigse; out of conchencs to the safti of Nueingland. Sir, I am asuredli confidnt of Gods Rightchousnes, that som gud sperrits will be mofed to considder my case, as I know God to be rightchous; that I hafe sofferd a gret dele of misseri vnjustli: althe to quick in arming agaynst the Dutch. A word from you, nobell Sir, in seson, ather to the Cort or Capt: Low, maye much befrend mee. Our plantacyon has sent bi Ensin Briant and Samwel Sherman for admittancs into youer Coloni as a member. I sopos the termse acording to South and Est Hamton is to be vnderstoud to hafe power, as Est Hamton, to cepe Cortse: not a Generall Cort, nather abofe nor equall with the hed Cort; but if case be, thay to asist vs and we them, or as wisdom shall regulat. My seruice and wifes to youer slfe and Mis Winthrop, I hombli take lefe,

Youers to comand, JOHN VNDERHILL.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt: Vnderhill."

JOHN UNDERHILL AND OTHERS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right worshipfull John Winthroup Esq, Gouernor of the Collone of Harfort of the riuer Conetticut thes dd.

SETAUCK, the 20 of October, 1660.

MUCH HONONERED SIR, — This 20 of October, a leter sent by Mr. Mathew Allen to the inhabitence of our Towne, brought by the hand of our neighbour John Genners, who not only caused it to be broke open, but with voilence detained it, though the Towne sent for it, infine refusing to com, sent it. The Towne forthwith voted for this folowing answer, to be sent with the boat that brought the said Genners, that we might testify our respects and redines to attend the advice giuen in the letter, and shew our just apolige, though our disturbing neighbour would haue prevented vs. The answer the Towne voated, deputed Esusayere Brian to issue the vnian in case the Commissioners did accept of vs; the reson becaus he is interested as a towns man with vs; seconly, becaus the persons amongst vs capable wer prevented by providenc, and soe not sending a Deputie to the Court of Harfort, we had no intiligenc till the day and date aboue written; and therfore humbly craue your favorable constructions, we not neglecting out of contempt or repentanc of our first request; not doubting but tyme and patienc will both discouer and quiet. The euell disposed toreing and stireing sperits can sonere raise clamors and disturbance then alaye them; which haue silenced som well disposed amongst vs, which wer capable to doe them good. Noble Sir, let no discoragement sease vpon you or any of the Magestrats for receuinge of vs. We hope both you and we may haue much comfort in our vnion. Desiring God

to blesse both you and vs, to [his] glory and our comfort, we humbly tak leaue and remaine,

Yours to command, in the name of the Towne,

JOHN VNDERHILL.
RICHARD WODHULL.
THO: PARRE.

Sir, we humbly intreat you to send vs word whether we may not vote for Maiestrats to be confermed the next Generall Court, therefor because we are not yet established.*

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Setaket men."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Youre blesced fathers wordse to mee, at my last partting from him in Boston ; 18 *yerse sinse Maye next.*

In a word, Nobel Sir, I insert what I herd and red in a boke com out of Eingland this wintor, caled Nueinglanse Bloddi Ensine, in it declard the horribel soferings of the pepel caled Quakers, in Boston, Plimmoth and Nuhauen ; but youer slfe and Coloni spred thorro the world as moderat and pittifull in youer demenyour to them. Most diere and nobel Sir, as God hase prserfd you from shedding innosent blod, and cept your Coloni from acktse of cruelti to that pepel, so I trost you will bee preserued to the end ; that you maye not pertake in the aprochching jugsement. Most diere and louing onckel, gife me lefe for your forther incorrgsement from percekuchon, to mind you of my farewell words from your nobell father, of happi memori, to mee, and hafe taken such imprschon throg the

* This letter is in the handwriting of Richard Woodhull. —EDS.

sperrit of God in mee, that I dare not meddel with that pepell; but lefe them to there libberti grantted bi the gud ould Parlement of Eingland.

The last words of youre father and Elder Cotton to mee at last partting, both a part, yet one matter exprst as folloeth: Capt: you ar now departting from the gret skorgse of God hangse ouer the hedse of this pepel and land, for God is wroth with the Contri and will otter his sore displesure agaynst it; but whether I maye life to see it I queschon; but you are young anof to life to see it. The same Elder Cotton declard to mee, as if both had conkluded of the same, but I am sure thay did not: the reson of Gods displesure from the ferst soferings and bannismentse in your fathers time. These words were spoken 18 yeres since Maye next. I lefe to youre wisdom, and [*torn*]tt Yours

JOHN VNDERHILL.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt. Vnderhill, Rec: Mar: 21:" (by another hand) "1660."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull and my much honord vnckell, John Wintrop, Esquier, Gouornor of Conettecot, at Harford, these.

MUCH HONORD VNCKELL, — Whom I inderedli honor, in the loue of that tru princepell of God in you, and am trobbeld for youer vnexpected borden from the west of Long Iland. Truli, Sir, som of them haue ofended God in violating there othese and intrest, obbliged to the Dutch before taken of by Royall pouer. Sir, whow can expeckt honor and fidilliti from such a wandring pepell as thaye haue manifestted them slfese, in tornning, and tornning, and tornning agayne. Gret wase there cri for Capt:

Scoot; he soght not them but thaye him, and crid him vp, hosana to daye, and down with him tomorro. So with youer Coloni; but this I am sure of, that the Capt: afermed; if youer Coloni would clame the Iland by his Magestise grant to youer Coloni, he would not hinder it; but som, other wayse perswaded, could not consent to this, it not being clere to my slfe nor mani more.

Truli, Sir, I am youer despiced, obliged to my pouer, and euer shall rest youer lo. cosin to comand,

JOHN VNDERHILL.

OYSTER BAYE, 4 of March, 1663.

My seruics to Capt: Wintrop; my wifese indiered respecktse to you, whom wase latli deliuerd of a sonn.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt: Vnderhill."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull and my much honored vnckel, John Wintrop Esquier, Gouernor of Conettecok, at his house in Harford, by this expres barer.

MUCH HONORED SIR, — I reseued youers by John Hickes, and am much obliged vnto you for owre incorrigsement of youer comming to visset vs; and will be a gret refreshing to our sperritse to see you at Oyster Baye, if God make waye for it. Sir, a gud godli woman, and diere frend of my wife, is offen in a sad destresced condischon, in as much as her life is a borden vnto her thorro extremmiti of torture, and hombli request youer faforabell asistancs to her in this present distres. The destemper is as a shoutting agew, pricking in her left side, asending into her tempels, and tieth, hed and jase, and takese her somtimse too dayse together, and hase had it niere 12 monthes, with such exstremiti as shee can not rest nigh[t] nor daye, and takese her at aell sesonse, night and daye, shiftting

his course as an ago. If God shall plese to pot it in to youer hart to send her som relefe by the barer, my wife indieredli presentse you with her seruice in the loue of God, and desierse a littil whit vitterall. Diere Sir, let me here how hopfull youer comming to vs will be, and if I can be seruisabell, in oght lise in my pouer I shall not fale you, conkluding my slfe youerse to comand

JOHN VNDERHILL.

OYSTER BAYE, March 28, 1664.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt: Vnderhill."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull and my much honored unckell John Winthrop Esquier, Honttington.

NOBELL SIR, — The reson of my present persut is a letter from my wife; the late nuse from Boston to the Iland; the ffriggets arifd or at hand; there work inserted in my letter, to settel gouerment, and to reduse the Dutch. Abord the ffriggetse 500 souldirse, and a 1000 armse; these as shee writse, wich her one hand. The God of loue, pece, and merci rest with you and youerse, to his glori and youer pece and comfort. In the Lord I take lefe, and remayn youerse to comand as I am abell,

JOHN VNDERHILL.

OYSTER BAYE, 18 of June, 1664.

My respecktse to my frense atending you.

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Nobell Sir, — Youer slfe and magestratse I hombli present my seruics vnto: these maye sertefi you that John Scoot continuid his desayt and mallics agaynst youer power. In case of a letter you sent the Generall inclosed unseld to Ensine Briant, by him sent to Setaket, inclosd in his to the said Toun, and then the sayd Toun were to sele it and send it to the Generall after, as Scoot tould mee his letter was tost vpon doun like a tennisbale, a perfiddius ackt, sayth Scoot, to abuse so nobell a gentillmans writtingse in such a bace manner; but when I checkt him for his indeuering to make strief betwine the Generall and youer slfes, he tould me he wase consernd in it; you writting to his determent: but speking with the Generall about his perfiddius ackt, the Generall, to the reproch of Scoot, much slightted his wicked plot, seing his simpel cnaferi, not persefing his wicked plot before he contrifd it, that wisdom would retorn it to him with shame and reproch, but after the abuce of youer fafor, God has justli cast him vnder shemise danger if he breke the comand of the Asembli, and bring not in the counterfit portreture of the king imprest in yello waxe, anext to his false perpetueti of 20 mile square, where by he did chet the Town of Brouckhauen, he is to induer the sentance of the Court of Asisics; but he is pakking awaye, and hase sould what he hath left at Brouckhauen, the pepel being instated, by an Ackt of Asembli, in there anchent poseschonse, as they were before he clamed intrest in the sayd place. Thous, out of my anchent relachon and loue to you all, I thoght fit to sertefi you how matterse happend. The presedent intilligencs, this 22 of March, nuse ariued. The Elias frigget is cast awaye at the Lissard, and lost niere one 100 men. Ware is soposd to be betwin England and

Holland, by alle intilligencs out of Europ, in Vergenia. Thous you hafe the som in grose linse, but I craufe youer fafor to ackcept of the sencs and onnist mening, and so take lefe and remayn youerse to comand

JOHN VNDERHILL.

N. YORK, March 23, 1665.

My seruics to Capt. Wintrop.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt: Vnderhil, rec. Apr: 18: 65."

JOHN UNDERHILL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR,

To the Right Worshipfull and much honored John Wintrop, Esquier, Govornor of his Magestise Coloni of Conettecok, presnt.

MUCH HONORED, WITH THE REST OF THE HONORED MAGESTRATSE, — I presnt to youer considderachonse the issu of my anchent contreuerci conserning the Dutch land, and hombli request youer fafarabel asistancs in my lowe estate; not doutting but a right vnderstandding how desaytfulli matterse were carrid to me in my ferst sesure, by the dececed, and afterward by Ralfe Erle in the time of my indurencs at Rode Iland, becase I would not sofer the souldierse to despoyle the well afeckted Dutch farmers: I was confind, and in this trobell the said Ralfe came vpon me, with gile, to by alle my right in prisalse by sea and land, seuerall negerse, taken by my comischen, simpli sould him alle my right by sea and land for 20 p. in wompom, and this in my gret straytse; but when hee had obtaynned this grant, he came vpon me for the Dutch land; to whom I answerd, it was neuer menchond by him, nor thoght of by mee, for I answerd, I could not sell it, acording to the tru intent of my sesure; but hee threttend to su mee, then wase I constraynned, to avoyd trobbell, and that I might get clere of the Iland, to pas a bill to him of

alle my right and intrest, which at that present I consefed not ani, till determened, as will apere by the inclosed. Your wisdomse will esili see my wrong sofered by the Dutch fiskale and Gouornor, and for Ralfe Erle and the deseced, I shall forbare to menchon, to avoyd dishonor in diuerse respeckts, ackcept I am necessetated, by youer slfes, I haueing both afedauit and som linse vnder the hanse of the dececed; but if youer worchipese plese to bee the Judggies of the sesur, which I neuer presentted to triall till now, in this you haue owre Generals aduics, that the one halfe of the princepel and rent belongse to you, and the other halfe to mee; but I shall forbare to trobbell you or my slfe with forther inlargment, ackcep you shall see case to requier it of mee. My proposischon to you is, if you shall fafor mee as aforesayd, in my nesescis with a considderabell som out of what is due to you one this Iland, I shall ackcept it, and send you my sesure, with other writtingse, wherin it will apere on oth I refuced one honderd and fifti pound in gud paye, and that I was, by falsciti disswaded from gowing for England with my sesure, the land not being worth 30*p.*; and by this mense and such like sottel carrigse meuse, wase disceued of a considderabell satisfackchon for my vnjust soferingse; which the Generall, out of his clemmenci, hath taken one him, in part, to se me satisfid; and I will not queschon youer loue and charriti, to follo his gud presednt, for which I shall euer rest youerse obbliged to comand,

JOHN VNDERHILL.

OYSTER BAYE, 12 of Aprill, 1665.

My hombell request is you will plese to conuaye my inclosed writtingse conserning the Dutch, and my bill, to Mr Arnall, safli to me by the way of Milford, and you shall ever find me a reall hart to youer Coloni, and should not haue shed my slfe an obstrucktter of youer power, but that my wife and sonn being Quakerse, were gretli abused

by sordid sperritse vnder youer atorri at Setaket, pretending youer lavse bound them to it, as thay were Quaker[s]: Youerse to serfe,

JOHN VNDERHILL.

I neuer benifitted one penni of alle the pricis, but wase abused, and the chargse left vpon me acording to this bill, and more, but what I had of Mr. Lord, costting me 20*p.* out of it for chargse, three jornise, onse fife wickes, 3 wickes, and the last a month, to the lose of my crap by there linggrin me of, by reson of an obbligachon got vnder my hand in a frollick, at one John Webse, where he and Mr. Gibbonse had lodged mee.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt. Vnderhill about the Duch land at Hartford, rec: Apr: 26: 1665.

"I sent back these papers vnder written, in a letter to Capt: Vnderhill which I sent to Mr. Alex: Brian of Milford.

"Viz: Capt: Vnderhills bill to Mr. Arnol: Mr. Arnols receit of part was on the backside.

"John Ogden's Testimony.

"A copy of a letter to Mr. Eaton from Capt. Vnderhill.

"A kind of petition or declaration vnder Capt: Vnderhils hand. It seemes to have been to the Generall.

"I sent the copy of his seasure afterward, in July: 1665, in a letter of July: 18: 1665, sent to be left with Mr. Brian for him.

"Capt. Vnderhills seasure of the Duch land, was June 27: 1653, and renued againe the next day, & Capt: Vnderhill wrote in a noat that was written vnder the copy of the seasure sent with this letter, that Mr. Rich: Lord & Mr. William Gibbins inserted in a letter to him, Apr: 54: that the Generall Court had sequestred the Duch land & the rent, for the State of England."

[The following is a transcript, in the handwriting of Winthrop, of the copy referred to by him in the above indorsement, as "sent with this letter."]

WRITTEN vpon the table at Mr. Richard Lords, in the presence of him the said Richard & Mr. William Gibbins, Rentaneor to the Duch Governour, inhabitants of Hartford, and by their advise & councell written vpon the cottage dore of the Duch lands in capitall letters: Hartford, this 27th of June, 1653: I John Vnderhill by virtue of Com-

mission, and according to Act of Parliament, seised this house, the Hope, with all the appurtenances therevnto belonging, as Duch goods, belonging to the West Indian Company of Amsterdam, enemies to the Commonwealth of England; and so to remaine seised, vntill determined by the said Commonwealth, or succeeding power of England.

Per me JOHN VNDERHILL.

O The Seale.

Witnesse
NATHANIEL TEW
JAMES BROCK

In the presence of
JOHN BROWNE of Hartford.

Vpon the perswasion of the said Richard & William, the said seasure was renewed the 28th of the said month, and the rent, 10*li.* for seven yeares adioyned, in words following.

I the said John doe by virtue as aforesaid, seise the said rent, & adioyne it to the said seisure as before specified, & so to remaine seised vntill determined by the said power: JOHN VNDERHILL.

O A Seale.

Seised & read in the presence of us
WILLIAM WHITING &
JOHN ENGER, Inhabitants of Hartford.

Mr. Richard Lord, & Mr. William Gibbins insert in a letter to me Aprill: 54: The Generall Court have sequestred the Duch Land, & the rent, for the State of England. JOHN VNDERHILL.

RICH: LORD.
WILLIAM GIBENS.

A true copie of that copye of the seisure which was sent by Capt: Vnderhill in his letter of the 12 of Apr: 1665.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Copy of Seisure of Duch land at Hartford by Capt: J. Vnderhill."

LETTERS OF WILLIAM HOOKE.*

WILLIAM HOOKE AND THOMAS BRADBURY† TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthop Esqr Gouernour of the Masichewsetts these present be dd. in Baye.

Wee haue found it written (Right Worshipfull) that where noe vision is, the people perrish; the consederation where of forceth vs to become humble sutours to your worshipp, to solicite in our behalfe some godly minister, to pitty the miserable estate and condicion wee are in, for want of those blessed meanes which the Lord hath appointed to the fortherance of our saluation; hoping he will stirre vp your hart with all conueniant speede to supply (out of your abundance) vs his poore people heere, whoe are almost starued for want of the spirituall foode of our soules. We shall not neede to vse many arguments to moue you, whoe canne better apprehend our misery then wee expresse itt. Maye it please you, Mr. Blackstone haeth formerly promised to come and liue with vs, but wee nowe finde by his answers to some, that his hopes are fedd

* The writer of the following letters was a brother of Francis Hooke, a resident of Kittery, who emigrated from Bristol, Eng. William was of York, 1633; and was named by Sir Ferdinando Gorges to be one of his Council in 1639. He afterwards removed to Salisbury, of which town he was representative in 1643 and 1647; and he died there in 1654. He is called by Winthrop "a godly gentleman." This writer will not be confounded with the Rev. William Hooke of Taunton and New Haven, some of whose letters will also be found in this volume. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 125; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† This Thomas Bradbury was, without doubt, the same person who became an original proprietor of Salisbury. He was made freeman in 1640; was a representative from 1651 to 1657, and also a captain. He died 16th March, 1695. His wife, in her extreme old age, was, in 1692, accused of witchcraft; but she was acquitted on trial, and died in 1700. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

with the expectation of farre greater profitt by his husbandry there, then hee should haue had by his ministry here; which God only knowes. Nowe, Sir, for the accommodation of a minister, thus farr wee canne goe at present; he shall haue a very good howse, with an inclosure to it, for the planting of corne; and allsoe a stip[end] of 20*li.* per annum, which wee hope in a short time wilbe doubled, if not trebled. Neather will wee seeke to tye him to any other manor of dissipline then what shalbe found approueable out of [the] word of God, which must be the touchtone and triall of all our actions. Good Sir, lett not any former scandals which haue beene (partly just and partly vniust, raysed vppon vs) be any obstacles to hinder the good and proffitt, which by this meanes may, through Gods blessinge, betide our poore soules heere after. What wee haue spoken vouchsafe to take into your serious consideration, and affectually answer vs by the ferst opportunity; soe shall wee praye for a continuall increse of Gods fauour towards you, in derecting all your accions to his glory, to home wee leaue you & rest

Your humble suppliants, euer to command,

William Hooke.

Thomas Bradbvry.

Accomenticus, the 13th day of September, Anno 1637.

Indorsed, "Mr. Hooke, Mr. Bradbery, Agameticus: 13: Sept. 1637."

WILLIAM HOOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrop, gouer: be dd, in Bostone.

Worshipfull Sir, — Vnderstan[d]i[n]g that Mr. Winselowe and some other gent: haeth power from your worshipp to grant out lottes at Merimake to newe commers; Sir, if you shall thinke it fitt to lett me haue a portion of land in that plantation, I will remoue, and about June

next to bild there. I haue written vnto Mr. Winselowe allredy about it, expecting an answer euery daye, that I maye order my bisnesse accordenly for my remoueall. I desier noe great quanitie of land, but that I maye haue that which is sufficient for the manigine of that estate which I haue. I haue fead my selfe a longe time with v[a]ine hopes. There is noe posibelity here with vs for the geathering of a church, except God in mercy open there eyes, and lett them see there supersticious waye which they desier to goe. Sir, desireing your worshipp to helpe this poore man the berer here of, which haeth bine much damnified by the master of Gallopes pinnas, Sir, I leaue the matter vnto the party to relate vnto your worshipp. To my knowled[ge] haeth caried himselfe here amoungst vs verie shamefully, the master and Gallope sonne twoe, inuited some of our naybours aborde his pinnas, and made them dronke, and dronke themselues twoe. He heath not it answered for it, but some stands bound for them. I rest, leaueing your worshipp to the Lord's protecktion.

Yours to command, WILLI. HOOKE.

ACCOMENTICUS, the 28 January. 1639.

Sir, If I might not be to troublesome vnto your worshipp, desiring an answer by the first.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Hooke of Acomenticus."

WILLIAM HOOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrop Es: in Bostone.

WORSHIPFULL SIR, — Mr. Dexter haeth bine at me for a longer tim for the payment of the 436*li.*, which is dewe vnto my father* from him. I am willing to doe him all the

* The father of William Hooke was Humphrey, an alderman of the city of Bristol. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

good I canne in the thing, to writ vnto my father to for bare him some serten time longer. I cannot conseue howe he canne paye it, moneys being soe scearse in the countrey with out time. It make me the redier to helpe him, finding him soe willing in doeing what he canne to make payment, makeing noe question but my father will harken vnto what I shall desier him, in the forbarance of this mony. Sir, if I maye craue soe much at your hands, by letter to giue my father notise of the scar[citi]e of monyes in the countrey, it will be a greate meanes to preuayle with him the more to harken vnto my letter; & likewise that I haue done my indeuer for the getting in of his moneys, ore else my father maye thinke I might haue done more then I haue done.

Worthy Sir, one courtise more I would desier your worshipp to doe for me, if you thinke it conuenient. Mr. Godfree haeth informd my father of many false thinges by letter against me, in my remoueing from Accomenticus. Nowe Ser, you knowe vppon what grounds my remoueing was, & what ends I propounded vnto my selfe, in regeard of the vnsettellnesse of the Church & State; praye Sir, satisfie him in your wisdome what you thinke meat. Good Sir, if you shall thinke it fitt, send a letter by Mr. Dexter, that I may send it to my father with my letters.

I found by my fathers letters, which I receued this sommer, my father was informed by some that pretended a greadell of loue vnto me, that the Church Couenant did deney boeth king & prince, and like wise bindeth a man from remoueing vppo[n] any ocation to Ould England. These are the thinges that makes my father soe vnwilling of my remoueing. And soe rest, in hast, leaueing your Worshipp vnto the Allmity Lords protecktion

Your seruant euer to command

Willi. Hooke.

Dated Julie, 15 daye, 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr Hoo[ke.]"

LETTERS OF HUGH PETER.*

HUGH PETER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To our noble Gouernour, Boston.

Sir, — According as I writ, yesterday in the afternoone Mrs. Amee, Mr. Phillips & 2 more of the church, our Elder being one, met here to deale with mee about Mrs. Ruth; where Mr Phillips, with much violence & sharpnes, charged mee home with this, that of all offences, such as were agaynst the widdow and fatherles were greatest, aggravated it how he could, remembred that which I neuer dreamt of, that I should hinder the mayd of a match at London, which was not so, could not thinke of any kindnes I euer did her, though shee haue had aboue 300*li.* through my fingers, so as if God vphold mee not after an especiall manner, it will sinke mee surely. I told him, if hee had taken halfe that paynes with mee before, hee had done neighborly and brotherly; hee told mee he would not stop my intended marriage, but assured mee it would not be good: much wonder here is in the towne about it, though the Elder thought my answear sufficient. Mr. Endecot haue likewise been dealt withall for the same thing; all which makes mee reflect vpon my rash pro-

* A notice of Hugh Peter, a large number of whose letters are printed in the sixth volume of the Fourth Series of these Collections, may be found in that volume, p. 91. — Eds.

ceedings with Mrs. Sh: — Now, (good Sir,) let me know what is best to doe, who am

Your troubled and troublesome

H: Peter.

Salem. 5. 2d.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr Peter."

HUGH PETER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To our noble Gouernour, Boston.

Sir, — Still pardon my offensiue boldnes: I know not well whither Mrs. Sh:* haue set mee at liberty or not: my conclusion is, that if you find I cannot make an honorable retreat, then I shall desire to advance, σὺν Θεῷ.

Of you I now expect your last aduise, viz: whither I must goe on or of, *saluo evangelij honore:* if shee bee in good earnest to leaue all agitations this way, then I stand still and wayt Gods mynd concerning mee; if you find that cannot bee, then let our shure (?) frends come home, and I shall take what present speedy course I can to come ouer, & labor to make vp all breaches. If I had much mony, I would part with it to her free, till wee heare what England doth, supposing I may bee called to some imployment that will not suite a marryed estate: for indeed, (Sir,) some must looke out, and I haue very strong thoughts to speake with the Duitch Governor, & lay some way there for supplye, &c. I heare all men complayning, few doing; if I goe to the Duitch, I pray let my cossen Stephen goe along, if you thinke it not *tanti*, disswade: Why should wee not make some league with them? who are very probable to bee more then ordinary good or bad

* Mrs. Deliverance Sheffield, who, in 1639, had become the second wife of Peter. — Eds.

neighbours. Once agayne I say, wee must looke out; wee want necessary linnen *cum multis alijs*, and a voyage to the West Indyes would find vs wintere worke in cottone, &c. Fishing will not yet, or to purpose. Manufactures cannot *sine manibus*. I am sick to heare the complaynts. Graunt ships doe come, eyther wee are too many to bee serued by so few ships, or their supply will not bee quadrate, or we shall want mony to take ther of. These things I say not out of want of faith for my selfe, but loue to the country. I resolue to quiet myne owne conscience about the state with what speed I can, who haue made it my wife, my life. The issue of our faste * should set vs vpon some singular things. I hardly haue seene more of Gods presence here, then on that day. The Lord hold our harts to the worke.

Once more for Mrs. Sh: I had from Mr. Hibbins & others, her fellow-passengers, sad discouragements, where they saw her in her trim. I would not come of with dishonor, nor come on with griefe, or ominous hesitations.

Glad I am our sister is better. The Lord continue her to your bosome, a blessed helper.

My sighes & harty desires are for you, as for

Your unworthy H. P.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Brother Petters."

HUGH PETER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Right deere & honord, — These are not only to salute you & your good gentlwoman, *cum cæteris;* but earnestly to intreat you to let mee haue a word from you about Mrs.

---

* The writer probably refers to the general fast observed April 12, 1638, and noticed in Winthrop's N. E., i. 264. — Eds.

Beggerly's, or rather Mr. Skeltons * house, which is now falling to the ground, if some thing bee not done: wee haue referd it, and would earnestly intreate you for a writing (they say) you haue about it, which you promised her, & shee sayes will lende to the busines for light: & thus wayting for that writing, & wishing you the fullnes of all good, as to myne owne soule, I rest

Yours euer & euer, HUGH PETER.

SALEM, 8th of the (6).

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Petter; Salem, 8 (10)."

HUGH PETER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To our noble Gouernour Boston.

HONORED SIR, — You must giue mee leaue to inquire of your welfare agayne, and to intreat you still to looke at him that is gone before vs in greatest sorrowe. I did reioyce when I obserud that same

Compositum ius fasque animi, sanctosque recessus Mentis † ——.

The Lord bee with you still.

James Luxford was at Sagust when I came by. I haue layd out for him. Mrs. Lake will come speedily, and truly, Sir, you haue many frinds. Thomas Reade ‡ would haue hartily come and done your busines; and, if there bee cause, stands ready.

Wee are all here well, and are yours. Let not Mrs.

---

* Rev. Samuel Skelton, the first pastor of the church in Salem, died 2d August, 1634; and his widow is supposed to have married a Mr. Baggerly, or Beggerly, as her consent to the division of a part of his estate is given to an order of the General Court in June, 1638. — *Mass. Col. Records*, i. 272. — EDS.

† Persius. Sat. ii. v. 73, 74. — EDS.

‡ Perhaps the brother of Mrs. Lake and of Elizabeth Winthrop; afterwards colonel in the Parliamentary Army. — EDS.

Stratton's busines trouble you. I hope you will find wee loued you, and still shall; but, alas, wee fayle basely when wee come to proofe.

Salute our deere sister, and let her not now bee despondent, least the deuill bee gratifyed.

My wife is very thankfull for her apples, and desires much the new fashiond shooes.

Good Sir, if there bee any thing wherin I may bee more yours *quid mi impera:* bee you euer saluted in the Lord by Your

Hu: Peter.*

Sal. 26. 10. 39.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Brothr: Peter."

HUGH PETER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

. . . *John Winthrop Esqr, in New England.*

My deere Frend, — I see your son,† but no letter from you with him, so that I know not your mynd about him. Hee is well growne, and is much affected to horse, & therfore your brother‡ meanes to put him into his Regiment, though your brother is but weake himselfe, & (I feare) not long liued. I shall whilst I liue doe him all the good I can, which is not much, but (through mercy) hee shall doe well; and I make no question of it. Let mee intreat you to salute your good wife & all yours, and bee assured God is with you, & will care for yours: they are vnder a blessed Couenant and promise of grace. For those things of myne, I know not what you meane by a

* This letter was undoubtedly written under the influence of feelings excited by the knowledge of the unfaithfulness of Luxford, Winthrop's seryant, noted in the sixth volume of this series, pp. 137, 169. — Eds.

† Fitz John Winthrop, who had gone to England to seek military service. — Eds.

‡ Col. Thomas Reade, Governor of Stirling Castle. — Eds.

writing, but if my daughter bee not vrged by necessity, or dye, I sent you my intentions by divers letters. I wish New Eng: may yet liue & florish; why Mr. Blynman was represented here in such a staruing condition I know not; you can tell.

John Lake liue[s] still. Your brothers son, the chirurgeon, dead. All else well here. Your brother Reade at Sterlinge. Truly vpon all accounts I thinke New Eng: best, if clothing & bread may be had, if your spirits may be kept vp to God. Your designes haue all bin very profitable for the Country, but I know not how vsefull to your selfe. Salute all with you. I am

Yours euer, H: P.

1, 1, 57.*

* Written from England. — Eds.

LETTERS OF EZEKIEL ROGERS.*

EZEKIEL ROGERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Honoured Sir, — I was at Ipswich this weeke to haue attended on you, but you were gone to the Court before I came. I humbly thanke you for your kinde purpose to haue seene our poore towne. In regard of your many buisinesses, much company, & short time, I coulde not exspect such a fauour at this time. But God may afford some opportunity, when you may haue more freedome. The season yesterday, & this day, hath hindred my fixed resolutions of wayting on you, my body being not strong, especially since my sicknesse. Therefore I beseech you to excuse me, & so with my seruice to your selfe, & the rest of our honoured Magistrates, I committ you to God, & rest.

at Your Commande Ez. Rogers.

Th [*torn*] present.

* Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, the first minister of Rowley, Mass., was son of the Rev. Richard Rogers of Weathersfield, County Essex, Eng. He was educated at Cambridge, and received his degree of A.M. at Christ's College in 1608. After serving as chaplain for five or six years in the family of Sir Francis Barrington, the benefice of Rowley in Yorkshire was presented to him by that gentleman, where he labored for seventeen years. He came to New England in the autumn of 1638, with many of his Yorkshire friends; and commenced the settlement of Rowley in the spring of 1639, with sixty families. He was eminent for piety and usefulness. He had three wives, the last of whom survived him seventeen years. On the "very night of this [third] marriage, July 16, 1651, his dwelling-house, with all his goods, the church-records, and the library he brought with him from England, was consumed by fire." "He died Jan. 23, 1660–1, in the seventieth year of his age, and the twenty-second of his ministry in Rowley." None of his children survived him. — *Bradford's Address, prefixed to Gage's History of Rowley*, pp. 10–14; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.*; *ante*, p. 28. — Eds.

EZEKIEL ROGERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

. . . he worshipfull our much . . . Gouernour, John . . . orpe, Esqr. these present.

Worthy Sir, — It was no small trouble to me, at my last being in the Bay, that your buisinesses were so many that I coulde not haue conuenient time to speake with you. The loue which you haue shewed to me, by so many expressions, & so constantly, euer since my comming hither, as it was a greate motiue to me to stay in these parts, so I holde my selfe bounde in all obseruance, & vpon all occasions, to acknowledge the same. I may well say, I thinke of you often, when I see you not; making often mention of you in my poore prayers; which indeede your place requireth, though I had no other ingagements. This place is a place (as of mercyes, so) of tryalls; The devill is very buisy; & I suppose & hope thatt you haue angred him, as much as another, & therfore may neede prayer against him.

I doe hartily reioice for all that good, of which God hath made you an instrument to this Colony; & which also he hath done to your owne soule; which (I hope) prospereth dayly; & the Lorde cause it to thriue & prosper still, that you may bring forth more fruites, euen in your age, & hauing serued your generation, & God in it, may obtaine a more then ordinary measure of glory. For let not (I beseech you) glory alone content you, since you haue so faire an aduantage for measure & degree; & the Lorde shall assuredly giue it you, if you be not wanting to your selfe. And since I haue thus begun, giue leaue to him whose poore labours you haue accepted in publique, & from his soule wisheth well to yours, to speake a fewe words from God vnto you. Let it not seeme a small thing in your eyes, that the Lord hath giuen you a principall

place in these Churches of Christ; & this place (though poore & despicable in the eyes of some haughty ones, yet) honoured of God aboue most, if not any in the worlde. Certainly your account wilbe greate; though, if good, the greater the better. To which ende, I beseech you in Gods feare, be much & strict in the obseruing & examining your estate, hart, & wayes. Your estate, that finding still more clearly God's loue in pardoning & accepting you through Christ, you may be constrained to loue him, & wholly taken vp with the zeale of his glory. Your hart, that no euill may insensibly creepe in, to the defilement of it, & your estrangement from God, or greeuing his Spirit. Your wayes also, to the euidence of your faith, & comfort of the Churches.

There is a peece of Godlinesse, called the Dayly Direction, which your vncle Egerton * so much commended, that I hope you are well acquainted with; & indeede without it a Christian shalbe maimed at the best. Concerning your Ciuill actions, this may be one rule among many, to iudge of the lawfullnes of them, when we dare aduisedly commende them to God in prayer, & on the contrary.

Sir, Your godly hart will pardon my boldnes; somwhat I woulde haue sayde to the expressing of the truth of my hart; though I finde my selfe at this time lesse fitt, being weary this night after some Sabbath labour. Let them that loue you not be afradde to speake to you, I am not, & I am persuaded you doe willingly accept me. I might also tell you that the exspectation of the Country is generally raised touching this Court; especially touching oppression, & what wilbe done against it. For my part, I beleeue that if there were a Law to hang vp some before the Lord; they deserue it, & it would to him be a sacrifice most acceptable. Shall the already persecuted & impouerished

* The mother of Margaret Winthrop (the governor's present wife) was Anne Egerton, whose brother is here referred to. — Eds.

pretious members of Christ be made a pray to cormorants? Vnderstanding persons doe thinke that one of them woulde willingly pay a fine of 100*li.* per annum, if he might be suffred to goe on as he hath done. I am sure God is displeased, & woe to them by whom it is. The Lord keep your good hart from pertaking at all in other mens sines (especially of such a nature), by the least indulgence. A body of Lawes is now of all much desired; & all maturenes of proceeding therin wished. Your forwardnes to communicate to the Elders such things as they may be capable of, doth as much indeare you to them (who must be a greate meanes of your strength) as honour you. One thing I should be bolde to intreate th[at] wheras some that came newely ouer haue bene bold to vent Arminian, & the like fowle errors, & then goe their way vnquestioned, leauing an infectious sauour behinde them, (as Mr. Hewett for one,) some order ma[y] be taken, if not to sett a brande on such a[s] haue so offended already, yet to preuent the like, by calling to account any that shall dare so to offende. Sir, Mr. Lamberton did vs much wrong. I exspected his comming to the Bay; but it seemes he setts downe at Quillip:* yet he hath a house in Boston: I woulde humbly craue your aduise to Mr. Will. Bellingham about it, whither we might not enter an action against him, & (vpon proofe) gett helpe by that house. For Bartlet, I referre him to your wisdome, but we smart deeply by him, hauing no place to meete in. Concerning the name of our towne, I hope the Court will giue leaue to our poore towne, to keepe our poore name. I am loth to trouble you with our troubles further from some Newbery men; but I beseech you knowe that our charge valued first by our incouraging freinds, to be about 500*li.*, is at least 900*li.* It was some greife to me that any thing was payde by any of our company toward the last rate, considering our weake estates.

* Quillipiake, New Haven. Capt. George Lamberton is here referred to. See notice of him in 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. p. 346. — Eds.

None doe know (or fewe) what we are impouerished by this purchase, & Quillipiake, & the fayling of some exspected freinds. I only commende it to your louing thoughts. If we be disabled at our first sitting downe very farre, I see it will not be easy to rise after in this country: but the Lord, who knoweth our vprightnes, will take care for vs. Thus my distance from you, & now inforced absence, makes me too tedious & bolde with you. Pardon it, I beseech you. My seruice to your selfe, & your worthy companion remembred, I committ you to God, & rest

Yours euer in Christ to be commanded,

Ez. Rogers.

Rowley, Nou: 3: 1639.

I purposed to haue written to the Deputy, but am not able. Some (it is thought) are backwarde to appeare against one of the delinquents, because of the relation to himselfe, not knowing his worth, & opinion of the party, as I doe.

Sir, I humbly thanke you & Mris. Winthrope for this pretious token, your dainty fruite, & doe beseech the Lord . . . r lande. I haue . . . [*several words destroyed.*]

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Ezek: Rogers."

EZEKIEL ROGERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull our honoured Gouernor John Winthorpe, Esqr.

Right worthy Sir, & much honoured in Christ Jesus, — I humbly thanke you for your acceptance of my poore, hasty & indigested lines, wherin you coulde finde nothing but my faithfull desire of all increase of true worth & honour to you. You haue by your long labours, trauailes, & aduentures, deserued much of this lande, &

my prayers haue bene of late more then ordinary, & my spirit raised, to begge that the Lorde woulde cause all of vs to be conuinced by the powring out of his graces on you, that you are euen that man, whose person & posterity he meanes to make an example to after ages, for worth & blessings.

Certainly this worke of the Lorde, in bringing so many pretious ones to this plac[e], is not for nothing. But I am assured that a blessing it shalb[e] to none but downright godly ones: for in that notion we gaue vp our inheritances to the Lorde. But truly, Sir, we are not yet (the body of the land, I meane) as we must be. And if mag[is]tracy & ministry preuaile not to clense our mixtures & filth, a sore scourge we shall most certainly haue. My spirit is oft troubled about this. And hauing not many dayes (as I haue cause to thinke) here to passe, I earnestly labour, that I may dy with this testimony, that I haue indeauoured to the vttmost to discharge my duty in this lande, which (I doubt not) is your better aime. I shall desire (if God permitt) to see you as soone as the season permitts. We reioice & haue blessed God for the labours of the Court, which I publiquely gaue thankes for. We haue certainly many Anabaptisticall Spiritts among vs, & other base persons, who woulde diligently & yet secretly be searched out. I tooke occasion at the ordination, to speake somwhat earnestly about catechizing, which (if God meane vs good) must be a maine helpe. The backwardnes of many therin, is to me a sad signe.

I humbly thanke you for your louing letter, which doth much stirre me vp to pray for you, for (as you say) I am sure your place doth neede it, & we all owe it.

Touching the two things you propounde in the ende of your letter; though you best vnderstande both the difficulty & cure, yet if (vpon thoughts at leisure) any thing occurre, I wilbe bolde to write.

Since I am putt vpon this Lord's day at night to write

this for a messenger in the morning, I cannot omitt to tell you my text this day, & doctrine, which out of 1 Pet. [1], 15, was this, that the Saint's patterne for holines is no lesse then the holy God himselfe. The very naming wherof is an astonishment to my soule: who knowe that I come so farre short of many men. Yet the gospell requires nothing but what it affords. O what persons then might we be, if the Promises were improoued! But you will better inlarge this. It is late, & I am weary. My seruice & faithfull well wishes to yourselfe & your worthy yokefellowe; so I rest

Yours in Chr. to command

Ez. Rogers.

Rowly, Dec. 8. 1639.

We had a little snowe this weeke, but it is all melted. I suppose you heare of a new sad crosse from Quillip: in Jo. Hardyes pinnace, wherin may be much of my estate, for ought I knowe; but the Lords will be done, who will not faile me.

EZEKIEL ROGERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To our honoured Gouernour John Winthorpe, Esqr. at Boston, these present.

R. Worthy Sir, — I humbly thanke you, as for your care to answere the necessityes of my neighbours, so for your plaine dealings with my selfe, in expressing how you conceiue concerning my due from you; which is both gentlemanlike and christian; & therby I knowe how to satisfy you. Now therfore for my bargaine about the cowes, it was as reall as I coulde make it; & all the mony paide by Mr. Nelson or my selfe, a good time before I was to haue the cowes deliuered. They were to be very good ones, & two calues that were to come in Jan. or Febr. My

neighbours that then had calues, will not now take 10*li.* a peece for them, and therfore my right & due was to haue as good; & not to be disaduantaged by my long stay & suspense. Neither therfore did I mistake my selfe in the moderate demande of a heifer; & addition of the 4*li.* I also thinke it requisite that in a worde, I doe lett you knowe that the young cowes I had were not such as your man intended me; & I persuade my selfe he was then reall, therfore I pardon & pitty him. Besides the goates were bad (diuers of them) in comparison of what we bargained for. And one of the oxen I bought, had some blowe or hurt aboue the vpper iawe, which since groweth in a great wenne, & it is feared it may kill him, swelling now vp to the ey. These things I was loth to trouble you with before; but now thinke it fitt you should knowe that I am a looser by him. Yet I am very well satisfyed with the young heifer, and doe most earnestly & dayly begge of God that you may haue cause to say, It was good for me that I was afflicted.

Sir, there is one thing that is a newe trouble to vs: though the Court doe giue vs but three miles of the eight, that we go into the country, yet we heare that some woulde take somwhat of from that. It seemeth they thinke vs very vnworthy neighbours. But I made knowne my minde to your selfe; of whose worth I doubt not. And for any other, they shall knowe that in a iust cause, I will not be afraide to pleade the right of my suffering neighbours, God assisting vs; to whom (with my seruice to yourselfe, & worthy companion) I committ you & your affaires, & rest

Yours in Chr. to be commanded

Ez. Rogers.

Rowley, this 4th of the 1, 1639.

Sir, The mony that Mr. Nelson paide for me to your man, was that I lent him, when he coulde gett none of your man, for this vse.

I craue pardon, if you thinke me earnest in the matter of those that would depriue vs of our measure of lande; because I thinke such doe very little compassionate our many losses & tryalls.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Ez: Rogers."

EZEKIEL ROGERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull his much honoured freinde, John Winthorpe, Esqr, these.

Worthy Sir, — Hauing no opportunity last weeke to speake much with you; & hauing founde both acceptance & courtesy from you; & being in this holy & neere bond of communion in the Churches with you, I thinke my selfe bound in all Christian duty, to acquaint you with two things, which I shall commende to your wisdome & thoughts, especially hauing a messenger that I dare trust.

First, that many of Gods people did thinke that som[e] of the Court were very sharpe in dealing with Mr. Hawthorne, & aboue that he deserued, if matters be well scanned.

Secondly, some haue also reported, that Mr. Hawthorne alledging, that he tooke aduise concerning some buisinesse with the Elders, your selfe shoulde reply to this effect, That his so aduising with the Elders woulde be to the ouerthrowe of you all.

Because I am assured that you suffer in the minds of many for this, I durst not but let you vnderstande thus much, that you may make vse of it, as shall seeme good to you; & as I doe desire, you will be pleased to acquaint me with any thing that may, in the like or any other kinde, concerne me.

Sir, my God is wittnesse (which is a greate expression, & to be vttered aduisedly) that I doe vnfeinedly wish your welfare & prosperity, both spirituall & temporall; & that this my aduertisement, proceedes from no other grounde. And if you knewe how many my buisinesses are, & exercise about my owne hart, you woulde beleeue that I needed not make my selfe any newe worke, which I did not thinke God doth putt on me. But I will not now be further troublesome to you. My seruice & loue to your selfe & worthy yokefellowe, so I committ you to God.

Yours in Him to command Ez. Rogers.

Rowley, 23 of the 6, 1640.

Memorandum by Gov. Winthrop, "My answer in the other side."

I thanked him for his faithfullnesse. That I remembred not Mr. Hawth: matter, that I was sure I vsed no suche expression, it being against my judgment & practice. I confessed that for a man to oppose the judgment of some Elders to the judgment of the Court openly in Civill matter (which might be the case) was worthy reproofe, & I think likely I might saye something to that purpose. I desire him to produce my accusers, that I might be cleared or justly condemned. That if I heard not from him I would cleere my selfe publickly.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Rogers about Mr. Hawthorne," and in another place, "Mr. Ez: Rogers."

EZEKIEL ROGERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull his worthy freinde, John Winthorpe Esqr, at Boston, these present.

Worthy Sir, — I blesse God for your Christian acceptance of my simple expression: He haue all the glory therof, & ourselues incouragement to deale vprightly in

any the like cases, yea in all. Your iudgment concerning consultation with the Elders in waighty cases, is sounde & according to the worde; and though you shoulde gett little else but prayer, it woulde be no losse. Godly wisdome shoulde teach vs, both not to intermeddle where we haue no call, & to knowe what respect belongs to Christian Magistrates. If they & we shalbe taught of God to ioine together in all things, with loue & consent, it wilbe no small pledge of Gods being among vs. I tremble to adde the contrary; *quod Deus noster auertat.* Touching the buisinesse of the bounds, which we haue now in agitation; I haue thought, that a good fence helpeth to keepe peace betweene neighbours; but let vs take heede that we make not a high stone wall, to keepe vs from meeting.

Wheras you speake of clearing your selfe in publique, I shoulde desire (if you please) to speake with you first, which I hope to doe before the Generall Court. So with my respects & loue, I committ you to God, & shalbe glad if in any thing you will vse or commande

Your poore freinde, Ez. Rogers.

Rowly, last of 6, 1640.

EZEKIEL ROGERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

. . . his much . . . freinde John . . . Esqr. these present.

Worshipfull & Worthy Sir, — Vpon my motion, at the last Generall Court, for an Exposition of our Grant (occasioned by the questioning of some), Mr. Broadstreete desiring some of the land granted to vs on the one side, & Mr. Woodbridge on the other, opposition was made, contrary to my exspectation, & noise raised to my greife; though the lesse because we were but the occasion, & others the cause; yet to preuent euen that also, if it be possible, I am bolde to make this addresse to your selfe;

rather then to come personally to the Court, except I shall heare it to be necessary.

You best knowe how oft we expressed ourselues & how plainly, concerning our desired bounds, as Ipsw. Riuer, & Merimack; without which we woulde vpon no termes accept of a Plantation here. Ipswich men desiring our neighbourhood, coulde shewe vs little desireable here (except we purchased it at a deare rate), but the name of Merimack & some considerable places there, as a neck of land, & the like. This first to your selfe, & after to others, being expressed, you were all forwarde to testify your loues (as before, so) therupon, & we left the procuring of the Grant to yourselfe, who doubted not, but more rather then lesse, (if it were desired) woulde be yeelded to. Wherupon I wrote many letters to my freinds in England, wherin I tolde them precisely of our bounds; & the sound of Merimack we made not a little vse of. Herupon we proceeded simply to our worke, & made a too costly purchase; digested (though hardly) our too much straitning towards Ipswich, &c. Now therfore to heare that questioned, which was especially looked at in our Grant, I say after all these our costly proceedings, your wisdome will thinke, how welcome it is to vs. Besides, my owne credite, which hitherto God in mercy hath maintained, must be now of no value among my freinds. Two things especially seeme to b[e] objected to vs. First, the largenes of our Plantation, if we haue our desire. To this I say, First, suppose it so, yet no lesse was accepted of vs. Secondly, I say, so farre as I can discouer, no plantation hath had lesse granted of the Court, though we haue our desire. For our largenes comes from our owne purses, or the gift of those that desired our neighborhood, & would incourage vs in the purchase. Neither doe we purpose to keepe this lande vnimployed so long by halfe, as others haue done, if God prosper vs.

We are loth to say all we might, except we be vrged.

The second thing objected is the words of the Grant, as it is recorded, that mention (they say) only eight miles euery way. I answère that I suppose that might (if it be so) arise from hence, that many in the Court did not doubt, but that eight miles did afford vs our desired bounds; but this we say, that if we could not haue them vnder eighteene miles, we were to haue so much as did reach them; and it seemes the Register only looked at the text, not comment. And it wilbe prooued by go[od] wittnesse, if neede be; that Newbery men, desiring two miles more by Merimack, your selfe instantly replyed (which I heard *hisce auribus*) that that could not be, because it was granted already to vs. So that the notion of eight miles was not the main matter, but Merimacke.

Sir, I am hartely sory thus farre to trouble you, but your wisdome will see a necessity, & therfore pardon. I humbly beseech you to acquaint our worthy Gouerno[r *] herwith, & so many of the Court as you see fitt, or the whole. I am sory also to thinke how harsh such things are like to be in England & Quillipiake, as they are like to be carryed thither quickly, if they be noised in open Court, so that it were well, if that were preuented. It hath bene a trouble of late to my poore neighbours (though a quiet people) to heare of this, after their purchase & building, & returne from Quillipyake; especially, since they heard that Mr. Broadstreete, plainly in open Court, saide he exspected land there, & therupon opposed vs; as I haue signifyed to himselfe, & doe thus write, because he still saide he intended t[o] doe so. Though happily, if your selfe doe satisfy him, he will forbeare. But I forgett your trouble; therfore againe crauing pardon, & with my seruice, I rest Yours to commande,

Ez: Rogers.

Rowley, 5. of 8. 1640.

---

* Dudley. — Eds.

LETTERS OF JOHN TINKER.*

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshippffull and his much honerd Mr: Jno. Winthropp: Esqr: Governour, dd.

Right Worshippffull, — After my humble duty and servis to your sellfe and my mistress presented, I think it a part of my ingagement to your worshipp to aquainte you with the dispensation of the Lord, and his good providence in our voyage, and our safe ariuall. We hadd, for the most part, blessed be God, faire and comfortable winds and wether, only aboute some 400 leagues from the land's end of N. Engl.; we had such a strong N: W: winde we could not beare saille for 4 or 5 dayes together; and when we came to the Land's End of England, the Lord did in mercy very remarkably deliver vs from shipp rack, which we hould euer worthy our remembrance, & doe accknowledg our sellfes, with all his people, bound to blesse his name ffor the same, which happened thus: after we sounded, and had found such depth and ground wherby

* John Tinker, as appears by the following letters, was at one time in the service of Gov. Winthrop of Massachusetts, perhaps as his agent for the transaction of business in England. He was subsequently, in 1643, at Windsor, but afterwards removed to Boston. He was one of the principal settlers at Lancaster, where he was town-clerk and selectman in 1655. He finally removed to New London, where we find him, in 1659, writing letters to Gov. Winthrop at Hartford. He became a prominent public man in Connecticut Colony; and when he died, in March, 1664, the General Court directed that the charges of his sickness and funeral be paid from the public treasury. See an interesting paper relating to him in Proceedings of Mass. Hist. Soc. for 1863-4. See also Miss Caulkins's New London, *passim;* and Savage's Geneal. Dict., iv. 306. — Eds.

our master and all his company did conclud they weare the soundings of Vshan on the Ffrench side, the next day came vpp with vs a shipp of Dartmoth, ffrom Rochell, bound home, whoe joyntly concluded the same, and so-possed we weare some 30 leages of from Dartmoth, to the W. S. W. He being soe neere his owne coast, we concluded to ffollow his light, soposseing by morning to make the Start, which is a poynt of land twixt Plimoth and Dartmoth. The wind being ffaire and ffresh at S. S. W. & our corsse N. b. E.; aboute midnight we heard the other s[h]ipp make a great shoute, which some few of our company heard, and sudenly looking aboute, espyed closse vnder our lee bowe the breach of a greate rock, which they sopossed to haue beene the Edy stone, which lyeth 2 or 3 leauges of from the harbors mouth of Plimmoth, which afterward appeered to be a great rock called the Woolfe or Gulfe, betweene Silly and the Lands End, some 3 or 4 leauges south, and had it not beene that per the speciall prouidence of God, he, then at the helme hadd made a great yawe toward the wether at vnawares, we hadd vna-voydably beene cast away, but the Lord, whoe neuer slumbreth, did gracyously watch ouer and deliver vs. Oh that we might therfore praise him for his goodnesse, and walke answerable to his mercys soe largely extended to-ward vs: 2 days after, the wind scanting vppon vs, we put into Plimoth, being Saterdy the 9th of November, 5 weekes & a day ffrom our waying anchor att Nantasket. The cheefe news we heare is of the peace made with Scotland, and a great ouerthrow the Hollander hath giuen to a fleete of the Spainyerds of 70 great shipps,* waiteing vppon the coast of England, to aide the plate ffleete, the sircomstance of which I supose your worshipp wilbe better

* For a full account of this "famous sea-fight," which took place in the autumn of 1639, see Heath's "Chronicle" (second edition), p. 11; and "Pictorial History of England," iii. p. 208. — Eds.

informed of per some oportunity, per which I hope to send this my leter, viz: per a shipp of Bastable. I shall not truble your worshipp ffarther, but humbly craueing your ffauour, leaue you to the euerlasting protecion of the Allmighty, & euer rest

Your worshipps humble servant to my poore power,

JOHN TINKER.

PLIMOTH: 12th: 9th: m.*

I humbly intreat your worshipps ffauour thesse inclosseds may be convayed per the next oportunyty.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Jo: Tinker."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshippffull and his much honored Mr. Jon Winthropp, Esqr: Governour of the Matachuses theise dd in Boston, N: Engl:

LOND: ffebr: 26th: 1639.

RIGHT WORSHIPPFULL, — Haueing an oportunyty wherein to aquainte you with the Lords goodnesse in our wellfare, I thought it not good to neglect it, though I haue nothing to present to your worshipp ffor present but theise ffew lines, haueing effected nothing as yett, eyther for the receiueing of monys, or paying Mr. Rowe, or buying of any comodytyes; it beeing a very dead and hard time for monyes generally, and like to bee a yeare in which (so farr as I can see, for the preasent,) there are like to come but a small quantyty of passengers ouer, in comparison of what hath beene formerly, and the reasone I conceiue to be the hopes of some reformation in England, by the intended parlament, the which cann hardly bee expected per

* 1639. — EDS.

judicious and wise men (by reason of that great stroak the Prealacy haue in poynting out the country's choyce of Parlament men :) but rather see troublesome times aproaching, both within and without the kingdome. The Lord teach vs to make a saintyfyed vse of his vissitacions, and to learne righteoussnesse by all his judgments abroad in the world. There ware Comissioners sent from the Scotts, which after some longe continuance, the King vouchsafed them audience, this last Fryday, being the 21th of Febr: and after some discontented speeches, at last obteined ffauour to kisse the Kings hand, which was a hopefull signe of reconsillment, but they resolue they will neuer haue more Bishopps; but I shall not truble your worshipp farther with any discourse of news, there being so litle certeinty in any thing we heare. I haue carefully delivered all your worshipps letters. I was at Mr. Tindalls about the 11th & 12th of Jenuary, at Maplested, and they ware all very well, blessed be God, and doe desire to be remembred to your worshipp; and to my mistris, with thankes for the Indian baskett she sent to Mr. Tindall. Hee hath not as yet sould your worshipps land, but doth indeauour to put it to sale, which, if it be sould, I doe intend, according to your worshipps apoyntment, to request 100*li.* or 2 to convert to your vse. I haue bene diuers times with Mr. White the layer, and he doth not as yett giue me an answer concerning the letter your worshipp sent to him. The otter you sent per Mr. Cutting was lost ouerbord, which Mr. Paine doth much bewaile, haueing intended it a present to the King. If your worshipp could by any meanes purchasse the like againe in the cuntrey, it would be worth the adventureing once more, if possible it might be preserved to that purpasse. Mr. Harrisson doth remember his servis to your worshipp: he hath so farr obteined fauour at his ffathers hand as to haue his vsuall pention of 50*li.* a yeare, and his chamber in the Temple: I heare Goodman Luxford hath charged

bills of exchange vppon men in London for some hundred pounds, of which some is for the vse of Mr. Vallentine Hill, for so much received of him there, and was to be paid to Mr. Huchinson, linen draper in Cheapeside ; now the partyes seeing so litle reason why he should charge any thing one them, haue protested his bills, and doe think it to be litle better then a cheate. His brother allso, by vertue of a letter from him, did desire to take vpp some mony for him to pay in N. Engl: against which I advised some partyes he spake to, soposeing if it hadd bin your worshipps minde, you would at the lest haue giuen your hand testymoniall, to a matter of so great consiquence, but I shall craue your worshipps pardone, if I haue [done] amisse in it. I shall, by God's leaue, come to the Bay a part vndertaker with Mr. Paine in the Susan and Ellin. We shall intreate the churches prayers for our safe and speedy conduct; and so with my humble servis to your worshipp and to my mistris, I mekely leaue you to the Allmightys protecion, & rest

Your faithfull seruant to my poor abillity,

John Tinker.

I would intreate your worshipps fauour that this letter to my mother may be conveyed by the first oportunyty, for it is mater of consequence, and I shall rest bound to your worshipp.

We intend to set out aboute the 20th of Aprill.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Jo: Tinker, Recd per Mr. Geofe, (4) 6—40."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshippffull and his much honnered Mr: Jno: Winthropp Esqr:, Governour of the Matachuses, these dd: at Boston in N: Engl:

Lond: Aprell 13th, 1640.

Right Worshippffull, — Though my occations are not many to wright vnto you, I thinke it my bounden duty to neglect no oportunyty to present my servis. I did thinke I should haue presented my persone beffore theise lines before your worshipp, but such sadd & dangerous times as nowe are in England will occation our demourage beyound our time appoynted. I writ your worshipp word per Mr. Gooffe that I had joyned with Mr. Paine, a part vndertaker in the Susan & Ellin, & our intentions ware to haue set forth the 25th of Aprell, but I ffeare it wilbe mid May beffore wee shall gett of, passengers & ffrait coming in very slowly, partly staying to see what the ishue of the Parlament wilbe, & partly becaues of the dead marketts men haue for the puting of of theire estates: all which expence of time & monyes I feare wilbe to me a great losse, rather then a gaine, yett I desire to submit my selfe to the good prouidence of the Lord, to deale with me as it pleaseth Him, & to rest satisfyed if hee shall only carray mee through all thesse cares & paines, & set me downe in the place & condicion whence He tooke me vpp, presumeing if I should faile of prosperity in this pressent way for my advansment I shall finde exeptance with your worshipp as formerly: I haue effected nothing as yet for you, eyther for the paying of Mr. Rowe, or the buying of comodytys according to your appointment, there is soe litle mony stiring to be exc[h]anged for the Plantacion, & soe many hands to catch for it, that there is noe hopes of obteineing any in that way, nor of Mr. White the layer in Whitefryers, it being dispossed of some other way: only I

heare that Mr. Tindall is vppon salle of your worshipps land, by whome my last hoppes is to be furnished with what is requisite. I doe heare a dayly complainte of Goodman Luxford, vppon the Exchange, for charging bills vppon men for the payment of great somes of mony heare, for soe much taken vpp there of some new comers ouer, for your worshipps vsse, which doth apere to men of vnderstanding to haue an ill face of deceipt, the men to [w]home he sends being such as he neuer had deallings with for a peny, nor doe se any reason why he should charge any such bills vppon them, eyther in your worshipps or his owne name. I speak not any thing out of preiudice to the man, but to informe your worshipp of what is related to me, being tender of your detryment, per any such vnfaithfullnesse of which you may be ignorant: & that it may appeere it is noe groundlesse asspercion, I shall indeauour, eyther in this leter, or at my coming, to shew your worship the coppys of his bills, vnder their hands to whome they ware sent, but I only whisper this to your worshipp, intreating (if he proue himselfe an onest man) it may not come to his heareing as from me, least he be insenced against me, if otherwise, it is a timely warning to your worshipps, preuenting what euells may ensue. I omit to wright of any nuse, soposseing your worshipp will haue it plentyfully by word of mouth, Mr. Kerby haueing a sonn in this shipp, the William & George, with Mr. Babb: only this, this preasant day, the 13th of Aprell, is the first day of the Parlament,* & I heare the first request the King doth make, in his speech to show the ocation of meeting, is to require ayde against the Scotch faction, pretending to make it apeer they intend rebellyon against the King: the which with many other passeges both seene & heard of, doth make vs feare sadd times. The Lord fitt

* This was the day of the convening of the "Short Parliament," which was dissolved the 5th of the following month. On the 3d of the next November commenced the sitting of the celebrated "Long Parliament." — Eds.

vs to suffer, & stirr vpp the harts of you, in generall & partickuler, to importune him at the throwne of his grace, for a preuencion from, or deliuerance out of, those judgments we dayly expect: & soe for the presentt I leaue your worshipp to the Lord and the power of his grace, who is able to saue our soules to the day of his coming, and with my humble seruis to you & to my mistress, desire euer to rest,

Your Worshipps ffaithfull servant to my poore power

JOHN TINKER.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Jo: Tinker."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshippffull and his much honnered Mr. Jno. Winthropp Esqr. Governour of the Matachuses, thesse dd at Boston in New England.

RIGHT WORSHIPPFFULL, — To whome I must euer acknowledg my selfe deeply ingaged, ffor your greate kindnesse and respect vouchsaffed me, and for home I shall reioyce to doe any servis, acording to my poore power; and it is my greife I canot doe that servis which suts my desires, and your worshipps occations. I am very sory to heare of that great vnfaithfullnesse of Goodman Luxford,* whome I doe confesse I did feare for a great while agoe, though I did not declare my thoughtes, or was I inquisatiue to finde the truth, least I should be judged an intruder into other mens ocasions: but the Lord knows my hart, had I forsene the extent of such a disaster beffalling your worshipp; I should neuer haue departed ffrom you: neither doe I yett thinke any strenth or abillity the Lord hath

* James Luxford, Winthrop's steward, of whom frequent mention is made in the volume immediately preceding this. — EDS.

afforded mee, to much to doe your worshipp servis. I haue received your letters with your orders for the payment of 800*li.* to seuerall men, which I was to take vpp of Mr. Tindall, if the land weare sould; or if not to borowe of such gent: as ware your ffrends, as Mr. Gurdon, Dockter Wright, &c. I was with Mr. Tindall, and the land is sould: yett he, standing ingaged as a ffefee in trust, for the stateing of my mistresse & the chilldren in the meanes at the time appoynted, will not disburce any more then may stand with his security, vntill he haue a releace from my mistress and the chilldren: Mr. Stephen being at age, he hath sent a release for him to signe to; and vppon the returning of it will part with more. He hath now paide Mr. Cradock & Mr. Jno. Dodd 50*li.* per peece, and will pay to Mr. Cradock 80*li.* more, and to Mr. Meclethweit per my strong perswation 50*li.* more: for I doe perceiue it should haue beene paide in aboute Michaltide last, & the forbearance of it is a great rong to him. I haue allso spake often with Mr. Gurdon and Docter Wright about the borowing of monyes, and because your worshipp did not request them to it possatiuely, they doe require some securyty, and are willing to lend 100*li.* apece, as allsoe Sir Nathaniell Bramstone,* which is 300*li.* I writ to Mr. Tindall to know his minde aboute it, and he was vnwilling to doe thatt of all other things: Dockter Wright allsoe propounded to me this, that I should goe to those gentlemen seuerally, to home these somes of monys are to be paid, and bring them to some composition; but I finde the debts are not directly ffrom your selfe to them, soe they seeke not imediatly to you, but to those whoe are indebted to them, and therfore it is not proper to propound it to them: and since this time I haue not binn with them: only Mr. Gurden hath sent your worshipp 10*li.* for a token, the which I receiued, as allsoe

* Barnardiston. — Eds.

50*li.* of Mr. Tindall for your vse, and ffor want of time to disburce it for your proper vse, I would intreat your worshipp to take what goods of mine you please, to that quantyty of 60*li.*, and pay only what consideracion vppon them you please, for the ffraite, customs, & all other charges vppon them. It hath pleased God to disapoint me in the throw effecting of my businesse, so that I could not come with Mr. Clay in the Susan and Hellin, of which I haue a part in vndertakeing for the setting of her forth; yet I haue sent in her diuers servants, and goods to the value of 560*li.* I would intreat your worshipp to doe me all the ffauour you cann, in the assisting of my servants and ffrends in the manageing of my affayres, by your councell and advice: my businesse I haue declared at large, and directed to your worshipp in a booke, to the end you might see what it is; howsoeuer it should please God to deale with mee befor I come to you, or thay whome I betrust in the manageing of my businesse should cary themselues; it being a matter of great consequence, my credit being great, and my estate but smalle: I would intreat your worshipp, soe sone as my servants and other passengers that I am allied vnto are landed, to lett one of your servands prouide some lodging for them, at some of the neighbours houses, and I shall giue good satisfaccion vntill such time as they shalbe dispossed of, according to my direccion in my boke. If any of my agents in my busines should stand in neede of any mony, for a small quantyty, just at their ariuall, as I sopose they will: I would intreat your worshipp to lend them some, to the vallue of 5 or 6*li.*, and they shall pay it againe. I am very sory I haue ffailed of sending such tokens as I had prepared for your worshipp and my mistress, & some other, but I hope the Lord will bring me safe to the place of my desires againe. I haue sent all my leters by a yong marchant, whose ffather, viz: Mr. Duchfeild, is parte honer of the Susan and Hellin. I would intreat your worshipp

to shew him respect, partly in regard of his ffather, & partly in respect of his courtyous cariage toward me. I shall not ffaile, Good willing, to doe what I can in your worshipps busines, to know fully what wilbe done in it before I come. It is a very greate greiuanc and generall complainte among all the merchants and dealers to New England, that they can haue noe returnes, and theire bills are very naught, insomuch that if there be not some course taken for beter payments of our creditors, our tradeing will vtterly cease. Thesse bills ffrom James Luxford and Mr. Nathaniell Eaton,* charged ffalcely one men heare, haue done a great deale of hurt, & ocationed a great deale of slacknesse of men about London, for sending of goods this yeare. I pray God saintyfy his dealing toward vs, and fitt vs for any condicion. I haue soe intangled my selfe in businesse, depending vppon some whoe disapoynted me, that I canot come away till the next shipps, but the times are desperatly dangerous in all respects. I shall but truble your worshipp to relate any news. I rather reffer you to discorce with Mr. Duchfeild, whoe I supposse wilbe a good intelligencer, and therfore I craue your worshipps pardon for my bouldnesse, and with my humble servis to you and to my mistress, I leaue you to the Lord and to the power of his grace, for a returne of all your kindnesse in your bossome many fould, and rest

Your worshipps euer obleiged
in any servis to my poore power:

JOHN TINKER.

FFROM THE DOWNES, the 28th of May, 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Jo : Tinker."

---

* See 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. 135. — EDS.

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshippffull and his much honnered Mr. Jno. Winthropp, Esqr : thesse present, in Boston.

Right Worshippffull, — I am deeply ingaged ffor your great kindnesse, the Lord only can reward it, and I only return thankes : I was sory I tooke not my leaue of your Worshipp at my coming away, haueing thoughts since you might possibly haue hadd some more servis to haue comanded me, but I intreat your worshipps pardon. We are through vnseasonable weather, per God's prouidence, put into Sallem, there waiting a ffitt season, which we hope will ffale this night. We humbly intreat your worshipps prayers ffor our saffe conduct; we canott but take notis of the Lords preuenting our being at sea this last extremity of wether. We are affraid Mr. Lamberton's jurney * by land will proue ill. All our ffrends at Sallem, thanks be to the Lord, are well, & desire to be remembered to your worshipp; & thus with my humble servis to you and to my mistress presented, I shall euer rest

Your worshipp obleidged, to comand
in any servis to my poore power,

John Tinker.

Sallem: 10th M: 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Jo: Tinker, at his depture to Conetecutt."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshippfull Jno. Winthropp, Esqr., Governour, these present at Harford.

Honored Sir, — May it please you to vnderstand that through the mercy of God I am ariued with my ffamily at N. London, where methinks your worshipps absence makes

* Probably Capt. George Lamberton of New Haven. — Eds.

me as a stranger in a strange place, yet by your fauour possessed of your habitation for the preasent, which is such as with your worshipps advice may be comfortable for this winter, or till your selfe be pleased to reenter, and for which I giue humble thanks; but as it is very rawe & open, if your worshipp might haue occation to visset vs shortly, I should much reioyce, as much desirous of your worshipps councell concerning the dispose of my selfe and ffamily, and what way to pitch vppon, being yet vnresolued what course to take, and somwhat lought to set vppon husbandry at present. I haue an Irish man fitt for good service, which I would gladly improue in such way as may bring vs in some provissions for our family, vntill I am a litle resolued of my way. Allso my wiues brother and family is come with mee, desirous to seate himselfe as neere where I am as may bee. I haue some thoughts my servant and hee might joyne together this winter, and keepe your saw mill in working, if it may be on such termes as we may be incoridged and your worshipp and all others concerned therein be willing and consenting; as allso I stand in great need of a good milch cowe or 2, for the supply of my children & ffamily, (all my cows being gon dry this somer) which, if your worshipp please to pleasure me withall, I shall be very thankfull, and satisfie to the full of whatsoever rent others doe giue, for one yeare, till such time as my owne or such as I shall like to buy be for my suply otherwise. In way of answer to these, be pleased to vouchsafe a line by the first, or this bearer, and what service your worshipp shall please to command, I shalbe redy to atend, & with my duty presented continue to be for and to your worshipps imploy in faithfull maner euer to serve as

Yours, Jno. Tinker.

N: London: 29: 6 mo: 1659.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Honored Sir, — Yours received by Richard afords vs mater of thanks to God for your safe return home, & I shall indeauer, God willing, to further the business what I can, acording to advice. I haue prouided 4 men to fall and croscut loggs, who will begin the next weeke; & hope to procure the Leiftenants teame to draw them together, & when there is suficient water, to take our best season to sawe, so allso to see what may bee had from the Island, though I vnderstand by Lawkan, who is now come over, that there is few fat cattell. Some haue complained, as goodman Rogers; & him I lett haue a cowe from Nyantick; & a young bull they desired might be killed, as being very wilde & vseles, that I sold, & shall be countable where your worshipp pleaseth. Goodman Parker is ernest for some pay, if you please to signifie to whome, & what, & to how much, I may pay some few debts of nessessitie for the preasent, & so for suply to Lowhan, & the rest what needeth, I shall take notis; & request to heare from your worshipp by all oportunities. Codman & all is come safe, & we are, through Gods mercy, in health: & with our duty to you & Mrs. Winthropp & all of yours presented, I remaine, Your worshipps humbly to serve,

Jno. Tinker.

30th: 9 mo. 1659.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker, of Nov: 30."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull Jno. Winthopp Esqr. Governour, present in Harford.

Honered Sir, — Since I receiued your advice, I haue indeauored to further the work of the sawmill, but the season hath set so exeeding hard, nothing can as yett be done, only I haue agreed for the falling & prepareing 200 loggs, and, by advice of Goodman Elderkin & Goodman Rogers, haue partly ingaged John Lockwood to tend the saws, & hope to get all fitted to worke the begining of the next moneth, if it please the Lord to moderat the weather, which hath bin such for this moneth or 5 weekes that men canot work. Many bords & other worke is bespoke, by severall persons, and I haue sold & ingaged so much sawen timber as for the frame of a house 40 foot long & 20 foot wide, to Capt. Clark's man, for which I am to haue 20*li.* I perceiue there is no great feare of vending what we can doe with that mill, if some stock do ly in bank, sufficient to cary it on in some substantiall way. I haue 150*li.* stock in my hands, which I could willingly your worshipp might haue the comand of, in such goods as will answer the end, if either your worshipp can perswade Mr. Palmes to accept of soe much slitt work for frames for ware houses, to send to Barbadoes in the frigott, in which I heare he sendeth or goeth thither, which may turne to as good account to him as other goods, & may be beneficiall to your worshipp, & ease mee of my other ingagement to him; for goods I had of him to the vallue of 60*li.*: for which I am to pay 80 bushells of wheat, 60 of peas, 4 barells of pork, 10 of beefe, 10 of tarr, 4 firkins of buter; or, if your worshipp can procure the wheat, peas, tarr, & pork, & some beefe or all, at Conecticot, I should not need to procure them with these goods, but improue them to cary the work an end; which I intreat your worshipps answer what your thoughts

are about it, & I shall accordingly resolue & act. Diuers persons that haue wrote for your worshipp are very desirous of pay, as Jno. Packer & Peeter Brawly, who make their account to rest due for carying catell from the Island to the maine, 8*li*., od money, besides some 7 gotes they had: Josiah Rockwell, Isack Willy, Thomas Croker, John Lockwood, Thomas Bayly, & some others whose accounts I haue taken, & disburced somwhat for theire satisfaction, with this proviso, that your worshipp doe allowe of those accounts when you come.

Jno. Packer & Peeter Brawly & others haue much desired beefe, pork, & such like provissions; I haue sent to the Island, but there was only found 10 sheepe-wethers fitt to kill, which my man went ouer & helped to kill them, & because I conceiued they would turn to litle account to barrell, I sould to the neighbors for other pay, excepting the skins & woole which ar kept.

There is much feare of the cattell on the Island, by reason of this hard wether, & deepe & longe continued snowes there. Some 2 calues, 2 sheepe, & some few ram gotes are dead allredy, yet Lawhan (who is now come ouer) saith they take the best care they can of them. I am forced to supply the nessessitie of the servants with clothing, & posibly some beding, they being very bare of both. Edmund & my man brought ouer 3 swine, which we gaue some corne to, & killed, &c. They fill almost 2 barells; which, because they came to late for Mr. Hambleden, I got 2 barills of beefe of Goodman Rogers, & am to pay him againe, with pork & corne. One cowe at Nihantick, in good case, Goodman Rogers desired on account of pay he made for the saw mill, I prized to him at 5*li*: 10*s*: 0*d*: & lett him haue her. A young vnruly bull Goodman Chappell desired might by all means be killed or taken away, wherfore I sold him for 3*li*: 10*s*: 0*d*, & shalbe countable to your worshipp for it. A mad cowe at Paquanet, which had almost spoyled the neger, & made him ferfull to tend

the rest of the cattell, I got her shot downe in the feild, & brought from thence home. Her flesh filleth a barell, & some to spare, & her hide is caried to the tanners; of all which I shallbe accountable to your worshipp. Thomas Bayly haueing a small cowe which he saith your worshipp promised him, he being very desireous of, I sold him for 4*li*: 15*s*: 0*d*:, all or most of which he saith your worshipp doth owe him for worke. I know not nor can certainly learn what cattell your worshipp hath in other mens hands, to take account of them, only I finde one cowe Daniell Lane had, & one John Stoder, which were turnd away at Michlmus, & the neger not haueing got them ouer the Riuer in time, they grew poore, so that I was constrained to agree with Goodman Willy & Hungerford to winter, as allso some at Mohegon, which once the neger & my youth went to fetch, & came without them; & now I am faine to hire a man to goe for them againe, lest all, or some of them, be lost, the winter being so very hard, as it is. I request to heare from your worshipp by all oppertunities, & especiall about the finishing of your house, which if you please to imploy Mr. Cowdall for the masons worke, he desires to know sudenly, because otherwise he hath ingaged himselfe to Capt. Siluester, & if once I receiue your worshipps advice about it, I will doe my best indeauour to expedit the compleating it the same: we may inioy your presence, which is much desired. I intend, God willing, to come to Harford in March, if not before. Before the close hereof came Edw: Messenger, by whome I received your worshipps, which only doth confirm me in my way of paying debts, clothing the servants, keeping the worke going what I can, but, Sir, you must spare som stok, or it canot come to perfection to turne to account, and for the Island I perceiue Lawhan is resolued to goe with Edmund in the spring, in March. If your worshipp can treat with Mr. Trott, Mr. Thomson thinks he may yet haue it, if so, that you can haue his former proffer, surely it will proue the

best, if it be as he saith. The cattell are now come from Mohegan, mean in state, & shalbe forced to send all, which is 6, to Niantick, besides the two before, & keepe the 2 oxen heere if posible. Not elce to troble your worshipp at preasent, with humble servis presented to yourself & Mrs Winthropp & all yours, I gladly remaine, in truth

Your worshipps, humbly to serve,

JNO. TINKER.

N. LOND: 12th: 11 mo: 1659.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull Jno. Winthropp Esqr. Governour, at his house present in Harford.

N: LOND: 13: 12o: 59.

HONORED SIR, — We are not a litle saded at the news of the loss of the Deputy Governour,* feareing least his loss may allso occation or nessessitate your worshipps abode where you are; & for my owne perticuler, I am extreamly vncouth, being frustrat of my expectations in diuers respects, especially of the presents of your worshipp here, which was the greatest motiue to my coming, as allso some incoridgment in respect of such meet accommodacion as I should take likeing of, which was by the towne left to your worshipp & Mr. Bruister to propound; & Mr. Bruister & the townesmen made tender, & the towne confirmed what seemed something, but being surveyed, proveth of no worth or vallue; but with that I shall not truble your worshipp further then this, that if you come not shortly your selfe, you will please only to moue the towne againe by a word or two, to vouchsafe what incor-

* Thomas Welles, who died at Wethersfield, Jan. 14, 1659–60. — EDS.

idgment they can, for I am very much vnresolued where & howe to setle, wanting your worshipps advice; and should be more vnsetled, were it not that my sperit & afection is ingaged to your worshipp, & your occation, from whome & which I shall never depart, if the nessessity of my great & chargeable family compell mee not. Sir, we canot get the saw mill to goe yet, haueing none to frend but goodman Elderkin, to set her first in her trim, & he doth seeme to will it, but the wether yet prevents, the ground being so hard frosen that we canot clere the ground & wheele, &c; elce shee had gone this weeke; but the next wee hope will fauour vs to efect. We haue falne a prety deale of timber, & drawne some by Goodman Rogers his teeme, but vnless your worshipp haue a good teeme of your owne, & a man to goe with them, I shalbe much distracted for helpe, & litle wilbe done, at such a distance as I am at, & that litle at a great charge, & very vncerteine; & when our busines is most in hast we shalbe most to seeke. This I finde in the very begining; wherfore, if your worshipp think well of it, I haue adventured to hire the breaking of some of your horses, which runn & do nothing, & will do better for the business then other cattell, if they be fitted with geeres according; which I sopose there are inough belonging to your worshipp, if I knew where they weare. I heare Jno. Galope hath taken some, & some others (viz.) collers are in the house, if we could haue traces. I would not troble your worshipp with these things, but that it is of nessessitie to be done, in carying an end of this business, which, I doubt, will not goe on, but by my owne constant driueing, for that I see euery one so ingaged, & full of business, & sloe in moueing. Jno. Lockwood I finde a weake & vncertain fellow, & canot trust to him; & for the yoke of oxen had of Mr. Trott, they wholy faile, one of them haueing an old desease vnder his jaw bone that forced me to sell him to loss, or he had died by this, not being able to feed; we saw it not

at first, but when we did see it & vsed means & could do no good, Mr. Tomson & George Geare tould vs they knew of it before; which if so your worshipp must haue allowance for it, or you haue ronge. I sold it to Geo: Chappell for 5*li.*, to receiue the hide in part, & the rest in corne next haruest. I shall speake to Lawhan, to what your worshipp desires, when he comes over. Edmund is now heare. Things are pretie well there, & with Gaboneda, and at Niantick. The next weeke the end of the house wilbe made vpp, I doubt not, & I hope all the rest, when it is fitt to work vppon, only I do not fully know the persons ingaged nor covenant, but could wish to haue your worshipps presence, or full advice, or leaue it to best discression where it canot be resolued. Mr. Cowdell, & Goodman Elderkin & others seeme forward to helpe, but things & persons moue sloly. I could wish your worshipp had some ground fenced & broke at the saw mill, & a house, &c., that men might be incoridged to go there to work, & corne may be got, &c, elce persons are sloe to be hired to the servis. I think to do somwhat that way, if your worshipp giue leaue, allso that some more ground be broke at Paquanok neck for the Indians, who want ground, & desire it, if you think fitt. Not elce to troble your worshipp at present, saue that I shall humbly request your fauour when fitt time is, to procure me a farme of the Court,* in answer to my last petition, when the Court siteth againe, & with humble servis presented, I comit you & yours to the Lord, & euer remaine

Your worshipps humble servant

JNO. TINKER.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker."

* See Public Records of Conn., i. 359, 366. — EDS.

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthropp Esqr Governour: present at Harford.

Honoured Sir,—I received your last, which doth incordg somewhat further: yet feare the sawmill designe, till I se more appearance. I hope to see her goe in 2 or 3 daies; but my man is falne ill, John Lockwood is falne of, help is hard to get, the mill so remote, &c: will make all goe dull, but I intend to doe my vtmost indeauor by degrees. Much is bespoke & expected from her, if it can be done; but now my wifes lying in will hinder somwhat my close atendants of it. I request so much fauour of our mistres, by the very next Indian or English messenger, to procure & send my wife, if it be but ½ a peck or 2 quarts of otmeale, if it canbe had by any means, for she vseth alwaies to haue some, & canot eat any thing elce in her ilnes, & now hath none; & I feare she will need it before Edward Messenger comes, or others come from the Courte. These only at the instant, vntill Mr. Tompson comes, by whome I shall present further servis; in mean, with duty by these to your worshipp, Mrs Winthropp, & all yours, I euer am

Your Worshipps humble servant

Jno. Tinker.

I can do nothing with Mr. Palmes to perswade him to vary his termes; vnless your worshipp can moue him, I doubt I shall be greatly aflicted about that ingagement.

Sir, my man's illness is by reason of a litle stike run into his head through the hole of his eare; & is in great paine with it, & we knowe not what to do to it; I intreat your worshipps advice.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthropp Esqr: present att Harford.

Honored Sir, — These only presenting my humble servis, in breife serve to informe your worshipp that now the mill doth work, & hope will, if want of help prevent or hinder not. I have hired the falling of one 100 loggs more, but am trobled now I come to knowe your worshipp hath so litle land about the mill, & that the rest is delt to others, so that we are at a loss where to falle, for feare of blame, & request your advice thereabout. I haue made a full bargaine now with Jno. Lockwood, to abide on the mill & such work as relates to it, for one yeare next after the next weeke; I think on honest termes. Edmund is going of the Island, & Lawhan like to liue alone, vnles your worshipp send suply, or that I send my man, which I feare I can not by any meanes miss at home, my nessessitie is such; yet think rather then your worshipp shall to much sofer, to send him, if he be well & willing, though I hire help in his roome, which allso wilbe hard, now spring comes on. My wife giueth Mrs. Winthropp many thankes for her oatmeale, which is very welcome, her hower being in dayly expectation. I longe to see your worshipp heare, that I may haue a full inquiry and discourse & discovery of what is needfull; for what I haue formerly wrot, I shall not repeating troble your worshipp, but refer you thereto, & with humble service presented to yourselfe & Mrs. Winthropp, remaine,

Your worshipps humble servant

Jno. Tinker.

N. Lond: 12: 1 mo. $16\frac{59}{60}$.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, Jr., "Mr. Tinker."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthrop, Esqr: Governour, present at Hartford.

NEW LOND: 4th: 2 mo: 1660.

HONORED SIR, — Before yours received, after the message by Mr. Jetts, I am confirmed againe of Jno. Lockwoods atendants at the mill, who is now gon with a purpass there to abide, which if hee doe, I hope things will goe on. For the Island, I am forced to send my man, no other being willing to goe, as I can heare of for the present, but I am forced to hire men at home to worke in his roome, beeing behinde much in my small occations, for that I am forced to vrge & followe that litle is done about your worshipps occations, or otherwise all would faile. To the Island I sent Richard Waring to bring back the bote, after he had set Edmund, his wife & children, a shore at Mistick, which he desired, & I was lought to denie him, because he hath bin so long your worshipps servant, & I could not goe my selfe, because it was just vppon the time of my wifes trauill. What he hath caried away I know not, because I could neuer yet goe ouer to see what was there, but it seemes litle is left of beding or elce, and without some beding it will be hard for them that abide there. If your worshipp can tell or finde out what theire should be, & send word what your minde is they should haue, & what not, I will see after it; and now that my wife is deliuered I hope to be at more liberty, & intend to go ouer the next faire season. My wife, through Gods mercy, was delivered the last Lords day, erly in the morning, of a sonne. I haue not yet spoken with Mr. Morten, but I feare he will not be ataind. I haue spoken with Richard Waringe, who I sopose would be at the Island, but I feare his fittness in all respects, yet if nessessitie be, I must send

whome I can get, that the creatures suffer not, which now they doe much for want of hay, & some dy, & for want in that kinde many catell, sheepe, gotes & kids will die this spring, it hath bin and is so hard a season. I thank your worshipps care about my business with Mrs. Olcot. I could be glad of any way to satisfie Mr. Palmes. I heare the Generall Court is shortly. The death & departure of such helps as God hath taken away is much to be bewailed.* The Lord suply vs with meet helps: & be pleased, Sir, to minde the state of this poore towne, & the petition they haue presented, & allso that of mine for the land, according to what I haue wrote to your worshipp, & petitioned for, the last Generall Court. Mr. Richards & Maior Hathorn touching heare this last weeke, would gladly haue seene your worshipp. When I came from Boston, Mr. Richards and I made vpp the account with Joseph Wise, and in the account he brought in some things vnknowne to vs, and vntill your worshipp allowed of them, we could not. It seemes he witholds the money pay, vnles thes be allowed, & he haue vpp his bill; wherfore I haue sent you the account, that in case all his charge be accepted, you may please to send it me againe, or information of your minde to Mr. Richards. Mrs. Lane intreateth your worshipp to send her some advice & medicin for the cure of her joynts, which are soposed to be a winde gout, with which she is much pained at times. She desires to present her servis to you & Mrs. Winthropp. Mr. Richenson writeth of 4 cowes he should haue heare to send to his farme, for 4 he deliuers to Mr. Newman belowe. I intreat advice what cowes they should bee, & what to doe in it. The cowes in towne heere are poore, except those at Nyhantick: one Mr. Dugles had is dead,

* The writer probably refers to the death of Deputy-Gov. Welles, which had occurred in the month of January preceding; and to the removal of Rev. Mr. Blinman from New London, which took place at about this time. The year 1659 was one of unusual mortality in Connecticut and the other New-England Colonies. — Eds.

& where all the rest are, I doe not knowe. If your worshipp advise what to doe, I shall looke further to them, though somthing I haue done allredy. Not elce to troble you at present, with humble servis to yourselfe & Mrs. & all yours, I remaine,

Your worshipps humbly devoted

JNO: TINKER.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker about John Lockwood to saw mill, & Rich: Waring, & Edm: going of the Iland:"

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthropp, Esqr. Gouernour, these present at Harford.

HONOURED SIR, — With humble servis presented, &c, I am sory to acquaint your worshipp that after my indeauours to efect what I thought had bin sure, about the saw mill, all is made voyde, & worse, by the folly of that simple lad, Jno. Lockwood, whoe, through his want of skill and care, did vs soe much loss & spoyle as, all things considered, may be at least 5*li.* damage; neither dare I confide in him to carry an end the busines, nor doe I know what to doe; either your worshipp must speedily procure & send one downe that is able, or I must of nessesity let her stand, till one can be gotten to manage her. Goodman Elderkin is full of worke, yet withall hath a hankering minde to the mill, but seing none apeares to bring the purpos to pas efectually, presumeth he hath power to make his owne termes; and I could wish he had it on any good termes, & for considerable time. He profered the other day for one parcell of worke, to prepare the timber & bring it in place, & doe all at his owne charge, & the mill only to find it selfe, yet he to haue one halfe, and the mill the other. I agreed with him on those termes, but the mill

being so out of case, his chapman could not stay her mending. Pray, Sir, if it be possible, get one to take her, or a stable hand to manage her; for I can not get meet help in this place; or, if your worshipp will lett it to mee on such termes as may be incoridging, I will runn the venture of it, for proffit or loss; but to do for your worshipp what I can, & spend so much time, & bring no proffit to your worshipp, it greatly aflicts me to think of it; if therfore you pleas to propound a way, or vouchsafe mee leaue to propound, or excuse me for medling further, I shall rest contented in my minde; for people are apt to talk, & think it is my falt, & I can no wayes help it.

I heare nothing of that man from the Bay as yet. Goodman Ffish at Mistick, and allso Richard Wareing, these haue profered theire service for the Island, if your worshipp accept of them, or either of them, & can agree on termes. Sir, I can not spare my man without great rong to me. He is there nowe, but longer then the last of this moneth, I can by no meanes spare him. I shall indeauour about your worshipps house with what speed I can, but at present see all so busie, nothing can be acted till seeding be over, & grass to be had for catell. Not elce at present to troble your worshipp, but in hast compeld to close, desire be to

Your Worshipps ever devoted servant

JNO. TINKER.

N: LOND: 17: 2 mo: 60.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker, rec: Apr: 29:"

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthropp Esq. Gouornour, thes bee presented in Harford.

HONOURED SIR, — I received yours by Goodman Hubert, with the evedence of Isacks vsage of the horses, which, had I known it so evedently before, he had bin freed of

them ere now. He was only to breake them to hand for riding & drawing, & not to work them hard, or doe them any hurt, nor did I desire much his takeing vpp of more then one, when I heard he had not much haye; but when he took vpp the second, I allwayes counted he had so much discression & honesty, to provide well for what he tooke the care of, but I now see he is not so wise as he should bee, & I shall deale with him according, & secure the horses. For the hay bought of Isack, when I saw no way to remoue it, & that none would make vse of it there for your, but theire owne account, I knew it would be no benefit but a loss, so releassed it. I heard many of the mare & horses on this side, on the neck, weare poore, & the reason of it, because the sea side is fenced from them for the most part, & it hath bin a very hard winter; but any remedy I knew not, for one lode of hay could not be got for loue or money; & for horses, euery one saith that none was ever provided. Now I hope the worst is past. We latly heareing of one mare falne in a medow at the harbors mouth, went imediatly & saued her; & I heare of no more as yet are miscaried; yet know not what number of horses your worshipp hath, nor wheare; but this resolue, if you aproue therof, to send when grass is a litle vpp & the stress of seed time over, & bring in all your horses & mares, & brand them with this mark $\frac{I}{W}$ in the sholder or butuck, for all do conclude your worshipp looseth many for want of a marke. Sir, about the saw mill I wrot lately, to which I refer you. The inclosed in your last is deliuered. Your house I know not what to do in it for the present, because none can cart stones till time of grass. In the meane I am treating with workmen, first of the modall, then of the charge, then of the way to defray; which when once concluded, & the persons to be improued, I hope the thing may be accomplished before winter, and wee obtaine your worshipp heere, which is that we all would, weare we capeable of working accord-

ing to our wills; but I finde things in all poynts otherwise then expected, with which I shall not troble you till wee meete. Pray Sir, be pleased to send me word whether you can provide for the sawmill, or the Island, or both; or leaue all wholy to me to order, or excuse me wholy in and of all, (which as things are tend much to my distraction): so shall I, with humble servis & duty present, still remaine Your Worshipps humble servant

JNO. TINKER.

23: 2 mo. 1660: N. LOND.

I intreat your worshipp the inclosed may be one reserved for Mr. Palmes, the other sent to Mrs. Olcot.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker of Ap: 23: 1660."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthropp Esq. Gouernour, present at Harford.

HONOURED SIR, — I receiued the sithes you sent, but in that there came not allso your selfe, it maketh me to sigth to think how maters dragg heauily with respect to your worshipps occations. Help is scarce & hard to gett, difficult to please, vncertaine, &c.; that I am redy to be discoridged least your worshipp should think I am slack & negligent, vnthrifty, &c. Means runeth out & wages on, & I canot make choyce of my helpe, nor efect what I desire, so that I could gladly be excused or eased, or in some setled way by your worshipps advice, tending to the beter comfort & maintainance of my family, haueing at present no calling afoot to further my being. There hath bin a motion by some, the cheife of the Towne, for my keepeing an ordinary, or rather vnder the notion of a tavern; which, though it sutes not with my genious, yet am almost perswaded to accept, from some good grounds,

might I but advise with your worshipp: in the meane I ly on the spend, not entring on any thing, till concluded on what. For the sawmill, Sir, I dare adventure no further till beter furnished with able help, since all sopposed sucor still deceiueth, & my wife vterly vnwilling my undertakeing that business; & indeed I plainly see it must be only hee that hath both strength & skill & means must manage it. I beseech your worshipp, with the soonest may be, let vs see you heare. I judge many blocks will still be laid, & your coming delayed, vnless some blocks leaped, which, if but small, should be glad your worshipp would overleapp all, nessessity caling for your comeing to setle so great occations as heere your worshipp hath, with which I concluding your comeing so absolutly nessessary, I count it needless to troble you with more lines, but with my humble duty, servis, & respects to your worshipp & yours presented, I leaue you to the Lord, & ever remaine,

Your Worshipps humble servant

JNO. TINKER.

N. LOND: 2th: 6 mo: 60.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr Tinker of Aug: 2: 1660."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

HONOURED SIR, — Be pleased to take notis of one firkin of butter, & 20 cheeses from the Island, sent by Mr. Arien, mark: W: now is Mr. Richenson come, & intends to gather all his cattell together this weeke, to goe downe next Munday, & what catell your worshipp sends, now is the season; wherfore I intreat your worshipp to speede downe ward what cattell shall be sent, & to whome consigned; I meane besides the 6 cows to Mr. Newman. I feare there will not be aboue 8 or 10 fitt to send (with the Neger) of those steeres. I haue presumed to goe through with Goodman Hall, & haue lett him the Island & Paqua-

net further neck, with a stock: 20 cows: 20 yerlings: 20 of 2 yer old, and 8 for work: with 4 mares: 500 gotes: 100 sheepe, &c., at large, amplyfied for 7 years. He is to build, & fence, & break at his owne charge, & to pay 100*li.* a yeare, & what his bilding is valued at, at last, he is to be paid for it, &c, as Mr. Waite can informe, but I shall coppy it & send to your worshipp as soone as I can. I am chosen by the Towne a Deputy, but can by no means come, by reason of your worshipps occations; & I should bring the Townes list, but it is not yet drawne vpp. I intreat your worshipp to excuse me at the Courte, and I will send the Invoyce shortly, as soone as possible I can; and I request your worshipp to let the Secretary haue the coppy of that deed of Awequas, to record it. Yow saw the originall to be the same with it. I confide in your worshipp for the securitie of that land, so as that I loose it not.

Sir, concerning Goodman Hubbert, he dealeth very iniuriously with the Towne, and I heare he excuses it with my promise of slit worke & failing; but for that, it was only thus: I said I did not question, & I would do what I could, & did so; & did prouide stuff, & as good as much he hath vsed in the worke, but that is nothing. Mr Alen and Mr. Migat is bound in 50*li.* bond, that he shall do it in such a time, which bond is long since forfeit, & it is absolut, & can haue no excuse, if any haue failed him, yet he may not make void his bond for that, but take course with them. For your worshipps house, I see no hopes of it before winter, yet shall doe my indeauour, if I can see any way possible, when other things of nessesity is ouer: not elce to troble your worshipp, but humble duty presented, & to Mrs Winthropp, I remaine

Your Worshipps at comand,

JNO. TINKER.

1: 8 MO: 1660.

Mr. Richeson presents his humble servis to your Wor-

shipp & Mrs: & saith Mr. Numan was the last he spake with, & all is well; himself, & Mrs Numan, & theire sonne.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker about the letting of Fishers Island, Octob: 1: 1660."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To our Honoured Gouernour present.

Honoured Sir, — I am trobled that Edward Messenger hath missed of the cattell. I did not see him, but gaue speciall order the neger should be redy with the catell, against he came, & what the reason is he had them not I know not, but I heare he is gon, and what to doe for your worshipps winter supply I know not. I gaue a hint of my letting the sawmill to Goodman Elderkin, & his ingagement to build a house, but I perceiue your worshipp hath farther thoughts, & other then I can conceiue at preasent, knowing fully the state & condicion of the thing. He is now come about it, & what he & I did, he can fully informe, & if he doe propound any thing that will cause an agreement, pray Sir, think to agree with him to take of & vse the timber. I haue paid for falling about 300 trees, &c: but of all things I request your fauour that the Island faile not of a man to manage it the next spring; for I feare what will come of it when theire turnes a[re ou]t as are now on, nor doe I like to imploy them longer. I feare we are much bewooded by that family. Not elce at preasent but humble service to your worshipp & Mrs. Winthropp; I am still

Your Worshipps humbly to serve,

Jno. Tinker.

27: 9 mo: 1660.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker. Nov: 27."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthropp, Esqr Gouernour, present at Harford.

Honoured Sir, — According to your worshipps desire, I haue let Mr. Hamlin haue 2 barells of beefe, though I haue laid out a great deale more then all the beefe & other pay that I haue receiued cometh to, for the hireing of workmen and the paying of debts, besides my owne time wholy spent this last yeare on your worshipps occation, & shall yet be redy to doe any service I can, but finde the business very great, if it be attended as it should. I shall doe my indeauour to take notice of things, & keepe account of what passes by or through my hand, but shall request your worshipp to procure men, & agree with them for wages, quantiti, qualiti, time, & place. The Island wilbe wholy destetute the last of Aprill, & I dare not hire them againe that are there. I request your worshipp to cause Edw. Messeng to be atatched, according to the inclosed, for I am greatly wronged by him, & haue no help but to atach his goods, & I shall, God willing, prosicute at the time.

Sir, we haue a rate to be gathered in our Towne, & for euery head we account 18*li.* estate, & so many pence as we putt vppon euery pound of other estat, so many pence on the pound for the heads; & some do afirme that the Court will haue no more put vppon a head but 18*d.*, though the rate come to 6*d.* on euery pound of estate. We intreat your worshipp to informe vs the right to end the controversi.

The rate makers think it is just that 18*li.* for a mans head should pay as many pence as 18*li.* for a horse, or any other estate, & so it is in the Bay; when we pay a duble rate for estates, so we doe for our heads. These for pre-

sent, with some leters by cary Latham sent, & humble service to your worshipp & Mrs, &c., I remaine

Your worshipps humbly to serve,

Jno. Tinker.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker, about beef to Mr. Hamden for Mr. Megat:" and by another hand "1660."

JOHN TINKER TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno. Winthropp, Esqr. Gouernour, present at Harford.

Honoured Sir, — Yours received, and acordingly, as your worshipp adviseth, soe I shall indeauour, that the vessell returning (which is now gon for Longe Island) they may bee furnished with those gotes, if possible; when Mr. Rogers and Ffrances Hall may haue opertunity to deliuer theire advic[e]. I hope we shall see your worshipp speedily, which I long for, & to see the Island setled; feareing defering may proue your worshipps damage. If your coming here be any waies prevented, which I hope will not, I should request your worshipps punctuall advice, that so nothing be done contrary to your worshipps intention; but I canot beare thoughts of no sight, since I heare your worshipp is intended for England, which if soe, if your pleasure be to intrust as formerly, I shall with humble duty presented remaine

Your Worshipps sworne servant,

Jno. Tinker.

N. Lond. 15: 4 mo: 1661.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tinker, Jun: 15: rec. Jun: 20."

LETTERS OF RICHARD SALTONSTALL.*

RICHARD SALTONSTALL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his Worthely endeared Mr. John Winthrop junior dd; N. England.

Deare Sir, — The best thing that I have to begg your thoughts for at this præsent, is, a motto, or 2, that Mr. Prin hath writt, vpon his chamber walls, (in the Tower.)

Carcer probat amicos, detegit inimicos, excludit mundum, includit Deum; alit virtutes, extinguit libidines, edocet temperantiam, cohibet luxuriam, mortificat carnem, sanctificat hominem, ingenerat gratiam, thesaurizat gloriam.

Psal: 61, 3. Deus est Turris etiam in Turre; Turris libertatis in turre angustiæ; Turris consolationis in turre

* Richard Saltonstall, eldest son of Sir Richard Saltonstall, knight, was entered at Emanuel College, Cambridge, as a fellow-commoner, 18th April, 1627, and matriculated 14th December following. He came to New England with his father in the fleet in which Gov. Winthrop came over. He was admitted freeman, 18th October, 1631, and the next month returned to England; where, in 1633, he married Merial, daughter of Brampton Gurdon of Assington, Suffolk. He embarked again for New England in the "Susan and Ellen" in 1635. He was representative from Ipswich in 1636; an assistant in 1637; and, in 1641, the first officer, under Endecott, of the Essex Regiment. In October, 1642, a treatise written by him, and containing some reflections "against the Council," was brought to the notice of the elders, and appears to have caused a temporary disagreement between him and the other magistrates. He presented a petition in October, 1645, to the General Court, for justice to be done against certain persons who had been engaged in the slave-trade on the coast of Guinea; which was granted by the Court. In 1649, he went once more to England. In 1664, in the expectation of his return to the Colony, he was again chosen an assistant. He was in Massachusetts in 1680, and was re-elected to that office, as he was also in the two following years. He returned to England in 1682; and died in April, 1694, at the house of his son-in-law, Sir Edward Morley, at Hulme in Lancashire. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 89, 116, 245, 381–383; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

tristitiæ; Turris quietis in turre molestiæ; Turris fælicitatis in turre miseriæ; Turris honoris in turre dedecoris; Turris splendoris in turre obscuritatis; Turris securitatis in turre perturbationis; Turris salutis in turre perditionis; Turris spei in turre desperationis; Turris gaudij in turre afflictionis; Turris pacis in turre belli; Turris protectionis in turre periculi; Turris vitæ in turre mortis; Turris gloriæ in turre perpessionis; & in turre peccati, Turris Gratiæ.

Turris	protegendo, consolando, eripiendo,	a malis; in malis; contra malos, inter malos,	semper, abundanter, vbique,	ffortissimè, Suavissimè, Gratiosissimè.

Citò, tempestivè, sapienter, optimè.

Arctari non potest qui in ipsâ Dei infinitate incarceratus spatiatur. Mortalium procul dubio beatissimus qui mundi exul, Christiq captivus turri: Turris Christianos fideles fictè incarcerat, verè liberat. Nil crus sentit in nervo si animus sit in cœlo; nil corpus patitur in ergastulo, si anima sit in Christo.

I haue nothing els (being in great hast) but my best love, which is (as my selfe) alwayse

Yours; RICHARD SALTONSTALL, JUNIOR.

Indorsed by J. Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Saltonstall, wherin Mr. Prinne his motto in the Prison."

RICHARD SALTONSTALL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull his assured loving freind Mr. Winthrop Governour at Conectecote.

DEAR SIR, — I am bould to troble you, & entreat you in my fathers case, whearin your love to him, & authoritie, & wisdome, to direct & helpe, or (indeede) rather to overpower injurious oppositions, shall make mee your bondman. You know how all things goe.

The Lord direct & prosper all your [aff]ayres; to whose guidance & gratious protection I commend you, & rest

Yours vnfaynedly

RICHARD SALTONST[ALL.]

My great hast cravs pardon for my brevitie & abruptnesse.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Rich. Saltonstall."

RICHARD SALTONSTALL TO THE GOVERNOR, DEPUTY, AND ASSISTANTS OF MASSACHUSETTS.

To the right worshipfull the Governour, Deputie & Assistans.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR WORSHIPS, — According to the power which was committed to Mr. Nowell & Mr. Mahue aboute my accompt with Mr. Dillingham, they have taken much paynes (which I thankfully acknowledge) & have sett mee in a fayer way to make a full end for my owne perticuler. And by reason of Edward Dillinghams importunitie to have all things ended betweene him & Mrs. Dillingham, disceased: that hee might (as it is meete) have that in his owne hand which is due to him by his brothers will; the Commissioners haue therfor appoynted a meeting at Meadford, vppon the 3d day of the next weeke, to that end: I have therfore made bould at this time (as I thought it my dutie) to acquaint your worships; that Mrs. Dillingham (in her lifetime) did acquaint Mr. Dudly with her mind aboute many things betwixt herselfe & Edward Dillingham (which will need his presence very much) & did rely vppon his direction & counsell; & entreat his help thearin, (when as it should have beene ended by Arbitrators of their owne chusing); I am therfore bould to think that [I] am not troblesome to your worships; nor offencive in the least kind vnto any, if I shall entreate thus much; that Mr. Dudly may bee desired to joyne with Mr. Nowell & Mr. Mahue in this behalfe, & if hee cannot

bee at leaisure the 3 day of the next weeke, the soonest day may bee appoynted (in regard of Mr. Dillingham) which will suite with his occasions.

Your worships to bee commanded

Richard Saltonstall.

RICHARD SALTONSTALL TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To our worthy honoured Governour John Winthrop Esqr. dd. Boston.

Honoured Sir, — I had not any oportunitie (before this) that I was aware of, to lett you know, that vppon my comming hoame I agreed with goodman Medcalfe to bring aboute the boate, (shee was then frozen in,) but there beeing possibilitie to gett her out, wee intended to procure the helpe of many of the towne the next day; & that very night it did freeze soe bitterly that wee sawe it would bee in vayne to endeavour it, if wee could have had all the hands in the towne. It would very much have contented mee, if by any means I could have procured you the vse of her this winter. And for the boate it selfe, I must crave leave to sett my owne prise (which shall bee much more then shee is worth) & that is, your acceptance, without any further troble to your selfe, or thought aboute it (directly, or indirectly). If you deale otherwise with mee, truly, I shall count it an abatement of the prise I have sett vppon her. It is but a meane testimony of my duty & thankfullnesse, where soe much, (& indeede my selfe toe) is more then due. I have very good cause to make such accompt, in regard of your greate love & favour to mee; although you have seene my vnworthynesse therof. Thus with my humble duty & sarvice to yourselfe, beseeching the Lord that (in much marcy to vs all) your life & health may bee prætious in his eyes, I take my leave, & shall ever rest,

Yours vnfaynedly,

Richard Saltonstall.

RICHARD SALTONSTALL TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worthyly honoured John Winthrop Esq, Gouernour, dd.

Honoured Sir,—Among some letters, & loving remembrances from our good freinds at Greenford, wee received a letter to your selfe from my father Gurdon, & somthing bound vp with it, which my mother sends to Mrs Winthrop: I hope they will bee carefully delivered by my brother Harry.

Mr. Bradstreet & George Carr* being partners with my selfe in a vessell, wherof Elias Parkman† was master (who dwells at Conetecott, but is now in the Bay, belonging to a vessell that came from thence; & is almost ready to returne againe); wee are forced to crave your warrant for the stay of Parkman, that hee may answer vs at the Quarter Court in an action of debt, as alsoe for the breach of his charter partie. Hee was lately at Ipswich, & accompted with vs for 5 or 6 voyages betweene the Bay & Conectecote. I might soone tell you whatt our receipts have beene, though the providence of the Lord hath beene good to vs, (if hee had beene as carefull as hee ought.) He is in our debt 18*li.* 10*sh.* by his owne accompt. The most part of this mony hath been long in his hand, & yet wee cannot receive a penny of him, nor a note of his hand that it is due to vs vppon demaund, vnlesse wee bee contented to take it at Conectecott; when hee hath sould hi[s ho]use, etc, or take it heare as himselfe appoynts. It is not the vse of the mony for my owne advantange; but the wrong I may doe where I owe it, that constrains mee to bee soe earnest for præsent payment (as I tould him often):

---

* George Carr, a shipwright, was of Ipswich, 1633; and was one of the first settlers of Salisbury in 1638. This letter may have been written before his removal from Ipswich. — Eds.

† Parkman was of Dorchester, 1633. He was admitted freeman, 1635; but removed early to Windsor, and, between 1645 and 1648, to Boston; and was probably lost at sea, before July, 1662. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

otherwise I should not have beene soe troblesome to yourselfe & the Court as I am like to bee.

I shall not now add (what I have soe much cause) of my love & dutie to your [*torn*]. I know my engagements hervnto are greate: & my vnworthynesse alsoe, though you are pleased (soe vndeservedly) to accept mee herin,

Yours vnfaynedly, as I am ever bound in dutie,

Richard Saltonstall.

The whole summ that Elias Parkman owes mee is 5*li.* vppon the last recconing, & 45 shillings vppon a former. If hee bee willing to pay it (as I doubt not but hee can, having fraight to receive) I shall make bould to entreat Mr. Stephen or Mr. Addam to receive it for mee, & give him a receipt, & to send it by some that come this way. I am contented to adventur it with whome hee thinks meete. My Partners expect satisfaction speedily, or his appearance at the Court, etc.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Saltonstall about Parkman."

LETTERS OF THOMAS SHEPARD.*

THOMAS SHEPARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right Woorshipfull Mr. Winthrop, dwelling at Boston, be these dd.

Dear Sir, — I receiued by your reuerend pastour, Mr. Wilson, two of your papers; the first I call your Declaration, vizt. That a man is justifyed by fayth, & not before he beleeueth; the 2d I call your Pacification, wherin your godly endeauour is to quiet & still those tumults, which your wisdom may foresee will arise in the churches concerning Justification by fayth, as its conceiued by some, & contradicted by others; now it was his desire, & your own too, as he intimated to me, that I would read them ouer, & then come & speake with yow; which I did intend to do, the last Thursday, but that your being with the Gouernour † kept me from the speech of yow, & had I had but time this weeke, I had came to yow, but being hindred, I

* The Rev. Thomas Shepard, who succeeded Thomas Hooker as minister of Cambridge, was born at Towcester, Northamptonshire, 5th November, 1605, — the day designed for the perpetration of the Gunpowder Plot. He was matriculated at Emanuel College in Cambridge, 1619; and, after the completion of his course at the university, preached at Earl's Colne in Essex, and Heddon in Northumberland, but was silenced by Bishop Laud in 1630. His intention to emigrate to New England was twice frustrated, — once by his being obliged to escape from the pursuivants who were sent to arrest him; and, again, by a violent storm, which injured the vessel in which he had embarked, so that the voyage was relinquished. He finally came over in the "Desire;" arriving at Boston, Oct. 3, 1635. He was soon settled at Cambridge (then Newtown); and, after a laborious and successful ministry, he died Aug. 25, 1649, — a few months after the decease of Gov. Winthrop. He was zealous in promoting the interests of Harvard College in the early years of its history. — *Holmes, in* 1 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vii. 42–47; *Allen's Biog. Dict.*; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† Probably Vane. The date of this letter may be assumed to be 1636, or early in 1637. — Eds.

thought it fit to send vnto yow my thoughts by way of wrighting, vntill we speake together, if so yow thinke fit; when I read the question in your declaration, I did woonder & greaue that I should liue to see the liberty of mens spirits, not only to deny so playne a truth, but that they should abolish the very forme of wholsom woords of truth which the apostle exhorts Timothy to keepe, as well as the truth itselfe: in saying a man is justifyed without fayth, when the truth & forme of words in scripture is that we are justifyed by fayth; & surely it hath not done me a little good to see your spirit contending for the fayth once deliuered to the saynts, Jude: 3: & seeking to preuent errours in there beginninge; which I earnestly desire of God yow may still doe, both by woord & wrighting: yet its a great scruple in my thoughts (& I leaue it with yow to consider of) whether it will be most safe for you to enter into the conflict with your pen, (though the Lord hath made yow very able & fit for it,) or if yow doe, whether then so largely; it being an easy thing for a subtill adversary to take advantages at woords, or if yow doe wright more breefly, whether yow do not think it most meet to leaue them to the view of some of your friends, before yow send them to him yow haue to trade with all; I confesse it would be a worke worth your labour, if yow could by word or pen gather from them the full meaning of there minds, wherein they differ from others, but otherwise I much question priuate duells with some kind of spirits; & therefore if yow should thinke it fit in your wisdom to forbeare wrighting for a while, I perceiue it would be most safe for yow; I would also intreat of yow not to send these papers as they are, in regard of some things I haue obserued accordinge to my little time obserued in them; which I haue, in faythfulnes, yet in respect & submission to your better judgement, sent herein vnto yow, not with a spirit to contradict, or to dispute it with yow, (for I am most vnfit) but with an humble desire

that yow would be pleased to haue a few second thoughts of some passages, of which some seeme to me to be doubtfull, & some others to swerue from the truth; perswading my hart of your sincere loue, & respect, & readines to see evry truth of Xt, & that if I doe mistake, yow will, out of your loue, be ready to lend me better light. I shall not send yow my thoughts concerning all that which yow haue written, but according to my time, (which is but little, to be busied in matters of this nature,) I haue pickt out some things which I feare your aduersary may take aduantage at, or your freinds, offence at.

1. In your Declaration, your arguments are very weighty & strong, & I wholly & gladly assent to all, only may it please yow to consider of these things which I gleane here & there.

1. In your 5. argument, your woords are out of the parable of the sower. A man must haue an honest & good hart, before the woord can haue any sauing effect; that is, as I expound breefly, before the woord woorke fayth to beleeue to justification, the hart must be made honest & good in preparation; which tho it be a truth which for the substance of I haue euer held, & would not deny; yet an aduersary will or may take much aduantage vpon the starting of so deepe & doubtfull a question, & may keepe yow off from the pursuit of his errours by pursuing yow for this, wherin he knowes many of your freinds that would stand by yow in other controuersies, will be agaynst yow in this; & so while yow are about to conuince them of errours, they will proclayme your selfe to hold foorth worse.

2. In your clearing vp that some woorke of God in vs may stand with free grace yow haue this expression, that Adam did not only loose Gods Image, but himselfe, & should haue dyed childles had not Xt purchased a repriuall or vniversall redemption: I grant an vniuersall redemption & saluation in your sence; yet whether Adam

for sin should have bin annihilated, as your woords seeme to imply, or dyed childles, is very doubtfull; for Adam, like the great parlament man of the woorld, stood as a generall person; so that as if he had stood, all his posterity should not only have had beinge but blessednes; so (it was the covenant) if he fell, his posterity should not only partake of being by him, but eternall curse & misery by him; for it was not the couenant doe & liue, sin & yow & your posterity shall not haue a being, but yow shall dy & haue a miserable being.

3: In your discouery of justice in justification, the glory of which God aimes at as well as of his mercy; yow haue this expression, God could not be just, vnles he should make a sinner close with Xt for justification by fayth; (which is thus far true, because tis his reuealed will to haue it soe, & h. tis just it should be soe) yet your proofe is doubtfull, because else Esau might accuse God of justifying Jacob, vnjustly, vnles God had this to stop his mouth; Jacob did beleeue, Esau would not: — Answ: 1: This answer beares a colour of Arminianism, which I beleeue your soule abhors: 2: This seemes to make *fides qua opus* to concur to the satisfaction of justice, or at least to be part of the matter of our justification, which you know diuines dispute agaynst: 3: In such a way of reasoninge why might not Esau reply vpon the Lord agayne, & say he is an accepter of persons, in that when they were both alike, he should giue Jacob power to beleeue, & would not giue any vnto him:

4: In the 9: Arg. That the couenant of grace to wright his lawes in our harts; you expound to be the law of fayth. Answ: This is true, in part; but the cheefe meaning of the promise seemes rather to be of our conformity in our renewed image to the morall law; which God promiseth to wright in our harts, as he writ the law it selfe in tables of ston.

5. In the last argument, as God and man concur to be

the meritorious cause of justification, God & the woord of man to be the instrumentall causes of it, so God & the fayth of man concur as the formall cause of justification: Answ: 1: This seemes to make fayth no instrumentall cause of our justification: but God & the woord. 2: Diuines haue disputed it out, that as infusion of grace is the forme of sanctification: so imputation of righteousnes & grace is the forme of justification; & then how can God & fayth be the formall cause of it?

In your Pacification: me thinkes I see the sweetnes of your spirit, inclining & deuising for peace & truth if possible; but herein many things (all I cannot name vnto you) are very doubtfull to me; which I hope yow will see into, & see also a good hand of prouidence that your papers are not sent as yet:

1. Your 7 Propositions deserue much scaning. Ile note 3 of them only.

Your 2. prop: That all the woorkes of God done in hime are but the manifestion of God, or declaration of his eternall counsell, or manifestation of his attributes. Answ: *Ens primus & ens a primo*, different *tota spec:* hence tho the attributes & counsells of God are manifested in & vpon the creature, as *Lux non videtur nisi in opaco;* yet it cannot be properly sayd that they are the very manifestation of God's attributes & counsells; for as opticks obserue of light that its not seene vnles it be *in opaco;* yet we cannot define the body to be the manifestation of light, tho light be manifested vpon it.

Your 5 prop: Election is of God's free grace, without respect of any thing in the creature. Answ. Tis true nothing in the creature can be a motiue cause or condition of Election *antecedenter;* but yet it may be, & is the effect of election *consequenter*, for we are elected, not because we were holy, but that we might be holy. Eph: 1: 5: hence in that sence God hath a respect to what he will woorke in the creature, according to his free election; for

I could neuer tell how to auoyd the dint of Arminian arguments till Dr. Twisse helped me with more cleere light to see his coordination of *homo condendus, conditus, lapsurus & redituru*s to be the *objectum prædestinationis;* so that God in Election hath respect to the creature beleeuing: *i.e.* that shall be made to beleeve by him:

Your 7. All the elect are righteous, holy, & the sons of God in Xt from all eternity: Answ. Not actually, for then how could they be children of wrath by nature? but intentionally, only in Gods decree & purpose.

2: *Your Conclusions:*

1 Conclusion: That justification is not, as tis commonly taken, an act of God absoluing the creature from sin, for that was done before, in God's eternall counsell: but a Declaration of it by a woorke in & vpon the creature in time, being righteous before in Xt: & for this purpose yow quotè diuse scriptures which I thinke not needfull to answer: Answ: 1: There is a 3 fold justification as it appeares to vs: 1: intentionall in God's decree & secret purpose of election: 2: purchased justification which was perfected by on offering of Xt in redemption: 3: actuall or communicated justification, which is in vocation, & so continues while sin & life continue: now tho I grant God did justify the sinner intentionally from before all woorlds, 2: & that a man was righteous before he had a beinge, that is meritoriously; yet I see not any ground how it can be sayd, a man was actually justifyed, or righteous before he beleeued, or how actually clothed with Xts righteousnes (which garment was made for him in redemption,) before he put on the garment by fayth: the considering of this distinction is a thread to lead out of many errours: 2: In your Declaration, you shewed that fayth did more then declare a man to be justified, but here you make it only a declaratiue cause of it: 3: Its granted that fayth doth declare our justification, but it doth more

also, which God would haue joyned not separated: 4: To make fayth a declaratiue cause or euidence of our justification, will not bring any pacification (which is your scope), for my selfe haue bin told, & tis generally professed, that a man must see his justification before fayth can declare it, & when it doth declare it tis but a candle in the sun: but I desire yow to consider the arguments yow produce.

1. *Argument:*

Rom: 1: 17: The righteousnes of God is reuealed by fayth: 1: Every act of fayth declares a man righteous: Resp. There seemes to me to be 2 things included in these woords of this verse: 1: that not fayth but the gospell reueales a righteousnes: i: a purchased righteousnes for all them that beleeue: 2: that this righteousnes is not only declared but obtayned & applyed by fayth, & so a man is actually justifyed.

2. *Argument:*

The same answer will serue for this too.

3. *Argument:*.

If our pardon shoulde be in time then there should be a change in God. Answ: The frame of the whole woorld was not actually made when he intended to make it, for then it should be *ab æterno;* & yet the actuall making of it doth not make any change in God or in his counsell; so tho a man be not actually justified *ab æterno*, but intentionally only; yet our actuall justification in time doth not make any change in God or his counsell, but rather establisheth God's vnchangeable counsells, in that he is as good in deeds as in his intentions: The execution of God's counsells cannot make Gods counsells changeable; *amor beneuolentiæ* toward the elect is long before *amor complacentiæ*, which is in time.

4. *Argument:*

I perswade my selfe when yow consider what hath bin said will appeare to your selfe of no great weight: for our title to justification & acceptance is giuen vs at an instant & for euer, but the fruition of our justification, especially *in foro conscientiæ*, is oft renewed; justification is one continued act on God's part all our life time, & hence we may be oft, nay euery day & moment really pardoned, as well as declaratiuely.

5. *Argument.*

To this I answer, take 2 beleeuers in Xt, they are not more justified on then the other, no farther then on hath more sins pardoned [then] another; but a hypocrite & a beleever, the on may be, & I am sure is, not only declaratiuely, but really more justified then the other, both before God & man.

6. *Argument.*

To the 6. I answer, this place of Mary having much forgiven her prooues euidently that loue justifies & consequently workes as well as fayth; because these declare & that some tymes more euidently then fayth (as some thinke) that a man is justified.

7. *Argument.*

Answ. Not only declare them to be couered; but be a means to lead to Xt, wherby they may be actually couered.

Argument 8.

The summe of the verse is this, that Abell offring his sacrifice in fayth, was manifested to be a righteous person, by some speciall token of acceptance (some think fire from heauen) which is a good argument that woorkes of new obedience flowing from fayth may euidence a man's justi-

fication by speciall notice from God, but cannot prooue that a man by fayth is only declared to be righteous:

This is your conclusion & proofe: now the 4 Conclusion: wherin you say fayth puts vs not into Xt, nor Xt into vs, seeme to crosse the whole current of scripture, which without manifest wresting must be gainsayd, I need not name them; & the proofe of it that fayth is only an evidence of things not seene; that is not any description, but rather *encomium fidei*, as Erasmus & Ames notes against the papists, who place justifying fayth only in the mind: & tis true it is an euidence of them, but that is not all.

Your 5. Conclusion:

In Gods eternall counsell fayth, repentance, Xt, creation, prouidence, all things are together, & serue *vnico intuitu*. Thus I haue in my accustomed playnnes, which I hope yow will beare with, sent yow my present weake thoughts of your notes, which yow may please to consider of & make vse of, as whether to send so large answers of your mind or noe. I am in very great hast. The God of all grace & peace liue & dwell with yow, & still give yow a hart to contend for the fayth once deliuered to the saints: Yours in the Lord Jesus.

THO. SHEPARD.

NEWTOWN:

THOMAS SHEPARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To right Worshipfull John Winthrop Esquire at Boston.

SIR, — My occasions will not permit me this day to be at Boston with yow, my selfe, & therefore I would intreat yow to deliuer to Mr. Harlakenden the 30*li.* which (I thanke yow) yow promised vnto me for my brother; I doe not presse your readines to helpe me to the rest of the 100^{li}; yet if yow could with conueniency do it herafter, it

would be thankfully taken from yow euery way. Tis much desired, that our cuntrymen's blood might not rest unsatisfyed for; our eyes are much vpon yow & the Lord in yow to devise some speedy execution which may end with honour & quiet, to the feare & terrour to all the rest of them. The God of all wisdom, grace, & glory fill yow & direct yow. My respect remembred to yours. In haste I rest Yours in the Lord J:

THO. SHEPARD.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Shepard for 100*li.*"

THOMAS SHEPARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull Mr. Winthrop, Gouernour.

MUCH HONOURED IN OUR BLESSED SAUIOUR, — I haue looked vpon the Rod (your Suruey) yow haue made to whip the Remonstrants back: my dim eyes can find no fault with it, but that which yow fear may be on, vizt. that it wants twigs enough: but yet it may be, they may mend by this, which if it fall out, the mistake is mine; howeuer it be, your reward of such loue to the Lord, his truth & his people, by stepping your selfe betwene them & the blow, shall not be forgotten another day in a better woorld, nor yet I beleeue in this, of all those that know yow & these labours of your loue, for the vse & safety of these churches & cuntry: — for my own part, I am not a little glad to see how the Lord hath helped yow also in this Survey: I will only leaue these things to be considered of by yow.

1. pag: 1: In your preface your charity is sweet & good, if you had to deale with another author of the Apologie then him that indeed yow combat withall, for yow seeme to make him a good man in zeale of a con ceiued good cause, who is so notoriously known to be the prime craftsman of forging all our late nouelties, the Sheba

of our distractions, & that in this very Apollogye hath cunningly & slyly layd down the principle & sown the seed of the confusion of this & all states in the world; & whom the vigilant eye of judicious obseruers haue noted to cut out all his courses & carriages in to diuerse colours; & vntill we see his repentance & returne, why shall our charity couer his craft, & yet tell the woorld he may be an honest man? I do beleeue yow do aime at others as well as he, to be authors of his Apology, & so may truly speake as yow do; but I leaue it to your wisdom to consider if hauing this occasion & cause to speake, it would not be fit to leaue others out, & single out him & set your brand vpon him, that it may be is now hatching guile agaynst this place, & by his colours more fit to delude vs then any man else. Admiration of persons you knowe hath carryed on great stroke in this cause & of him among the rest; its our wisdom therefore to make there wickednes & guile manifest to all men that they may goe no farther, & then they will sinke of themselues.

2. Agayne yow say a faythfull seruant is not so stiled in an act of his vnfaythfulnes; as in Moses & Aaron: Answ. Doubtles the contrary may be found in scripture, ex: gr: 1 Kings, 15: 14: Gen: 20: where Abram had told a ly, yet Pss. 7: he is called by God himselfe a prophet. To call him a prophet, neither his practise deserues it, nor yet doe the churches call at this day any men prophets vsually, but those that were extraordinary: its the Jesuits craft at this day to put fayre names on fowle things, & so to beat religion with its owne weapon. He dazles the eyes of the woorld by opposing a prophet of God agaynst the Elders of churches.

Pag. 4: His maxime — that a sentence giuen by the major part of the Court when another doe dissent is a nullity: I desire 2 things concerning it, if your prudence thinke it fit: 1: that herein you would lay down more reasons agaynst it, & shew more particularly to what it

leads, & from what spirit it came; for its as monstrous, deuillish, hellish a birth as euer wickednes could bring foorth, & as yow well note, enough to ruine vs & all states in the woorld. 2: To answer his arguments more fully woud seeme to be to haue colour of strength but that of the witnesses dissenting; which if you opend more clearly would be pleasing to many: witnesses answer *de facto:* Judges sentence is *de Jure:* if the major part of the Court haue *jus* with them, i: any law of God or diduct from it, the law must judge: if the lesser part haue the law of God on there side, that law should judge.

Pag: 11: Sedition & murther are sins; now tho sin in generall be a transgression of the law, yet this or that particular sin is according to the seuerall externall circumstances, time, place, persons, &c., & in all morall acts, good or evill, externall circumstances ad to the internall beinge & formallity of euery sin, & h: Mr. Vanes addition of deviding, in the good wherein they ought [to] be vnited is not nothing, for yourselfe make sedition, where mens minds are made feirce. Now if yow had not added by an evill act which is an externall thing yet internall to sedition, Paul & the apostles, as they truly say, had bin seditious, when they perverted the truth. Yow seeme also to say God hated is the formall cause of murther, which is a degree only to it; & to kill a man out of hatred, because he crosseth God's will, is not murder but justice: I also question whether that can be the end of sedition also.

I have not had time exactly to view eury particular woord, because all did so well sute with me that I could not desire to blame any there. Thus in extreame hast with many thankes for this & all your loue to this cuntry & these churches, & my selfe, I leaue yow in his arms that loues yow.

Your T. S:

Proujdence hath placed mee in one of the worst places in the kjngdome for opjnjons: full crosse to my owne spirjts & resolutjons, but I saw such a hand of God in it, the people pressjng so vrgently vpon mee, that I could not tell how to deny them; else I hope I had beene in N. England agajne before thjs tjme: for great matters heere I see no probabilitie; I must looke to liue low (if God please to make mee stoope to it), which is some encouragement to mee, that I hope outward conuenjences are not the great matters which stay mee. Mr. Peters hath done very much servjce since hjther hee came. I could wish hee did not too much countenance the Opinjonists, which wee did so cast out in N. England. I know he abhorrs them in hjs heart, but hee hath many hang vpon him, bejng a man of such vse. I hope God wjll preserue him spottlesse, notwithstanding vjle aspersjons cast vpon hjm, but I percejue jt is by the Presbyterjans, agajnst whom sometjme hee lets dropp a sharp word: I cannot add so much as I jntended. Your kjnsman Robert Downjng comes in accidentally, & is gojng away so speedily, that I cannot add more. Sir, you may see what I jntend, the presentjng of a cordjall affectjon & honourable respects vnto you, which I ow, with the same presented to your deare wife, craujng an jnterest in your prayers I am

Yours in Christjan Serujce

GILES FIRMJN.

COLCHESTER: 1st: July.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr: Giles Firmin 15 (5) 46."

LETTERS OF WILLIAM CODDINGTON.*

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull and his much estemed John Winthrape Esqr. Governour of the Massachusets, dd. in Boston.

Right Worshipfull, — Haueing so opportune a measseinger as your owne Indean, being by my pinnice returned from Blocke Iland, & doth now hast to returne vnto yow, I doe make bould to salute yow, haueing littell else to informe your worship of. Mr. James being returned lately from Quinepage doth informe that the Inhabitants did giue their power to the Church, & the Church hath chosen Mr. Theophilus Eaton their Magistrate, for so they call him, Mr. Newman, Mr. Ffugall, Mr. Gilbard, Captin Turner, assistants. He did lickewise informe that they haue taken one of the Pequit murderes, Nepawbuck by name, & haue putt him to death. I haue the names of 12 of the Pequits morders that are yet aliue. Your Indan knowes some of them, his brother more, & wher they liue. Our Indeans here are peaceable, though we trust them not. Could be glad to here from your worshipe, if any thinge be attempted aginest them about two maires & cowe we heare they haue killed, that we might stand vpon our gard. I am remoued 12 myles further vp in to the Iland. Ther they haue gathered a Church, & doe intend to chuse officers shortely, & do desire better healpes in that kind,

* A notice of William Coddington, several of whose letters are printed in the sixth volume of the present series, may be found in that volume, p. 312. —Eds.

when the Lord is pleassed to send them, & would gladly vse what meanes doth lye in vs to obtayne them. Things are in fare better passe conserning our ciuill governmentt then they haue bene, diuers ffamelyes being come in that had revolted from ther owne acte, & haue giuen satisfaction. Mr. Gorton & Mrs. Huchson doth oppose it. It was hached when I was last in the Baye, & the Lord, I hope, will shortely putt an esew to it. Being in great hast, with my loue to yourselfe, Mrs. Winthrape, & all that doe remember me, I take leaue & rest,

Yours to be commaunded wher in I maye,

WILLM. CODDINGTON.

ACQUEDNECKE, Decmr. 9. 1639.

Mr. John Cogshall, Mr. Willm. Brenton, & Sergant Balstone doe desire to haue their service presented to your worship.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Coddington."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his assuered lo: frind Mr. Jo: Winthrope, dd. Per Robt. Bull.

MR. JO: WINTHROPE AND MY INDEARED FRIND, — I kindly salute yow & yours. Sir, I haue, accordeing to your desire, sent yow but tenn ewes; they are all, I doe assuer yow, of the best English breed. I could haue sent yow longe leged & biger sheepe, but these are better breed. I haue sent yow fiue blacke & fiue whit. I judged it best so to doe, yow not expresseinge your desire to me. They are all but sherings, that is, one yeare ould at last lambeinge, & nowe yeening of two, which is knowne by their teeth, none of them haueinge aboue two brod teeth. I haue sent yow a rambe lambe which is of my English breed lickewise, both by the ewe & rambe. I know the Iland nore the cuntrie could not haue furnished yow with such a par-

sell of sheepe, out of my hand. I haue write vnto yow two letters, which I do perceiue yow haue not receiued. I am glad I wos on the Iland to deliuer your sheepe my selfe. If yow desire to haue more whit sheepe then blacke, then rambe your ewes with whit rambs; if more blacke, then yow may saue a blacke rambe out of your breed of blacke ewes; but by all meanes put not to your rambes till the latter end of the next mounth, Nouember. Lond deliuered shorte of tenn pounds, 2*s.* 6*d.*, & Rich. Rayment detaynes 10*s.* 6*d.* of myne in his hand for woole yow had of him. Yow may pleasse to order me it in the Baye, whither I now am hasting to take passage for England with my doughter.* Sir, if in any thing I may be serviceable to yow ther, yow may commaunde me. Let me haue your letter to Mr. Petters; & soe I bid yow hartely fairewell. If wee never se one another againe, yet we part in trew loue. Yours ever,

Wm. Coddington.

Octo^r^ 14, 1648.

Sir, I pray yow send me my note.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Coddington about the sheepe sent per Robert Bull, & directions about them."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrop, Esqr att Pequut, dd.

Worthy Sir, — I haue, ever sence I came a shoer,† waited for an oportunetie to salute yow & yours; but I haue not had it till nowe, God haueing taken to himselfe your

---

* See note to the following letter. — Eds.

† Coddington went to England in January, 1648–9; and, after an absence of about two years and a half, returned in August, 1651, with a commission from the Council of State to govern the Islands of Rhode Island and Canonicut during his life. — *Arnold's Rhode Island*, i. 225, 237, 238. — Eds.

aged faither, my indeared frind.* Wee toucke a very solome leaue one of an other, twice weeping at our parting, which did presage to me that wee should never see one an other in this life. Now, Sir, yow are his eldest sonn & haire, and therfore I desire that muteall loue & frindshipe might bee continued betweene vs. Thy frind & thy faithers frind forsake thou not.

I caryed a letter from your faither to your brother Maiour Winthrope,† but could not meete with him till at last acsendentally to vs, but ordered by Devine Providence, wee meet at a booke binder shope (Giles Calverts). I knewe him not, for he wos in scarlit, &c., till I hard him named, then we stayed two or three howers togeather at that tyme, & he did ernestly intreate me to present his service to Sir Hen. Vaine, & for to tell him that he desired to waite of him, which I did, and Sir Hen. wos glad to heare of him. I desired to know when he would be pleassed Maiour Winthrop should come & tender his service; he answered me, when he pleassed; soe wee toucke the tyme to goe to viset Mr. Petters at his chamber. I was mery with him, & called him the Arch BB: of Canterberye, in regard of his adtendance by ministers & gentelmen, & it passed very well; soe he calling the Maiour, sonn Winthrope, I put him in mynd to remember his eldest sonn‡ in New England, & that he would be pleassed to giue yow his house at Salem, he said he cared not if he did. I desired him he would write to yow by me to that purposse, he promised he would write by me, and I tould him I would call of him, though his lodging were aboue two myles from myne, & did so, but he wos gone to Greneage about a spesall accation, conserneing Mrs. Jaine Puckering, a knights doughter

---

* Gov. Winthrop, of Massachusetts, died March 26, 1649,—two months after Coddington had sailed for England.—Eds.

† Stephen Winthrop.—Eds.

‡ He refers to John Winthrop, jun., to whom this letter is addressed; who had, as is well known, married the daughter-in-law of Peters.—Eds.

& haire, that was stolne & maryed by an vnworthy person, which mariage wos disannulled.

I sawe your sister, for shee wos then in London, and Mr. Petters tould his sonn* that he must bring his wife to waite of him, for he did see gentelwomen did waite of him, Mrs. Saltonstall, Mr. Rich. Saltonstall wife, & other gentell women being there to speake with him, which wee accordingly did observe him ther in another daye, & would haue had him gone with vs to dyne at Sir Hen. Vaine, but he would not; but wee did, and it wos very well taken, both of Sir Hen. & his ladie, for it wos vsall with me.

Thus haue I giuen yow as breefe a relation as I could, hopeing for some opertunetie to speake togeather. Doe yow never goe to the Baye, that wee might see one another? I could take a iournye of purposse to see yow. Sir, I sawe Do^r^ Child, who did inquire diuers tymes very affecshonatèly how the Pequite Sachem† did, & would haue had me for to haue taken your plantation in to my Commistion, which I would not doe without order; and trewlie myne hath not hither two sucseeded as wos expected by me, for some haueing not that respect therin as they expected, that their names wos not in it, and others for feare least they should, by the authoritie of the Staite of England, bee questioned, after that it wos established, and themselues ingaged, haue indevoured an interuption, not to saye a rebelion, which haue cheefly bene accationed by some proseedings againest Mr. Dyer, (Mr. Easton being conserned therin) which I would not haue taken notice of as yet, but that he maid of his esteate, & soe did Jeremy Gould, & both of them fitted themselues for England. Mr. Dyer sent his wife over in the first shipe with Mr.

* Possibly Major Winthrop, or Col. Reade, his son-in-law, may be here intended. — Eds.

† Undoubtedly, Winthrop is here referred to under this appellation. The reader will remember the title of "Agawom Sagamore," applied to him by Edward Howes. — 4 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 498. — Eds.

Travice, and is now gone himselfe for England, & so is Jeremy Gould, and hath maid over his estaite to defeate me of my righte. I purposse to send yow the trew reporte of Dyers casse, and lickewise of the Duch Governours bill put in to our courte againest Capt. Clarke, which was another accation, Mr. Easton being deeply conserned in that allsoe. That daye the Courte wos held for the Duch Governours Agents, ther wos a meeting of diuers disorderly persons, such a[s] hath fleed from other Colonyes for misdemenours sence my goeing for England, and some others, att Capt. Clarkes; the Courte being held in my towne howse. Capt. Morice wos the head of them. They came in to the Courte, & did forbid that any Courts should be held in a tumultuous way, countermaunding the authorite of the State of England. I haue sent over my agent for England, to the Counsell of Staite, who, I doubt not, but will take order herein. After this Mr. Easton deliuered a profecye aginest my selfe, Capt. Parteridge, & the Duch Governours agents. I doe purposse to send yow a copye ther of, and then yow will haue the substance of such newes as our Iland doth afforde; desireing yow to make such vse of those 3 papers as yow judges may conduce to my good, for I doe knowe that I am traduced in other Colonyes, and I desire that as the name of my frinds is of esteme with me, so I desire that myne might be with them. I haue bene larger and [*sic*] I intended, but I will breake of all further confering with yow, att this tyme, & desire that I might haue your judgment after yow haue confered with your coleges the magistrates, of those papers; and so I would end, onely this berour, John Laiton, hath requested me to write some thing to yow, whylest I am in writeing, in his behalfe, and I knowe not well what. He hath bene my servant, and therfore I doe respecte him, and could haue wished he had bene wiser then to haue giuen out any offenceiue wordes aginest the Churches or the members therof, but he is sudaine & foulish, and its thought

some tymes a littell cracked brayned, & doth speake words that he is very much troubled for afterward, as he doth nowe. Yourselfe & Mr. Blithman are both so wise as not to deale with a foule according to his follye; but I sease from writeing, and shall for ever remayne,

Yours ever, Wm. Coddington.

From New Lodge in Newport, Ffebr. 19th, 1651.

Sir, I pray yow present my respect to all that remembers me with yow; to Mr. Haines, Mr. Pinchin, &c.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Coddington, & papers about his matters."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrope Esqr. at Pekut present these.

Newport, this 18th March, 1651.

Kind Sir, — I am not a little sorry that such sad occasions causeth me at this time to present you with a few lines, earnestly entreating you to come over unto mee, & to bring some freind of yours with you; for so it is, that last Friday, about sunrising, the officer gaue Captaine Partridge quiet possession of a howse that one Dickens kept from him: whereupon the people, to aboue 20, came, some with guns, & some with swords & stafs, to dispossesse Captaine Partridge; he forewarning of them to keepe of his land, but they pressing still on, he shott of a gun with nothing but powder in it; they shott at the howse, thereupon in defence of themselues & house; there is one of the tumultuous crue slaine, & another wounded; whereupon they planted a great gun to batter downe the howse; which sad news of the death of one, & the wounding of another, when I heard of, caused me presently to goe up into the towne, where, for the prevention of more bloud, I desired the Captaine to leaue his howse, which he did, & some 4

THOMAS SHEPARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Much Honoured Mr. Winthrop at Boston be these dd.

Sir, — I doubt not but that you will haue the harts & prayers of many in the compiling of the History, tho yow be left alone in it. As for those objections. 1. That some mens virtues cannot be commended with modesty, because they are now liuing, I suppose the Historian may, without any just offence, giue them there due, especially in those cases where there vertues are exemplary to others, & the expressions modestly setting them out, without swelling of the socket where such lights are set vp.

2. That some persons errours cannot be mentioned without prejudice to there places; I confesse tis some what; yet let the History make its progresse till it comes to such persons, times, & practices; & then vpon serious thought spent how to carry on that busines, I doubt not but God will manifest himselfe on way or another by that time, that there will not be much cause of sticking here what to doe.

3. That some things may prejudice vs in regard of the state of England, if divulged; I know not what they be which can do so, more then what is known to all the woorld already; if there be any secret, hid things, which may be prouoking; it may be left to the judgement of others how far it will be fit to diuulge them, when the coppy is priuately examined.

Surely Sir, the woorke is of God, & many eyes & harts will be now expecting it with prayers; the good Lord guide & encourage yow in your way, & recompence it abundantly to yow.

When I came to write this letter I perceiued that he that tooke a coppy of what yow sent, had sent it away by Edw. Mitchelson to yow, which was without the least notice I had of it; & sory I am it was returned so rudely;

if I had known yow desired any answer to it, I should haue before this time haue sent; but I looked on it as a Law made by the Court, & therefore I knew not how acceptable or safe it would be to reply; &, if I know myselfe, I know I desire peace with all, but especially with such whose wisdom I prefer aboue mine own folly, who can see little: 1: This only I meruayle at, that that should be condemnd as a sin simply in itselfe, & yet by order of Court liberty giuen to men for some few dayes to commit that sin; as in case freends come fresh out of England they may then drinke to them without beinge liable to punishment:* 2: This also I doe humbly intreat, that there may be no sin made of *drinking in any case one to another;* for I am confident he that stands here will fall & be beat from his ground by his own arguments; as also that the consequences will be very sad, & the thing prouoking to God & man to make more sins then (as yet is seene) God himselfe hath made; if more be desired of me then this I should not be vnwilling to write, but I desire yow would consider I am alone, & that I am desirous of as much ease & peace [as] I can: I am in extreame hast. The Lord guide & direct & blesse yow in all your thought [al]wayes for his prayse. Yours

T. Shepard.

Camb: Jan: 27: '

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Shepard, about the History, & health drinking, &c."

THOMAS SHEPARD TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To our much honoured Gouernour, Mr. Winthrop.

Right Worshipfull, & Much Honoured, — I haue sent yow, according to your desire, the apprehensions of

* This question of drinking healths was agitated, and an order passed concerning it, in December, 1639. — Eds.

those at the riuer, together with mine own, about the questions now stirring. What I haue writ I am not wedded to, but if better light appeare, I fall down to it. In discussing these questions, we generally walke in vntroden paths, few casuists speake ἀκριβῶς to them; the whole Christian woorld hath hitherto not attended to Moses Iudicialls, as there rule, & therefore haue bin wanting to cleare vp there proportions. I haue therefore spoken many things, to see of what weight they might be in other mens ballances who are best able to judge; determining nothing without concurrance of thought & apprehensions of brethren for whom (& not for the Court) I prepared them: I could not but satisfy your own desire, intreating you to peruse them your selfe, & to communicate them to none (at least for the present) vnles it be to the Deputy, who I thinke desired to see them also.

Mr. Wilson also let me see a discourse writ with your hand concerning Fornication, Rape, &c: at first I desired to see it only & consider; but perceiuing that invndation of abominable filthinesses breaking in vpon vs; my spirit was pressed to returne an answer to the question about single fornication; & the punishment of it; lettinge passe other things, which I haue no time to peruse; I haue therefore sent yow that answer I haue drawn vp, which should haue come to yow long since, but I haue bin hindred; but now I knew not how safe it was any longer to keepe it by me; he that hath transcribed it hath done me much wrong, by blotting of it, & I have no leysure to write a better. I hope yow will accept of my good will: only do not mistake my ayme; my scope in this answer to the discourse is not to define any thing, but to enquire & to propound to your wisdom some things considerable, & to be considered of at your leysure; that so if yow find them weake & inconsistent with truth yow may cast them by, without any offence to me; if any thing of weight be in them, yow may be pleased to consider of making some

law for the punishing of that sin which I feare else will soone poyson these societies: you may keepe this answer by yow; but I pray send me the other two vnto me when yow haue done with them. The God of all wisdom & mercy counsell, guide, direct yow in your more weighty aff[a]yres. Yours euer,

THO: SHEPARD.

Your apprehensions agaynst reading & learning heathen authors, I perswade myselfe were suddenly suggested, & will easily be answered by B: Dunstar, if yow should impart them to him.

LETTERS OF GILES FIRMIN.*

GILES FIRMIN TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull & our honoured Gouernour John Winthrop, Esq. att his house in Boston. dd.

Much Honoured & Dearest Sir, — I can hardlye thinke of you, much lesse write to your worship, without some greife of spirit; I am glad yet to heare, & cannot but looke vpon it as a great power of a God to carry his creature through such a triall, without discontent or frettinge against his Prouidence. I haue heard a conclusion gathered against these Plantations, because the Lord hath so sadlye afflicted the founders of them in their estates; that therefore it was not a way of God to forsake our Countrye, & expose our selues to such temptations as wee haue done, so long as wee might haue enioyed God in any comfortable measure in the place whence wee came; alledginge that it

* Giles Firmin, born about 1614, was the son of Deacon Giles Firmin, "a godly man, an apothecary of Sudbury in England," who came over in the fleet with Winthrop, and who was chosen deacon of the church in Boston, Oct. 10, 1633, but died within a year after. The son, who had been educated at the University of Cambridge, came to New England with his father, and removed in a few years to Ipswich; from which place two of the following letters are dated. The town granted him one hundred acres of land, on condition that he should remain in the place three years in the practice of medicine. He was a member of the synod at Cambridge in 1637. In a letter to Gov. Winthrop, published in Hutchinson's "Collection of Papers," he says, "I am strongly sett upon to studye divinitie: my studyes else must be lost; for physick is but a meene helpe." Firmin married a daughter of the famous Nathaniel Ward, and probably removed to Haverhill with his brother-in-law, Rev. John Ward. In 1644, or soon after, he returned to England. He was ordained at the age of forty; and was settled as rector of Shalford in Essex, not far from Sudbury in Suffolk, his native place. He appears also to have acted as a medical practitioner during his residence in Shalford. He was ejected from his living in 1662, and retired to Ridgewell in the same county, where he died in April, 1697. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 114; *Hutchinson's Coll. of Papers*, p. 108; *Eliot's Biog. Dict.*; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

is scarcely knowne that any church in a way of separation, as wee are, did euer yet thriue in grace. At first hearinge the thing I was a little affected, onely when I came to consider that those who haue thus suffered in their estates, haue beene no seekers of themselus, but the commonnesse of their spiritts or vnfaithfullness of seruantes, as a means, haue beene the onely cause, I haue againe gathered my thoughtes to rest, hopinge still that God will finde out a way to make your burden lighter. For the letter which your worship sent mee, & for your vndeserued loue therein manifested, I humbly thanke you. Your counsell carriinge reason, & your owne experience in it, I cannot sett light by, hauinge beene a means to calme my disquiett thoughtes, & to stopp them in their hurrye: my ffather [in] law* still holdes his owne, & would yet haue mee rise from hence, my brother Ward wauers much, but rather declines it, from your arguments, & some others which wee finde out together; howsoeuer, if time will giue vs leaue (the Lord willinge) some of vs will veiw Pentuckett† in the springe, because euery one that hath seene it giue it such large commendations for a small towne; the way also thither beeing passable for a great pinnace: onely my feare is that Passatonnaway liuinge there sometimes, hee will hardly bee bought out with a little. My brother Ward hath beene offered the place at Marblehead, when the minister goeth away to Jefferies Creeke who is there. The message was first done to my ffather Ward who should haue enformed my brother of it, but hee kept it in his owne breast, & did not reueale it, till long after by accident hee heard of it; so that now hee fears the opportunity is slipt: diuers enticements hee hath to returne to England, but his wife is vtterlye against it; & hee is willinge, if hee might but

* Rev. Nathaniel Ward. — Eds.

† See a letter from Firmin to Gov. Winthrop, published in Hutchinson's "Collection of Papers," and dated 26. 10. 1639. — Eds.

haue any employment, to stay still. If your worship did but put in a word for him, if you thinke the place conueniente for him, your word would doe much: he did helpe at Rowlye, but because hee was not in couenant, some tooke offence, & hee layed it downe at my vnckles desire, & his church, who else would gladly [haue] enioyed his helpe. This letter I would desire your worship might haue safely deliuered to your sonne, containinge in it some money which I ought him. Thus still crauinge pardon for my boldnesse, with due thankes for your loue & care of mee; my due seruice being presented to you, desiringe the Lord to support your spirit vnder your affliction, & to giue a fauourable issue out of it, I rest

Your worships in any seruice

GILES FFIRMIN.

IPSWICH; 12th of the 12th, 1639.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Cosin Ffirmin."

GILES FIRMIN TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right Worshipful & our honoured Gouernour, John Winthrop Esq. at his house in Boston.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, HONOURED, & DEARE SIR, — I receiued your louing letter with many & heartye thankes for your remembrance of mee; it is no small comfort to mee that I haue a roome in your thoughtes, & that my welfare should bee so much desired & regarded by you as your letter intimates. For the corne which your worship haue procured mee, I am sorry I should put you to trouble, but humbly thankefull that you will doe it, & that you haue answered my bold request: what price it carry your worship mention not, yet I suppose it will bee as cheape as any. I thanke the Lord I haue louinge freinds who doe supply my necessitie, & doe send in beyond my thoughtes. For your counsell about my remouinge into the Bay, I doe

not sett light by it, consideringe from whom it come, hauinge a deeper reach then my selfe: onely for matter of imployment, I haue as much heere as I desire, & loue my plantinge more then it, onely the highest ambition of my thoughtes & desires are to bee vsefull & seruiceable heere in a common way. Freinds I haue, verie louinge ones, & Mr. Rogers ministry very searchinge: yet if your worship shall please to lend mee your thoughtes, I shall receiue them thankefully & veiw them well. Wee haue diuers very ill; & ffluxes & ffeuers, I obserue, are very dangerous. My hast is much, onely I shall waite for your arguments, & in the mean time, with my best seruice & due respects presented to your selfe & second selfe, desiringe the Lord to answere all your loue, I rest.

Your worships vnworthy kinsman

GYLES FFIRMIN.

IPSWICH: 15: 2: mo:

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr Ffirman."

GILES FIRMIN TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull John Winthrop Esq: the elder, at his house in Boston: N. England.

SIR, — You will see by the shortnesse of my letter, that all I intend is but to present the due respect & honour which I ow you, together with thankfullness for your kjndenesse to mee, which I doe not yet forgett. I would not haue spared ljnes, if there had not beene Mr. Peters & others to haue wrjtt to you, who cann gjue you both later, better, & more certajne intelligence then it is possible for mee to doe. It is not a cleare day in England, all clouds are not scattered; sometjmes wee feare they will gather agajne, sometjmes wee hope they wjll not. The experjence of former mercy sometjmes support the abomjnable opinjons & profanenesse, they sometjmes discourage.

or 5 that were with him: when he was come forth, as aforesaid, they came all about mee, & would haue the murtherers, was their cry: bayle they would not suffer me to take, so that I was necessitated to deliver them up into their hands, who haueing of them clapt into chaines, their resolucions are the death of the man & his son, & one more that was in the howse with him. They haue sent for the Councell, & say if they will not try them, they will try them & hang them too, & nothing but their deaths, especially the Captaines, will content them; which sad accidents being fallen out, I most earnestly desire & intreat you, by our ancient freindship & loue, that you would be pleased to come unto mee: their malitious thirsting after bloud, & their resolucion speedily to execute it, at farthest 8 daies hence, doth thus earnestly cause me to desire your present councell & presence, to which end I haue allso sent for Mr. Browne, & this now to you, by two Indians; whereby you will not only (I hope) prevent the effusion of bloud, & settle peace, but allso you will exceedingly oblige me to remaine

Your assured loving freind,

WILLM: CODDINGTON.

I doe hope God hath reserved yow to be a frind to me in this needfull tyme of trouble. Sir, be pleassed to come before this day sennit, the souner the better. *Vale.*

W. C.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Coddington about Capt. Partridge & the men shott."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To John Winthrop, Governour of Conectecutt, dd. by a frind, Joseph Nichallson.

Honored Frind, — Thyne* dated from Harf. June 5, 60, I haue recaiued, and wheras thou desireth to knowe whither I recaiued any of thyne, sent to me, therrin mentioned, I haue not any. I am glad to vnderstand by thy leter thy recoverie out of thy sicknes, & therfore cannot seasse to do the office of a trew frind to putt you in rememberanc to mind him who is life from the dead. Mind the wittnesse of God in the, for that which either in thy sicknes or at any other tyme shewes the sin & evill, if attended vnto, would lead you out of it, even to that which is the seants comforter in the greatest outward afflictions, even in death it selfe. The seants of ould haue, & now doth suffer ioyefully the spoyleing of their goods, yea, & of their lifes. The Lord is comed & comeing in tenn thousandes of his seaints to iudge the world in righteousnes, & all profestiours that are out of the posseshon of the life & power by which the scriptuers wos giuen forth, are aginest Christ. And therfore I chuse raither to suffer affliction with such, then to inioye the pleassueres of sinn, which is but for a season.

And therfore doe by this suffering servant of the Lord, who is comeing to yow in the name of the Lord, take the present opertunetie to salute the. Oh, be not affraid to recaiue the gosple, which is the power of God to saluation, for great is the gaine of godlynes. He is able to informe the in the way of God more perfectly then I am by writeing. Speake with him, & write to me by him; he hath heard of the, & his desire is to see the.

* Coddington, in the latter part of his life, embraced the sentiments of the Quakers, and he here adopts their mode of speech. — Eds.

Oliuer did not, in the tyme of his greatnes, disdaine to speake with him, but forbad his attendance to take of his hatt. Happye had he bene if he had knowne the tyme of his visetation. (I shall send the an answer to John Nortons booke* by him, if I cann procuer it.) I shall not ad at present, but in the bowells of tender loue salute the & thyne, & in the same loue I doe remaine,

Thy loueing frind WM. CODDINGTON.

ROAD ISLAND, the 23 of the 6 mo. 60.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Coddington, Aug. 23, rec: Sept. 2, 1660."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ROAD ISLAND, 29 D. 4 mo, 1672.

HONNORED SIR, — John Winthrope, my most anchent & much respected friend: One cause of my writing to thee is to renew that loue, that hath bene betwene vs, of about 42 yeares continuance, that no linght of tyme might eate it out. Of them 18 assistants first chosen with thy father to gouerne the Massachusetts, I know none that are liueing but thy selfe, Sim. Bradstreete & my selfe.† In which tyme, which was seven yeares, thou bare thy testimony aginest persecution, & so fullfilled that Royall Law to do as thou would be don by. Allso at my last speech with the at Nicholas Vpshalls (at thy comeing out of England) thou expressed a tender respect to our deare friends (the Marthers of Jesus), Wm. Robinson & Marmaduke Stevenson, & thy indeveres to haue saued their liues (thy reward

* The work of Norton, here referred to, is probably "The Heart of New England rent at the Blasphemies of the present Generation concerning Quakers," &c.: Cambridge, 1659. — EDS.

† Winthrop died April 5, 1676; Coddington, Nov. 1, 1678. Bradstreet survived until March 27, 1697. Coddington errs in supposing that John Winthrop, jun., was chosen assistant at the same time with Bradstreet and himself, in 1629; as Winthrop was not elected until 1632. — EDS.

is with the Lord); allso thou expressed thy loue to a friend that was with me, & said none of them should ever suffer by thy hand. Now I shall, in trew loue to thee, relaite what is comed to me (I beliue thou was absent, & hath no hand in it) but because thou art Governour, & it was in thy Jurisdiction, & came to me in writing, viz: that some of our friends abute Rye or Greenage haue had some of their good taken away, because they could not goe to heare those teache which they kenew was not sent of God, nore called by Christ Jesus vnto that worke which they pretend too, as theyer fruites doe manefest, or other causes, which to them is matter of conscience, Thomas Lyon being one, with some others. I desire thee to informe me of the trewth hereof. Thou, for what ever I could larne, or heare, haue liued vnspotted in that kind. Writ to thy aged friend, that hath bene lame of both his hands, & cann hardly hould a penn in his right hand, and hath bene iij weekes vnder the surgons hand, by two Impostimes in my left side; One of them broke, the other the shurgon lanced; & am still vnder his hand, doth with some difficultie writ. I hope thou cannest read it.

And Geo. Ffox being at my howse (who saw thee in England) spake to me to write to thee, viz: that Samuell Winthrope,* thy brother, was with him at Barbadus, came thither to viset him. And Lewis Morris and some other friends was at Antegoe at his howse to viset him & other friends ther. Hee, his wife, & famely is well. And G. F. could wish that thou was like him, and that thou would staue of persecution in thy day, in thy Jurisdiction, that thou mayest not be numbered amongest persecutours, and thee wicked, whose names shall rote. But that thou mayest be a blesseing to the Lord in thy generation, order-

* Samuel Winthrop, son of Gov. John Winthrop of Massachusetts, was born 26th Aug. 1627. He married in Holland; had an estate in Antigua, of which island he became deputy-governor. He died about 1677; leaving, it is said, three sons and three daughters. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

ing all things by his wisdom to his glorie, leting God's people haue free libertie to worshipe him in spirit & trewth, which worshipe Christ sett vp aboue 1600 yeares sence, so that the Holy One may not be limeted to a tribe of prests, who make a traid of the scriptuers, keeping people allwayes vnder theyer teaching them, because they should allwayes be paying of them.

G. F. hath sent the a booke of his by Jere: Bull, & two more now, which thou mayest communecatte to thy Counsell & officers.

Allso I remember before thy last being in England, I sent the a booke, writen by Francis Howgall againest persecution, by Joseph Nicallson, which booke thou loueingly accepted, & communecated it to the Commissioners of the Vnited Collonies, (as I desired) allso J. N. thou entertained with a loueing respect, which incoraged me. As a token of that anchent loue, that for this 42 yeares I haue had to thee, I haue sent the three Manescripts, one of 51 Queries, other is of 15, about the loue of Jesus, &c.

The 3d is why wee cannot come to the worshipe which was not sett vp by Christ Jesus, which I desire thee to communecate to the prestes to answer in thy Juresdiction, thee Massachusetts, New Plimmouth, or elsewher, & send their answer in writing to me. Allso two printed papers to sett vp in thy howse. Its reported in Barbadus that thy brother Sammuell shall be sent Governour to Antegoe.

Allso I cannot but greatly desire that ther might be a peaceable complyance betweene all other Jurisdictions & ours; & the bounds betweene ours, & that of Conectecut, that thou art Governour of, might be determined to prevent differences. I desire thee to indever it ther, as I shall with vs here, for wee (the people of God which are in scor[n]e called Quakers) that honnor all men as our bretheren by Creation, & made after the similetude of God.

And therfore we cannot hurte any man, therfore haue indevered to prevent in our owne Jurisdiction what might tend to the hurt of others, & to bring in that which this 42 yeares we haue auoyded, &c.

And as wee desire thee temporall good of all, & cannot comply with others to thee hurt of any, & therfore haue broken theyer desines; soe much more doe we labor & indevour theyre spirituall & eternall, that all was as wee doe, that is, that they that doe professe the trewth might come into posession of it, Christ being the trew light that inlighteneth every one that comes into thee world, that all through him might be saued. I say, & knowe what I say, that which inwardly cheekes man or woman from sin, being attended vnto & joyned with will lead out of sin, and then the temple will [be] purefyed, & the trew, trew teacher knowne, for that which was the seants teacher 1600 yeares agoe, is the seants teacher even in this our day; we owne no other, even the grace of God that hath brought saluation to vs. So that which hath brought saluation to vs, my desire is that all may come to the same teacher, & be partakers with vs of the same saluation, we desire of him that su[bscri]bes himselfe thy servent for Christ sake. W. Coddington.

I desire my loueing salutations may be presented to thy wife, whom I haue seene & knowne, & to thy children. My wife & our six children, 4 sons & 2 daughters, & our fammelie is in good health, God be blessed. *Idem*

W. Coddington.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Coddington, of June, 1672: Rec: in July, 1672."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected friend John Winthrope, Governour of Conecticute, dd. per John Burnejate.

Honered Friend, — My last to thee was of the 29 D. 4. 72, which Richard & Ester Smyth informed me they sent it to thee, so that they made noe doubt of thee safe convaience of it, with George Ffox bookes to thee, to which I shall refere thee. I haue other writings of G. F. not yet copied, which, if thou desireth, when I heare from thee, I may convaie them vnto thee; sence whose departuer, even that daye, in a letter inclossed to John Cranson, our Deputie Governour, was inclosed 14 propositions to George Fox or other of his Countrie men at Newport, on Rode Island, who say they are apostles or meassenger[s] of Jesus Christ, which he* offered aginest all comers to maintaine in publike, the first 7 at Newport, the other 7 at Prouidence. I shall not neede to trouble thee with further relation conserneing them (he had disperced them in to the Massachusetts), but refere the to thee berer hereof, John Burnjate, & John Easton & Josua Coggeshalls, two of our Magistrates, whose faithers thou knewest. Allso sence G. Ffox departuer, William Edmandson is ariued at this Island, who haueing giuen out a paper to all in authoritie, Dat. Road Island, 5 : 6 mo. 72, which, my wife haueing coppied, I haue here inclossed presented the therwith.

I might write to thee, my anchent friend, of the Massachusetts imprisoneing sixe of our friends laitely, & banishing two of our friends to Barbadus, Sollomon Eccles & Nicholas Alexander of Jemeco, a Justice of peace, & a

* The writer refers here, without naming him, to Roger Williams's offer to dispute with George Fox and his associates. See "George Fox digged out of his Burrowes," &c.: Boston, 1676. — Eds.

Captin by Commission from the Kinge. Their marchants doe not take it well. They haue tould them they must leaue of their persecution, or they must leaue of their traiding in to foraine partes, as I might relate, but I shall leaue thee to the relation of them aforenamed. They haue put them out of one prison in to an other, they being sickely & weake, for they are shiped for Barbadus.

I hope (God willing) by Solomon Eccles returne, who purposeth to visett Antegoe, & the Islands wher thy brother Samuell is, I hope to heare from him of thy brother Samuell.

I now vnderstand of John Stubbs freedom to visett thee (with the said Jo: B.) he is a larned man, as wittnes the battell dore on 35 languages. He cann relaite to thee a loueing conference betwene their minister at the ould meeting howse in Boston, Oxnenbrige, & him. I shall not need to trouble thee furder. Thesse or some of these, I doubt not but thou wilt see, by whom I may here from thee; & therfore with our trew loue to thee, thy wife, & thyne, I rest thy ever loving friend,

Wm. Coddington.

Road Island, 23 D. 6. 72.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. William Coddington, rec: Jan: 28, 1672."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To Jo: Winthrop, Governour of his Maiesties Collony of Conecticon: These with speed.

Honered Sir, — W[e r]ecaiued yours August 2d: 73, and haue seteled a post from this Island to New London, & haue had intelegence from the Massachusetts Governour, & this day from New Plimmouths Governour, & shall be diligent to obserue what we cann conserneing [the]

enemye, & to giue yow spedie intellegence therof, & doe acknowlege your loue to vs for your information, and so remaine Your anchen loving friend,

W. CODDINGTON.

DAT. ROAD ISLAND, 6 D. 6. 73.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Coddington, rec: Aug: 22:"

WILLIAM CODDINGTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To John Winthrop, Gouernour of Conetticut, dd.

WORTHY SIR, MY ANCHENT FRIEND, — That trewth & righteousnes maye florish in our dayes is the accation of my writeing: viz: Josua Hubard, called a minister, comeing from Barbadus, haueing bene ther some mounthes, being in New Plimmouth Jurisdiction, tooke to him the aduontage of Generall Court to publish & auer, that Geo: Ffox, the innosent, was a notorious publican or siner, & did exercise severall of his debauched or bestuall practize in Barbadus, with women ther, & that for such his vnciueall practizes, the govermentt had not onely punished, but banished him, the said Geo. Ffox, out of the said Island of Barbadus, if he had not fleed priuately from thence: therfore that trewth & righteousnes might stand over deceite & falsehud, are these fower inclossed sertifyecates sent to thy selfe & Counsell, as they haue bene to the Governour of the Massachusetts & the governor of New Plimouth & there Counsell, wher they haue had good accepteance & publification to cleare his innosencie, hopeing the like from your selues; the said Hubard being likelie to settell in your Jurisdiction at South Hole, desireing that they may be as publike as his slaunderous defamationes hath bene, viz. Christo: Codrington, who was then Gouernor of the said Island, Dan. Serles, who hath bene formerly Governour, & then of the Counsell,

Judge Fretwell & Judge Farmer, two Princepall Judges in theire Courtes. Ther is allso a printed booke, which Judge Ffrotwell mentions in his certifycate. I shall not need to inlarge, but refer you to the certificate & booke. The said Jos. Hubard was commended to some of our Island by fiue of the Massachusetts ministers, as theire reuerend brother, &c., as in their letter doth appeare, & was in this Island one winter. He might preach as often as he would, none hindering him, but that he walked not in life & conversation as became the gosple of Jesus Christ, but so vainely that some vaine persons here did giue him the name of a hoge preist, from some actions of his at Cononecute Island; the particulers I shall forbeare to mention at this tyme. Onely let him looke to the witness of God in his owne consience, whither that name was not rightly giuen him. Not to giue yow further trouble, I shall ade a few lynes about what hath bene by three of yours, viz., Dept: Go^r^ Leete, (so called,) James Richards & Maiour Palmes, practized in the Kings province, some of the Naragansett haueing decaitefully indevored to haue Conectecut authoritie to vse Jurisdiction in the Narragansett Countrie, allthough the inhabitants haue accepted & ingaged to be trew to this his magesties Collonie of Road Island & Providence Plantations. And allthough that Conecticut Collonie say they had a Charter of it first, yet its evident the Kinge hath determined the said Narragansett Countrie to be within his gratious Charter to vs granted, as I haue writen to thee more at large heretofore, to which I refere the, & that what thou did act therin by arbitration, as their Agent, & our Agent for vs, ought to be owned as publike agents, & its included in ours, & is the Kinges last will that Pawcatuke riuer alis Narragansetts, is the bounds betwene vs. Besids, the Kings Commissoners giueing vs, accordinge to dew right, possecon & Jurisdiction in all the Narragansetts Countrie, in thy presence, the Governour of Conecticut, Maiour Mason, & your

maistrate Willis, & diuers others of your Colonie, & of other Collonies, too manye yet liueing to be denyed, which had they so donn we would not haue molested yow, & the Kinge by his Royall letters pattent, & other his gratious letters sence conserneing the same, hath concluded & declared the Jurisdiction & the goverment of the said lands & inhabitants to be clearely with in the Jurisdiction of the said Colonie of Road Island & Prouidence Plantations; & so we haueing peaceablie possesed it tenn yeares, haue meet with obstructions by some of your Jurisdiction, by which justice hath not had free passage in some respectes, but concluding it great contempte for any to oppose the Kings determinations in his magesties methodicall progresse to establish vs in that Jurisdiction, & to sett out bounds in his said Charter, & by his Commissioner[s] their act, by his letter to vs, extant, in my hand to be sene, giueing to vs the libertie of our consience, that so the Vnited Collonies remouing from vs might not haue any accation or oportunetié put into their hands to persecute vs. And considering the great & vniust inequaletie for any to take such our said posessions by his magestie so gratiously granted, without dew progresse of law, &c., & that we may be found faithfull to the trust to vs comited, & that we are resolued, as far as we are able, to preserue his magesties intrest, & his subiectes peace, in these parts of his dominions, we haue nomenated & impowered officers of the peace in these parts, to whome, with all the Inhabitants, we intend all dew assistance & incoragment, & we are perswaded that by decatefull & falce information, the gouermentt of Conecticut haue bene stired vp, & haue acted in the disturbing the peace & quiet of this Collonie, & therfore we haue required all persons in the Norragansett Countrie to disowne & not to be any wayes subiect to any authoritie of Conecticute or any other Collonie, except onely from the authoritie of this his magesties Collonie of Road Island & Providence Plantations, without especall order from [his]

magestie. This & much more haue bene in priuate, as allso in publike, before the people haue bene by vs aledged, wherwith we profered your said officers that if they were not satisefyed we would refere to the Kinge to determine, but that was not by yours accepted, & we haue no reason to refere it to your selues, that is any of the Vnited Collonies, the King's determination being denied: but I shall not further inlarge at the present, I, for my part, desireing, & I desire the allso, to indeauer the peace of these tow Collonies; & thus with my loueing salutations presented to thy selfe, (whom I was informed I might see in the Narragansett, therfore I put myselfe of that vyage with the Counsell) I desire allso my salutations may be presented to thy Counsell, espesally to them that I meet with, Dept. Governour Leete, James Richards, Maior Palmes, & whome ever else knowe me, I desire you present my respect to; & so take my leaue of the, being very desirous to see the, I rest

Thyne in trew loue,

William Coddington.

Dat. Road Island, the 15 D. of 4 mo. 1674.

LETTERS OF NEHEMIAH BOURNE.*

NEHEMIAH BOURNE AND THOMAS HAWKINS† TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull and his muche honored ffreind, Mr. John Winthrop, Esqr. Gouernour of the Mattachusetts Baye att his house in Boston. dd.

Exon, 14th 9br 1639.

Right Worshippfull, — After our due respects remembred, & our best desires for your good health and happines, these may serue to intimate to your worshipp our safe arriual att Plymouth, through God's riche mercy & good prouidence, being all in health, on the 10th day of this instant month. Being so deeply ingaged by so many bonds, we could not pass by this oportunity to acquaint you with suche newes as is brought to our hands: hauing suche short time to express our desires, we humbly craue your worshipps kind acceptance here of. So it is, that

* Nehemiah Bourne is mentioned in the list of the settlers in Dorchester who came over in 1635. He is called by Winthrop a ship-carpenter, and was a resident of Charlestown in 1638. In 1640, he removed to Boston; but went to England four years later with Israel Stoughton and "divers other of our best military men," as recorded by Winthrop, and entered the Parliamentary Army, where he served as major in Col. Rainsborough's regiment. He may possibly be the person mentioned by Goffe, the regicide, in a letter printed in a former volume of these Collections, as returning from Holland to England after the Restoration. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 245; *Hist. of Dorchester*, pp. 101, 107; 3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, i. 60; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† Thomas Hawkins was a shipwright in London; had a grant of land in Charlestown, 1636, but was then living at Dorchester. He afterwards removed to Boston; was admitted freeman, 1639; and was representative the same year. He was commander of the ships which accompanied La Tour in his expedition against D'Aulney, in 1643. He went abroad, and died in England in 1648. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 135, 238; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

vppon our arriual we heare that the 6th month last past there arriued 70 sayle of the King of Spains Armado, all great shipps, in the Channell. As they came along about the Ile of Wight, there mett with them about 35 sayle of Fflemings & interchanged many blowes, but they left & went vp into the Downes, & the Fflemings followed them, & they both anchored there; only there being then Sir John Pennington, Vice Admiral of the narrow seas, with 4 shipps, & they came & rode between them, & suffred them not to fight. The General of the Spaniards sent vp with speed to the King for protection, & for conuoy by his Majestis shipps, pretending they were bound to Dunkerk, with 20,000 men & some treasure, for the Emperor's forces (but what their intentions were, God knowes, but its not without suspition that there ends were worse, they hearing how things stood between the 2 kingdoms,) but the King & State denyed them any convoy, only gaue them leaue to take supply of prouision & munition they wanted, & gaue them leaue to stay there vnder his protection, suche a certaine sett time, & then he would leaue them. But great hast there was made to expedite many shipps of the kings & marchants into the Downes, to keep the narrow seas, & al the coast in that quarter was raisd vp in arms, not knowing there intentions. There time being expired that the king had limited, the king sent downe to Sir John Pennington, to take no further protection of them, & so he waghed anchor, & the Hollenders lett slipp, & also the Spaniards, & imediately fell to it.

Now before this time the States of Holland had dispatcht away so many shipps to the other, that they were 120 shipps; they hauing putt themselus into such an order, appointing euery ship to there quarters: 6 of them presently boarded the Admiral of the Spainards, & left hir not till they sunke hir downe right. 8 or 9 more they burnt & sunk: 8 or 10 they putt ashore, some on our

coast, some on the cost of Ffrance: 18 more they tooke & caryed away to Fflushing: al the rest escaped to Dunkerk, al but one that now is [at] Plymouth that we were aboard on, & spake with the Captain; being attended by diuers of the States shipps that narrowly watch hir, in so muche that she cannot escape them.

As touching the Scotch buisnes: it is as we heard, the warr is seased, & forces withdrawne: but what the issue wilbe we know not, but its muche feared it wil breake out afresh againe: as we heard they do demand allowance from the State towards the great charge they haue bin necessitated vnto, for their defense. Thus in muche rudenes & brookenes we haue made bold to acquaint your worship with such news as we haue, intreating your acceptance & your remembrance to God for vs. With our seruice to your wife, to Mr. John Winthrop, to Mr. Cotton & Mr. Wilson, we comend you to God, & rest, att your Worshipps seruice to our power,

NEHEMIAH BOURNE.
THOMAS HAWKINS.

Your otter you were pleased to comend to me to present to the Kinge, after we had kept her very carefully in the ships hold 3 weekes, one day, while we were att dutie, she gott vp betwene decks and run out in to the sea through a little scuttle hole in the ships counter, that I conceaued she could nott haue gotten out of, and was drowned. Itt mutch trobled me for the present, but it cold nott be helped.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Bourne, from England."

NEHEMIAH BOURNE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worthie Mr. John Winthropp, Gouernour of the Mattachusetts Baye, these present in Boston.

Right Worshippfull, and my very much honoured ffreind: After my due respects presented to your selfe and vertuous wife: hauing so fitt an opertunity, & being ingaged by so many obligations therunto, I cannot omitt, but do make bold to present these few rude lines vnto yow. Wishing all increase of grace & peace, with all the fruites of righteousnes which are by Jesus Christ, to the praise & glory of God; & humbly intreating the Lord to double his Spiritt vpon yow, according to the greate importance of your imployments & affaires; with muche prosperity, and long dayes, to His glory, and the comfort & rejoicing of that greate people you are intrusted with: I am att present in health, & so haue bin since my departure; through the riche mercy of our God: but haue looked many times towards that good land, and not altogether without some breathings and longings after those pretious liberties once injoyed (though uery vnproffitably.) Truly, Sir, my thoughts are sadned to recount them, & what little improuement I made; but I hope this long abstinence will make me sett a higher price vpon New England then euer. It's deploreable to se what we are forced to behold. Concerning Newes; att present there is little but what you haue heard (I suppose) ere now, as touching the Spanish Armado, of which I made bold to aduise you formerly ffrom Dartmouth. Concerning the Scotts; here is great preparation for warr, & is out of doubt against them, notwithstanding the parlament, which is like to proceed the 13th of the next month, which makes many wise men stand, not knowing what to iudge of things: and att present I think mens hearts are shaken more then euer,

notwithstanding the parlament. Many that haue kept themselues fast in their ingagements, waiting & hooping for a good issue of this great desighne, that would now willingly disingage themselues, but cannot: the times that are approaching threaten heauy & sad things: the good Lord be intreated to thinke vpon His poor people that yett apprehend it not. If God giue an opertunity, I shal speake more att large: in the mean time I thinke it behooues al the Lords people to double their duty, & improue all the interest they haue in heauen, for this poore land. I haue made bold to appoint my wife to wait vpon your worshipp about Eaton's buisnes, if she need. Thus, not to be ouer bold & tedious: with my desire to present my seruice to Mr. John Winthropp & Mr. Stephen, to Mr. Cotton & Mr. Wilson, humbly intreating your prayers & the continuance of your remembrances att the Throan of grace for vs, as we haue greate need; in regard of that we meet withal within, & from without; with harty thanks for all your former loue & respects, I comend you to God, who is the great Councellor, & to our Lord Jesus, who is the great Sheepheard of his fflocke, & humb[l]y take my leaue & rest

Your Worshipps most obliged in all duty,

NEHEMIAH BOURNE.

LONDON, 4th 1st Mo. 1639.

That which I can testifie is that ther was a plaine bargan for ovght I covld see, for Mr. Bridges bid him to fetch the money and one to cary it away; the reason as I conceive that hee sold it to Mrs. Hvdsons, was becavse Mr. Canes man brovght not the money beefore Mr. Bridges had presant ocation to goe ovt of the towne, and told him soe.

[This last paragraph is by a different hand, on the back of the letter, and seems to have no connection with it.]

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "M^r. Bourne, p^r M^r. Goost."

NEHEMIAH BOURNE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull John Winthropp Seniour, Gouernour of the Mattachusetts, Boston, in New England. Per Am. Q. D. G.

FFROM ABORD THE MARCHANT IN BELL ILE IN NEWFOUNDLAND.
The 12th Aug. 1648.

HONORED SIR, — The duty I owe to your selfe so strongly obliges me, that though it may seeme too much boldnes, yet I rather choose to aduenture that supposed sensure, then to be iudged vngratefull or fforgettfull. Therfore I do with my heart and hand present you with all due respects & seruise, and salute you in our Lord Jesus with my deare loue; Gods prouidence denying me at present to se your face, although I was once in a faire way to haue attained my desire; therfore, being so neere your borders, I make bold to aduise yow thereof, hauing little to say but to assure yow that I am yours in heart, though kept at a distance for the present, by my lawfull and necessary imployments; and I cannot but look westward. The Lord knowes my heart reaches further then I can with my body attaine. I know I am lyable to the apprehensions and conclusions that all may conceaue and conclude from my absence, & the present remouall of my ffamily, yet do assure yow that Gods prouidence outwent my purposes, the last viodge I was in New England; ffor when I came from England to yow, I had it not in my heart that my mother Earning would haue returned, whose going was the cause that putt me vpon a kind of necessity of sending home my children, being young; and it was beyond my wife her thought & expectation either to se mother or children at London; therfore ther was no desighne in vs, either at first or last, going ouer to pluck vp my stakes, or to disioynt myselfe from yow. But what need I trouble your worshipp with any such apoligie or defence. I know none haue any cause to complaine of my absence. I haue

cause to bewaile my owne barrenes and vnproffitablenes amongst yow, and I do ingeniously acknowledge it. Gods prouidence towards me is good, and his promise is true, by experience I find in my negotiations, and amidst various temptations I meet withall, yet by the power of the L. Jesus kept, & I trust shalbe to the end. I bless God I now reape the fruite of New Inglish showers and dewes, and the help God sends me from Sion doth renew my strength, which is but weaknes itselfe. Could I with honor or honesty be discharged, and acquitt my selfe in my present imployment and trust, by my freinds (who haue willingly aduentured with me, and haue receaued little incouragement yet,) I should bend my might towards yow, if I might be seruiseable to yow and the churches. Howeuer, doubt not but, by will of God, to se yow the next summer. As for newes, Mr. Graues hath filld yow with most that was when I came away. What hath passed since is the rebellion of Kent, Essex, and other parts, the reuolt of 7 shipps of the Parlament, begining first at the Viceadmirall. The attempt for the Kings escape from the Ile Wight, who intended, if escaped, to haue bin at the hedd of thos armies; and the success of the Generall in thes affaires; all which I haue largely, though rudely written of to Mr. Cotton, not being willing to trouble your Worshipp with so tedious a discourse; but haue sent you some of the latest papers, which wil report the same to yow. Sir, lett me haue so much fauour as to present my servise to Mrs. Winthropp, and to my honord ffreinds Mr. Bellingham, Mr. Salttonstall, Mr. Hibbon, Mr. Dudley, Mr. Endicott, I should haue sayd with the rest of the honored Magistrates.

Sir, suffer me to ly in your boosome, and haue thoughts concerning me as one who desires nothing more then to be accounted worthy to be a seruant of the Lord & his Church, and so desire fauour to remaine

Your Worships to be comanded

NEHEM: BOURNE.

Sir, By the last shipp that came from England the master reports that the shipps reuolted were in Holland. The Castles in the Downes closely beseiged. This man was comanded ashore by on of the Castles, & kept prisoner. They tooke away much prouision from him. Coll. Rainborrow comands the party that beseiges. They had gotten into the moats, & they could not hold out few days.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Maior Bourne from Newfoundland, 12 (6) 48."

NEHEMIAH BOURNE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

These for my worthy freind, John Winthropp, Esqr, at his lodgings, next doore to the going in to Collman Streete Church yard, ouer against the Kings Armes, present.

Honored Sir, — After I parted from yow on Satterday euening, I caled to remembrance that I am ingaged about a buisnes this day in the afternoone, in London, for which I am vnder obligation on Fryday last, & haue occasioned a freind or two to meete on purpose; therefore must craue your excuse as to our meeting at Coll: Middletons.

But I suppose there is nothing can suffer prejudice by my absence. What I told you I shall certainly performe, that if Capt. Goslyn will pay me the mony so long due, I will gladly accomodate Capt. Scott with 50*li.* more then I haue promised; & I doubt not the least but yow may influence him so farr in so just a case (which I intreate yow to do for me). As for what I spake about Coll. Middleton, I am to pay him money, but I confess I am vnwilling to putt him vpon doing any thing against his will. But if he will offer to do it that way, I shall willingly pay it in for him. But rather the first expedient about Capt. Goslyn, if yow please to fauour me therein, & vse your

interest. My respects to him, as also to Coll. Midleton; so remaine

Your assured freind and seruant,

N. Bourne.

Ratcliff, 6 Jan. 1661.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Bourne."

NEHEMIAH BOURNE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Ffor my honored ffreind John Winthrop, Esqr, att London, these.

In Hamburgh, 19 Apr. 1662.

Honoured Sir, — I haue yours of the 4th instant, by which I se your buisnes works hopefully, which I wish may euery way answer expectati[on.] Seuerall of our freinds are looking that way, others there be who haue a good mind & no less afection to the place & people, but are afrayde of the prickles that are neere the rose, least the one may vex more then the other refresh. Some reall demonstration of the contrary will doubtles satisfy & incourage many whose eyes may be towards that contry. As for my owne part, I am not so farr prejudiced, but I haue charity & hope enough left to counterpoise my jealousy & doubts, yet haue too much cause to lament the seuere & narrowe spiritt amongst them who haue had a large and plentifull experience of the grace of God to themselues, when at worst & since. I do vnfeighned waite vpon the good hand of the Lord, to point out my way. I thanke yow for your letters to N. E. in my behalfe, & I hope, when they better vnderstand the true state of the case, they will judge it but iustice to relinquish what is not their due, nor any part of the deceaseds mind, & accordingly be as willing to repay as to receaue. I craue your continued kindnes herein, that so the former may proue effectuall. Sir, I find in the close of yours an effect

of your good affection to me, by the motion suggested, which I cannot but giue yow thanks for, but to returne any further answer at present cannot be expected, because I am much a stranger to the person, as also to the thing. I shall eye the Lord, & consult with my relations, from whom I cannot expect much light in this cause, because they are no more acquainted then my selfe. I knowe your candor will allowe me well to consider of such an important case, and freedome to be plaine, if I meete not with sutablenes. Be assured I haue a greate respect & honour for your name, & howeuer the Lord incline as to this, yet I shall alwais maintaine a hearty affection for yow & yours, which is the same thing craued by your reall freind & seruant, N. Bourne.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Bourne, recd: May 2, 1662."

LETTERS OF SAMUEL MAVERICK.*

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Worshipfull Sir, — My service beinge remembered, you may be pleased to vnderstand that there is a difference betwene one Ralfe Greene and Jno. Peirse, each challinginge a promise of mariage from a maide servant left with me by Mr. Babb, beinge daughter vnto a freind of his. Either of them desired my consent within a weeke one of the other, but hearinge of the difference, I gave consent to neither of them, desiringe there might be an agreement first amongst themselues, or by order from your worship. The maide hath long tyme denied any promise made to Greene, neither can I learne that there was euer any contract made betwene them, yett I once herd her say shee would haue the said Greene, and desired my consent therevnto ; but it rather seemes shee first promised Peirse, and still resolues to haue him for her husband. For the better

* Samuel Maverick, born about 1602, came to New England as early as 1624, as appears by his letter to Sampson Bond, published in this collection. He is supposed by some to have come over the year before with Robert Gorges. He was found here by the Massachusetts Company in 1630; having built a small fort on Noddle's Island (now East Boston), which was furnished with four pieces of artillery. The name of Maverick is found among those who "desire to be made freemen," 19th October, 1631; and he was admitted the following year. He had a grant of land in Maine from the "President and Council of New England" in 1631. After the Restoration, he went to England, and was appointed one of the Royal Commissioners "for reducing the Dutch at the Manhados; visiting the Colonies in New England, hearing and determining all matters of complaint, and settling the peace and security of the country." His associates were Col. Nicolls, George Cartwright, Esq., and Sir Robert Carr (see *ante*, p. 40). He arrived at Piscataqua, in company with the latter, July 20, 1664. Maverick resided, after the recall of the Commission, in New York; and died there before May, 1676. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 27; *Hutchinson's Mass.*, i. 230; *Sumner's Hist. of East Boston, passim ; Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

clearinge of it, I haue sent all such of my peopell as can say any thinge to the premises, and leave it to your wise determination, conceivinge they all deserue a checke for theire manner of proceedinge, I take leave, and rest

Your Worships Servant at commaund,

Samuel Mavericke.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Mavericke about his servants marriage."

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull Jno. Winthorp Esqr: these present, Boston.

Sir, — I vnderstand there is a report abroade that I should be privey to the flight of one Bell, who was bound to appeare this court. He and one Morecroft I found at my howse one day last weeke, who acquainted me with the buisines they are bound ouer for, craved my advise; my answar was, Inocencey was a bulworke, wished them if cleare of the fact, to stay; if guiltey, left it to theire owne discretion. They professed innocencey, and, as I vnderstoode, resolved to stay; as Morecroft can testifie. Be pleased to certifie so much, if occasion be. I assure yow it is truth. I know there want not those which hunt after any thinge which may redound to my discreditt. Your selfe, euer honored Sir, and honest Capt. Gibones, are the only men which ever dealt plainely with me, by way of reproofe and admonition, when you have heard of any thinge in which I have beene faultie, which I hope hath not beene water spilt vpon a stone, and by it you have much oblidged me. There are those which take an inquisition like course, by indeavoring to gaither what they can from malcontented servants or the like; which course I conceive is not warrantable; the former course is more commendable, and will worke better effects. I hope God will enabel me in some measure to walke inoffencively, but findinge

by 10 yeares experience that I am eie sore to diverse heare, I have seriously resolved to remoue hence, as sone as I have dispatched away Mr. Allies ship with fish, which ship is daily expected. Al other hinderances are already remoued. My well wishes shall euer attend the Plantation, and your selfe and yours in particular, howeuer. Be pleased to passe by my to longe neglect of visitinge yow, havinge not beene in Boston these fower monethes; as there is no one more engaged to yow, so there is none which more honores you then

Your worshipès reall freinde and servant

SAMUEL MAVERICKE.

MARCH 1th, 1640.

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much honored freinde Jno. Winthropp Esqr, Gouernour of Conecticott, these present, Hartford.

HONORED SIR, — Yours of the 28th of October I receiued; yf we had not heard of your beinge comming this way, I had within two dayes beene on my journey towards you, and from thence to Boston. Coll. Nicholes his journey to Delawarr hath for present hindered our haply desired meetinge. It was suddayne, but a necessitie of it; Sir Robt. Carr,* (tumbling in plunder) against order resoluing to sett vp his habitation there, when as indeede he was with all expedition, by order, to returne; that himselfe, Coll: Cartwright, and my selfe might haue visited the Col-

* After the reduction of New Netherland, the Royal Commissioners sent "Sir Robert Carr, with ships under his command, to reduce the inhabitants on Delaware Bay and River; which he effected without much difficulty: for, on his arrival at New Amstel (Newcastle), the Dutch and Swedes, on the 1st of October, 1664, capitulated, and surrendered their fort." See Articles of Capitulation, &c., in Proud's "Pennsylvania," pp. 122, 123. In the latter part of October, Nicolls was commissioned to repair to Delaware Bay for the government of that place. See Smith's "History of New Jersey," pp. 47–50, for a full history of this transaction. — EDS.

lonies as farr as Boston before the winter. I am now designed for Roade Iland in Mr. Brownes Ketch, to giue a visitt to my freinds there; from thence I intend for Plymouth, and thence for Boston, and thence more eastward as wether shall permitt.

I iumpe with yow in admiration, that the fort in Delawarr should, by storme, be taken, and not a dropp of English bloud shed, they having 18 peeice of ordinance loaden, and not one discharged. The Companyes goods and the estates of those that were in the fort, refusinge to consent to reasonable artickles, became plunder; all else, both Sweeds and Dutch, by complyinge saued theire estates; so that now, thourough Gods mercey, the two Colloneyes, Virginia and New England, are once more intirely ioyned together, vnder the Gouerment of our soueraigne lord the Kinge, and vnder him his royall highnes the Duke of Yorke. Some inhabitants of Maryland were there, and offered to engage in six weekes tyme to loade our hired shipp, they hauinge but five miles, by land, to bringe theire tobacco ouer.

This very hower I receiued a letter from Mr. Bushrod, in Virginia, dated the 24th October, in which, for newes, he writes that the Turke hath receiued a great ouerthrow, the Visier Bashaw, cheife Commander, slayn, with ninetey thousand others, and 70,000 taken prisoners with bagg and baggage. The Intelligence bore date 27th of September.

I pray excuse me for not writinge more largely, and to my old freind Mr. Allen, for not writinge to him at all. The truth is, we are much troubled with complaints and other thinges. Gouernour Nicholes hath ordered vs to send boats for vs on the other side, for him this day seuennight. Sir, I am in hast, but shall euer remayne

Sir, Your freinde and Seruant,

Samuell Mavericke.

You may be sure the Gouernour will be heare the tyme aforesaid, vnlesse some extrordinary thinge fall out: and I hope within 4 dayes after, Sir Robt. Carr and Coll. Cartwright will follow me; whither by you or not, cannot yett be agred on.

New Yorke, Nour. 9th, 64.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Sam: Maueryck, rec. in the way to N: Haven, going to N: Yorke."

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his very much honored freind Jno. Winthrop Esqr. Gouernour of Connecticott, these present.

Mr. Winthropp, and my most honored Freinde, — On Satterday last I vnderstood there was a horse sent me, by whome I knew not, and conceiuing it might be from the Collony of Conecticott, there beinge at that tyme, (and for ought I yett know) a dispute betwene the Duke of Yorke and that Collony, I resolued, till that dispute were ended, to receiue nothing as from that Collony, and tould your sonne last night so much, in effect; but being by Leiut. Budd and others informed that these horses were mearely as from your selfe, without any relation to the Collony; on those termes I thankefully accept of it, and wish I may deserue that fauour. The accord betweene the Gouernour & your Collony may be better made vp without me then with me. I know the Duke of Yorke his right, and the trew intent of your pattent to well to consent to what I perceiue will be demanded; howeuer, if any accord be fully made betweene the Gouernour & Coll: Cartwright, I shall freely consent vnto it, and euer remayne

Sir, Your assured & obliged freinde,

Samuell Mavericke.

Nour. 26th, 64.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr Maverick, about the horse sent him."

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right worshipfull Jno. Winthrop, Esqr. Gouernour of Conecticott, these present with care and speede.
Comitted to Zachary Crispe to deliuer to Gouernour Winthrop.
Two packetts of letters for Sir Robt. Carr.
Two packets for Generall Nicolles.
2 letters for Capt. Breeden.
These papers were deliuered on Wensday att noone, and promised to be att Hartford on Satterday.

Much honored Sir, — Mr. Richards hath by this bearer imparted the newes from England. This serues to enclose his Majesties letter to yow directed, and to desire yow with all possible speede to send these packetts to New Yorke, some of them much concerninge his Majesties seruice. We haue receiued graciouse letters from his Majestie, who is well satisfied with what we haue acted heare, and manifesteth it not in bare words only, but out of his royall bountie hath sent each of vs considerable gratuities.

The Gouernor of the Messachusetts, Maiour Hawthorne, and 3 more whome they will chuse out amongst them selues, are commanded in to England, to answar before his Majestie for theire actinges heare. Sir Robt. Carr also, & my selfe, or one of vs, must likewise goe. Per the next you shall haue a coppie of all papers. I desire to hasten away the messenger: yf he come to yow a Satterday night next, pray add to what I haue giuen him heare 5 or 10 *shs.*, and I will repay yow. I doe it to cause him to make the more haste. Sir, in haste, I remayne

Sir, Your affectionate freinde and seruant,

Samuell Mavericke.

Boston, Wensday the 9 of August, about 12 of the clocke.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr Samu: Maverick, rec: Aug: 12: 1666."

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Euer honored Sir, — About 3 weekes since I made bould to trouble yow with convayance of seuerall letters to New Yorke, which I vnderstand came there the same day seuennight they went hence; by the same bearer I sent yours from his Majestie, which I heare yow haue receiued. There came with it letters for vs, wherein his Majestie declares himselfe well content and satisfied with what euer we haue donne in this cunterey, and well pleased with yours and the other Collonies free and voluntary submission; and resents as ill the Messachusetts standing out, or rather Rebellion; and by a signification of his pleasure, expresely commands the Gouernour and Maior Hathorne and 3 or 2 more of theire owne chusinge, to repaire in to England. Some one, at least, of vs must goe ouer also, to accquainte him with the present state of the cunterey, and to doe what seruice else he hath to command vs.

Neither by word or writinge can the Gouernor be prevayled with to call his Councell, to receiue this signification. I belieue he desires not to see it. There are writts come fourth for calling a Generall Court about the 10th of September; they come out vnder the Deputies hand alone.

Heare is no newes come since from England, and for 5 weekes now past, not a vessell from the Cariba Ilands, although at least 6 expected many weekes since. Euen now I receiued letters from Sir Tho. Modyford, Gouernour of Jamica, who confirmes what some weekes since he aduised me of, the taking of Prouidence Plantation from the Spaniard, 150 negroes, and 7000 peeces of eight, and that he hath sent downe Maiour Sam: Smith, with a supply, & to be Gouernour there, and he saies we are prepar-

inge to engage the French, who seeme to be much puffed vp with the suckcesse at St. Christophers. We heare by the sea men that before they came away, the privaters had brought in 3 considerable prizes. Good newes for Jno. Hull.

Sir, this gent., the bearer, goes with an intent to remayne in those parts; if he finde any encouragement, especially from your selfe, he intends to remayne there. Since I heard of his intent so to doe, I haue made some enquirie, and finde a very good character giuen of him, as to honesty and abilitie for his profession, Phisicke and Chirurgerie, and I haue taken obseruation of his caryage since he hath beene heare, and finde it to be ceuill. Sir, I know not how [to] goe about to exhort yow to be courteous; I know your nature is such; and if, at my request, yow shew him any favour, I shall acknowledg it as a curtesie. With my humble seruice to your selfe and good lady, and best respects to your children, I remayne, Sir

Your affectionat freinde & seruant,

Samuell Mavericke.

Augt. 29th, 1666.

I send yow a coppie of his Majesties letter to vs, that yow may see he approues of what we haue donn. I pray send me a coppie of that which yow receiued.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr Sam: Mavericke."

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrop Esqr., Gouernour of his Majesties Collony of Conecticott, these present. Hartford. Per Mr. Butler.

Euer honored Sir, — I wrote vnto you about 20 dayes since, and gaue you a breife account of the newes we had by the first permissionated ship for this yeare; six dayes since arived a second, and is the last will euer come on that account: the first came out before the permissions were recaled; this last Coll: Nicolls gott leaue for, with much difficulty. A letter from Coll: Nicolls to the Gouernour imparts as followeth. Staten Iland is adiudged to belong to N: Yorke. The L. Barkley* is vnder a cloud, and out of all his offices, and offers to surrender vp the Patent for N. Jarsey. Sir G: Carterett,† his partner, is in Ireland, but it is thought he will likewise surrender, and then N. Yorke will be inlarged. The L. Arlington is made L: Treasurer of England; the Duke of Buckingham, L: Leiutenant of Ireland. Coll: Nicolls hath deliuered the complaynts and charges against Scott,‡ and acquainted his Majestie, the Queene, and Duke, with his lavish extravagant expressions concerning each of them heare. The sight of Coll: Nicoles made him forsake White-

---

* John, Lord Berkeley, of Stratton, one of the Privy Council in 1663, and one of the original proprietaries of New Jersey, to whom this territory was granted by the Duke of York, 23d June, 1664. In 1670, he was Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland; was appointed ambassador extraordinary to Versailles in 1675; and died 28th August, 1678. — *Coll. of N. J. Hist. Soc.*, i. 30. — Eds.

† Sir George Carteret was appointed, by Charles I., Governor of the Island of Jersey, and afterwards held the office of comptroller of the navy. He was associated with Lord Berkeley as proprietor of Carolina and New Jersey. — *Coll. of N. J. Hist. Soc.*, i. 30; *Rose's Biog. Dict.* — Eds.

‡ Capt. John Scott, a person somewhat notorious in the history of New England and New York, is doubtless here referred to. See General Index, p. 565, to Documents relating to the Col. Hist. of New York; and Proceedings Mass. Hist. Soc. for June, 1862, pp. 65-73. — Eds.

hall. All peace and quietnes att home and abroad. His Majestie very intent about settelment of his Collonies heare, [*a line destroyed*] a select counsell is appoynted for these affaires. Delavall will be shortly heare in a shipp from England. Olaue Steuenson and other considerable persons of this place goe for England, to take passage on the English shipps, of which we may expect seuerall this sommer, and some very soone.

When I had written thus farr, the Gouernour vnexpectedly returned home from Harlem. I acquainted him with this opportunitie of convayance to you; he tould me he would write; I acquainted the bearer with his resolution, & ordered him to call for it. I shall therefore not enlarge, referringe you to his letter, euer remayninge, Sir,

Your most affectionate friende & seruant

SAMUELL MAVERICKE.

N. YORKE, Feb. 24th, 166$\frac{8}{9}$.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Maverick, rec: Feb: 26."

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO SAMPSON BOND.*

To the Reuerend & his much respected freinde, Mr. Sampson Bond, these present, Barmodas. Per our freinde, Capt. Stone.

REUEREND SIR, — After presentment of my respects to yow, these few ensuing lynes are to giue you to vnderstand that there hath come to my view a letter you sent to Mr. Wolstoncraft; the knowledg I haue had of him, and being informed by him, that yow are my cunteryman, borne at

* Rev. Sampson Bond, an ejected minister from the county of Cumberland, after residing at the Bermudas, came to New England, and was employed as assistant to the Rev. James Allen, teacher of the First Church in Boston, in 1682. It is said that he was compelled to leave this place for preaching a sermon not composed by him; that he went to Barbadoes, and probably returned to Bermuda, where he died. — *Calamy, Continuation, &c.*, ii. 150; *Hutchinson's Hist. of Mass.*, i. 427; *Emerson's Hist. of First Church*, p. 134. — EDS.

Northhill in Cornewall, make me bould to answar your letter, and to euery particular, as they lie in order.

Your brother in law, Mr. Wolstoncraft, came ouer in the fleete I came in, and I knew his humour then, and obseruinge it now, finde him much reformed, and beinge retired in to the cuntery, he followes his buisines closely, (as I am informed) and liues comfortably.

You hint to him, that you haue heard very well of New Yorke, which hath made you willing to come and dwell in some parte of this cuntery (if the Lord were so pleased). It seemes to me he is opening a wide dore to yow, by inclyninge the honorable Gouernour, on the first notice he had of your thoughts this way, to tell the bearer, Capt. Stone, that if your selfe and copany came, he would order yow a proportion of land (accordinge to the families you should bringe) on an Iland called States Iland, about 3 or 4 leagues from this cittie, the most commodiosest seate and richest land I haue seene in America. It is probable (if his multiplicitie of buisines will permitt it) he will lett you know it by his owne penn. I haue heard it from his owne mouth.

You intimate that you want directions from some person well accquainted in the cuntery, as to the privilidges and libertyes of the Inhabitants. I haue beene heare from the very first settling of N: England, by the English, and could giue you an account of all the privilidges inioyed & bondages imposed in the seuerall Gouerments there, but that is needles. I shall only informe you what is allowed, and may be expected to be enioyed by the Inhabitants, within his Royall Highnes his territories heare.

Ecclesiasticall liberties are, 1, Liberty of consience to all, prouided they rase not fundamentalls in religion, nor disturbe the publique peace. 2, Cerimonies may be used or omitted. 3, The Booke of Common Prayer may be made vse of or not.

Civill liberties are, — All freeholders, not scandalous in

theire liues & conversations, are capable to vote att the election of officers, military and civill, in theire seuerall townеshipps.

As to your desire to know what trafficke the people take to for maintenance, be pleased to know that this harbour is the most commodious for trade of any on all this coast. The cuntery affords all commodities fitt for Spaine, Tangeir, Jamica, and all the Cariba Ilands, in greater plenty then Boston & those parts haue, who by tradinge are growne so greate and rich. Shipping and stirringe marchants are the only want heare. The Gouernour is building a considerable shipp, and some other are building smaller vessells. Codd fish is found in abundance on this coast; aboue 20 whales gotten this spring. There is gonn out of this port, to Boston, already, ten thousand skepell of wheate, and much more yett remayninge. The greatest want heare is good, honest, ingenious people, and some good ministers; and though (if you should come) yow resolue not to be tyed to any people, yett many might reape benefitt by yow. If you and any else resolue to come, you may send a discreete person or two, to view the cuntery, per the first, who may make report how they finde things. It is 45 yeares since I came into New England. I haue kept correspondence with most, if not all the Gouernours that haue beene in your Iland, euen to Mr. Seimour, the last before your present Gouernour, with Mr. Copeland in his tyme, and Mr. Norwode also; and craue the like with your selfe, and shall be ready to serue yow in any thinge I may, of which pray be assured, and I shall euer remayne, Sir

Your affectionate freinde & humble servant

Samuell Mavericke.

From Fort James in the cittie of New Yorke, May 30th, 1669.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Copy of Mr. Mavericks letter to Mr. Bond of Barmudas." [The letter, or copy of letter, is in the handwriting of Maverick.]

SAMUEL MAVERICK TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull his much honored freinde, John Winthrop, Esq, Gouernour of his Maiesties Collony of Connectocott, these present. Hartford.

Honored Sir, — I haue received one from yow since I wrote to yow, for which I humbly thanke yow. I haue had no opportunitie till now to answar, and had I, I should haue lett it passe, dayly expectinge newes from England. Mr Laurence left all letters, both publique and private, behinde, although Coll: Nicolls tould him he had them ready, and ordered him a tyme to call for them. He saies he went for them, but Coll: Nicolls beinge not out of bed, and his man vnwilling to awake him, he came away without them. We may expect them per the next.

Heare hath beene lately two vessells from Barmodaes; one bringes a letter from one Mr. Sampson Bond, which intimats that himselfe and some hundreds of people haue a desire to remoue from thence hither, if they might heare haue accommodation. It fell to my share to answar the letter, a coppie of which I send inclosed,* by which you may see what they desire, and what the Gouernour grants them.

Heare are also considerable persons come from Barbadoes, who haue comission from persons of qualitie to buie Plantations and houses; some are already bought, more in chase.

New Jarsey is returned to his Royall Highnes, by exchange for Delawar, as Sir George Carterett writs to his cosen, the present Gouernor; † some tract of land, on this side the river & on the other side, to reach to Maryland bounds.

---

* The preceding letter. — Eds.

† Philip Carteret, brother of Sir George, appointed Governor of New Jersey, Feb. 10, 1664. — *Coll. of N. J. Hist. Soc.*, i. 36. — Eds.

The L. Robarts * is gonn ouer as L. Deputie of Ireland. I supose the Gouernour will giue you an account of some other particulars, which I haue not tyme to doe, the bearer stayinge for this. I remayne,

Sir, Your most affectionate freinde and seruant,

SAMUELL MAVERICKE.

NEW YORKE, June 29th 1669.

I receiued yesterday from Boston the simpell history of N: Eng: and the lawes made the last Court.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Maverick."

---

* John, Lord Robartes, of Truro, afterwards Viscount Bodmin and Earl of Radnor. He was appointed Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, Feb. 14, 1668; and was succeeded, in 1670, by John, Lord Berkeley, of Stratton. — *Collins's Peerage*, ix. 122; *Haydn's Book of Dignities*, p. 442. — EDS.

LETTERS OF DANIEL PATRICK.*

DANIEL PATRICK TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull Mr. Winthrope, Gouernour, giue this . . .

Right Worshipfull Sir, — Wee are all saflye arriued at the pinnis, onely 3 or 4 of our horsses gott from vs in the night which wee lay by the waye, & hoope they are returnde home bye this time. Oure prouisions beinge butt shorte, wee hoope supplye will not tarrye longe. Wee shall greatlye want a shallop. Captayne Vnderhill † & Captayne Massonn, with 80 souldiers, in 2 pinnaces, are heere in the baye, & a 100 Indeans from the Riuer at there disposinge. As soone as I came, I dispatcht an Indean to them, intendinge to peece in with them; if I

* Capt. Daniel Patrick was one of the two military officers brought over by Winthrop in 1630; having previously served in Holland as a soldier in the guard of the Prince of Orange. He was admitted freeman the next year. He appears to have resided at Cambridge for a short time; but was afterwards of Watertown, where he was selectman in 1638. He removed to Connecticut in December, 1640, and settled near the Dutch; placing himself under their protection. Upon the breaking-out of hostilities by the Indians, he went to Stamford; where, in a quarrel, the particulars of which are related by Winthrop, under date of 11, 2, 1643, "a Dutchman shot him behind in the head, so he fell down dead, and never spake." — *Winthrop's Hist. of N. E.*, ii. 151; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† Underhill, with twenty men, had been sent to Saybrook the 10th of April preceding, in view of the hostile demonstrations of the Indians and Dutch against that place. He had now joined Mason in the expedition which sailed from Connecticut against the Pequots, and they had just arrived in Narragansett Bay. Capt. Patrick did not join them, but went round to Pequot River in Mason's boats, where he rendered assistance after the attack on Mystic Fort, which occurred three days after this letter was written. — *Mason's Pequot War*, p. 12; *Winthrop's Hist. of N. E.*, i. 217. — Eds.

should heer of the Illanders remoouall, I will, if possible, send constant word of our proceedings.

Your worships to commuande

DANI. PATTRICKE.

PROUIDEN. this 23 May, 1637.

Mr. Williams informs your worship at large.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Patricke;" and in another place, "Daniell Patrick, Providence."

DANIEL PATRICK TO THE GOVERNOR AND COUNCIL OF WAR IN MASSACHUSETTS.

To the honnorable the Gouernore & the rest of the Councell of War in Massechusets theese be dd.

HONNORABLE GENTLEMEN, — Your Commissione I receiude at Narregansets, the 17 daye of June, requiringe me to Narregansets, or be sure of a sufficient reasone for the contrarye. At Narregansets I was, but goe backe to Saybrooke this 19 of June, to fetch the Companye, yet but to meet Mr. Stoughtone at Pequote, or, if oportunitie be offerd, to venter your fauour, as well as my owne lyfe, for to make anny thinge sure in ware cannot bee; what may stand with good reasone Prouidence may cross; therfore, as the Lord shall dereckt, beinge tirde to be tide to Say brooke soe longe, & heering a ruemore of Pequots dispersione, after hauinge taken some cannoes laden with all sorts of Indean howsell stuff, passinge by the riuers mouth; I guest a probbabillitie of it, & resolude to take 10 men with the pinece, & goe obserue the motione & posture of Pequote riuer, but before I went Cobbine beets & 2 or 3 more weare cut of, cominge downe in a shallop from Quenechtequed, the Dutch yacht broght vs worde, whoe had bine to carry home our captiue mades. Captane Vnderhill & I went out & founde the shallope ruin-

ated, & the Indeans fled. Next day, being come home, one of the slane menn came driuinge by Saybrooke, stuck with 3 or 4 arrows, his cloths one, his bandeleers about hime, & his sworde vnder his arme readye drawne, being one of Mr. Michaels men: this was dune 6 mile from Sayebrooke. To Pequot, as I intended, I came, & found all gone, though I knew not where. Then I argued, if the Indeans be gone, what need such chardg from the Baye? therfore to Narregansets, where I found William Quicke. I landed & dealt with the Narreganset Sachems, whoe blamde the Baye of procrastinatione, informd vs of the Pequots desertinge there cuntrye, as neuer to returne, in there judgments; of there flight at present to Quinnopiage, which I witnes to, hauinge seene, & (as I sayd) taken 2 of there cannoes, but then not acquanted with there intended proggress, that ther cheyfe eandeuor for a while, till after waye made to the Mowhoake; the oportunitye I spake of maye bee to surprise them there by night, with some Naregansets, if I cann drawe them to runn the venter; venter, I say, of loosinge soe much time as marchinge to & froe, for I am not certane whether they will be gone before wee come, or whether danger at home will forbide our frinds to come downe the riuer, or Captane Vnderhill will doe any thinge in the case; but if I can get them to runn the venter, which is smale to them, then times fore locke woulde be taken houlde of, & a fare farwell giuen them at partinge. 40 or 50 Pequots remayne at Longe Iland, 300 fitt for fight at Quinnopiage. Nowe, if those at Quinnopiage avoyde to the Mowhoake, or if but 50 mile aboue the Riuer townes, as some thinke, what will you doe with, or where will you imploye our 200 men? I barely propounde it, & soe leaue it. Our frinds at Quenechtequod resolue to joyne with you, possessinge the Pequots cuntrye. For that, & the manner, I leaue till farther order, onely for the present, if noe better seruice fale out, if, at my returne to the Riuers mouth, Quinnopiage fayle, & they will & are

readye to set downe at Pequot, Ile be doinge with them in possessione. A cale of your worships cann fetch mee of when you will; but if sounde reasone not for Quenopiage, nor possessinge of Pequote will permite, then accordinge to Comissione, I hoope shortly to returne to Narreganset, where Ile leaue a coppy of this letter, for Mr. Stoughtone to make vse of as he shall thinke good. Thus after seruice in all due respeckt, I leaue you to the Lord, & rest Yours to commaunde,

DANI. PATTRICKE.

NARREGANSETS, this 19 of June, 1637.

Pequots & Naantucke is rich lande, full of good corne. A coate & a pare of shoes the Indeane is to haue. Capt. Vnderhill is gone vp the Riuer to the plantations. The Narregansets propound for some smale interrest & priueledg in Pequot cuntrye, but reffer them selus to you.

Williame Quicke hath bine heere this 10 dayes, but none but hee is yet come.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Ca[p]t: P[a]tt[rick] . . . 4: 19."

DANIEL PATRICK TO INCREASE NOWELL.

To his Worthye & verry much respeckted ffrinde Mr. Encrease Nowell, at his howse in Charles Towne give theese.

WORTHY SIR, — All due respeckt vnto you. Our common newes for the present I suppose you haue hearde, yet moore to your self Ile saye; the Narregansets would be the onelye lords of Indeans; the Inglish, if God will, may, I doubt not, receiue tribbute of all but Narregansets; what our articles with them are, must bee; but if wee be tide to make peace with none of these ennymies but with there consent, then still troublde shall wee be, as wee haue bine much about that poynte alreadye. Sassecous is at Longe Ilande; Mamenatucke at Quenepiage, or latelye gone to

the Mowhoake. Moheegins & Narregansets, I doubt, will not longe agree, nor will Neantucke next to Narregansets, willinglye be brought vnder his subiectione. Wee goe, the first winde, for Longe Ilande, to sallute Sassecous. Youer prayres wee desire. My loue to Captayne Segwicke & Mr. Caine of Bostone. I leaue you to the Lorde, & in hast rest Yours to commaunde,

DANIELL: PATTRICKE.

FROM PEQUOTT, this 6 of Julye, 1637.

Good Sir, Remember mee, since I cannot help myselfe, the confirmatione of Shaw sheene, 300 ackers for Mr. Payne, which I houlde hime, elce loose I 20 pounde, which indeed I am not able to beare. The Genneral Courte maye considder for whome I am imployde; how suddenly I was sent awaye, & there prommise to further it when I was gone. I leaue it to them, hoopinge by your means noe longer to be kept from that which soe longe since was prommisd. Once moor as before.

Indorsed, "Daniell Patrick from Pequod."

DANIEL PATRICK TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Honnored & Right Worthye Mr Winthrope, Gouernour, dd, Bostone, thes.

HONNOURED SIR, — I confes I knowe nothinge in my selfe that shoulde in the least incouradge & imboulden mee to write vnto you; for, as publikelye soe priuatelye, I am the same in acknowledginge my rugged, vnequall & foolish carriedge towards your selfe; onelye now, as alwayes, beinge confident of your clemencye & loue to reasone in or from anny, I humblye craue leaue to offer a propositione

concerninge our towne boundes to your consideration. In Deddam plott of there neck, 2 lines is drawne: the last, as Mr. Olliuer tels mee, hauinge your aprobatione, which allsoe is far better then the former. I haue presented a 3d to your farther vewe, which alsoe giueth the same quantety, &, it may be, as good in qualletye. Now, good Sir, I beseech you considder, Watertowne expeckts some thinge before Dedum, as moore benificiall through antiquetye; nether are they far behinde anny in improuinge theyre halfe soe much in quantety as they haue. Agayne I knowe & fulley beleeue tis the greate joy of all godly rulers to see peace florish in the midst of justice; therfore, if in a just waye this 3000 akers may be added vniustlye, not preiudicinge Deddum, whoes portione will still be the same, & our to impatient spirrits therby quieted. I thinke a farr better consequence will followe then at the present, in respeckt of troublinge you, I may well express. I feare I haue presuemd to far, therefore crauinge pardone, if I haue bine needdless, & remayninge the same I was, though fruetles, I leaue both the case & your self with God to guide, & rest

Your Worships to commaunde

DANIELL PATTRICKE.

WATERTOWNE, this 9th of Aprill, 1639.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Patricke."

DANIEL PATRICK TO JOHN WINTHROP.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL & MUCH HONNORED SIR, — Least through greeff I shoulde trouble your attentione with abrupt languadge, I humblye craue leaue to vnfoulde my reall thoughts in a few lines breffly vnto you. I am still in doubte of your continued displeasure towards mee; if my

groundes will nott afforde such a constructione, I shall at once be both glad & sorrye for my mistake; Worthye Sir, is my faulte soe greate that I cannot be reconcilde? I doe confess I am a man of manny faylinges, & certaynelye I am not ignorante of that vnbesseeminge cariadge once, nay twise, towards your selfe, but as time ripneth frute, soe haue I, through Gods goodnes, since that, throughlye considderd the folly of such rash & proudlike actions. Therfore, I beseech you, pass by whats past, for I am vnfaynedlye sorry for myne offence, & I hoope & resolue in time to come, to be moor carefull, if the Lord inable mee. I am loath to vtter anny thinge in myne owne behalfe, nether can dutye extenuate my faulte, yet cann I bowldlie pleade innocencye in anny other thinge to my knowledge. Accept what you haue hearde your selfe from mee. If I haue privily instegated, or by aspertions sought to wrong you, lett your harte be hardned, for ther should be cause. Nay, if I haue secretlye giuen waye to anny disloyall thoughts, justlye lett mee reape stuble in stead of a frutefull haruest from this my acknowledgment. I knowe the diuell is readye to imploye bad mindes, by whisperings to preiudicate your thoughts agaynst mee; perticculars I knowe none, butt if there other hath or shoulde, I humblye beseech you lett Christiane charretye from the groundworke of thees vnfayned expressions, confounde ther motions as but false, or (at best) suppositions. Nether doe I by this make waye for my followinge propositione, for it is butt commone; onely a dutye is heerby intended in the first place; & next my owne peace, which I ame to seeke with all men. Your sunn Dudlee when in the Bay last, very kindly desirde mee to come & liue at ther plantione; a good lott he promisde to procur mee. Now, Honoured Sir, my full resollutione is nott to remoue to anny plantatione in the Pattent if you are not willinge. What Nueberry once offerd me was there owne volluntarye ackt, & noe wayes sought by mee; a little land will serue

my turne; peaceable competency I onelye seeke of God. If I may haue your good will therein, with cheerfullnes I shall proceed, & how soe euer rest your Worships, in all hartye affectione & Christiane seruice to commaunde

DANI. PATTRICKE.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Patrick, for reconciliation."

LETTERS OF SIR FERDINANDO GORGES.*

SIR FERDINANDO GORGES TO SIR HENRY VANE, JOHN WINTHROP, AND OTHERS.

To my much respected freindes, Henry Vane, John Winthropp, John Haines, John Humfrey, and John Dudley, Esquiers, give theis with speed.

MAIE IT PLEASE YOU, — Having receaved severall lettres from my servant Vines, & others, of the generall dislike conceaved against Mr. Cleeves, for having to doe with anie my affaires, by reason (as it is affirmed) of the miscarriage of him, as well towardes myselfe in particuler, as the wronges hee offered them by his misreports to mee of

* Sir Ferdinando Gorges, of Ashton Phillips, Somersetshire, was born, as inferred from a letter of Richard Vines, printed in this volume, not long after 1560. He is said to have served under Henry IV. of France; and Vines says, "He went to those wars very young, and there he received his honor," . . . "being wounded either at the siege of Amiens or before Paris." He also served in the English Navy during the war with Spain in the last years of Elizabeth; and, after the peace in 1604, was appointed, by James I., Governor of Plymouth in Devonshire. Capt. Weymouth having arrived from his voyage to America in 1605, Gorges became interested in an undertaking for discovery and colonization in these parts, in connection with Sir John Popham and others; and obtained a patent, under the name of the Plymouth Company. A futile attempt at colonization was made by this Company in 1607, on the coast of Maine. Gorges was instrumental in procuring the great Patent for New England, of Nov. 3, 1620; and interested himself in obtaining from this Company, of which he was a prominent member, the first grant to Pierce in 1621, in trust for the Colony of Plymouth; and, in 1623, his son, Robert Gorges, was sent out as Lieutenant-General and Governor of New England. Sir Ferdinando, in 1625, commanded a ship-of-war under the Duke of Buckingham. Capt. John Mason, with whom he was associated in the Laconia grant in 1622, died in 1636; and, the next year, Sir Ferdinando was appointed Governor-General: but this project failed. In 1639, he obtained, in a royal charter, a confirmation of the New Somersetshire grant of 1635, and was made Lord-Palatine of the Province of Maine. Gorges, although advanced in years at the breaking-out of the civil war, engaged in the service of the king. He was at the siege of Bristol in 1643, and was afterwards imprisoned by the Parliamentary forces. He died before June, 1647. — *Belknap's American Biography* (Hubbard's edition), ii. 47–95. — EDS.

theire miscarriage in theire places, whereby hee hath intruded himselfe into my good opinion soe far forth as to bee joyned with you in matters of soe greate trust, being soe vnworthey; which complaint of theires hath so far forth prevailed with mee (if it bee soe) as to desire your favourable excuse; and to give my order to my servant Vines for the righting of mee, & vindicating of himselfe; and the rest, taking an ordinary course for the farther questioning thereof, and to proceed therein according as it shalbee found of more or lesse consequence, which I referr vnto your judgments (to whome hee is to adresse himselfe for justice) to censure as to you it shall seeme good, vppon a full hearing, and due prooffe made thereof. As for Vines, I know his honesty to bee such as I could not abandon him out of my affeccion, as formerly I haue written, yet I conceived itt not amisse to rancke him with the rest in the generall discharge, that it might appeare there was noe partiallity vsed, nor respecte of persons, for therein I spared not my nephewe, whome I esteeme next my owne children. As for Vines, I intend hee shall still continue Deputie Governour, and soe doe pray you to settle him as before hee was, and to joyne with him my nephewe Champernowne, & such others as you shall receave notice to bee fittest for such service; that thereby you maie avoid the troubles you may otherwise bee put vnto, by the maney trobbles that maie arise soe farr distant from you. What resteth more to bee done in this, I refer to your best resolucions, as tyme & occasion serves, wherein I feare I haue too much trenched vppon your favours. But my trust is, as shall bee my endeavours, that I maie attaine to the oppertunity to make you some kind of requitall, and that in some nature to your good likinges. In the meane while let mee tell you that being at London this last Terme, and daiely in companey with the Lordes, I heard nothing of the Commission Cleeves assured mee was afoote, contrary to the expectacion I had thereof, vppon confidence of Mr. Cleeves reporte

to mee. By which meanes I was (I fear mee drawne to abuse you vnwillingly) by my certificate in his behalfe. But a little to excuse him therein, for that it might bee he was soe perswaded vppon such promises as Moorton his Agent assured him, who since is wholely casheerd from intermedlinge with anie our affaires hereafter; but this I write to you in perticuler, that you maie take private notice thereof, and howe much I am offended with my selfe for being over credulous of another, neither needes it seeme strang it should bee soe, consideracion being had to the sincerity of one, and the fraude of others. But I will forbeare to say more in this subiecte, and onely leave all to tyme and oppertunity, desiring the assistance of the Most Highest to give mee power to doe what shall make most for his glorie, and the publique good of his Church, to whose sacred proteccion I committ you, with the assurance that I will approve my selfe

Your true freind, to serve you,

FERDE: GORGES.

AISHTON PHILLIPPES, 23°. Augustij, 1637.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "S^{r} ffer: Gorge."

SIR FERDINANDO GORGES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull & my much respected frend, John Wintrupp, Esqr, at Boston in the Bay, these present.

WORTHY SIR, — The soddain approach of our longe wished for Parlament inuites me to attend the happy issue therof, that otherwise had a resolution to haue visited you this springe, but I haue sent a neer kinsman of mine own name, with other necessary seruants, for the better orderinge of my affaires, & makinge of my prouision agaynst the time it shall please God I come my selfe. In the mean while I am bould to intreat of you to second this my

cosen Gorges in any just and reasonable occasion he shall haue cause to vse your fauour in, I hauinge giuen him command to be carefull to doe his best that all fayr corrospondency be maintayned between those two seuerall Plantations, as a speciall means, by Gods fauour, to giue furtherance to the happinesse therof; and when God shall be pleased that I may arriue, I doubt not but you shall perceaue my greatest ambition shall tend (next to the seruice of God) by what wayes or means an vnion or conformity of all parties may be established, or at the least a patient or charitable bearinge with each others errors or selfe affexions, that soe our Soueraingne Lord the Kinge may be ashewred of our subiections, the publique be not disturbed, the common course of justice made free, and the countries defenses prouided for; which worke beinge finished, I shall willingly commend my selfe ready to giue an account of all my actions to Him that is only able to forgiue all our offenses, and giues vs ashewrances of His mercies, through the sufferances of His blessed Son, our only Sauiour Jesus Christ, to whose sacred & gracious assistance I commend you and all your endeuours, and to whom I wish as becommeth

Your very louinge frend

FERDE. GORGES.

ASHTON, March 26, 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Sir Fferdinand Gorges, Resp. per the Desire."

LETTERS OF THOMAS GORGES.*

THOMAS GORGES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull and my much honoured frend John Winthropp, these present, in Boston.

AGGAMENTICOS, 23, 12m, 1640.

MOST HONOURED SIR, — Your loue to me, and the respects I owe you, haue commanded me not to omitt the first opportunity. I haue talked with my neighbour Dixy concerninge that which you desired me and he tells me thus, for his passage you payd 4*li*, & he brought you one Mr. Jams to repay you for his freedome, & to place him with one Mrs. Higgison, but you replied that you would keep him for your selfe, and giue him as much wages as any other man would; now he sayth that he might haue had 13*li* per annum of one Mr. Wright; after his years seruice you freed him, & let him haue some tools which [he] beleeus came to some 40*s*, likewise a suit of cloth &

* Thomas Gorges, the "trusty and well-beloved cousin" of Sir Ferdinando, probably his nephew, came to New England in the summer of 1640, arriving at Boston. Winthrop (ii. 9, 10) says, "He was sober and well disposed. He staid a few days at Boston, & was very careful to take advise of our magistrates how to manage his affairs, &c. When he came to Acomenticus, he found all out of order," &c. He came with a commission for the government of the Province of Maine. The first General Court under this government was held at Saco, 25th June, 1640, under an earlier commission, and before Gorges' arrival. The second term was held 8th September, when the "Worshipful Thomas Gorges" was present with other commissioners. In 1641, April 10, the place from which he addresses this letter was incorporated as a town under the same name; and the next year it received a new charter, dated March 1st, by the name of "Gorgeana." Gorges was the first mayor of the town of Acomenticus, being also Deputy-Governor of the Province. He remained in the country a little over three years. He signed the charter of the town of Wells, 27th September, 1643; but had left the Province by Dec. 1, as appears by Vines's letter of that date in this volume. He was succeeded as Deputy-Governor by Vines. — *Folsom's Saco and Biddeford*, 44, 54, 55, 58; *Willis's Portland*, i. 47; *Hazard*, i. 470, 480. — EDS.

some other thinges, all which, with the 4*li*, he beleeus did not amount to aboue 13*li*, as he might haue had of Mr. Wright; but he sayth if ther be any thinge due to you from him, he will not fayl to giue you satisfaction to the vttermost of his power, for he acknowledgeth your loue towards him & the fauors you did him. I hear that Mr. Winter,* the disturber of our litle common wealth, is now bound for Boston, he is either gone already or he goes with Mr. Campion.† Now I would desier you, if you thinke fitt, to send him by Campion, to be deliuered to me or to our Constable at Pascattaway; or to send him by my neighbour Mr. Page, or by some other conueyance, and in it you will doe me & the whole prouince a great fauour, & I shall be ready to the vttermost of my power to obey you in the like request. I cannot send vnto you at this present news at large from Ingland, because the contrariety of the winde hath hindered it from comminge from the Iles of Shoals, only this, I beleeue you hear that the Parlaiment is like to proceed. And a letter came to one of our Riuer that the Lord Deputy of Ireland‡ hath 3 bills preferred against him, & tis thought will hardly come of: Mr. Burton, Mr. Prin, & Mr. Bastwicke are called to the Parlaiment to relate theyr causes ther, and great hope ther is that religion will be more countenanced then it hath binn. As I reccaue more I will not fayl to certify you.

Mr. Jenner I hear is like to remain at Sacoe, it is an argument I hope that God intends good vnto these parts. We haue sent younge Mr. Ward§ of Newbury a call. I

* John Winter of Richmond's Island, an agent of Trelawney and Goodyear. He had a long quarrel with Cleeves about land; and the grand jury indicts him this year for irregularity in his dealings. — *Willis's Portland*, i. 34, 35. — Eds.

† A person of this name, a Clement Campion, is found at Portsmouth in 1647; possibly a shipmaster. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

‡ Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford. — Eds.

§ John Ward, afterwards minister of Haverhill, son of the author of the "Simple Cobler." Winthrop (ii. 29), after April, 1641, says, "Mr. Peter & Mr. Dalton, with one of Acomenticus, went from Pascataquack with Mr. John Ward, who was to be entertained there for a minister; & though it be but six miles, yet they lost their way, & wandered two days and one night, without food or fire, in the snow and wet. But God

hope the Lord will be assistinge to vs in it. Mr. Burdith * is at Pemiquid, which lyes on the borders of this Prouince. He is grown to that height of sinn that it is to [be] feared he is giuen ouer. His time he spends in drinkinge, dauncinge, singinge scurrulous songes; for his companions he selects the wretchedest people of the country; at the springe I hear he is for Ingland. I haue sent you some of that stuff which with vs supplies the want of hempe. Our Indians make theyr snow shoes, nets & bags of it, alsoe of a bigger stalke called silke grass, which makes very fine hempe. The former is as plenty with vs as ferne, the later grows not very plenty, espeacially about vs, but ther is very much of it in the country. I hear both sorts are plentifull with you. Thus with my humble seruice tendred to your selfe and to Mrs. Winthropp, with many thankes for your loue to me, desiringe the Lord to reward you, & to take you in to His sacred protection, I rest

Yours in all due respects

THO: GORGES.

THOMAS GORGES AND EDWARD GODFREY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrope, Esqr. these present speed in Boston.

AGGAMENTICUS, 1 March, 1640.

MOST HONOURED SIR, — One Reuben Guppy of late comminge into our Plantation, and pretendinge much religion & a great zeal for the Ordinances of God, was entertained by a planter, but since ther haue come diuers reports vnto vs of his misdeameanors with you, & that fear of

---

heard their prayers, wherein they earnestly pressed him, for the honor of his great name; and, when they were even quite spent, he brought them to the seaside, near the place they were to go to: blessed for ever be his name." — EDS.

* Rev. George Burditt. After leaving Salem, he went to Dover, thence to Acomenticus, where Gorges found him on his arrival there. Winthrop (ii. 10) is severe upon him, but probably just. — EDS.

punishmcnt droue him away, & likewise this day haue receaued a lettre from Captain Vnderhill, which expresseth the desire of Mr. Endicott * to haue him returned, which lettre I haue sent you heerinclosd. The desire we haue to satisfy his request, & to ridd such fellows out of our Prouince, which haue brought such a scandall on it, haue caused vs to omitt noe opportunity of sendinge him, therfore by Sampson Salter, master of the Makeshift, you shall receaue him. Resolued we are that this Prouince shall be noe refuge for runnaways, for none comminge from another Plantation shall be entertained heer without a certificate of his good demeanour, or vppon the knowledge of some of the inhabitants. Thus with our seruices tendered to you; commendinge you to the protection of the Almighty, we rest Yours in all due respects,

THO: GORGES.
EDW: GODFREY.†

---

* Mr. Endecott was at this time one of the Assistants. — EDS.

† Godfrey's name is put to this letter of Gorges as one of the Councillors of the Province of Maine, named as such in Sir Ferdinando's commission of March 10, 1639–40 (see Sullivan's "Maine," pp. 413–417). Letters of Godfrey will be found in this volume, to which the reader is referred for a notice of him. — EDS.

LETTERS OF RICHARD VINES.*

RICHARD VINES * TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Worshipfull John Winthrop Esquire at Boston, these present, in Massachusetts bay.

Saco, the 25th of June, 1640.

Worthy Sir, — You may please to vnderstand that whereas Captaine Vnderhill† hath bin with me, and the rest of the Counsellors for this Province, desireinge here

* Richard Vines, one of the original grantees of the Biddeford Patent, was a "servant" of Sir F. Gorges, and early employed by him in voyages to this country to trade and fish. He spent one winter in the country at a time when the plague was raging among the Indians, which Prince refers to the winter of 1616–17; and the place is supposed to be the mouth of the Saco, on the spot he afterwards selected for his permanent abode. And this supposition is supported by a tradition there, that a vessel passed the winter in the "Pool," before the settlement of the country, and which gave rise to the name "Winter Harbor." It is not improbable that Vines continued to make this place his principal resort. The grant to him and John Oldham, formerly of Plymouth, is dated Feb. 22, 1629, O.S., and covers substantially the territory of the present town of Biddeford. He was one of the councillors of Gorges' Province of New Somersestshire, and "Steward-General" and afterwards "Deputy-Governor" of the Province of Maine. Although a Royalist and Episcopalian, and representing the interests of Gorges, which sometimes were supposed to clash with those of Massachusetts, Vines appears to have commanded the respect of Gov. Winthrop; and no one, we think, on reading his letters in this volume, can fail to be impressed with the belief that he was an honorable, high-toned, and liberal-minded gentleman; a character entirely opposite to that of his rival, Cleeves. During the troubles with Cleeves, Deputy-Governor of "Lygonia," he sold his patent (which Oldham appears to have taken no interest in) to Dr. Robert Child, giving him livery and seizin, 20th October, 1645; and soon after left the country. Besides the letters in this volume, two letters of his to Winthrop, from Barbadoes, will be found in "Hutchinson's Papers," pp. 122–124. See further notice of him in "Winthrop." The patent of Biddeford was sold by Child to Beex and Company; and they transferred it to William Phillips of Boston, 11th March, 1658–9. — *Folsom's Saco and Biddeford*, 23–26, 49–58, 67–77, 102, 103, 317, 319; *Prince's Annals*, 25; *Gorges' Brief Narr.*, 12; *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 10, 89, 126, 154, 177; *Sullivan's Maine*, 414. — Eds.

† In September, Underhill went to Boston; having "a safe conduct under the hand of the Governor and one of the Council to repair to the church." Winthrop's account of his confession on lecture-day is an admirably written and amusing passage, in the Governor's best manner. — *History of N. E.*, ii. 13–15. — Eds.

to inhabitt, and enioy the priuiledges of the same; we heareinge of some engagements of his to the Massachusetts bay, haue thought good to acquaint you therewith, desireing to heare from you how farre those his engagments doe extend, that soe we may know how to proceede with him therein, according to law and equitie; for we desire in this and the like cases to doe as we would be done vnto, which if you wilbe pleased to send vs your answeare herein, we shall then vpon further consideracion proceede accordingly. Thus with my due respects remembred, I committ you to the protection of the Allmighty, resting Yours to my power,

RICHARD VINES:

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines about Capt. Vnderhill."

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right Worshipfull his honored ffreind John Wentrop, Esqr, thse. Boston.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, — Your letter concerning Capt. Vnderhill received and another since about the attatching of Mr. Purches * his estate, wherin you desire to be certified the truth by mee. That and much more you may command of me. Mr. Purches engaged himselfe to come to Saco at his retour[ne fr]om the bay, to answeare to such complaints as was against him, or else to giue security to appeare at our next Court. Mr. Greenesmith was by when this promise w[as] made. At that present tyme I received a letter, with a greate complaint, from Capt:

* Probably Thomas Purchase, an early settler at "Pejipscot," now Brunswick. He had, on the 22d July, 1639, conveyed to the Massachusetts authorities a large tract of land at that place. He and one Richard Way had received a grant of this territory, June 16, 1632. — *Col. Records of Mass.*, i. 272–73; *Willis's Portland*, i. 14; *Sainsbury's Calendar of State Papers*, p. 152. — EDS.

Thomas Young, how that Mr. Purches had endeavored to hinder his discoveries by many [*torn*] suggestions, and he feares, to the overthrow of his designes, promising to produce many witnesses to proue it; and desired iustice from our Court, for that the wrong was offred within our Province. Ther ar likewise some accions of debt against him, and an accion of the case, to the value of 20*li* at the least, and one other matter of great moment I haue against him, which I forbeare to prosecute or mencion till I speake with your selfe, which shalbe with the first conveniency. Now when we heard that Mr. Purches had carried away his cattell and other goodes, for the Massachusetts, and was intended to fetch away the rest with all speed, we sent vp our marshall to his house, to require security for his appearance at our next Court, (for the causes aboue specified), if in case no security would be given, then to attach and sease vpon soe much goodes as might secure his appearance. The goodes left were attached, whervpon Mr. Jordan, a minister (that kept the house in Mr. Purches his absence), went with the marshall to gett some of the neighbours to be bound for the appearance, but none would; he carried one hundred twenty od yeards of Indians beades with him, to be a pledge, if in case his frend fayled. No security being had, the officer seased vpon the beades and brought them away, since which tyme I sent to Mr. Purches, who came and gaue security for his appearance. I offered him his beades, he would not receiue them, but answeared me he would come by them by law: and this is the truth of the matter. I vnderstand by your letter that he hath put himselfe vnder your goverment, notwithstanding I conceiue that soe long as he hath goodes, chattells, house, land, and servants, within our Province, he is like wise within our goverment, and lyable to it. I desire your answeare and opinion herin, for that I shalbe very vnwilling to entrench vpon your priveleges in the least measure, having found your selfe far dissonant from the like vnneigh-

bourly acts. Thus ceasing farder to trouble you; with my respectiue service to your selfe, I rest

Your assured freind and servant,

Rich: Vines.

Accomintıcus, 21th: Aug: 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines."

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right Worshipfull his honored ffreind, John Wenthrop: Esqr. at Boston, thes, in Massachusetts.

Right Worshipfull, — I received your letter concerning Mr. Jenner;* acknowledging your former courtesies to my selfe, and for your furtherance of a minister for vs, our whole Plantacion ar greatly behoulding vnto you. We haue ioyned both sides of our river together for his mayntenance,† and haue willingly contributed for his stipend, 47*li* per annum: hoping the Lord will blesse and sanctifie his word vnto vs, that we may be both hearers and doers of the word and will of God. I like Mr. Jenner his life and conversacion, and alsoe his preaching, if he would lett the

---

* See notice of Mr. Jenner, on p. 355 of this volume, prefixed to a number of his letters. — Eds.

† Vines's patent was on the western side of the river. The settlement on the eastern side was under the patent to Lewis & Bonython, of same date as Vines's, Feb. 22, 1629–30, and covering the territory of the present town of Saco. The inhabitants under both grants took up their residences, at first, near the mouth of the river; and the name of "Saco" comprehended all. (This name is an abbreviation of "Shawakotoc" or "Sawocotuck," the ancient name of the river, as indicated by Purchas and Smith. In the grants from the Council, the river is very oddly called "Swanckadock.") The principal settlement for many years was on the western side. They appear now to have united for the support of Mr. Jenner, and probably so continued for many years; though it is doubtful if, for some time after he left, they were supplied with stated preaching. In 1752, the parish was divided by the river. After the submission of the inhabitants to Massachusetts, in 1653, the commissioners ordered that "Saco shall be a township by itself;" that is, to embrace the settlements on both sides the river. In 1718, the town took the name of "Biddeford." In 1762, the town was divided, the inhabitants on the eastern side of the river being incorporated under the name of "Pepperellborough," from Sir W. Pepperell, who was a large owner of lands in the town; and this name was retained till 1806, when the old name of "Saco" was adopted. — *Folsom's Saco and Biddeford passim.* — Eds.

Church of England alone; that doth much trouble me, to heare our mother Church questioned for her impurity vpon every occasion, as if men (ministers I meane) had no other marke to ayme at, but the paps that gaue them suck, and from whence they first received the bread of life. I wishe they would follow the counsell you giue me in your letter (to improue that which is profitable to them, and cover the rest with loue,) for why should a son betray his mothers weaknes? Noah his son lyes still vnder a curse, for discovering his fathers shame, his brothers eternall blessings for the contrary. Good Sir, pardon mee, I hope pardonable: I haue pleaded for our mother, which I beseech the Almighty God to purge from her errors.

We haue not pressed Mr. Jenner to any manner of Church discipline, but to preach and teach as seemeth good to himselfe. The Sacraments we desire to haue administred amongst vs, as beleiving Christians, although greate sinners. At present we doe not moue him to it, but for my parte I profes my selfe to be an opposite to Church Covenant, and Seperacion, holding it sufficient that I am all ready a member of the Church of England, and so consequently of the Church of Christ, and soe capeable of the benefitts of his Sacraments. This is my opinion, till I shalbe therof convinced. I will both loue, honour, and cherrish Mr. Jenner in his calling, both for his ffunction and worth sake, and allsoe to gratifie your selfe, and the rest of my worthy freinds, that by Gods Providence comende[d h]im hether. I must confes that I knew nothing of his coming ti[l I] saw him, and doe beleiue I should haue refused him whome [now] I embrace with intire affecion, had not your selfe and Mr. Humfrey encouraged me thervnto by your letters.*

* On the receipt of this letter, Gov. Winthrop wrote to Mr. Jenner, giving him some "judicious council," &c.; to which Jenner replied April 26. — *Hutchinson's Collection of Papers*, pp. 111, 112; *Folsom's Saco & Biddeford*, 82. — Eds.

It seemes the governour* makes a question that Sir Fferdinando Gorges was not in the Ffrench wars in his tyme. Capt. Bonython intreates me to write a word or two therof. I beleiue it was before Mr. Dudley his tyme, Sir Fferd: being now nere 80 yeares ould, and he went to those warres very young, and ther he received his honour. I haue often heard him discourse of those warlike accions, and that the king of Ffrance himselfe fetched him of from a breach, being wounded, either at the seige of Amiens,† or before Paris, I know not whether.

Thus ceasing farder to trouble you, with my respectiue [loue] to your selfe, I rest

Your assured freind and servant,

Rich: Vines.

Saco, 25th of January, 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines."

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

ffor Mr. Wentrope.

Sir, — Three of 4 yeares since Mr. Cleiues, being in England, procured a writ out of the Starr Chamber office, to command Mr. Edward Godfrey, Mr. John Winter, Mr. Purches, and my selfe, to apeare at the Counsell table; to answear some supposed wrongs. Mr. Godfrey went over to answeare for himselfe, Mr. Winter, and my selfe, and out of the same Court brings a writt to command Cleiues to pay vnto him 20*li:* for his charges, which he refuses to doe.‡ Now Sir Fferdinando Gorges gaue me order to see Mr. Godfrey haue right in this case. Cleiues sayes we haue nothing to doe, neither haue wee any

---

* Dudley. — Eds.

† In 1597. — Eds.

‡ See Willis's Portland, i. 37. — Eds.

power to levy money here vpon any writts that come out of England, for he will answeare it from whence it came. I shall humbly intreate your advise herein, what course is to be taken, that I may free my selfe from blame and the malice of Cleiues, who is a ffire brand of dissention, and hath sett the whole Province together by the yeares. I make bould to trouble [you] herin, as a case of greate difficultie, desireing your answeare by the first convenience.

I vnderstood by Mr. Shurt that you desired some gray pease for seed. Out of my small store I haue sent you a bushell, desiring your acceptance therof, ffrom

Your ffreind and servant,

RICH: VINES.

SACO, 25th Janu: 1640.

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull his honored ffreind John Winthorpe Esqr. Governour of the Massachusetts Collony — These, Boston.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, — Yours receiued about Mr. Scott his busines, who I perceiue is much greived at the late proceedings in our court, in regard we put his case to a jury; it being our course to determine such cases by the bench. Now we may, if the parties agree, try any accion by a jury. The reason why we proceeded soe in this case and others, was to giue a speedy end to our court, which had held long, to the greate charge and trouble of the country. The busines that held vs were of no validity or consequence, yet I was fully determined to haue ended Mr. Scott's busines my selfe, before any tryall, if John Richards had bin present, but he appeared by attourney, as Mr. Scott did. Two ministers, attourneyes, both plantife and defendant, did soe over value ther case in there pleadings, that the bench could not presently determine the

case according to Mr. Jenners desire, who would not stay for an end of it till the morrow morneing, the tryall being within little of night, and I had two long myles home, and some aboue three; wher vpon I intreated him to referr it till the next court, in the meane tyme it might be otherwise ended, which he would not consent vnto, but left his papers with our recorder to see an end of the busines the next day. Now I conceiue it had bin Mr. Jenner's part to haue attended the court till sentence had bin given, as well as the Comissioners, [who] attended for that busines aboue halfe a day. The truth is, the over pleading the case, especially by such men, from whose mouthes all men expected serious truths, (and not lawier like cavills) which made the moale hill seeme a mountayne, and we the commissioners and magistrates, hearing such greate damages demanded on both sides, thought it fitt to haue some tyme to debate and scan the case before wee did determine it. Now our recorder motioned that there might be a jury empanelled to end this and other triviall accions, (as is before specified), to which we all consented, and with vs a better attourney then Mr. Jenner; but he was loth to pleade the case, and both the fore man and all the rest of the jury heard the case pleaded. Thus haue you heard the reason of our proceedings, but I must confesse I blamed the jury for giving such great damages; my iudgement was ever that the Plantife would recover some smale damage, all thought that Whites receipt for all the mouldes would help the defendant at the common law, but the Chauncery would releiue the plaintiff, for that the defendant hath acknowledged that he had some of the mouldes afterward, and made vse of them, and our is a mixt court consisting of chauncery and common law, both.

As for a reveiue of the case, I must desire your counsell therein, for since I received your letter I heare that exicvtion is served vpon Mr. Scott his house at Cape Por-

pus, and possession taken for Richards. I proffess, Sir, it was contrary to my knowledge, for I never intended but to haue respited iudgement for a while. I confesse I haue bin very bad in my sence of hearing, but in our Court I did dilligently waite vpon all mens lipps, and I canot remember that ever a motion was made for exicucion by the Plantife. And I may iustly comeplayne of some wrong don me by Mr. Gorges,* who left the Provinciall Seale with Mr. Gard, our Recorder, I beinge for the present both Chancellour and Steward Generall; that is the cause that busines passe without my knowledge; and I haue had no opportunity this winter to write to Accominticus, to know the carriage of this busines. If you can advise me in any course, I shall gladly embrace your advise, and be thankefull for it. I know no way but that Mr. Scott must put in his bill of errors, which if the court approue of, he may haue a new tryall. I am very vnwilling to committ any error against my neighbour, but if any be, I will endeavour to amend it, knowing where iustice is equally distributed, the Reipub. is happie. Thus craving pardon for my tediousnes, with my best service remembred to you and yours; I rest in hast,

Your vnfeynedly to doe you service,

RICH: VINES.

SACO, first of December, 1643.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines about Mr. Scott."

---

* Thomas Gorges, who had left the Province but a short time before. — EDS.

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull his much honored freind John Winthorpe Esqr. Governor of the Massachusetts Colony, these, Boston.

Right Worshipfull, — I am forced to complayne vnto you of diverse insufferable wrongs don vnto Sir Fferdinando Gorges, his Commissioners and Province, by Mr. Cleiues and his agent, Mr. Tucker, who report that you protect and countenance there exorbitant practices, which I canot beleive, for I never yet knew you giue the least encouragement to any sinister practice. Mr. Cleiues having perswaded Mr. Rigby, (a worthy gent. by report) to buy the Plough Patent,* which I esteeme no better then a broken tytle, by Mr. Rigby his authority, (and as he sayes by your approbacion) he hath nominated Comissioners, a Coronell Generall, Provost Marshall, and other officers, extending his goverment from Sackadehock to Cape Porpus, being aboue 13 leagues in lenght, haveing likewise appoynted a Court to be kept in Cascoe bay the 25th of March next, and hath (but this by past weeke) sent his agent Tucker with a paper, perswading all such as he findes any way inclyning to innovation, to set there handes to it, for the better approving of what they haue begun, and allsoe to intreate your Worship and the rest of your magistrates to defend them from Ffrench, Indians, and other enemyes, which wee construe to be Sir Ffard: Gorges Commissioners. Neither hath Cleiues (as he ought) presented any his authority at our last Generall Court; but, 2 dayes before our Court, tooke a vioage into the bay, and all the way as he went from Pascataquack to Boston, he reported he was goeing for ayde against mee, for that I had threatned him and his authority, to beate him out of this Province. By

* See note on pages 88–91. — Eds.

this false report and many other the like, I am held an enemy to iustice and piety. Sir, I proffesse vnto you ingeinously, I never threatned him directly nor indirectly, neither haue I seene him since he camme out of England. I haue suffered him to passe quietly through our plantacion, and to lodge in it, allthoughe I haue binn informed that he was then plotting against mee. I am troubled at these seditious proceedings; and much more at his most notorius scandalls of Sir Fferdinando Gorges, a man for his age and in integrity worthy of much honor; him he brandes with the foule name of traytor by curcumstance, in reporting that he hath counterfeited the King's broade Seale, (if he haue any Patent for the Province of Mayne) ffor, sayes he, I haue serched all the Courtes of Record, and can finde noe such grant. How could he haue giuen that graue knight a deeper wound in his reputacion, the which I know is more deare to him then all the wealth in America. He likewise still maynetaynes his false report of his death, in his fflight into Walles, not with standing a letter dated the 25th of 9ber last, from a marchant in London, of very good credit, and brought in Mr. Payne his ship, which letter imports Sir Fferd: Gorges his good health, with the restauracion of his possesions agayne. Sir, I haue made bould to lay open our grevances, desiring you to take them into your graue consideracion, hoping if wee be forced to take such courses with Cleiues as the necessity and the equity of our cause requires, you will not thinke wee haue don amisse in it; yett we will (if possibly we may) forbeare till I heare from you. Now for the Patent that Mr. Rigby hath bought, it is not from our kings majestie, as Cleiues reportes, but from the President and Counsell of New-England, as myne and others are, wherein Mr. Rigby hath from there LL:^{ps} *Jura Regalia*, but his majestie takes that away by his royall grant to Sir Fferd: Gorges, bearing date the third of Aprill, in the fifteenth yeare of his highnes raigne. Now

I conceiue Mr. Rigby his agent is but to recover soe much land as the grant specifies, and to relinquish there *Jura Regalia*, as you may perceiue in the last clawse of our grant herewith sent you. I am very confident that Sir Fferd: Gorges hath not as yett disposed of his lands here, for without question he would haue given notice of it to his Commissioners; and therefore we ought not, vpon the bare reporte of Cleiues, to relinquish either his right of possessions or goverment. Yet I did ever, and doe intend, whensoever Mr. Rigby shall send over people, to lett them settle peaceably, to ayde and assist them to the best of my power, without questioning of *meum et tuum;* ffor this I know, if Sir Fferdinando Gorges and Mr. Rigby meete, all matters wilbe quietly ended, if there be no incendiares here. I will endeavour for peace, soe far forth as I doe not betray the trust confided in me by my honored ffreind and *quondam* master. I haue ever found you my worthy freind, far beyound my deservings, and haue therefore freely applyed my selfe vnto you, vnto whome I am ever obleiged to remayne

Your faythfull freind and servant,

Rich: Vines.

Saco, the 9th of January, 1643.

Good Sir, present my humble service to your vertuous wife.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines about Mr. Cleues, & a copy of some parte of the Prouince Patent. Rec: (1) 8, 1643."

[Extract from the Grant of the Province of Maine to Sir Ferdinando Gorges,* enclosed in the preceding letter.]

Neverthelesse our intent and meaninge is, that out of the premisses hereby granted or mencioned to be granted, there shalbe alwayes saved and reserved to all and every such person and persons as haue or hath any lawfull grant

* See Sullivan's Maine, Appendix. — Eds.

or graunts of landes or Plantacions, lawfully setled in the division and premises aforesaide, the free holding and enioyeing of his and there right, with the libertyes there vnto appertayning, he and they relinquishing and layeing downe his and ther *Jura Regalia*, (if he, or they haue any) to the said Sir Fferdinando Gorges, his heires and assignes, whome wee haue hereby made proprietour of the province, division and premises aforesaid, and payeing some small acknowledgement to the saide Sir Fferdinando Gorges, his heires and assignes. In witnes wheir of wee haue caused thes our letters to be made Patents. Witnes our selfe at Westminster, the third day of Aprill, in the fifteenth yeare of our raigne, &c.

Copia vera RICH: VINES.

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull his much honored freind John Wenthorpe Esqr., Governour of the Massachusetts Colloney, these, Boston.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, — I haue formerly sent you two letters, the one in answeare of yours, concer[n]ing the busines of Mr. Scott, the other declaring in part the seditiou[s] and malitious practices of Mr. Cleeues, and Mr. Tucker his agent, against the peace and goverment of this Province, and vnder pretence of authority from Mr. Alexander Rigby, a worthy gentleman (as I haue bin tould by your worship and others). I presume he will not tollerate any irregular or exorbitant courses, either against publique goverment lawfully established, or against perticular persons, for a private revenge. Mr Cleeues endeavours the ruine of both, as by my former letter to you it is evident. Since which tyme he hath held a court at his house, where were all the refractory men of our Province, and few other. They framed a letter, directed to

Cleeues and my selfe, telling vs that it was ther resolucions, (and that they would stand to it) that wee should try our rights of goverment before the worthy magistrates of the Massachusetts Bay, till it shalbe otherwise made knowne vnto them by a tryall in England; if not, they will stand as newters, and obay neither. This I know to be Cleeues his plott to bring vs all into a distracion, and a mutiny, for he knowes that neither my selfe, nor any other of Sir Fferdinando Gorges Comissioners, haue power to try his title either of land, or power and authority for goverment here, without his authority soe to doe, neither doe I beleiue that your worship and the rest of your honored Court will medle with any tryall of this nature.

There is like wise by Cleeues a letter of consosiacion which I menconned in my former letter, which I haue not seene, but our minister, Mr. Jenner, tells mee that the enginere hath soe cunningly contrived it, that all those that have sett there handes to it, for matter of defence against all invasion, haue likewise acknowledged Mr. Rigby to be there Governour, being vtterly ignorant of his deceipt therein. Tucker being here 7 dayes since, Mr. Smith, our magistrate for Saco, and my selfe examined him vppon the premises; he gaue vs peremtory and abusiue language, wherevpon we asked him for good security for his good abearing, and for his appearance at our next Court; he refusing it, we comitted him to the marshall;* the next day he acknowledged a recognisance of 40*li.* for his appearance, and was dismised. He deserved much more, but we forbeare till we heare from your worship, which I desire may be speedily, for the preventing of sudden mischeife and mutinous practises. I would haue sent you a copie of there letter to me, but that I heare the same is comming to you by Tucker, who is goeing for the Bay with these letters seruptitiously gotten, thereby to

* See Winthrop's N. E., ii. 154, 155. — Eds.

strenghten there faction, but I hope your worship will seriously in your wisdom consider what I haue written, and according to the equity of our case, send me your advise. Thus ceasing furder to trouble you at present, I rest

Yovrs to be commanded, to the best of my power

RICH: VINES.

SACO, 29th of Jan: 1643.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines (11) 29, 1643."

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull his honored freind, John Winthope Esqr. Governour of the Massachusetts Coloney. — These, Boston.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, — I haue lately written vnto you two letters concerning the evell practices of Mr. Cleiues and Mr. Tucker, tending to the ruine of this Province. Now hearing that Tucker is gon to your worship with false certificates, at least wise fraudelently gotten, many haueing sett there handes to they know not what, and besides, a greate part of them ar bound over to our Courts for notorious offences, and therefore ar easily perswaded to set there handes to any thing that may be preiudiciall to a peaceable goverment. They reporte that you will ayde them, and Tucker is now gon for that purpose, with a letter of consociation, in which Cleiues hath cunningly made all those that haue subscribed to acknowledge Mr. Rigby to be there governour; and yet, in a letter to Cleeues and my selfe from that ignorant route, they will obey neither Sir Fferdinando Gorges, nor Mr. Rigby his authority, till there be a tryall for it. This letter is likewise sent to your worship, with twenty handes to it. You may be pleased to enquire of this bearer, Thomas Rogers, what manner of people they ar.

There pretence for ayde, is to defend them against the Ffrench, but there is no such cause, but only to maynetayne there seditious and mutinous practices against Sir Fferdinando Gorges goverment. I shall therefore humbly intreate your worship to consider of my two former letters with this, and to send me your answer by this bearer, and likewise to stop the currant of Cleeues his illegall proceeding, and not to ayde them, till there bee iust cause. Haueing formerly written at large of this turbulent people vnto you, I cease farder to trouble at present, resting

Your assured freind and servant,

Rich: Vines.

Saco, the 12th of ffeb: 1643.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines (12) [ ] 1643."

RICHARD VINES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Right Worshipfull and ever honored Sir, — I haue forborne to write vnto you a long tyme, by reason of your greate and continuall imployments in your State affayres, but now, hearing your assembly is dissolved, I make bould to trouble you with my greivances, which ar allmost insupportable, by reason of Mr. Cleiues his mallitious practices against our goverment, and my selfe especially; and he makes your selfe the mayne pillar that he rest vpon, for he sent a copie of a letter from you, to our last court, there to be published, which did contayne some kinde of threatnings against vs here, if we should meddle with Mr. Cleiues, but I did conceaue it was written vpon some misinformacion. He doth continually rayle vpon me, and brand me with the name of traytor, besides his most false informacions to yourselfe and others.

I like wise thinke I had some hard measure in the com-

mission that came from the Parliament, for that I did write to you that Mr. Hen: Boade, and Mr. Mackworth, (who wer 2 of the Comissioners,) might haue had the Commission to haue examined the most parte of the peticioners against me; it was refused, and I never had answere of my letter; but you sent a note vnder your hand to Mr. Mackworth, to examine such as Cleues should bring vnto him, which he refusing to doe without the Commission, then Cleiues giues 2 men ther oaths, that all was true contayned in a paper, there presented ready written, which paper was sent to your selfe, to be retourned to the Parliament, to answeare the Interrogatories that were against me. That Cleiues hath thus proceeded against me, I can proue by Mr. Arthur Mackworth his oath. I conceiue the proceedings against me herein haue not bin legall, neither haue I had that lawfull favour and meanes afforded me, to vindicate my selfe from Cleiues his most vniust accusacions against me, to the honorable house of Parliament, which may cause the vtter ruine of my selfe and family; ffor I professe I dare not come into the Bay, by reason of your letters before specified; and alsoe for feare of some mischeife should befall vnto my family in my absence, by Cleiues his meanes, for he hath and doth dayly threaten my downe fall, and that if I come into Boston, I shall ly fast, or goe home without my leggs. Now I know not what misinformacion he hath given to your selfe or others there, of our proceeding here, but I can assure you we haue never don him any iniury, more then when our courts were nere, to warne him to appeare. Neither did I ever intend to deale with him, but in a iustifiable way. And as for Mr. Rigbie his right, which he makes his quarrell, we could never see any thing ffor it hetherto; and to loose Sir Fferdinando Gorges his right, granted by the King's letters Patents, and our owne priveledges, vpon Cleiues greate wordes, or vpon the report of an ould broken title, (for we heare of nothing but the

Plough Patent, which was desarted 13 years past;) for soe doeing we might be iustly condemned of infidelity and pusillanimity.

If there come order, either from King or Parliment, for the establishing of Mr. Rigby in that patent, we will submit to it, soe far forth as they doe not intrench vpon the liberties of Saco, (for our Patents wear granted and possest a yeare before that, and you knowe that all grants run, except before excepted); if they should, we haue iust cause to complayn, and looke for right. Sir, out of the honorable respect and esteeme I haue of your worth, I haue made my greivances knowne vnto you, being vnwilling to apply my selfe vnto any other, having from the beginning acquainted none but your selfe here with, which I leaue to your wisdome to consider of, and to pardon such errors as I haue here committed, ffor oppresed mindes ar subiect to folly and passion; its my case now, as you may vnderstand by the premises.

You wrote vnto me to retourne vnto you a man that served me, which I intended to haue don by the first, but the fellow had some inkling of it and run away to Mr. Cleiues, who will not suffer him to come back, but hath married him to a young widdow of this place, who run after him, when I had forbid the banes here. There is some moneyes in my handes due for wages, and alsoe some goodes that he had by his wife, which I haue made stay of in our river. Mr. Jenner will certifie you at large hereof.

Thus ceasing farder to trouble you at present, with my best service to you and yours, I rest

Your assured freind and servant,

Rich: Vines.

Saco, 4th Aug: 1645.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Vines, 4 (6) 45."

LETTERS OF THOMAS JENNER.*

THOMAS JENNER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worship: his very loueing & kind friend Mr. Wintrop, at his howse in Boston in N. E. giue theise I pray.

Worthy Sir, — My due respect being remembred to you, I heartily salute you in the Lord; giueing you humble thanks, for your favourable aspect which hath alwaies bin towards me, (though of me most undeserued,) and especially for your late kind letter on my behalfe; for which sake I was kindly imbraced, aboue the expectation of my selfe, & others, and am still (I thank God) loueingly respected amongst them: but not with out some hot discourses, (especially about the ceremonies;) yet they all haue ended (through mercy) in peace; and, for aught I can perceiue, doe prize the word, & relish it, dayly better then other, and some promise faire, euen in Mr. Vines his family. But generally they were very ignorant, superstitious, & vitious: and scarse any religious. Ffre leaue

* Thomas Jenner was at Saco as early as the winter of 1640–1, and was probably the first minister of the Puritan faith that ever preached in Maine; unless that wretched man, Burditt, preached at York as early. Jenner was, without doubt, the first minister settled at Saco. Richard Gibson, an Episcopal clergyman, living in the vicinity, at Spurwink, as early as 1636, may sometimes have preached here. Jenner remained here till 1646, as appears by a letter of his in this volume, dated April 6, 1646; in which he says, "I am, as it were, on the wing of removal; but whither, as yet I know not."

Jenner was of Roxbury in 1634 or 1635, but not long after went to Weymouth; which town he represented in the General Court of 1640. He is said to have returned to England before 1650, and to have resided in Norfolk. He was compelled, by straitened circumstances, to sell his library before his death. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.*, i. 301; ii. 544; *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 250; *Hutchinson's Papers*, p. 111; *Hazard*, ii. 178–180; *Folsom's Saco and Biddeford*, pp. 78, 79, 81–83. — Eds.

they giue me to doe what soever I please; imposeing nothing on me, either publikly or privately, which my selfe dislike, onely this, Mr. Vines & the captaine* both, haue timely expressed themselues to be utterly against church-way, saying, their Patent doth prohibit the same; yet I, for my part neuer once touched upon it, except when they themselues haue in private discourse put me upon it by questions of their owne, ffor I count it no season as yet to go build, before God sends vs materials to build with all. Thus being in some hast, I end, humbly craueing your prayers: & so committing your selfe & all yours to him, who hath promised to guide vs by his counsell here, & afterward to receiue vs vnto glory, in whome I rest Your worships to command

THO: JENNER.

Remember my loueing respect (I pray) to Mrs. Wintrop, also to Mr. Wintrop, your eldest sonne, to Mr. Cotton, & Mr. Wilson.

SACO, 4th of the last, 1640.

THOMAS JENNER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull his very worthy friend, Mr. Wintrop, Deputy Gouernour of the Massat: Bay at Boston, giue these.

RIGHT WORSHIP, — This is to certifie you of my safe returne to Saco, though with some danger. Being returned ther, I found one of my neighbors dead, who had drowned herselfe the day before my arivall, by meanes of Satans violent temptations, perswading her that she was a reprobate; of whom I had good hopes. About a month

---

* Bonython. — EDS.

after that, God struck the husband of the sayd woman with sudden death, one, on whom God had lately wrought a good worke. About fortnight after that, God struck another with sudden death, and visited with a sharpe sicknesse the most families of our River, but diverse of them, thanks be to God, are comfortably recouered. In the heate of Gods visitation, I began to consider what it was that might move the Lord so bitterly to afflict vs; amongst other evils, I came to vnderstand that ther was amongst vs the guilt of breach of promise, and that amongst our magistrats: ffor by a letter wrot from your selfe to the inhabitants of Lygonia, I vnderstood that Mr. Vines had solemly engaged his promise, that they would sit still, & make no proceedings against Mr. Tucker, or any other (except Mr. Bonython) before your selfe shall certifie them of such orders as ye may receiue out of England, which may concerne the difference betweene those here, &c. I vnderstanding here of, made bold to put Mr. Vines in remembrance therof, wishing him to consider if he & the rest of them had not apparently broken that solemne promise, & that often times; for spedily after Mr. Vines returne, they sent their warrants for Mr. Cl., Mr. Tuck., & their adherence. Since that they sent 4. or 5. armed men, & fetched before them Mr. Henrie Wats, & bound him with his surety to make his appearance here at their Court at Saco, the 25 of the 1m., the which he did, & produced your worships letter for his excuse: not withstanding they either would force him to submit to their Goverment, or pay a fine, who rather then he would pay his fine, submitted for the present, but is forth with departing the province. That which most offends me is, that Mr. Vines hath both privately & publikly in Court, denied any such covenant or promise as your worship hath expressed in your letter to the inhabitance. Because I could not take satisfaction at Mr. Vines' absolute deniall of the promise, Mr. Vines is fallen out with me bitterly, & threat-

ens me to my face, when time shall serve. Also finding him vnfaithfull to me in other matters (viz.) privately forewarneing some to pay me any stipend, & yet deniing it to my selfe when I louingly told him of it, but was proved to his face in open Court this weeke, onely by Divine Providence, without the least act or motion of mine owne, wher upon for theise & many other reasons, I openly, at the end of the Court, gave the people to vnderstand that I was fully determined to depart & leave them, wishing them to look out for another minister: ffor I was sensib[le] of further mischeife, & danger is like still to ensue, they being resolutely bent (notwithstanding your gracious letter of advice to the contrary, read openly in the Court) forthwith to apprehend Cleaues & Tuckar, & to subdue the rest vnto their obedience, and to that end haue fitted them selues with bilbowes, & ordained Capt. Bonython, Colonell General: and will not by all good counsell be diverted; I think counsell, to the contrary, doth rather (like oyle on the fire) enflame them. They take great offence at Cleaues & Tuckar for chargeing them with basenesse, for their perfidiousnesse & promise breaking with them. Truely I thinke verily that the maine motiue which stirs them on to be so violent against Mr. Righbies conduct, is their manifold debts to people in the Bay & else wher. Now, so long as they haue the stafe in their owne hands, they care not. No man scarse durst to aske for his owne, much [less] to sue for it.

I humbly craue your prayers; also your remembrance of me as God offers opportunity. I know not what to do, but mine eyes are to the Lord, on whom I cast my care, for he careth for me. So I commit you to the Lord, & rest Your Worships to command,

Tho. Jenner.

Saco, 1m. 28, 45.

I humbly intreat you to remember my kind respects to Mrs. Downeing, your good sister, who entertained me kindly in my returne, & desired much to heare of my safe returne.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Jenner. Rec. — (2) 10, 46."

THOMAS JENNER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull his very worthy friend Jo: Wintrop Esqr. & Deputy Gouernour of N. E. at his howse in Boston give theise.

Right Worshipfull, — My due respects remembred to you. This is to informe you (according to request made vnto me, both by Mr. Jocelyne* & Mr. Cleeve) that in Cascoe Bay, on the last of March, the major part of the Province of Lygonia meet together, at an intended Court of Mr. Cleeve. Mr. Jocelyne & his company came armed with gunes & swords, or both: Mr. Cleeve & his company vnarmed. After sermon was ended, Mr. Joselyne & his company separated themselues about a furlong from Mr. Cleeve & his company. They sent vnto Mr. Cleeve a demand in writing (with all their hands subscribed,) to haue a sight of his originals, promising a safe returne. After some hæsitation & demur, Mr. Cleeve, vpon condition they would come together into one place, promised to gratifie them. The which being publikely read & scanned, the next morneing Mr. Jocelyne & his company deliuered vnto Mr. Cleeve in writinge, with all their hands subscribed, a Protest against Mr. Righbies authority of gouerment, that is to say, in any part of that bound or tract of land which Mr. Cleeve doth challeng by vertue

---

* Vines had now left the country; and Jocelyn had succeeded to his place, as Deputy Governor of Maine. — Eds.

of his Patent, viz. from Sacadehock River to Cape Porpus. They furthermore required & injoined Mr. Cleeve & his company to submit themselues vnto the authority & gouerment derived from Sir Fferdinando Gorges, & that for the future they addresse themselues vnto their Courts.

Lastly, they demanded of Mr. Cleeve a friendly triall concerneing the bounds afore sayd, ffor Mr. Jocelyne would that Mr. Cleeve his *terminus a quo* should begin 60 miles vp Chenebeck River, because the Patent saith, it must lie nere two Ilands which are about 60 miles from the sea. Ffor answer to it the Patent also saith, the tract of land of 40 miles square, must lie on the south side of Sacadehock-River.

Now Sacadehock riuer reacheth but to Merry Meeting, & then its branched into Begipscot, & Chenebeck, & is no further cald by the name of Sacadehock. Now Sacadehock River is a certaine & sure place for one terme of its bounds, but the Ilands are doubtfull, which they are, or wher they are: & more ouer ther possession was first taken.* Mr. Cleeue in his answere readily accepted their offer of a triall at Boston; whervpon they both bound themselues each to other in a bond of 500*li.* personally to appeare at Boston the next Court after May, then & ther to impleade each other.

They also jointly sent their letters to your selues (the Magistrats of Massach:) to craue your timely advertisement at what time the next Court after May next will happen to be; as also your approbation & entertainment of the suit; the which if it be by your Court admitted to a triall (as I se not why they should refuse it, seing both partis are so agreed) it may occasion a happy end of a dangerous contention.

Furthermore, Mr. Cleeue demanded a sight of their

---

* That is, we may suppose that the "Plough Company" first took possession of their grant here. — Eds.

originals for gouerment; none being produced, he disclaimed obedience, and told them ther was no equality betweene his something & their nothing. It was also agreed, that none of each company or party should, at any time or vpon any occasion, be troubled or molested by any of the other party or company, vntill the suit aforesayd be ended.

Mr. Cleeue layd his injunction in particular on Mr. Jordane, neuer more to administer the seales of the Covenant promiscuously, & without due order & ordination, within the province of Lygonia.

I must needs acknowledge, to their high commendation, that both Mr. Jocelyne & Mr. Cleeve caried on the interaction very friendly, like men of wisdome & prudence, not giueing one misbeholding word each together, such was the power of Gods Holy Word, aweing their hearts. Your letters were also very valide, & gratefully accepted on both parties. Thus after two or three daies agitation, each man departed very peaceably to his owne home.

Thus, right worthy Sir, according to the trust committed to me, I haue faithfully (though rudly) composed the chiefe matters in that their transaction, & haue here sent them vnto you. So I commit you to God &, rest

Yours to comand, THO: JENNER.

SACO, 6, 2 m. 46.

I humbly craue your prayers, for I am as it were on the wing of removall, but whither as yet I know not. The Lord direct me. I can not by any meanes abide here any longer. Amongst many other reasons, one is the falling out betweene me & Mr. Robison, who, vnknowne to my selfe, had secretly gained the affection of my eldest daughter, which being discouered very lately, hath wrought in my mind not a little disquietnesse, ffor I approue not of the man, in that kind. I humbly craue your prayers.

Sir, I haue lately ben earnestly solicited by one Mrs.

Tucker, an intimate friend of mine, & an approved godly woman, that I would writ vnto your worship; that in case Mr. Cleaue & her husband (Mr. Tucker) shall happen shortly to haue recourse to your selfe, to end some matters of difference betweene them, now at their departure each from other, that you would be pleased, as much as in you lye, not to suffer Mr. Cleaue to wrong her husband, for though her husband hath ben as it were a servant hitherto for Mr. Cleaue, yet now, at their making vp of accounts, Mr. Cleaue by his subtill head, brings in Mr. Tucker 100*li.* debter to him.

Sir, ther is also a child of one Mrs. Allin of Casco, with one Goodman Dexter of Lyn, which was placed by Mr. Tucker & Mr. Cleaues. The mother hath no more child [*torn*] but that boy, & hearing of her childs condition how bad i [*torn*] hath ben much troubled, it hath caused much dissention betwee[n] herselfe, & Mr. Cleaue, & Mr. Tucker, and the truth is, the boy is used very hardly. I saw the youth at Dexters owne house, most miserable in clothinge, neuer did I se any worse in New England. I humbly intreat your worship to lay to heart the condition, both of the mother & the child, least it be some disparagement to our selues euen in London, from whence they came, & were well known. The youth was not so firmely bound, but your worships (as I conceiue) may easily vnloose him.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Jenner, Rec. 30 (2) 46."

LETTERS OF GEORGE CLEEVE.*

GEORGE CLEEVE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the honered John Winthrop Esquire Gouernour thes present.

Casco Bay, this 27th of the 11 moneth, 1643.

Honered Sir, — With my most hvmble sarvice I salute you, accnolidging my duty of thankfullnes to you for all formar favors shewed mee; and whereas you were plesed at my requst to writ to Mr. Vines & others in behalfe of Mr. Rigbies athority,† of which I informed him in my last lettars, assuring my selfe that hee will not be vnmynd-

* George Cleeve, — as he appears to have spelt his name, — or Cleeves, was from Plymouth, Eng. He and his partner, Tucker, were the first settlers of the Neck of Casco, now Portland, about the year 1632. They had before established themselves on the eastern side of the Spurwink River, on land which they claimed to have purchased of William Bradshaw (referred to on page 90), who had, Nov. 4, 1631, received a grant, from the Council of Plymouth, of fifteen hundred acres there; but they were ejected by John Winter, the agent of Trelawney and Goodyear, who, Dec. 2, 1631, had a grant from the Council, which included Richmond's Island and all the present town of Cape Elizabeth. Cleeves and Tucker continued partners for many years, and were engaged in land speculations and trade. Cleeves went to England in 1636, and procured from Gorges, who had recently received a grant of New Somersetshire, a title to a large tract of land, embracing the neck on which they had settled. It was in the form of a lease for two thousand years, and was dated 27th January, 1636–7. He returned here in May, bringing also a commission from Gorges to lease and sell lands in his province. Cleeves was a man of enterprise and address; but he was ambitious and unscrupulous. After Gorges had procured his royal charter of Maine, with large powers of government, Cleeves went to England, and, while there, addressed himself to Alexander Rigby, a member of Parliament, who had warmly espoused the republican side in the civil war then raging, and, as is supposed, induced him to purchase the old Plough Patent, of which notice has already been taken; which was effected 7th April, 1643. For an account of Cleeves's connection with that purchase, see note on pp. 89, 90, Vines's and Cleeves's Letters in this volume, and Willis's "History of Portland." He continued to reside at Casco, afterwards called Falmouth, till extreme old age; dying soon after November, 1666. The records are full of his land conveyances; but he appears sometimes to have been in dependent circumstances. — *Sainsbury's Calendar*, pp. 135, 137. — Eds.

† See Winthrop's "New England," ii. 154. — Eds.

full to requit your love therein. What Mr. Vines answered you I know not, but thus can afferme & proue, that by his practis he doth slitly regard your advice therein (as may appere by the supplication of the inhabitants of Ligonia and other passeges, the truth whereof this bearar can informe you, as allso of there c[on]saltations with Mr. Jurdin * a ministar of antichrist, there chefe counsellar) who doth not only calumniate and slandar the parliament of England with vile reproachfull termes, as rebellious, factias trayteros parssons against the king, but allso belcheth out his blasfemise against the Churches of Christ in this land, charging them with scisme and faction for fasting & praying for the affliction of there brethren in England; denying it to be the hand of God vpon the land for sinn nor the occation of papist or evell counsellars, but for the rebellion of the Parliament and the puritant faction there; with many othar passeges of that vnworthy Ballitte, of which this bearar, Mr. Tuckar, can informe you, as allso of Vines his dealings with him, and of his thretning to send mee pressonar to England in Mr. Trelanies ship, which inforseth mee once more to joyne with the inhabitants of Ligonia and humbly to desire your assistance against there vnlawfull practisses; and so mvch the rathar for there wicked oposition of the ways of Christ. They seing vs about to settle our selues vndar the ministry, and that wee ar in hope that the Lord will gathar a Church amovngst vs,† this causeth them & there prelatticall counsellar to raidge the more, which will insite you to assist vs so mvch the rather. I nede not here aquaint you what tytle they pretend to haue from the king, allthough we never sawe any, nor know of any they haue, seing you bettar know then myselfe that the king can not lawfully

* Robert Jordan, a clergyman of the Church of England, arrived about 1640, and settled at Spurwink. He married the only daughter of John Winter. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.*; *Folsom's Saco and Bidd.*, 79. — Eds.

† Stephen Bachiler (p. 104) appears to have had a call from Casco about this time to settle. — Eds.

grant what was formarlie granted by that actte of Counsell established at Plymmoth, to whose bettar judgment I submit, beseching you to answere the inhabitants petishion and hopefull expectation, committing you to God's holie protextion, resting evar reddy to sarue your commands

Whilst I am GEORGE CLEEVE.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Cleves Lettre to me."

GEORGE CLEEVE TO JOHN WINTHROP AND EDWARD GIBBINS.

To the honered John Wenthrop Esqur, and to my loving ffrend, Captaine Edward Gibbens of Boston, thes present.

HONORED SIR, AND LOVING FFREND, — Whereas the honerable Court of parliament was plesed, vpon my pettishion presented vnto them, to derect ther honorabl ordar vnto you in speciall, and in cace of mortality to othars mentioned in the said Comishion, to take the answers of partis and wittnesses, and the same to returne, the whole prosedings I haue here with sent, and do humbly desire you to send your warant to cale before you Mr. Richard Vines of Sacoe, and Mr. Edward Godfrie of Agamenticous, to appere before you at a cartaine day to com, which I conceaue will be most fit, in regard of mens occasion of planting, to be about the midest of May next; as allso in your warant to requir the apparanc of John Bakar of Pascattaqua, and Frances Robinson of Sacko, and Andrew Algar of Strattons Iland, as allso John Bonithon, gen. William Royall, and Michell Mitton, and Richard Tucker, to proue the artickles; and as I hope you will put in execution the athority of this honorable Court, so I desire that you will send your warants by this bearar, Mr. Tucker, who will with trust deliuar them to the seuarall perssons so sommoned, and will make retorne of there answers, that so you may make retorne of there answers

according to the derection of the said ordar, for which, as allso for all formar favors I will ever acknowledg my selfe oblidged to be

Your humble sarvant GEORG CLEEVE.

CASCO BAY, the 2th day of the last month, 1643.*

GEORGE CLEEVE TO THE GOVERNOR, &c., OF MASSACHUSETTS.

To the honered Governer and Depitie Governer & Covrt of Assistants of the Massachusets Collenie, thes.†

HONERED SIRS, — May it plese you I haue latlie receued from Mr. Rigbie lettars of derection & advice, to procede in the Goverment of his Province of Ligonia: and becase we ar opposed by Mr. Vins & othare his confederats, that we could not prosede according to our instrvctions, and being daylie threttned, & ar still in dangar of our liues, & allso to haue our estats seaced on by them for not submitting to a pretended athoritie to them giuen by Sir Farthinando Gorges without any lawfull Commission, & there vpon we are in danger to be ruened & vndon, unles the Lord do move your harts to protect vs with your assistance. I do not hereby presume to derect you, but humbly craue leeve to shew myne opinnion, which is that if you will be plesed to writ but your genarall lettar to our oposits to deter them from there illeagall prosedings, and a lettar to our people of Legonia, to advice & incoridg them, that notwithstanding Mr. Vines & the rest do oppose, that they may & ought to adheare to Mr. Rigbis lawfull athori-

---

* That is, 2d February, 1643-4. Cleeves had arrived from England with his commission from Rigby some time before the 9th of the preceding January, as per Vines's letter of that date in this volume. He landed at Boston. See Winthrop's "New England," ii. 154. — EDS.

† This letter, with the depositions, is copied from the originals in the files at the State House. The letter had been printed in Willis's "History of Portland," i. 50, 51. — EDS.

tie. I hope you shall not nede to put your selues to any farthar truble to finish the worke, and in so doing you will mvch obblidg Mr. Rigbie vnto you all; who would doupless haue sent ovar othar ordar at this tyme, if hee had knowne the iniures offered him and vs. These lettars now com ar in answere of my lettars sent to him vpon my first arivall, and not of the last nor of the [*torn*] of the Commission, as you may se by the date of them. I herewithall send you Mr. Rigbis lettar of requst to you, & allso a lettar of his to mee, whereby you may see how the Parliament aproveth of his prosedin, and that we may expect farthar ordars forthwith, and in the intrim wee do most humbly besech you to afford vs such spedie assistance as the nessesitie of our present condishion requireth, and we shall for euar pettishion the Throne of Grace for you all, and rest Your humble sarvants

GEORGE CLEEVE,

for & in behalfe of the people of Ligonia.

CASCO this 5. month 3 day, 1645.

We haue heere sent you sevarall deposisions taken before vs, consarning Robart Nashe of Boston; Mr. Tucker beinge an Assistant athorised by Mr. Rigbis Commishion, vnder his hand & sealle, vntill the Genarall Court shall electe there Magistrats and offisars.

Severall Deposisions taken before vs Georg Cleeve & Richart Tucker, both of Cascoe in the province of Ligonia, consarning Robart Nashe his miscaraug in our parts in the third month last, 1645.

HENRIE WATTES of Black Pwent sworn & examined, saith about the 20th of May, being the last voyaidg that Robart Nash of Boston made into our parts, this deponant being about his house, and about 2 myles from Strattons Island, this deponant hard severall peces shott of in manar

of a fight, he supposeth about an hundred peces, & beinge terifid therewith, as well as his neighhours, with what conveniencie he might, he desired to know the mattar, and being informed from Strattons Iland that Nash & his company, and the fishermen of the said Iland had shot them, to home Nash had giuen powdar for that pvrpose, to answere him and his company out of his vessell, and that they were shot of at the drinking of there healths, and that they did take powder out of Nash his barell by handfuls, without othar mesure, & vowed to haue the last shot of the Ilandars, to home he had allso giuen powder without wait, in so mvch that they shot so lonng that there peces were so hott that they could hould them no longar in there hands; & farthar deposeth that John Parkar of Dammarills Cove affermeth that Robart Nash being with him, gaue & sould so mvch sack to his men, that Nash him selfe and Parkars men weare all so drunke for seuerall daies togethar, that his men could not goe to sea in the prime tyme of fishing, whereby the said Parkar & his company lost 40 or 50 pownds by the misdemenvre of the said Nash.

Taken the last of June, 1645.

Georg Dearing of Blake Pwent sowrne & examined, saith that at the same tyme he heerd many peeces shot about Strattons Iland, and vpon farthar inquire he vnderstode that it was a drvnken bout betwene Nash and the Ilandrs, which putt him and his wyfe and neighbours into such a fright that they all thought that the French or othar enimyes had bin at hand.

Taken the day aboue said.

John Smith of Sacoe sworne & examined, saith that the same tyme he hard the peces shot of so thick that he and the rest of the people there judged yt to be a fight betwene the French, or that Mr. Wintar had bin taken at

Richmans Iland, and this deponant saith that hee counted 70 peeces shot, and then left counting, and that vpon repaire to enquire the cause, he found that Nash and his company had shot them at Strattons Iland, and that he allso gaue the Ilandars powdar to answere him from the Iland, & that Nash vowed to haue the last shot, and saith that he hard that they weare all drunck.

TACKEN THE DAY ABOUE SAID.

Michell Mitton of Casco sworne and examined, saith that about the 20 of May last, he hard seuerall peces shot of, which he supposed had bin a fight betwene the French, or that Richmans Iland, Mr. Wintars plantacion, had bin taken, and being terified therewith, could not rest till hee went to Richmans Iland to know the mattar; & there vnderstanding that Robart Nash of Boston shot them, and gaue powdar for that purpose to shout at the drinckings of healths, and farthar saith that he hard 40 peces at lest, Cascoe being no les then 3 leags of Strattons Iland.

All thes sevarall deposissions weare tackene before vs, the last day of June and the first of Julie, 1645, before vs

GEORG CLEEVE.
RICHARD: TUCKER.

George Lewis of Casco sorne and examined, saith that Robert Nashe of Boston sayd in his hereinge to Tho: Wyse, who reproved the said Nash for sutting so many peces at Strattons Iland, that he would haue shott so manie more in Cascoe Bay at his comming in there, if he had had so mvch pudder left; and this this deponant hard Nash say at his returne from the Easte, the same voyage, which was the first of June last; these words were heard from him vpon the Sabbath day, at his returne from meeting. Tackn before me,

GEORGE CLEEVE.
RICHARD: TUCKER:

JULIE 2: 1645.

I Georg Cleue do affirme that about the 25th day of the third month last, 45, that 3 of Andrew Algars men, of Strattons Island, came to my howse in a botte, to borow scales & waits to way there fish, and I questined them about all that shuting which trubled all the people in seuerall plantations, and they tould mee that Mr. Nash shot them, & giuen them powdar to answere him againe. And I allso demanded of them if they were not all drvnck, and they said that they were all merei, and farthar I affirme that I went, & Mr. Tucker with mee, to the howse of John Cussens & Thomas Smyth, in Cascoe Bay, and about 3 leages from my howse, to haue tacken there testemony consarning Nashes slandring your Genarall Court, but could not prevail with them to take ther oath, they being refrecttorie, & saith that Nash is in ther dept; but confessed verbalie to vs, as they had formarlie tould Mr. Holland of Dorchestar, that Nash said that the Court had doon great wrong to a pore woman about a sowe, and that none could haue justice from you, but such as were members of the Church, and tould them they weere as good liue in Tvrkie as liue vndar such a goverment, and tould them that there were 19 wittnesses sworne against Mr. Cane, that he, being a membar, caried the mattar against the poore woman, and other words to this efecte; and this is in the mouthes of all our malignants; it being reported, say they, by thouse that liue amongst them, and therefore is vndoupttedlie trew.

That this is there reports, and as they afirme from Nash, Mr. Holland can speak to the lick purpose, and I shall be reddie to affirme vpon oath, who am

Your humble sarvant, GEORG CLEEVE.

GEORGE CLEEVE AND OTHERS TO THE GOVERNOR, DEPUTY GOVERNOR, AND ASSISTANTS OF MASSACHUSETTS.*

To the honoured Gouernour & Deputie Governour, & Court of Assistants in the Massetusets Bay, these present.

Honoured Sirs, — With our most humble service we salute yow in the Lord Jesus Christ. Shewing vnto yow that we are in great distresse by a company of factious men, who haue leagued them selues together to murther vs, together with all the well affected in Mr. Rigbyes Province of Ligonia, vnder pretence of a protest against vs, whoe have severall Commissions from Mr. Rigby for the present goverment of his Province. The heads of this league are Mr. Henry Jocelyn, Mr. Arthur Mackworth, & Ffrancis Robinson, which Mr. Mackworth did willingly submit to Mr. Rigbyes authority formerly, & did subscribe to his Constitucions, & received a Commission from him to be an Assistant, & acted by it till he was drawne away by the perswasion of Mr. Vines & Mr. Jorden, (one vnworthily called a minister of Christ). From these two men all this evill doth principally flowe, for though Mr. Vines be now gone, yet he hath presumed to depute Mr. Jocelyn in his stead, although he never had any Commission soe to doe; yet he, by the councell of Mr. Jorden, hath taken vpon him, as a lawfull Magistrate to come into Cascoe Bay, & hath gone from house to house, being accompaned with Ffrancis Robinson & Arthur Mackworth, & have discourraged the people of Ligonia, & drawne them offe, some by fraude & some by force, from theire subiection to Mr. Rigbys lawfull authority; contrary to theire oathes freely & willingly taken, a true coppy whereof is herewith sent. And haue alsoe presumed to take deposicions of

* This letter is printed from the original, in the volume of "Davis Papers," belonging to the Massachusetts Historical Society. It is not in Cleeve's hand. — Eds.

severall people, to accuse some of vs falsely and slanderously with treason & other crimes, wherof we are innocent; intending vpon those grounds to deale with vs at theire pleasure, and thus we are all destined by them vnto destruction, if the Lord prevent not their wicked plotts against vs. And this is to be put in execucion vpon the last day of March next, vpon which day we haue appoynted to keepe a Court in Cascoe Bay, which Court is already summond, & severall actions entred, which are at issue, & some of theire party bound over for misdemeanor, & seueral actions against many of them, & therefore cannot be reiourned; at which time, they having made a party of neare an hundred (as we are informed) to set vpon vs, & violently to resist Mr. Rigbyes authority, & soe take vs & our partie, & slay vs, or deale with vs at their pleasures. And further, we are truely informed that they intend to make this the begining of a sivill warre, which they intend to blowe abroade into all parts of this land, & giue it out there be many amongst yow, & elswhere, that doe but looke for an oportunity to declare themselues Cavileers, & for the King, as if yow or wee were the Kings enimies, & they onely his freinds. The Lord God giue yow wisdome to prevent daingers in time, in a right way; & for our parts, we doe most humbly implore your aides & assistance by sending vnto vs against that day some of your men to stand by vs, for the keeping of the peace & for the maintenance of Mr. Rigbyes right, for which we hope he wilbe thankfull, as alsoe we beleeve the Parliament will take it well from yow, who doubtles will maintaine theire owne acts, having confirmed his authority to him. We suppose a fewe of your men would still the rage of our aduersaries, but we will not prescribe to yow the number, but leaue it to your better wisdomes. And for the charge which will accrewe, we shall take such course in a leagall way, that all your people shalbe by vs paid in a thankfull manner; for we conceave it fitt that Mr. Rigbyes Pattent & Province

should be lyable & ingaiged for our iust defence, although we thinke it meete the charge should be laid vpon some of the cheefe of the Confederates residing within the said province; but herein we doe most humbly beseech yow to helpe vs with your graue aduise & direction, as alsoe to be further helpfull to vs, by your councill, to carry along all our administracions, according to God, for which we shall ever acknowledge our selues to be your most humble obleiged seruants, willingly endeavouring to follow your councill & aduise in all things, & alsoe we most humbly beseach yow to be helpfull vnto vs by your prayers to the Throne of grace, for wisdome & councill from God, to helpe our weaknes & vnworthines in so waighty a cause. There be many particulars which we presume not to trouble your Court with, in regard of your more serious imployment, which we haue sent to our honoured freind, Mr. Winthrop, together with certaine deposicions, to illustrate the trueth of the within written, which, as occasion is offred, we haue humbly intreated him to shew yow. And thus continuing our peticion & humble request to yow for aide, for the safeguard of our liues, being the onely way yet visible to vs, vnder God, on whome wee cheefly depend; & in the second place on yow, whome we trust the Lord will make the instruments of our safety, & meete helpes to vs to carry along the worke of reformacion amongst vs, to the glory of our God & to the comfort of his poore people amongst vs; & this wee leave with yow, commending yow all to the grace of God & resting your humble seruants,

WILLIAM RYALL.* GEORGE CLEEVE.
RICHARD TUCKER. THOMAS PERCHES.

CASCO BAY, this 18th ffebr: 1645.

* For a notice of William Royal, the first of this family in this country, see Willis's Portland, i. 195. Richard Tucker, frequently mentioned in these Maine letters, was a partner of Cleeves. Thomas Purchase, as has been already noticed on page 338, was associated with George Way in the Pejipscot Patent. — *Williamson's Maine*, i. 690, 691; *Willis's Portland*, i. 14. — EDS.

[The following draught of an answer to the foregoing letter, in the handwriting of Gov. Winthrop, is written upon the reverse of the leaf.]

To our worthy frends Mr. George Cleves, Deputy President of Ligonia, & his Assistants, at Casco, dd.

Sir, — We haue received & considered your lettres by this bearer, Mr Purchas, together with the Testimony & other writings sent therwith: we received also lettres & other writings from Mr. Jocelin & others; by all which we perceiue that the differences between you are growne to a great height of contention, which we are very sorrye for, & would not be wantinge to doe what lyes in vs for composinge the same. But whereas the differences grewe vpon extent of some Patents, & right of Jurisdiction, wherin Mr. Rigby & others in E: are interested, & lettres have been sent to them from both partyes, & answer is expected by the first return; therevpon we have thought it expedient to perswade you bothe to forbeare any further contention in the meane tyme, & have written to Mr. Jocelin, &c, to that ende, who having desired our advice, we may presume they will observe the same, & will not attempt any acts of hostility against you; and we doubt not but you wilbe perswaded to the same; which we judge will conduce most to Mr. Rigbys right, & your owne & your neighbours peace. As for such iniuryes as you suppose to be done you by Allens wife * & others, if you forbeare the proceedings against them, till advice come out of E: (the rather to avoyd being a Judge in your owne case,) it will tend muche to peace, & make no preiudice to your right; & so hoping of your redyness to [*torn*] to counsell, & to studye peace by all means, we commende you all to the sure & gratious protection of the Lord, & shall rest

Your loving frinds.

Boston, 5. (1), 1645.

* We are not entirely confident of the correct reading of these two words, owing to the obscurity of Winthrop's hand-writing. — Eds.

GEORGE CLEEVE TO THE COMMISSIONERS FOR LYGONIA.

To the honored John Wintrop, Esqr. Governor, & to the honered Thomas Dvdlie, Richard Bellingham, Herbert Pellam & others, Esquiers, Commissioners appointed by the High Court of Parliament for the affairs of Ligonia, thes present.

Honered Worthis, — Aftar the tendar of my humble service, thes are to requst your pious advice & derextion what is to be don in this particulars; first, there is a woman in our province that is suspected to haue made away here child; for the case standeth thus: first, she did affirme her selfe to be with child, & did growe great, & at heare full tyme to a day, as she hath confessed, & did shew hear brests to the neightbour women before here deliuery some sartaine daies, & did cause the milk to spin out here brest, & did speak to Mrs. Purches to healp heere in here time of nede, & did declare that shee felt here child lively & striving, not aboue 10 daies before heare full tyme of acompt to be deliuered, it [yet] since she denieth all this, notwithstanding there be sevarall witnesses to prove that from here owne movth. Besids, when the women nere heare did demand of here what was becom of here great belley, she answered them that it was gon, & that she refused to let here owne husband see what she had, being alone with here in the hovse, but hath confessed that she threw it vnder the bed, & to othars, that she cast it into the swamp, with many othar great suspittions. Now here vpon I haue imprisoned heare, & haue taken baile of 200*li.* for here apparance at our next Court of tryalls, being the fowrth of July next, & the assistance do mak sum dowpts whether we may prosede against malefactors preseding our laws now made; which dowpts they vrge to be moved in theme, partly by a directory lettar from our honered Presedent, who would haue vs to loock forward, & not backward; & partly by a Constitution, which requireth from the

people obedience to no lawes, but such as should be acted by there villagars; & partly by an othar Constitution which giveth allowance to the people to make binding lawes for the subscribars, & no othars, vntill a publick bodie of lawes shovld be acted by the Generall Assembly of villigars to be chosen; which sevarall occations, if you vouchsafe to clere vp for there bettar apprehention, they & my selfe will willingly & gratfully apply vnto your suche advice; & for mine owne particcular, I conceaue we ought not to suffere sines of that nature to go vnpunished, being proved since Mr. Rigbies athority was manifested & subscribed vnto by divars, where of the husband of this woman was one. Ther are allso som advlterys committed & yet vnpunished, whereof that of Mr. Boden with Mr. Jocelens neagar, who hath confessed the fact; as allso that of Mr. Michell Mitton & John Seares, committed with Mary Martin, whereof you haue had from me & othars som knowledge; & now seing you haue with you a coppie of our confirmed Constitutions, and are bettar able to judge of them then my selfe, or any of vs, and seing you are appointed to be Commissionars, by the High Court of Parliament, for oure aide, I hovld that my duty, to apply to you for your grave councell & derection wherein my selfe or our Assistance are defectiue. My humble desire therefore is that you would derect vs by your wisdom & councell to acte & prosede in a way of justice, according to God, & allso justifieable before men; & to favor me so much as to dispatch your derections herein before our Court, for which favors I shall allwais be a peticionar to the throne of grace for you all, & rest

Your oblidged sarvant to command to my powre,

George Cleeve.

Casco, the (1) (3) 1647.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Lettre [*torn*] Mr. Cleues, 1 (3) 47. Recd. 27 (3) 47."

LETTERS OF EDWARD GODFREY.*

EDWARD GODFREY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Accomadi: 27th 9uember, 1645.

Right Worshipfull, — Your generall letter of the 2 Aug. I received not tell 25th present. Consarning the contentes I obsarued of my owne accord before: bee you assured in that or any other matter [I] wilbe obsaruant to follow your directions & aduise, for excercising jurisdiction att the Iles Sholes;† when euer your worshipe shall send order for the regulating of disorders ther, I will lay downe this power. For your commandes consaring the smithes man, hee was longe sence apprehended & sent to your jurisdiction, in which I could wysh this were (it is not Mr.

* Edward Godfrey, a prominent man in the early history of Maine, came over, as agent of Gorges and Mason, to oversee their affairs on the Piscataqua. He settled at Acomenticus as early as 1630, as appears by a petition to the General Court of Massachusetts in 1654, in which he says that he had been "twenty-four years an inhabitant of this place (York), the first that ever built or settled there." He was associated with Samuel Maverick and others in a grant of land at that place. Godfrey was one of the Counsellors under William Gorges, Governor of New Somersetshire, who held his first Court at the house of Mr. Bonython, in Saco, 25th March, 1636, and there established "the first organized government . . . within the present State of Maine." He was an original member of the Charter Council of the lord proprietor of Maine, in 1640; an alderman of the town of Acomenticus, appointed by the charter of incorporation, April 10, 1641; and the first mayor of the city of "Gorgeana," which received its act of incorporation, March 1, 1641-2. After Rigby's government was established, the remaining towns of the Province of Maine, between Cape Porpoise and the Piscataqua River, chose Godfrey Governor of Maine, under the Gorges Patent, until their submission to the Government of Massachusetts in 1652-3. He had a protracted controversy with the authorities of Massachusetts, and resisted their claims of jurisdiction to the last. He died in 1661 or 1662. — *Folsom's Saco and Biddeford*, 49, 50, 54, 60, 61; *Willis's Portland*, i. 18, 43, 46, 54; *Williamson's Maine*, i. 265, 677, 678; *Hazard*, i. 470, 480. — Eds.

† The Charter of Maine embraced five of the Isles of Shoals: the remainder belonged to New Hampshire, at this time under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. — *Williamson's Maine*, i. 276, 291, 304, 349. — Eds.

Hulles* mynd); haue got the Pattent againe in to my possetion, haue sent my onely sonne for England for atending to your sonne, worship Jo: Wyntherop, & some others to heere & determin or sartify of my oppressions, [which] Sollomon saith, will make a wyse man mad, soe may distemper me. I and Mr. Hull, & the rest, Jobe 12, ij, seing noe appell alowed, must haue patience, onely desyer your worshipe to aduise me, yf I tacke some of them in your jurisdiction, wheather I may not haue an action of slander & defamation to be tryed in your Court att Boston: with my euer obliged respectes & saruis, I rest

Your Worshipes to be commanded,

Edw: Godfrey.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Edw: Godfrey about the Ile of Sholes."

EDWARD GODFREY TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worship^ld^ John Wyntherop, Senr, Gournour of the Mathesusetes, thes present in Boston.

Pascatowaie 20th July, 1647.

Right Worship^lp^, — Your coniugall lose I cannot but deply condole, but you that are a comfortor to all, God will not be wanting to gyude you with his goodnes in all thinges. You knowe the myseryes of this cuntery, for want of trad & comerce, in which each man must studdy & indeauor to further the generall good; as when your sonne & Mr. Gellam came to procuer mastes in thes partes, I & Mr. Josselin ware not bacward eather in aduise or action: sence Mr. Va: Hill † imployed some men, as Mr.

---

* Joseph Hull, probably the first minister who preached at the "Isle of Shoales." — 1 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vii. 254. — Eds.

† Valentine Hill, of Boston, was interested in the lands at Dover, and probably resided some time there. He died in 1662. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

Richard Walden & Edw. Starbuck, to get some, & fynding commodiusnes in Pascattequa Riuer one our sid, they came to me, I knowing the d[*torn*] wher they ware to belong to some freinds, from [*torn*] had letters this last yeare to aduise them of th[*torn*] heere, gaue them andswer, except they would s[*torn*] & become tenantes to the propriators could not, [*torn*] other considerations Mr. Josselene & I gaue them [*torn*] of land, with bounds not possessed by any, & remoa[*torn*] manes lottes. Now Nicolas Ffrost* & his assosiates [*torn*] they haue what they wyll, & liue 3 myles from theme, in a most ryotus, mutinus, & turbulent maner, not onely molesteth them, but would th[r]ow doune all power & authorryty, by goueing by waie of our commitay, & bee gouerned by them selues or such as they shall choase, thretening to pull Mr. Josieline of the Bench, & displace vs. For that I hope wee haue & shall take course to rectify to the cuntery[s] content. But soe it is, wee being but weake, Ffrost & his assosiates, spitfull, malicius, turbulent, factius, & with the rud multitud in waie of pretence of common priueledg, ar hard to bee suppressed by our weake power, whear all ar parties, & seeme plantiues. My humble request is that you would aduise vs & the partes, Mr. Walen & Starbuck, the safest waie to quallify thes broyles tell order come ou[t] of England; & allthough Ffrost & some of them ar [not in?] your Jurisdiction, yet those they imploy ar in yo[*torn*] & wee, for diuers causes, desyer the matter ma[*torn*] by you, & indicated in any of your Courtes what [*torn*] or Starbuck doe commence, they wilbe bound to p[*torn*] like will I, for the propriators of the lands. I [*torn*] pardon for my bouldnes, desyring your assistanes [*torn*] of your ma^{ts}, & ame your worshipes to be comanded,

EDW: GODFRE[Y.]

---

* Frost was a resident of Kittery. He had, in 1632, been banished from Massachusetts for theft, drunkenness, and fornication; and, for coming again to this jurisdiction, was arrested and confined. He died in 1663. — *Mass. Col. Records*, i. 100, 155, 164, 172, 243; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

I protest, & soe the parties may one oathe, that I neather haue interrest or benifit, direcly or indirecly, one penny heerby, but doe it for the cunteries generall good.

E. G.

EDWARD GODFREY TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Worship^ll^ John Wynthrop some times of New England, thes present in London.

Honored Sir, — Prased bee God for your safe ariuall in England. I macke noe question but you haue hard of hard vsage I haue had & suffered in New England sence your ffather's death, & your departuer from that part of the cuntery, by meanes of Ca. Thomas Wiggenes, Broadstret, & some of the Grande toyns [?] Deputies entering one our Pattents & lands, to the vtter ruen of mee & a hoopfull famyly, exturped out of more then all thes 8 yeares, caused mee to haue many complaintes; the proceeding m[a]y touch the cuntery in generall. Att present ame restraned of my liberty, soe not able to geue you a full relation. I desyer you, soe soune as you conueniently you can, to giue me a vissett in this place, & desyer Mr. Sa: Mauerike to doe the like; it may be worth this labor. I rest

Yours to bee commanded,

Edward Godfrey.

Ludgate, adi 5 8tober, 61.

An ill requitall of the vlger to reward euell for good, against the cheefe magistrates willes, for all my faithfull seruis att my owne char[g]e, 26 yeares.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Godfrey out of Ludgate."

LETTERS OF EDWARD COOKE.*

EDWARD COOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull my mos[t] Honoured friend Mr. John Winterop, Governour, in New Englande present these.

Noble Sir, — I conceive I am not out of your remembrance, & being confident of your goodness, haue presumed to intreate your favour in the behalfe of the bearer hereof, my sonn.† It hath pleased the wise disposer of all things to affect his heart for New England, & nothing could please him but my consent to that affection. I haue bredd him vpp vnder my selfe in my profession of an Apothecarie, 5 yeares, hee hath proffited in that way reasonable well, & had his affection stood constant to continue with me, I should haue made him a compleate artist, hee is honest & religiouse, & I doubt not but hee will soe approve himselfe, & may proove a vsefull man in that place. I was the more willinge to condescend to this his desire, in respect of your selfe, & my reverend friend Mr. Hooker, Mr. Theophilus Eaton, Mr. Hopkins, & divers others of my good friends in that place, & now, noble Sir, my suite to your selfe is this, that yow willbe pleased to countenance him, & advise him. Hee shall not bee chargable to yow, for I intend,

* Edward Cooke, an apothecary of London, and an adventurer in the Massachusetts Company, was present at a General Court of the Company held June 17, 1629, and "vnderwritt to lend" £50; which sum appears afterwards to have been increased to £100. He never came to New England. — *Massachusetts Colonial Records*, vol. i. pp. 46, 307. — Eds.

† Robert Cooke, the son of the writer, who is frequently mentioned in these letters, settled in Charlestown; and was admitted freeman, 2d June, 1641. — Eds.

God willing, to supply him in all respects, with whatsoever hee shall wante, & if he take liking to the cuntrey (as I suppose hee will) then, God willing, I will sett him vpp, in that profession hee hath exercised. Yow may please to remember I am an adventurer, one of the first, when Mr. Cradock my loveing cousin was Governour,* and payde to the Tresurer, Mr. Harwood, at two payments, 100*li.*, as these notes, acquittances vnder his hand, will shew, & to what end. Besides, I lent the Company 50*li.* vppon there seale, as my sonn will make knowne. I hope by your good favour & furtherance, my sonn may enioye those priviledges due, in compensation of these sommes of money so longe agoe disbursed by mee in that action, which 'prof-fitts or assignements, from the worthy Company in New England, I have given to my sonn Robert Cooke † beseeching yow to stand his friend, & I shall be much obleiged to yow for your favour, & will bee ready to serve yow in any thinge in this kingdom, to my power. Thuss, nothing doubting of your kinde acceptance of this my suite, & of your favour to this poore stranger, who hath forsaken all his friends, I take my leave, & commend you to the divine providence, & will ever rest

Your assured loveinge friend to serve yow

EDWARD COOKE.

LONDON, the 10 Septembris, 1638.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Ed : Cook, 10 of Septb^r 1638, London."

---

* See "Massachusetts Colonial Records," i. 46. — EDS.

† Oct. 7, 1640. — "Mr. Robert Cooke of Charlestowne in regard of his father's 100*li.* adventured in the ioynt stock, is graunted 800 acres of land, where hee can find it, without preiudice to any plantation graunted or to bee graunted." — *Mass. Col. Records*, i. 307. — EDS.

EDWARD COOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull my most Honoured friend, John Winthrop, Esq. Governour in New England, present these.

Worthie Sir, — You were pleased to give mee soe good encouragment by your letter, of my sonns deportment in New England, & the hopes of his well doeinge in that cuntrey, being stockt with thinges fitting his callinge, as I have now sent him back againe, fully accomplished with all provisions for his profession, & otherwise, giving yow thankes for your kindeness shewed to him, not doubting but that hee willbee a very vsefull mann amongest yow, & to your selfe & yours serviceable vppon all occations, as indeede hee stands most oblieged for your favours. His purpose is to sitt downe in Charles Towne. I entreate your good favour to him, with your good advise in som perticulers, as his howse, or what els may concerne his good, & I willbee ready vppon all occations to express my thankfullness. Let mee entreate your acceptance of a poore token of my love, which my sonn will deliver vnto yow; & soe for this present, presenting my service to your selfe, I commend yow & all yours to the divine protection, & rest now & ever

Your worshipps assured friend to serve yow,

Edward Cooke.

London, May 15°. 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Cooke. Resp. per the Sparrow."

EDWARD COOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull my most Honoured friend John Wintropp, Governour in New England, present these.

Worthie Sir, — I hope my sonne Robert Cooke is safely retorned into New England, longe before this letter commes to your hands, & that his deportment shall bee such, as will purchase your good favour, &c. The occation of this letter, is in the behalfe of a learned Gentleman of my acquaintance, Mr. Bird, who I vnderstand hath written to your selfe to bee entertayned of the people in your parts as a phisitian, & well knowinge his sufficiencies in the practize of phisick, my request to yow is, that yow would bee pleased to further him in his desires, which if you shall please to doe, I am assured yow will not repent therof; & I shall take this your kindenesse as an espetiall favour to my selfe. I commend all to your wise consideration, & commend yow & all yours to the divine providence, & rest

Your Wor: ever ready to serve yow,

Edward Cooke.

London the 20 Julij, 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Cooke for Mr. Birde."

LETTERS OF EDWARD PARKS.*

EDWARD PARKS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his Loving Cozen Mr. John Winthropp in New England be dld.

Loving Cozen, — Your brother Stephen tells me you haue returned the bill of exchange to me which I charged vppon Mr. Cooke, which I marvill att, for our bargin was that you should accept of 50*li.* of that debt oweing mee

* But few particulars are known of Edward Parks. He was of London, and appears to be connected with Winthrop by the family of Forth. He calls Henry Bright of Watertown his uncle; and Elizabeth (Bright) Dell, the sister of Henry, mentions her nephew, William Parks, in her will. The General Court of Massachusetts, in 1647, appointed a commission "to set out the land of Mr. Edward Parks in Cambridge, which hee had of Capt. Cooke," as the conclusion of a suit which occupies a considerable space in these letters. — *Mass. Col. Records*, ii. 209.

After the above note was in type, we received from our associate, Mr. Whitmore, the following abstract of the will of Edward Parks, copied for him from a public office in London: —

"Edward Parke, citizen and merchant tailor, of London; will dated 23d January, 1650–1. To Mary Parks, my wife, in lieu of her thirds, £1,500; also a third of my plate and household stuff, and my freehold messuage, or tenement, where I now dwell in Stepney, County Middlesex. To my son Henry Parkes, £300: he to quitclaim certain premises in Maidstone, County Kent, to my brother, George Jackson. Also to said son Henry all my messuages, houses, land, tenements, and hereditaments, situate, lying, and being in New England, in the parts of America beyond the seas. To my son Edward Parkes, when 21, £60, to place him apprentice. To my son John Parkes, £500, when 21. To my son William Parkes, £500, when 21. To my son Stephen Parkes, £500, when 21. To my daughter Elizabeth Parkes, £500, when 21 or married. To my son Thomas Parkes, £500, when 21. To my son Dannett Parkes, £500, when 21. To my son Francis Parks, £500, when 21. To my son Samuel Parks, £500, when 21.

"To Mark, Francis, and Susan Wilcox, three of the children of my sister, Alice Wilcox, each £10; and to Anne Wilcox, another of said children, £20, when 21 or married. To the Widow Brewer, to whom I now give 6*d.* a week, the sum of 40*s.* To Martha, wife of Thomas Wilson, both my late servants, a bill of £40 he owes me. To my daughter Mary, now wife of Thomas Plampin, one of my executors, £5, for a piece of plate. To my two grandchildren, Thomas and Edward Plampin, each £50, when 21.

"Appoints executors, my son-in-law, Thomas Plampin, and my cousin, John Bagnall, both of London, merchant tailors, overseers; my brothers, Dr. William Forth and Dannett Forth of London, woollen draper.

"Proved by the executors, Jan. 29, 1650–1. Second administration granted March 29, 1673, to John Parkes, son of deceased, the executors being dead."

Mr. Whitmore further remarks, "In the Middlesex Registry (Deeds, ii. 6) is a deed

by Mr. Cooke, which you did agree vnto; then you hauing a smale parcell of goods of me, you desired that [mig]ht goe in part, vnto which I [*a line destroyed*] gett the rest of Mr. Cooke. Its hard if 300*li.* will not pay 30*li.* I haue receiued noe j*d* of it as yett. I did then promis you should haue the first that Mr. Cooke paid me, & soe you shall. You writ in your last that you could sell the land for proffitt. I shalbe thankfull to you if you can procure me the mony it cost me, with the forberance since I paid it. The writing shalbe se[nt] over when you please. If you will take a litle paynes for me I shalbe thankfull. I am greived for the trouble that is come, & more like to bee, by Alderman Bartlett* & others, concerning of the Ffrench Lady† that had a triall in your Court. I heare it will proue a sadd busines ffor New England. I could wish it had not beene. For your bill of exchange, if Mr. Cooke doe not pay it you, I will sen[*torn*] comodities for it. I entend to put my busines with Mr. Cooke to a triall in your Courte, if he can put me beside it, I must be content. I, with my wife, remember our kind respects to your selfe & to all our loving ffrinds, giveing you many thanks for your loue & care of & to my sonns, the which I desire you will continue. I comitt you to God, & rest,

Your loving cozen ED: PARKS.

LONDON, 3d May, 1645.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Ed: Parks."

---

quoted by Jackson ('History of Newton,' p. 383); but, as he gives the wrong date, I give the following abstract: Henry Parke of London, son and heir apparent of Edward Parke of London, merchant, deceased, sells for £32. 10*s.*, to John Stedman of Cambridge, merchant, land, &c.; being the gift of his father by his will of 23d January, 1650. This land came to Edward Parke by gift and enfeoffment of Capt. George Cooke, who had it by purchase of Andrew Warner, to whom the town granted it. The deed is dated 1st June, 1655; and acknowledged 7th of 4th mo., 1655, before Increase Nowell: so I presume Henry Parke was here. He makes Henry Bright of Watertown his attorney. Witnesses, John Appleton, Thomas Fitch; Nathaniel Sowther, notary public." — EDS.

* Probably the "Alderman Barkley" mentioned in the Colonial Records in connection with this case. — EDS.

† Madame La Tour, the wife of the Sieur de La Tour. For the proceedings in the Colony in which this lady was involved, see Winthrop's "History of New England," ii. 192–200; and "Massachusetts Colonial Records," ii. 135; iii. 49. — EDS.

EDWARD PARKS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his loving cozen Mr. John Winthropp, present this in N: England.
To Mr. John Winthropp, Junior.

Loving Cosen, — I am sorry Mr. Cooke should refuse to pay you that 37*li.* odd mony. Our bargin was that you should accept of ffiftie pounds of Mr. Cooke in New England, but afterwards, att your request, I lett you haue 12*li.* od mony in goods; and if 300*li.* will not pay 37*li.* od mony, I haue a hard match of it. I entend you shall haue the first that he payeth, and if I neuer haue any thing of him, you shall not loose it. I haue a hard bargin of the land. You tould me it would yeeld betwixt 20: and 30*li.* per annum. I haue not had a j^{d} this 2 years. You promised to lett it for me at the best rate, and I depended vppon you. I desire you will doe it for mee. I entend to bring my busines with Mr. Cooke to a triall, & will referr it to the judgment of the Court. I hope I shall haue justice, otherwaise it will much preiudice the whole plantation. It wilbe some disadvantage to me, because I am absent. I must referr my cause to judgment of the Court vppon that which is his owne act; if I may haue your ffurtherance therin, I shall not be vnthankfull or vnmyndfull to requite your loue, if in my power. My cozen Stephen was putt to a great straight with Mr. Downeing. Your brother hath made the best end he could for himselfe & you, & to preserue the creddit of the ould man. I paid the 40*s.* to Mr. Collins for Mr. Ayres, that was for Roger Fforth. I entreate you to assist me in letting the ffarme. With myne & my wifes kind respec[ts] to you & your wife vnknowne, I res[t]

Your loving cozen to vse,

Edward Parks.

London, 10 June, 1645.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Cozen Parkes."

EDWARD PARKS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Worthie Sir, — My respect tendred to you, with acknowledgment of your loue in the busines with Mr. Cooke, wherin not my selfe only, but others conceveth I had very hard measure, & some that were then in New England say his ffrinds carried it aganst justice & equitie; neuerthelesse I shall be concluded by that Court, provided I may haue the order made good, wherin I humbly craue your assistance to my sonn, that I may haue that land made good to me, according to your owne order, otherwaise I must be forced to bring it aboute agayne, which by some I am importuned to doe. Sir, if you please to doe me this lawfull & just favour, I shall endeuour to be thankfull for it.

. Ffurther, I standing bound vnto Mr. Tyndall in a thousand pounds, that he shalbe discharged from your sonns, Deane & Samuell, I entreat you to send ouer such releases, vnder ther hands & seales, or otherwise to give him such satisfaction that I may haue vpp my bond. This I desire may be sent by my sonn. I comend you & yours to the Lord, & rest

Your obliged kinsman Edward Parkes.

London, 28th Aprill, 1647.

EDWARD PARKS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To his honered frind Mr. Jon: Winthropp, Gouernor of New England, present.

Honered Sir, — I am bould vppon former experience of your ffavours to request your assistance and advice to my vnckle Henry Bright, & my sonn Henry Parks, whom I haue requested to waite vppon you, aboute a litle land that was ordred me by the Court, for a debt oweing to me

by Mr. George Cooke, wherin (I suppose) I had verie hard measure, & yet am willing to be concluded, tho it be neare 250*li.* loss, if I could haue what the Court granted me. My vnckle Bright hath waited vppon the Court seuerall tymes, & hath had the request of the Court to the towne, vppon which the towne refuseth to lay out the land, without the Court send a command, as I am informed. Good Sir, be pleased to advise my vnckle Bright herein, that the busines may be effected. I shalbe ready to pleasure you or any of yours, wherin it is in my power. Allsoe I entreat you to write to Mr. Tindall, that I may haue vpp my bond, which as yet I cannot haue. Thus with my dew respect, & my wiues, I comitt you to the Lord, & rest,

Your obliged kinsman, EDWARD PARKS.

LONDON, 8th March, 1647.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Cos: Edw: Parkes, 8: (1) 47."

LETTERS OF L. WRIGHT.*

L. WRIGHT TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To my verie loueing Cosen Mr. Jo: Winthrop the Elder, in New England, these dd.

26 MARCH, 1640.

SIR, — I thanke you for your kind entercourse of lettres; I pray continue it. I haue placed the lame man you recommended in Bartholmeus Hospitall, wher he remayned vntill now, with some aduantage in his strenght, able to stand, not to goe. I haue now recommended him to an Hospitall at the Bath, wher he hath hope of farther cure. Wee are now neere our parliament. For the most part, good men are chosen in euery place for that imployment. Our King, vppon his own charge, prouides for warr, thirty thowsand foote, & 7 or 8 thowsand horse, we say against the Scotts; but we know not; a few monthes will discouer. The Scottish Comissioners or Petioners are yet heare; some say Episcopacie is the great controuersie, others say more then that, otherwise ther would be no warr; & some thinke all will end for the good of both countries; but we pray to God Almighty, who only knowes: to whose prouidence I recommend you and yours, as

Your loueing kinsman L. WRIGHT.

* Dr. L. Wright of London appears to have married a daughter of Dr. Duke, whose wife was connected with the Winthrop Family. A physician of the same name is among the legatees designated in Edward Hopkins's will, who mentions him as "my honoured friend Dr. Wright," and bequeaths to him a piece of plate of the value of twenty pounds, as a testimony of respect. Mr. Haven, however, considers this to be Dr. Nathaniel Wright, who was private physician to Cromwell. This may be the person whom Winthrop commemorates as "an honest and able physician." Dr. L. Wright possibly was of this family. The letters here printed are written from London. — *Winthrop's Hist. of N. E.*, i. 229; *Life and Letters of John Winthrop*, pp. 283, 411, 423; *Haven's Origin of Mass. Company, in Archæologia Amer.*, iii. lxx. — EDS.

My wife remembreth hir loue, &c.

I prayse God my selfe & child liue & are in health, & do hope he may liue to see better tymes in this kingdome. I pray remember vs in your prayers. According to my weake measure, I do you & yours.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Dr. Wright, Resp. per the S[p]arrow;" and, in another place, "Dr. Wright."

L. WRIGHT TO JOHN WINTHROP.

Sir, — If I should forgett my best freinds, who remember me in ther prayers to God, & by ther lettres lett me know so much, so often as your selfe (among my other good freinds in New England) haue donn, I should iustly incurre the brand of vnthankfulnes, both to God & man, neuer to be forgotten: but I trust God still, as hitherto, will keepe me from that foule fault. What you haue heard, & I haue lost of my good opinion I once had of New England, truly I do not vnderstand; for the place, its true the often & various relations I haue receaued of it, both by lettre & word of mouth, haue made me conclude the place not likely to supplie to the generations to come, without many more difficulties & wants, both for soule & body, then your own natiue soyle is like in the worst tymes to afford: this is, & this was my iudgment, which hath not, nor I hope shall not change with change of tymes. What you enioye ther that we do not heare for soule comfort, euen in your way, I cannot find, & for the body you know we are not put vppon such temptations for want of supply, as some of you ther are, & more I feare may be: & therfore I haue hartilie endeauoured & desired the return of many of you, as to a more publique vse of seruice amonge such as God hath shewed vnto, & hath, yet hath mercie to shew vnto in this kingdome, of whose distractions

you haue heard, the noyse greater then the thinges themselues. Tyme of warr haue benn the best tyme, for such as God had taught to be better in badd tymes; & I feare more hurt by peace then warr as yet to come.

And as for my good opinion of the persons of New England, I do acknowledge some haue lost it, & I thinke deseruedly, & perhapps the verie partie who told you what you write.

Truely, Sir, I loue such as walke worthy the profession of religion in deed & word, & can not applaud men whose professions & practise thawrt one another: a double tonged, a double minded man, vnsettled in all his wayes; who cann applaud such a one? You easilie conceaue wher & what I meane; for my own iudgment in the way called presbuterian, its cleane agaynst it, & so hath benn, before it was owned in this Kingdome, many yeeres: yet I hope all the godly of that iudgment will be carefull to keepe brotherly loue with those who dislike it; for my part, I thinke that way of church gouerment will neuer gett much footeing in this kingdome, howeuer thinges are represented to you in N. E. by ther lettres who iudge only vppon presents occurents. Sir, what euer I am able to do for you or yours, in any office of loue, I trust I shall not fayle in; but I confesse the way & course of Mr. Downinge & of your sonns heare haue seemed to me to be full of weakenes, idlenes, vayn hopes of fancye. Religion makes no man such a one: one word more & I will craue pardon for all, & that is that your selfe, through want of insight into your estate, & ouersight of seruants, & too vnwarrantable credulity, haue much impouerished your selfe, & your indulgency to your children hath hurt them also. This out of my truely affected sorrow I write, not to add to your trouble, but to expresse my trouble in what I heare spoken, & haue read from them among you, which hath giuen thus much ffreedome to mention, by

Your loueing freind L. Wright.

x March, 1646.

My mother liueth yet in Norwich, with her (?) sonn in law.

My wife & my sonn, I blesse God, are in health with me.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Doctor Wright, x (1) 46."

L. WRIGHT TO JOHN WINTHROP.

For my loueinge freind & kinsman Mr. Jo : Winthrop the elder these, at Boston in New England.

Sir, — I take comfort in reading God's mercy towards you, expressed in your last lettre; & reioyce to see you so rightly to apprehend those thinges I hinted vnto you in my last: I shall pray to our good God to fill vpp your yeeres & age with the best wine of spirituall comforts at the last; as he was pleased to exercise you in want of temporalls at the first. My mother Duke, my wife, & child (I blesse God), with my selfe, enioye health, & we shall account the remembrance of our condition in your prayers, a great fruite of your loue. My mother Duke is farr remote in Norwich, laden with infirmities of age. I should be most ready to do you or yours any office of loue; if I haue ben represented vnto you otherwise, I was misenterpreted, & indeed it hath benn some trouble to me to denie some curtesies to some of your children & alliance, whom I thought would make no good vse of it; as being in no probable way of good imployment.

Your loueing freind & kinsman,

L. Wright.

25. FEBR. 1647.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Dr. Wright. 28 (12) 47."

LETTERS OF JOHN HIGGINSON.*

JOHN HIGGINSON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

For the right worshipfull & much honoured in the Lord, Mr. Jo: Winthrop, Esquire, & Deputie Gouernour, these, with speed.†

Right Worshipfull & much honoured in the Lord, — My due service & respect remembred, & having giuen full information to the Governour‡ of the manner of the Lords proceeding with vs here, I spare to write therof vnto your selfe.

Onely I make bould to present you with my weak & feeble thoughts concerning the same, which you may be pleased to consider of as you see cause.

First, whether now the Lord begins not to send (as shephards vse to doe their dogs, to fetch in their stragling sheep, so he) the Indians vpon his servants, to make them cleaue more close togither, & prize each other, to prevent contentions of brethren, which may proue as hard to break

* John Higginson, minister of Salem, and eldest son of the Rev. Francis Higginson, the first teacher of the church in that place, was born 6th August, 1616, at Claybrook in Leicestershire. He came to New England with his father in 1629. In 1636, he was granted two pounds by the General Court of Massachusetts "for his paines, and danger vndergone." He served as a chaplain at Saybrook in 1637. In 1641, he was engaged at Guilford as assistant to the Rev. Henry Whitefield, whose daughter he afterwards married. He went to Salem in 1659, with the intention of going to England, but was persuaded to remain; was ordained at Salem the following year, and continued there until his death, which took place 9th December, 1708, in the ninety-fourth year of his age. He was among the most distinguished of the New-England clergy of his time. Several of his letters are published in the seventh volume, Third Series, of these Collections. — 1 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vi. 259–27; 8, vii. 196–222; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† This letter was written (probably from Saybrook) in the spring of the year 1637, after the slaughter of the English at Connecticut by the Pequots, 23d April, and before Winthrop had this year, 17th May, been elected chief magistrate. — Eds.

‡ Vane. — Eds.

as castle barres, & stop their now beginning breaches, before they be as the letting out of many waters, that cannot be gathered in againe, &c. O that as this is the Lords meaning, so it may be the vse that all his servants may make therof, that he may haue the praise in Jesus Christ forever more.

Secondly, whether the Lord intends not, in his dealings here with vs, a gratious warning to all the English in the land that shall ever haue to doe with Indians againe in this kinde. For it hath been a common conceit, but is in truth a dangerous errour, Indians are afrayd of pieces, &c. 10 English will make a 100 Indians fly: some dare venture (happily now) with 20, 40, 60 men, among a 1000 armed Pequots (for that, if not many more, in probabilitie is their number) &c., &c.; but if the passages here be well considered, & the Lord be pleas'd to sanctifie our punishments, to be warnings to the wise, I hope it may be a means to roote out that deeply rooted securitie, & confidence in our owne supposed strength (2 English diseases, & dangerous wormes that vse to breed & grow in abused peace or slighted liberties), that so the loss of these, & danger of our selues may be the saftie & preservation of many others.

Thirdly, whether now the Lord calls not by all these sad alarums & heavenly warnings from hence, to all his servants lowder & lowder, more seriously to intend this warre then yet they seeme to doe.

For if that our condition here, to haue 10 lustie men, out of so little a number as ours is, so cruelly slayne, others crying & roaring out through extremitie of the paine of wounds, others gasping & dying, & breathing out their last, our selues beleaguerd by the same blood thirstie, & hemmed in by those who daily seek our liues &c., &c. If this, I say, were the case of the servants of the Lord in the Bay, their hearts would be affected, their purses opened & their hands enlarged to defend (not so

much their liues & liberties, to say nothing of them) as the glorious gospell of Jesus Christ, which hath shined amongst vs hitherto, & may doe yet, if it be not our owne fault.

And yet this may be the condition of those pretious servants of the Lord vp this river, we know not how soone; vnless the Lord be pleas'd, as he hath done hitherto, & I hope he will make salvation vnto them for walls & bulwarks round about. For had not the Lord in abundant mercy to them, kept the many hundreds of our enimies in a serious & furious beleaguering of vs here, & restraind them from attempting any thing there as yet, as they have vpon our selues, I see not how they could haue bene preserved without a miracle.

And let not Boston, Roxburie, &c., thinke warre is farre enough from them, for this seems to be an vniversall deluge, creeping & encroaching on all the English in the land. The multitudes of our enimies daily encrease by the falling of Mohigoners, Nepmets (who liue not many miles from the Bay) Niantucuts at Narrohigganset, & their malice is not to be questiond, their cruelty diuers of ours haue felt. Their experience in warlike affaires (being men of warre from their youth), their advantages against vs, in agilitie & armes, their industrious sedulitie, plying & attending the warre against the English as their mainest busines, provideing retreats at Long Iland, fortifying vpon the maine, gathering new supplyes of forces, confœderating with former enimies, giuing large rewards to those amongst them who are most skilfull to destroy, &c., (which we hear of from Plantations aboue, & they from Indians) doe farre exceed the preparations & provisions of the English against them, who yet haue farre more cause to seek to defend their liues & liberties & gospell, then such blood thirstie wretches haue to invade, destroy, & take away the same.

And add to the former also this, that now the eyes of all the Indians in the countrey are vpon the English, to see

what they will doe; & all may be assured of this, that if some serious & verie speedie course be not taken to tame the pride & take downe the insolencie of these now insulting Pequots, though with charge, & loss, & damage for the present, we are like to haue all the Indians in the countrey about our ears, & then their will be worke enough, &c.

In all these respects & many more I desire it may be considered whither the serious & speedie prosecution of this warre be not the greatest busines New England hath, for it cannot be conceiued that either building, planting, fishing, trading, colledges, &c., or in a word, if good of either Church or Commonweal can flourish & goe forward, without a timely remouing & preventing the warres that now begin; for these are but the beginnings of warre, the progress hath been something sad, what the issue will be, the Lord he onely knowes.

Now the Lord be pleased to raise vp the publick spirits of his servants (& where they are not to create them), that every heart & head & hand may be stirring & working in this case; for the strength & sinnewes of these warres I take to lye in the combined abilities, & vnited hearts & hands of all the servants of the Lord, &c. (To omit that it cannot be expected that ever warres should prosper abroad, if ciuill (nay worse, & religious) dissentions abound at home), yet all pertaking in the good & benifit of peace, & in the danger & damage of a common warre, should also be every way enlarged to their vtmost for the procuring & preserving the one, removing & preventing of the other.

Three places & presidents in scripture I onely make bould to present your worshipp with, & so I end. Judges 20, 1, 2, 8: Ezra 10, 3, 4: Hag. 2, 4. Hence may be collected this in brief; that (after serious reconciliation with the Lord of Armies & Indians himselfe) it belongeth firstly & chiefly to you, the much honoured magistrates,

that as you haue hitherto not been wanting according as the Lord hath called, so now yow will arise, be serious, be speedie, be strong, & be couragious in the Lord, &c.

That also our much honoured the ministers & watchmen of the Lord will not be wanting to press vpon the conscience, charge as a dutie, command in the name of the Lord from heaven, &c. the serious & speedie prosecution of this warre.

That also all the people of the land should be seriously rouzed vp to open their purses & enlarge their hands, offer their persons, &c, to doe what service they can to help the Lord against the mighty.

And O that the heavie curse of Merosh may never fall vpon any of the Lords. And O that the disposition of this bearer & others also lately come out of the Bay, who are sensibly affected with things here, &c, might runne through all the land; viz. they would willingly lay downe halfe they haue to serue this way, & yet less then a halfe, a quarter, a tenth would doe that now which hereafter all the world cannot recouer, &c. But I fear I am to bold: I entreat you therefore, pardon my weaknes, & consider the things, & tho I, it may be, am afraid to die, our men here, fearfull, melancholy, &c., yet the Lord help all his servants to consider what his will & pleasure is, in all these sad occurrences hitherto. He be pleased to counsell & direct & bless from heaven all intended enterprizes in Jesus Christ. (In great hast) I rest

Yours engaged in many bonds,

In all due service most devoted

Jo: Higginson.

The necessitie of Mr. Dixes* stay hath been very great hitherto, partly to fit our ordnance, partly to be a safegard

* Probably the Anthony Dick referred to in the former volume of "Winthrop Papers;" one of the passengers in the "Anne" at Plymouth in 1623. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

to vs in respect of weaknes & fewnes of our number, &c. &c. &c. & for ought I know his stay hath been the preservation of vs all. I hope it will be considered, &c.

JOHN HIGGINSON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much honoured loving friend Mr. Winthrop at Pequot, these dd.

MUCH HONOURED SIR, — The bearer hereof, H. Lines, telling me that you desired to know whether my father Whitfield's house & lots was yet to be sould, I thought fitt to giue you notice of it, (knowing that if God make your way plaine to come hither, it will be very acceptable to all) that it is yet in a capacity to be sold, & yet through his neglect of speaking sooner, the opportunity is allmost past, for the second day come senight my brother Nath: & cousin Jordan are to take their journey for England; this next week that comes in, they intended to dispose of their occasions, & this especially, to put it into such posture, that it cannot afterward be sold, when they are gone. So that if you should think of emproving this season for the buying of it, it will be necessary that you come ouer the beginning of this next week, for I haue prevayled with my brother Nathaniel to abstayne from any other way of disposing of it till Thursday, the next week. Thus entreating God to guide you & blesse you in your way, I rest

Your obliged loving friend & servant,

JOHN HIGGINSON.

GILFORD, the 6t day of the week.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Higenson."

JOHN HIGGINSON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

For the Worshipfull his loving friend Mr. John Winthrop, Esqr., at Pequot, these.

Much honoured Sir, — After my service & due respects remembred. The occasion of my present writing to you, you may perceiue by this enclosed. It hath pleased God to exercise my poor wife by a very sad affliction, she being in a very dangerous case, as Mr. Rosseter & all our neighbours here doe apprehend. I would earnestly entreat your presence here as soon as possibly you can, for which end I haue sent the bearer herof to attend you in your journey hither. The case is such as cannot be judged without ocular inspection. I confess, Sir, I am sory to be troublesome to you, but the necessity of the case, & the danger my poor wife is in, doth constraine me to be importunate withe you, that, if it be possible, you would pleas to come. The goodnes of your disposition, & willingnes to be helpfull in such cases, doth encourage me to hope that you will pleas to come, which will exceedingly engage me to you beyond all that I can expresse, & I shall endeauour, some way or other, to manifest my gratitude to you for so great a kindnes; that if it pleas the Lord to giue a blessing to your counsell & help, together with Mr. Rosseter, the life of my poor wife (now in much misery) may be preserued, if so it pleas the Lord. Thus praying to God for your prosperous journey, I take my leaue at present, & rest Your obliged loving friend & servant,

John Higginson.

Gilford, March 7, 1654: or 55:

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Higenson."

LETTERS OF WILLIAM PAINE.*

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right worshipfull & much onered loving frend the Governer.

Right Worshipfull & much onered in the Lord, — Thes are to giue your Woorship to vnderstand that wher as Goodman Medcalfe mad som spech of your not hauing 40 bushil of corne, he should not a neded, for althow Coley ded not deliuer his, that I might a had of him when I was there, it how som ever I would fal short of this 40, soe it wil be deliuered acording to your derecion. Sir, ther is an other bisnes which I here your worship is to haue the hering of, which is betwixt on Smith & my brother Hammond dauter, for when I was in the bay he mad a gret stir about it & much desired that we could goe to Mr. Philipes or Mr. How to haue them to here the bisnes that was be twixt hime and the mayd; resolving if he might not safely leaue her, when he hard Mr. Philipes, he would then be ruled by his iugment; & soe he teld his tale. Mr. Philipes his answer was, that he could not leue her exsept she ware wiling, or eles that he could proue somthing that woud mak an nulity; & then he resolued at that time to goe on & prosed. But more I might say, but I shall not at

* William Paine came in the "Increase" from London, 1635, and was of Ipswich in 1638; having, perhaps, been first at Watertown. He was admitted freeman, 13th May, 1640. He was concerned in the iron-works at Lynn, Braintree, and New Haven; removed to Boston about 1656, and died there 10th October, 1660. In his will, he bequeathed Little Neck to the grammar-school at Ipswich, and twenty pounds to Harvard College. — *Felt's Hist. of Ipswich*, p. 74; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

this time. This I am sure, he had don the mayd a gret dele of rong, & for my part I think had thay bine wis as thay should, she may mak as good a mans wife as his; but I could desire that it might be mad an end of, that the Cort might not be trobled with it; but if it should com to the Cort, then I should desire that I might haue word: but thus leving & commending you & al your afayeres to the Lord's good gidance; thus remaning youers to command to his power, with my servis to your worship,

WILLIAM PAINE.

FROM IPSWICHE, the 21 of the 2 month, 1640.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Paine lettre about corne."

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honered loving frend Mr. John Wintrop.

MR. JOHN WINTROP, HONERED LOVING SIR, — My last to you was by Captaine Wilet, and was to haue an answer from you about youer Iron work, wich I hope you haue full trial of before now; and was to let you vnderstand that I am wiling to by youer iron in the sow,* for if you haue no workmen to work it in to bar iron, I supose you wil sel it as it is, and if you wil sel it in the sow at such rates as we may doe anie good in it, here are workmen here wil by it, and work it out; and if I can haue anie quantyty from you, I wil be at the charg to set vp a forge for them, wich they much desire; but I wil not medel til I be of som sartainty to haue iron from you, therefore pray let me haue an answer from you by the first. They desire youer iron to be cast in pigs, because it wil be beter to handel

* Sow, with miners, "a great lump of melted lead or iron." — *Bailey's Dictionary.* — EDS.

tooe and againe. We haue it no salt com from Mr. Leder :* but not to troble you furder, but with my loue to you and Mst. Wintrop, I rest

Yours to command WILL. PAINE.

6 OF APRIL, 1657.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Paine."

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

MR. JOHN WINTROP, HONERED WORTHY SIR, — Youers dated the 9 of Janewary I receiued, and consering that you mencion for Mr. Later, I shal doe it. Consering the workmen at the mine, I am glad to here thay are wel, and are doing somthing. It wil be verie wel if you can find out a good way to bring it to the walter side, and I doe think it ware good for you, as you say, to send or goe to se what thay doe. Pray, if you doe send, let vs here what quantity thay haue diged. We haue writen to Mr. Crane to dispose of the goods. The mine that my vesel had tacken in was lost with my vesel. Pray forward that work at Nue Hauene, that thay may try a blast in the spring of the yere, for now I cann mack trial of the Iron as sonne as it com, for I haue bought out Mr. Web, and am lick to haue on halfe of the hol works at Lin and at Brantre, and soe intend to mack a blast here in the spring. Soe with my due respects presented to youer self, Mst. Wintrop, and al youers, commending you al to the Lord Jesus, I rest, and remaine

Youers to command to my power,

WILL. PAINE.

BOSTON, the 26, 11, 57.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Paine."

---

* Mr. Leader had charge of the iron-works at Lynn. See former volume of "Winthrop Papers," p. 61. — EDS.

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull John Wintrop Governer at Harford.

Mr. John Wintrop, Honnored Loving Sir, — Youers I reciued by Richard Philis, and hope by this time you haue found out the nerest way to the mine, as it is my desire you should, that soe you may git it to the water side with a smal charge. I hope now that you and Captaine Clark wil tack such a corce, as what is or shal be diged of it you wil spedyly git it to the water side. I made iust account to a com my selfe, but I find my selfe at present vnfit for such a jurnie; but, if it plese the Lord to inable me, I shal com and se you; but for the present, what agrement soe ever Captaine Clark and you shal mack, I shal be included there in, and doe fuly ingage my selfe to stand and abide by what agrement you mack with him consering the Led mine or the Iron worke. Sir, for what you haue had of me, this last somer or thee somer before, is 217*li.* 3*s*: and you know I am to be out but on third part of the 400*c*. wich we are ingaged to pay you, soe that I would intrete you to tack order with Captaine Clark that what I am out more than my 3 part, he or Mr. Yale may pay me, for my 3 part of the 400*c* is but 133, 06, 8, soe there is due to me 83*li*, 17*s*, 02*d*, and this is beside what I am out about the diging of the mine, and for what I am out about the Iron works at Nue Hauene. Youer man had as much goods, wich he sent to Nue Hauene, as com to 29*li*.: 5: 0, and then the stones wich I bought cost 29, and Goodman Tyler going vp, which his chargs com to about 7*li*. Pray goe downe with Captaine Clark to Nue Hauene and git Post to mack a hath with them stons, that soe he may mack a blast this spring, that soe a full trial of the mine may be made. Tyler sayth that there is no queston but he may mack a blast with them stones after 10 or 12 weks; but I

shal trobel you no furder at present; but desiring the Lord to gide and help you throw al the trobles that you may met withal there; pray present my due respects to Mst. Wintrop and al the rest of yours, and to your selfe, commending you all to the Lord Jesus, and shall rest

Yours to command to his power,

WILL. PAINE.

BOSTON, the 9 of March, 57, 58.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Paine, Rec: Mar: 15."

WILLIAM PAINE AND THOMAS CLARKE* TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Mr. John Winthrope, Gouerner at Conetecote, this presente with care.

BOSTON, the 29th: 1 mo, 1658.

MR. JOHN WINTHROP, SIR, — When Matthew Grissel† comes vnto the Blacke Lead mine, if hee bee willinge still to digge it vpon thirdes, & to let us haue his parte of Leade, wee will allow him, as wee doe for yours; but forgett not it is soe essensiall for the incoredgeinge the worke; namely that the leade bee keepte together; shuld he refuse that, to let us haue his thirde, then let it rest as it is, & wee shall continue one workemen as haue maide enterance. If there shuld bee any neede of our speakeinge with Math. Grissel, then aduise him to come vnto us from the workes; it is but two dayes jurney to Boston. ffor the caredge of the leade to the water side, Rich: Ffellowes is very willinge to ingage; first, by goeinge a turne or two vpon tryall, & after to goe vpon more serten price; wee

* Probably Thomas Clarke of New Haven, who was master of the iron-works there in 1669. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

† Matthew Griswold, born in Kenilworth, Warwickshire, was of Saybrook; which town he often represented in the General Court. He died in January, 1699, aged eighty-one. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

conseiue hee is fited for horses, & shall leaue him to your selfe for conclution, which wee desior you wold hasten, conscioeinge it will doe best to tracke the way before the weades bee grone high. For the Iron workes, wee desior you wold incoredge them what may bee, & come to acconte with the partners, that wee may know what you haue paid in, & that you wold indeuor the setelment there of vpon conuenyente termes. Wee haue wright to Mr. Crane, that hee wold gette theis thinges granted & recorded from the towns of New Hauen & Branforde, which wee desior you wold seconde with what elce you thinke conueniente; i: soe much lande as shall be couered by the water, when damed vp for pondes, both for furnish & ffordge. 2ly. A conuenient quantety, both of vplande & medow, lyinge neare the firnesh & ffordge, which may bee for the vse of workemen & keepinge of teame or teames. 3ly. Of takeinge mine in any place or places wheare it may be found. 4ly. Heywayes for cartinge coale & mine to the firnesh, & coale & iron two & from the fordge. 5ly. The tracte of timber granted, to bee recorded. 6ly. That liberty bee granted, to take all prinsepale peeces of timber, as fframen beames, & what else can not bee fonde in the tracte of lande set aparte for the worke in any other place within the boundes of the townes: allsoe that the partners in the worke make such agreementes amonge them selues as may bee equal for all, burdensome to none; th[at] the neglecte of some may not preieduce the rest. Theis thinges conserne vs but for a time, your selfe for continuance. It will conserne you to prosecute, which dought not but you may effecte. Giue us notise of your prograce with Math. Grissel, with what speede may bee, that in his deffecte wee may sende some others to cary one the worke, for they which are theare are weary of beinge there. With due respectes, take leaue, & remaine

Yours to comande,

Will. Paine.
Tho. Clarke.

Sir, presente my due respectes & seruice to Mis. Winthrop, your daughters, Mr. Stone, & his good wife, with many thankes for your & there greate loue: the frutes there of beinge manefested in soe large a degree when with you. Your orders shall obserue in conuenyente time, with desiers of your prosperity, remaine

Your seruent, T: CLARKE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Paine and Capt. [Clarke,] rec. Apr. 5."

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

HONORED, WORTHY SIR, — My last to you was by my man William Alen, in wich I desired you to git workmen to dig led, for both he and Chafie wil stay no longer: but Captain Clark receiuing on from you sinc, ware in you mencion Grisel and others haue bin at the mine, and consering the shortnes and goodnes of the way; but you inted not on word of about Grisel going to dig, nor of anie you had let the carage of it to the walter side; wich caused me to wonder you should soe much necklect youer owne bisnes: and seing we hard nothing that you had donn about the carage of it, we haue now let the carage of what is diged to Richard Philis, for now is the time to git it donn, or not at al. You may se the agrement we haue made with him, but if you doe lik the agrement, and consent to it, it will be caried on; but consider what you doe in it, for here is a ship to goe for Ingland about 6 weks hence, by wich we would send as much of it as we can git caried and brought hather; he must caried aboue 40 mile be land, and then caried to Harford by walter; and in Ingland thay gaue from Goulchester to London 5*s* per c, and then thay had there lading back, and it wil cost him a gret dele to fit al things and mack the wayes; and if Grisel wil goe

on to dig for on 3 of it, we hauing the led, as you agred with him, it wil be best: but, if he should not, you must git other men, or, if you cannot, we must. Pray let vs here from you by the first. Soe with my due respects presented to your selfe and Mst. Wintrop and youers, I rest

Yours to command to my power,

Will. Paine.

Boston, the 15 of April, 1658.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. W: Paine."

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Honered Sir, — You ware plesed in youer last to giue vs to vnderstand that you had mani carts promised you to fech the led, wich I hope, before thes com to hand, you haue feched what there is; but if you haue not alredy feched it away, let them by al menes carie vp barils to put it vp and bring it in barils, and let what is diged be goten to the walter side, that soe it may be sent to vs by the first oppertunity; for here is a ship to goe for London, about 6 weks hence, wich we would send in: and consering diging of more led, you must tack care to send more men, for our tooe men wil not stay, and you know if thay com away, what is there wil be lost; there fore hasten away Mr. Grisel, if he intends to goe, or som other from youer parts, for it is beter suplying from thence then from hence: but if you cannot send let vs sudenly here from you. Soe hopping sudenly to here from you, soe with my due respects to youer selfe and Mst. Wintrop, I rest

Yours in what I may serue you in,

Will. Paine.

Boston, the 11 of May, 1658.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. W: Paine."

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the right worshipfull & honored Mr. Jno: Wintrop of Harford, present.

WRIGHT WORSHIPFULL HONORED LOVING SIR, — For your gret loue and kindnes to me when you warè here, for al wich I account my selfe your deter, and I hope shal be redy to requit your loue on way or other, for wich at present I giue you thanks for al your loue. Sir, at present the ocacion of my wrighting is to let you vnderstand that that wich I feared is com to pas, wich is ockcacioned by Edward Mesenger, who haue made a gret dele of trople and disturpence with our men at the led mine, and turned them out of there work, and gaue manie thretning speches to them, and would a fout with them, and soe made account to a weried out our men, and then thay should haue the led and to them selfes, to doe what thay wil withal. Our request is to you is that you would be plesed to vse al menes for the quiting of them, that thay may not hinder on an other, but goe on cherefuly in there work to gether. We ordered Mesenger to begin at on end, and soe to cary on his work by him selfe, and then he was to carry there provisons, wich it semes he haue not donn: his hol work and study haue bin to mack trobel and hinder oure men; wich, Sir, we desire for time to com may be prevented: and in cace at anie time thay should want anie tooles or anie thing elce that they stand in need of, pray let them be got with you for them. Sir, our desire is that al things may be carried on in loue amonst them. Soe hoping you wil indever it: soe with my servis presented to your self, [and] Mst. Wintrop, I remaine

Yours to command in what I may serue you in,

WILL. PAINE.

22 JUNE, 1658.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Paine."

WILLIAM PAINE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Mr. John Wintrop, Honered Sir, — Thes are only to aquaint you that we haue receiued a leter from Will. Dene, and the diging of the surfe haue bin verie chargable to vs, for want of a horce or catel to carie there wood, for thay can doe nothing but by firing, and the caring wood vpon there backs tack vp the gretest part of there time: therefore thes are to desire you to help him to the horce Mesenger had of you, or som other, or a paire of oxen; but I think a horce wil be best. Soe desiring you wil furder them in what thay want; soe with my servis presented to you and Mst. Wintrop, with my loue to Mr. Lord and his wife, and shal rest

Yours to command in what I may,

Will. Paine.

15, 1, 58–59.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Paine."

LETTERS OF JOHN MASON.*

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the righte worshipfull John Winthroppe Esqr. theis in Boston be presented with trust.

Right Worshipfull, — I would not willingly neglect that service I owe, only in a word, there are strong plottings and endevors, not only by Sowquasson and the Indeans in our parts, but allsoe by the Nannogansetts, to procure the Mowhauks to come against vs, haueing sent them such quantities of wampom from all parts as is almost incredible ; the Nannogans : haue lately sent three basketts. The men that carryed it retorned last week ; the thing certaine beyond scruple, and it is acknowledged by the Indians whoe are frinds to them, that theire intendents and resolucons are as well against th English as the Monhege, only they are not yet resolued how to proceed, viz : whether to fall vpon our plantacions when men are at worke, or on the Lords day, in time of meeting, or to come in a frindly

* Major-Gen. John Mason, Commander-in-Chief of the military forces of Connecticut, born about the year 1600, is said to have served under Sir Thomas Fairfax in the Netherlands. He is thought by some to have come to New England with Winthrop; but he probably came over in 1632. He settled first at Dorchester; but removed, in 1635, to Windsor. On the breaking-out of the Pequot War, in 1637, he was sent with ninety men against the Indians, and served as chief commander to the close of the war; of which he wrote a brief History, which was published in 1736, with an Introduction by the Rev. Thomas Prince, and is reprinted in a former volume of these Collections. Soon after the war, Mason was appointed Major-General of all the Connecticut forces. In 1647, he removed to Saybrook; and on the first settlement of Norwich, in 1659, to that place. He was elected Deputy-Governor of Connecticut in 1660, and served for eight years in that office. He died in 1672 or 1673. — 2 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, viii. 120–153; *Sparks's Amer. Biog.*, 2d series, iii.; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

way and cease on our Sachems, as they terme them; but for my parte, I belieue they will hardly dare to vndertake such an enterprise, but that I leaue to God. However it will not thank the Indians in generall. The Dutch are still in straights, by reason of the quarrell with the Indians. Captain Pattrick lately invited the Dutch to come with some force against the Indians that liued neare him, whoe sent aboue 100: Dutch and Eng: vnder the comand of one Backster, an Eng: man. Capt. Pattrick haueing dealt vnder hand with the Indians, as is generally conceiued, to get wampom, deluded the Dutch, and whyles they weare wandring with his blynd guide to seeke the Indians, he enterteined some of them in his house. On the morrow the Dutch retorned to Capt. Pattricks and findinge the Ind: there, weare much trobled. How matters weare carried I know not, but one of the Dutch shott Capt. Pattrick in the head with a pistoll that he died forthwith.* The partie was deliuered by their leader to the Eng: at Nippowance, who was kept as we heare at Capt Vnderhill, and being sent for from Newhauen, made escape that night. I haue not time to enlarge, and therfore I cease, comending you to the Lord, and rest ever

Your Worships to comand

JOHN MASON.

WINDSOR, this: 1, (10) 43:

I would intreat your worship to acquaint Mr. Dudley with these things.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Capt. Mason, (1) 10, 1643."

---

* See 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., v. 174; and note on p. 321 in this volume. — EDS.

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull my much honoured ffrind, Mr. Jno: Winthrop, at Nameage be theis.

SEABROK, this 4th of Sept.

SIR, — I receiued your letters. Your newes is sad, if true, but I see not, if they weare reall, thus to reveale it; and that the Nannogansett should haue a hand in such a designe, althoughe the other, viz. Pawcompt:, Mowheganneak, &c., are very insolent and heady; but I heere generally that the Mowhauks will not meddle; and I veryly belieue that they will not be soe bold as to assalt any English, well knowinge that they ly open to apparent hazard, as experience haue somewhat taught; yet I should encourage to the vse of all meanes of defence, as if they weare in present viewe: but truly, Sir, I am heartyly sorry wee cannot affoord you that supply that you desire. Truly wee are, for ought I know, not soe well furnished as I could wish, but doe intend to send vp the Riuer: there is powder, I know, and match, I suppose. Tho: Stanton, with two Eng: and Sowquasson, are sent to Powcomptuck on Tuesday last. They are, being the cheefest Indians that act in this busines, to vnderstand their purpose, alsoe to acquaint the danger of theire course. Sowquasson is much trobled, and concludes it will be his ruine if they proceed: he is very prevalent with them. You may command any thing we canne possibly spare; a drake you may, if the matter proue reall; but the carriags are brooke. If you please to haue a murtherer or morter peece, you may doe as you se cause. Sir, encourage your people, that they be not ouer much trobled; they scope at the Monheags: they are lymited, and cannot goe beyond their tether.

Sir, be of good comfort. We haue a Rock of Defence. If danger appeere, draw as neare together as you can;

issue not out. Some are of a contrary mind, viz: to sally out; I say it then be a fayre opportunity [*sic*]; but tis only my judgment. Thus with due respects, taken it kindly that we heere from you; you may expect the like from vs if any thing further appeer. I rest

Yours to his power, JOHN MASON.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt: Mason, Sept: 4."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull Mr. Jno: Winthrop at Nameage these with truste.

SIR, — There was one particular in your letter, wherin you desired my aduise, viz: concerneing the Pequotts at Powcatuck. Wequashcooke is nowe at Seabrooke with me. Hee seemes to be very desireous of frindship with the English: affirmeing that he neyther hath nor will haue any hand with the Nannoganset, in theire plottinge against Oncos or the English. I canne nothing but that hee is reall. I would desire to vnderstand your thoughts in that particuler. I haue newes from Connectecott that the Mowhauks, vpon Tho: Stantons comeing, are disbanded; saying they neuer intended any thing against vs. I haue told Wequashcook that if what hee pretends proue true, he need not feare any injury from the English, prouided hee keepes his couenant. Sir, I will not yet conclude that the Mowhaks are gon: they are suttle. I suppose I shall vnderstand more fully this night, and then you shortly haue newes. I haue noe more at present, but with due respects I rest Yours vnfeignedly,

JOHN MASON.

SEABROOK, this 9th of Sept. 48.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt: Mason, Sept: 9.;" in another place, "All Indian business."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno : Winthrop Esqr. at Nameag, theis.

Sir, — I rec'd your letter and newes most thankfully, but haue not where with to requite in kind at present. Wequashcooke is now at Seabroke, and complaynes of an injury done, as he sayth, to one of his men, by your seruant, Jno: Dustin, at Quininacook, whoe hath, as he affirmeth, taken a cannoe of his, and keepes it from him by force, haueing noe just cause soe to doe. I would intreat that you would please to enquire into the matter; that right may be doe done, and if the cannoe be deteyned wrongfully, that it may be restored to the owner. That fellow is very busy in such matters, as I am enformed: Sir I shall desire nothing but with just I hope, not doubtinge of the righteousnes of your intentions: I hope there will [be] noe mistake. With love and due respects,

Yours assuredly, John Mason.

Seab: this 8th of March, 1648.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt. Mason, about the canoe."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull Jno : Winthrop Esqr. theise.

Sir, — I should not haue wrott at this time, but that I account it a case of necessity; and, if I mistake not, of very great consequence, if the relation I haue be true; viz: that Weyquashcooke was lately bound by Abachickwood and Cassasenaman, and that he is kept prisoner at your house. It is such a riddle that I doe not well vnderstand, nor can beleiue as yet, that a Sachem should be bound by inferior men. I shall say little whyle I know

more. I could wish he might be sett at liberty, if the case will beare it. If it be for any thing that hath be[en] acted at Seabroke with mee, or in my presence, I shall be ready to answer: but if you apprehend the matter soe waighty that he cannot be set free, then I shall desire hee may be carryed to the common prison at Hartford. Sir, I belieue, when reckoninges are cast vp, these twoe, viz., Rob: and the other, will find some troble. Such things haue past already that I suppose they will come to a second viewe, but I shall not particulerize. Sir, I would intreat this favor, that you would send me the true cause of Wequash-cooks imprisonment, by this bearer. I shall say noe more at present, but with due respects, I rest

Your vndoubted frind, JOHN MASON.

SEAB: this 11th of March, 1648.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt. Mason, Recd. Mar. 12, about Wequashcooke."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull my much honored frind Jno Winthrop, Esqr. these at Nameag.

SIR, — Wee received your letter with the physick, which you are pleased to send to my wife, for which, as alsoe sundry other fauors, we stand deeply engaged, but in any measure to requite, at present I see not; yet we shall not remaine altogether forgettfull nor vngratefull. My wife as yet remaineth ill, yet sometimes a little re[u]iueing, with the addition of somewhat more strength. I had purposed to haue come to Nameag this day, concerneinge that which the Court weare pleased to betrust yourselfe, Mat: Griswold and my selfe with, concerneinge the bounds betwixt your towne and Monheagan. But hee, comeing soe lately from the Court, tells me his occasions will not permit soe

soone: wee haue therefore determined, God willing, to come vpon Munday or Tuesday next. Wee would therefore intreat your presence, that soe wee may goe on with the work. Newes heere is little, only the Dutch haue kept a day of rejoyceing, that the English ffleet is dispersed. It is heere reported that some of the soldiers, belonging to the ffleet at Boston, ffell vpon the watch; after some bickering they comanded them to goe before the Gouernour, they retorned that they weare Cromwells boyes, telling them that when the Gouernour was come on shoare they would. Sir, noe more at present, but with all due respects, with my wiues, to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, &c: I comend you to God, and rest euer

Your vnfeigned loving frind and seruant,

JNO: MASON.

MAY THE 27TH, 1654.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull Jno: Winthrop, Esqr. these at Nameag present.

SIR, — Wee had a very troblesome journey heare, and were very glad that you went not with vs, although you are exceedingly desired heere, yet would not vrge to much beyond your bounds. We tasted abundantly of your extraordynary care and paines; though vnrequited, yet wee hope it shall neuer be forgotten, if the Lord should be pleased, as we hope, to restore Mrs. Winthrop and yourselfe. Your presence heere would be most acceptable. The newes I haue is this. The end of sending these ships is to settle Gouerment amongst the Colonyes, as alsoe make warre vpon Manhatas. You may please to conceale the last a little. I heere the Commissioners are to goe into the Bay, in the begining of next weeke, and that Mr. Endicott is sent for hence. This only a report. I much

question it. Road Iland had like to haue procured very great priuiledges, but the current is stopt. Sir, this is all at present, with my humble [seruice] with my wiues to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, &c., I comend you to the Lord, and rest euer

Yours to serue, JNO: MASON.

JUNE THE 11TH, 1654.

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull John Winthrop, Esquire, at Nameage, present.

SIR, — I came from Charton on Thursday last, and am now, through mercy, at Seabrook. There arriued a ship from London last Tuesday, haueing a six weekes passage, with twenty passengers, some old planters, some newe: great store of English goods, viz: one hundred tunne. Mr. Garrett, the master of her, whoe hath brought many printed proclamations concerneing the peace being concluded betweene the States of England and the Netherlands, with many letters tending to that purpose. The termes are not yet knowne, and it seemes to be questioned by some whether they euer will. Some say the Protector made them, and hint, feareing they are soe meane for th'English, that they will hardly be long kept. The designe against the Dutch in these parts wholy disapointed. Mr. Goodier is comeinge to you by land, otherwise I should informe you more largly about particulars. Sir, I am exceedingly engaged, and, I must profess, know not how to requite, but hope I shall not wholy forget. My wife, through mercy, is somewhat better then when you left her. Sir, with my humble seruice, with my wiues, to yourselfe, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, &c., I comend you to God, & rest

Yours vnfeignedly to serue, JNO. MASON.

SEABROOK, this present Tuesday.

The ffleets, both in Eng: and Holand fitting vp, as some think, against the Duke of Lygorne, others against the Spaniards in the West Indies.

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Sir, — I receiued your booke with your letter. I haue read it ouer with amazment, that men should bee soe sottish. I haue now retorned it by Goodm: Beckwith, with many thanks. The grand dispute att N: Hauen holds strongly for the planting Delaware. A great supply tendered from Concord per Generall Willard, Mr. Buckley, and, as I thinke, the most of that towne. Sir, I am enformed by Beckwith that Tho: Rowell hath stolne seuerall hogges, and that seuerall of his goods are already attacht, to make good the damage; although Rowell is bound with a surety to answer. I haue likewise granted a stoppage of such goods of Rowells as doe yet remaine vpon the farme att Nayantick to secure the rent due to Bull. Beckwith alsoe tells mee that he threatens to take away his life, and that hee will doe other notorious outrages. I doubt not but you will carefully looke vpon these matters; only he desired mee to wryte; and if I were throughly acquainted with busines, I should make bold to say more. My wife is yet vnder the afflicting hand of God. With many thanks for manyfold fauors, I comend you to God, with my humble seruice to your self, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, &c., I remaine,

Yours to serue, John Mason.

Jan. 28th, 54.

I pray forget not to prouide for the planting some trees at spring.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull Jo: Winthrop, Esqr. at Nameag, these.

Sir, — I am bold to present a word or twoe of newes, as it comes from Mr. Eaton, viz: that the Parliament sate in September last; they chose their old Speaker and Clarke. The Protectour told them they were a free Parliament, and soe left them that day. They, considering where the legislatiue power resided, concluded to vote it on the morrow, and to take charge of the militia. The Protectour hereing of it, sent for some numbers of horse, went to the Parliament house, nayld vp the doares, sent for them to the Painted Chamber, told them they should attend the lawes established, and that he would wallow in his blood before he would part with what was conferd vpon him, tendering them an oath; 140 engaged. Sir Arth: Hesilrigg and Judge Bradshaw are two of the cheifest against him. Noe peace with Ffrance. The Dutch like to haue intestine warres. A great battle in the borders of France betwixt them and the Spaniards. The Ffrench gayned a great victorey. A ffleete of fforty sayle gon to the West Indies, Mr. Winslow one of the Counsell; another into the Straights. The designe about Delaware like to fall. This the substance. With my humble seruice to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, &c., I comend you to God, and rest Yours vnfeignedly,

John Mason.

Seab: this 5th of Ffeb: 54.

My wife remembers her seruice. Shee remaines much what as formerly.

JOHN MASON TO ELIZABETH WINTHROP.

To the Worshipful Mrs. Winthrop, at her house att Nameag, these present. Aprill the 5th.

Mrs. Winthrop, — I am enformed that Mr. Winthrop is gon into the Bay, and therefore I make bold to present a few lynes to your selfe; hopinge they shall ffinde acceptance, &c. I haue sent ten apple trees by Goodman Stolyon to your selfe. I suppose they will, most of them, be planted in the north end of your orchard. I would haue sent more if had thought there were a place to receiue them. I haue alsoe sent Thomas Bayley thirty grafted trees, as hee desired mee. They are in Goodman Stolyons boate. I would intreat you to acquint him with it. Hee told mee hee would put it to Mr. Winthrops account. They come to thirty shillings. I confesse I stand most deeply engaged to Mr. Winthrop and your selfe, and knowe not howe at present in any measure to requite. But my poore prayers shall be for you, and my poore endeuors yours. Thus with my humble seruice presented to your selfe, Mrs. Lake, &c., I comend you to God, and rest Yours to comand,

John Mason.

Seabrook, the 5th of March, 1656.

My wife present[s] her seruice to your selfe and Mrs. Lake, and would much rejoyce to see you heere.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Rightt Worshipfull John Winthrop: Esqr: Gouernour of Connectigott, these be presented with trust.

Sir, — Wee expected you here before this time, otherwise I should haue presented a few lynes. Wee are at

this time in a disturbed way, in respect of the Indian warres mannaged round about, nay, at our very doores. About one fortnight since an Indian woman, who planted some ground of Goodman Robarts, killed by some of Nynigrets men, with some of Powcatuck Pequots, not many rods from Goodman Prentice his house: none at hoame but the woman big with child; her husband, who kept their kyne, hardly escaped. They haue beene there since, and doe contynually ly sculkinge neare our townes. Truly, Sir, I looke at it as a matter vnreasonable, as alsoe very vnsafe, to suffer Indians to mannage and maineteine a seat of warre at and in our very bowells, not makinge it appeer that they haue any ground to make warre at all; and if they should make cleere that they haue beene wronged, then I conceiue that those that liue amongst vs should eyther make the injured due satisfaction, or be enforced to depart from our borders. In my apprehension we act like men eyther a sleepe or affrayd. Certeinely there is a very great atapye and confusion amongst vs, and if the Lord help not, we may soone feele the smart of it. My thoughts are almost at a period, and soe my words and accions. Good Sir, pardon my boldnes. I am affrayd of very troblesome times; but I shall willingly referre matters for those to mannage whoe [are] better able then my selfe. The Nayantick Indians are like to leaue Onkos, and what then will succeed, I profess I know not, but doe somewhat feare. Sir, I shall troble you noe further at present, but with my humble seruice, with my wiues, to yourselfe and Mrs. Winthrop: I comend you to God, and rest

Yours to comand whiles I am

JOHN MASON.

SEABROOK, this instant June, 57.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason."

JOHN MASON TO THE GOVERNOR, DEPUTY-GOVERNOR, AND GENERAL COURT, OF CONNECTICUT.

To the right worshipfull Gouernour Jo : Winthrop, Esqr, with the Deputy Gouernour and Magistrats, or Generall Court, if sitting, at Connecticot, present.

Gentlemen, — I received a lettre from Ben: Brewster* that the Sachem of Namcet, with about fifty men, beset theire house; he goinge forth to know the reason, some of [them] bent theyre cocks and presented their guns at him: hee, being somewhat amazed, stepped into the house and fastened the doores, but they, rushing violently against the doore, and withall putting the muzzell of the gunnes in at the windowes, tellinge them that they enterteyned Monheages, and that they would come in and search: they seeinge themselues soe farre out bid, yeeldinge that twoe or three might search; but the doore beinge opened, many of them rushed in and stole or forciblye tooke away diuerse Indian goods, which had lyen in pawne some yeares, and to the value of forty shillings worth, and more, their owne goods, and carryed it in an insulting manner. Whither these doings tend may easily be discerned. I shall say little, because I know it is to little purpose; yet am very apt to think if Annumpequun had beene throughly dealt with, vpon his shamefull and inetollerable abuse of our men at Pocomptuck, his barbarous plunderinge at Hockanoanco, and his extreame pryde and insolency at Tunxis; but I hope those whoe are soe sollicitous to preuent a warre with theyr lenity and forbearance, will be as forward to proscecute. You nowe vnderstand what to expect from them: viz. If they doe but pretend that theire enemies are in any Eng: house, they will forcibly make search, and allsoe plunder at pleasure, where they can preuayle; but

* Benjamin Brewster was of New London, a son of Jonathan Brewster. — *Caulkins's New London*, p. 277. — Eds.

I wish our ouermuch lenity, as I haue often said, proues not secureity, &c; but I cease, fearcing least I troble. With my humble seruice presented, I comend you to God, and rest Yours;

JOHN MASON.

AUG. 22. 59.

They found noe Indian in Mr. Brewsters house. They made search twice.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull Jno. Winthrop, Esqr. Gouernour of Connecticott, present.

SIR, — I received yours by an Indian, and am glad to here of the health and welfare of you and yours, &c. You mention somethinge concerneinge New Hauens complyance with our Colony. I wish a happy proceedinge and conclusion of that matter, and if it had beene sooner, I suppose it might haue beene more comfortable for them and our selues, but better late then neuer. I doe well approue of your calinge a Generall Court, if it were a season that the Deputies could joyntly meete. For my owne part, I should readyly further that work, accordinge to your desire, as I am able, were it not hazardowes in regard of the weather. Newes here is little; only Tho: Mynor told a week since that he had a report from three seuerall persons, whoe came from Boston, that warre was proclaymed in Eng: against Holland, and that Sir Ferdynando Gorges* is come to Pascatqua to be Gouernour

* The grandson of the original proprietor of Maine, who, we believe, never visited New England in person. His father, John Gorges, had been dead for some years. At the "restoration" Ferdinando petitioned the crown to be restored to his lawful inheritance, and obtained letters from the king, addressed to the Governor of Massachusetts, directing restitution to be made to the agent of the proprietor. Mr. J. Archdale came over, in 1664, as

there, and that there is some troble and dissention amongst the people about it. He spake alsoe of some disturbance in the Bay. If the weather should contynue thus and my strength alsoe, I should aduenture ffarr, with Gods helpe, to come to you, if I knew when it wo[uld] be; howeuer yow may proceed without mee. Thus with my seruice to yourself, Mrs. Winthrop, with my loue [to] all; I comend you to God, and remayne

Yours vnfeignedly, JOHN MASON.

NORWICH, this 19th of Janr. 1664.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull Jno. Winthrop, Esqr; Gouernour of Connecticott, present.

MUCH HONORED SIR, — I received a letter from yow, dated March the 16: 68, and another before that, which were gratefully accepted. You are pleased to intymate much newes of a highe and very greate nature. I [ha]ue not the like to retorne. Our newes here is very smale, and as litle of it good: the best ship lately cast away vpon Long Iland as ever say[l]ed on N: Seas, in as ffoolish and cowardly base way and manner, I think, as ever was heard. The ship is yet whole vpon the poynt of Long Iland, not many rodds distant from the shoare. The goods, to a great value, taken out of her by East Hampton, and some of London, whoe were imployed in that service, whoe haue carried extreame false and injuriously. The Gouernour of York is now at East Hampton, whoe hath remitted all the

---

agent of Gorges, visited the Province of Maine, and issued commissions to various persons residing there. On the 15th of March, 1677–8, Gorges, by indenture, conveyed the whole Province from Piscataqua to Sagadahock to the Governor and Company of Massachusetts for £1250 sterling.— *Folsom's Saco & Biddeford*, pp. 91–95; *Willis's Portland*, pp. 109, 157.— EDS.

goods to the owners. The ship he reserues to a future tryall. John Gollop, senior, hath wounded a sonne of Amos Richardsons; the reports are, to the great hazard of life. He is only bound over to the Court. Nynygrett hath lately beene arested at Stonington by Tho: Stanton and Tho: Mynor: the Pequotts haue engaged to pay them forty pounds on Nynygretts behalfe. I here some of the Northerne Indians are gon to Nannogansett with your passe. Good Sir: consider what you grant them on that account, ffor it is vehemently suspected, not vpon slender grounds, that is hath beene, and still there is a designe in all their acting. They haue had passes formerly from your selfe and some others. Vast summes of wampon hath beene giuen to seuerall Indians, some say Ffrench mens wampon; however, some Ffrench Indians haue beene with the donour. Sir, I shall troble noe ffurther at present, but with my humble service presented to you with Mrs. Winthrop, I comend you to God, and remayne

Yours really to serue, JOHN MASON.

MARCH THE 18: 68.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason, rec: Mar: [ ] 1668."

JOHN MASON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To . . . worshipfull Jno. . . . p, Esqr. G . . . ticott, p . . .

SIR, — I received a letter from England, dated March the third, from a man of knowne trust, whoe doth enforme thus; that their liberties are great respecting Religion, and great expectations of more. The Parliament are to meet on the 4th of this instant, being to morrow. Its thought they wilbee prorogued, if not desolued, and writts for choyce of a new. The Ffrench hath great preparations at land and sea, but whither intended is rather vncertaynely suspected then knowne. Its certaine he hath an evill ey

against the Dutch, and many suspect for England. His Embassadour hath beene lately whipt and impris[oned] by the Turkish Emperour: some say slayne. Amongst vs it supposed [*five lines destroyed*] haue I acquainted you with the heads of what came to my hand, hoping you will keepe it within due bounds, for I shall not aduenture to every one with these matters, vntill I see further. This bearer, Ensigne Tracy, can further enforme in reference to some of these perticulers, &c. Thus with my service presented, I comend you to God, and rest

Your reall frind and servant,

JOHN MASON.

JULY, 1669.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Maior Mason, rec. July, 1669."

LETTERS OF THOMAS PETERS.*

THOMAS PETERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull his euer honored John Winthrop, Esquire, and Gouernor of the Mattachusets Bay in New England, these present, per a freind, Q. D. P.

MALLAGA ROADE, 17: Feb. 1646.

SIR, — I could not omit to giue you by Mr. Webber an accoumpt of the Lords dealings with [us] in our voyage. 19. Decem: we loosed from Nantasket, late in afternoone, and 19. of Jan: we arrived this port; blessed be the Hope of all those that go down into the brode seas. Our travailes were a full moneth of sad stormes, such as seldom any seamen met with. We met with but 3 fair dayes in our whole walke; lost our consorts company soone, and the winds very furious, yet furthering vs towards the Spanish coastes, where we were before the ship in our reckonings, but supposing our selues neere the straits mouth, in a very tempestuous night, which split our mainsaile of double canvas all in peeces, we tried to turne about the ship's head from approching the rocky bounds of the ocean, but labour and art could not worke it about,

* Rev. Thomas Peters, or Peter, the younger brother of the celebrated Hugh Peter, is said to have been educated at Oxford; and was a minister in Cornwall, whence he was driven by the Royalists in 1643. He came the next year to New England; was for a time at Saybrook; and went to Pequot, afterwards New London, with Winthrop, in 1646. Being invited to resume his former charge, probably at Falmouth in Cornwall, he returned to England the same year by the way of Malaga; from whence the following letter was written. The date of his death is unknown. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, ii. 352, 381; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

till suddainly the Lord commands the winds to do what we could not; we then aimed at the Barbary coast, but found our selues short about 50 leagues, which mistake was our great advantage. In this fear we heaved the lead ouer board, and the mate cryed grownd, which astonished vs all, but this also proued a mistake, for the tallow on the leads bottom had lickt vp some sand and shells in the cuddy, vnknown to the mate, who a second time sounding, found no bottome. The dayes approach cleered our feares, and cheered our harts. And so in the night we borded from shore to shore, still lying a try, till shortly after God discouerd to vs Cape Sprat, from whence we past by Tangere and Ape Hill and Gibraltar, and that night made a sight of our wished hauen, though could not enter it till next day, at which time 3 Londoners carried with like stormes came in, 16 days from Plimouth, relating that the Parliament had sent downe the Scots money, and then they were to revade into Scotland. Since comes in another ship from London, which ads that the monies are paid, and thay gon; and that 7 Lords are gon to meet the King at Compton house. I saw some corantos that approue by parliament the petition of the Citty of London for the K. returne, and other things; that many forces are gon into Ireland, that my brother was in Chester, preaching. Over 3000 souldiers to wards Ireland, severall others gon by Bristoll. Heere the Spanish report Dunkerke taken by the Ffrench, and Prince Rupert made Gouernor. Proclamations last sabbath cry vp a concluded peace twixt the Spanish & Hollanders, these to be a free nation, and to haue one ship to go with the East India fleete each voyage, and returning to Cales to haue the best advantadge of that voyage. 40 sayle are to assist the Spaniard in his wars gainst the Turk, and to ioyne with the Armado. Were it not that a discreat Gouernour in Mallaga, one Don Martin de Res, Marquesse de Cassarres, doth wisely order the state of things heere,

tis likly this citty would soone rise vp in armes (as they did 12 moneths since,) against the oppression of their tax Commissioners, for they want not examples; Lusiua, Cordua, Antichiyra and a fourth place now do strongly deny these taxes, to Cordua the K. sent by his Comissioners that 7 idle persons should be sent there for the K. wars. The 1. answere was they had no such fellowes there, but such as were laborers; this smacks ill, and another answere is commanded, which 2. is, they had sent 14 of these taxers, wished them to pickt out the idlest. Our consort, Mr. Webber, came in 8 dayes after, & with all his masts borne by the bord, through the stormes violence. Here ar 6 ships, great ones, bound for England, which came from deeper parts in the streights, which ratifie Roomes dissentions, which fell betweene a Cardinall of the Barbarinos and a great Commander of Naples, striving for priority of coats precedency. 6000 of each side appeared facing each other. The pope knew not a while which side to incline to, but at last fell to the Commanders, and since betooke himselfe into the Castle of St. Angelo; the Barbarinos which are kindred to last Pope, but this are in Ffrance; the Ffrench in arms against the Pope; Antichrist is falling; Christ is rising. Let the saints and the churches giue praise for the frute of their prayers we tasted in our voyage. You may communicat these mercies, and desire a continuance of the harty prayers of all the saints with you, and giue your yoakfellow, and your sonne, and all your relations, the harty thancks of

Your ever obliged servant

Tho: Peters.

I am shipt with Mr. Bodilo, that brought me into N. E. who waited for a winde thes 3 weekes.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Tho: Peter."

THOMAS PETERS TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipfull my much honored freind John Winthrop Esquire, and Gouernour of the Mattachusets Bay in New England these.

LONDON, 27 Aprill: 1647.

SIR, — After a sad travaile from Mallaga, but a fair one from thence hither, I haue met with a sad afflicted brother, which is more greevous to me then I wille expresse. He needs much of your prayers, and if all the sages of Greece were heere cannot yeeld him a contenting counsell. I wrote by Mr. Webber to you from Mallaga very largly, which spares my paines at present. For things heere this small paper cannot sufficiently open. I leaue it to Maior Bourne. We need the continuance of N. E. prayers for the cure of our monstrous distractions. Your sonne* heere is in health, and I pray you acquaint his wife that I told him that she wished me to hasten [him?] home. My service and thanks to your selfe and deere yoakefellowe, and all your family. I haue procured some freinds to giue 10*li.* per annum for a while, for a schoole master at Roxbury, to teach Indians, both their owne and our Eng: tongue, how to read and pronounce both, which I desire you to acquaint Mr. Eliot with, so that if the Elder of his church will buckle to the worke, vpon his first letter to me, directed to Mr. Pennoyers in Filpot Lane, I will take care for the safe convayance of the sum.

I desire you to speak with Mr. Wilson about 5*li.* due to me from Tho: Lake, and help me to it as I haue directed, and command any service can be don for you heere, by

Your realle freind THO: PETERS.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Tho: Peter [*torn*] 4."

"Mr. Wilson saith that Tho: Lake doth answer that he paid the 5*li.* to John Mili[*torn*] by Mr. Peters direction."

---

* Stephen Winthrop. — EDS.

THOMAS PETERS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Worshipfull my much honored freind John Winthrop, Junior, Esquier, at Pequite river in New England, these.

FFALMOUTH, 26 June, 1648.

SIR, — There is no good to be done for Pequite by the Londoners, who for the maior part are base and rotten. Nothing to be don with the Parliament but matters of high consequence. The K. is still the same, would wriggle out of the castle, had eaten an iron bar through with *aqua fortis*, had all things ready for his escape, but foreknowne to Coll: Hammond, was taken in the nicke. The Kentish were 20,000 strong, marching towards London, by the Generalls 8000 were routed at Maidstone, 8 peeces taken, 1300 prisoners, 400 slaine, pursued to Canterbury, Rochester, Dover, there followed to Graues End, where Goring's ffather, the ring leader, gets ouer into Essex, where some 5000 rogues ioyne with him, these march toward London, are met with by Coll: Whalies regiment, which is shortly seconded by the Generall, who forceth the rogues into Colchester, whare he hath rounded the towne with a line. Ther is Lord Capell among them, whose estate is vallued worth 24000 per annum; a good recrute to the Parliament folk. Cornwall rose twice in a day, and routed same afternoone. Wales had 8000 routed by 2000. My brother is now before Pembrooke with Cromwell, who hopes to carry the castle shortly. Norwich was vp and Edmunds Bury, but soone quasht. The Scots are base all ouer. That Parliament silenceth and imprisoneth honest ministers, for crying down their inrode into Eng: they haue 4000 horse, I know not what foote: they send to Sir Marmaduke Langdale not to engage till they engage. Langdale is a stale fore-tongueed cavalier, but now hath got Carlile, Barwicke and Pomfret. 7 ships revolted from

Parliament gon to Holland to offer [them] selves to Duke of Yorke to be their Admirall. The cheefe commander is but a botsons mate. I pray get in my 10 or 12*li.* from the planters, send it in beauer to my sister Mris. Bridget Peters house in Limehouse, neer London. Giue my loue to your wife and children, all my freinds of Pequite. I heere send you 2 stones of lead, thought to haue silver in them. I hope also to send you a tin stone. The Lord Jesus advance this day of small things among you, and pray for Your really affected freind

THO: PETERS.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Tho. Peters, recd. Nov: 9."

LETTERS OF THOMAS HARRISON.*

THOMAS HARRISON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the honourable John Winthrop: Esq: Governour of New-England: these present.

Honoured Sir, — I am straitned betwene feare of an offensiue silence, & a presumptuous breach of it; the desires of this honourable bearer to carry some thing from me cause the one, his haste the other. I choose rather to venture upon your candour with this sorry scribble, then that his least *velle* (made out to me) should be unanswered.

Sir, the Lord helps me to see that I am not worthy to licke of the dust from the soles of the feete of His saints, (the treasure committed to that safe & sacred custody, 1 Sam: 2: 9:) much lesse to receiue any such particular & signall favour from them, as your pen hath vouchsafed me; but for the comfort & establishment which many poore soules haue reaped from it, I doubt not but you will find it upon account in the day of your appearing before Jesus Christ, your loue to His Name having brought forth this kindnesse, which hath powred out a blessing of ioy & gladnesse into the harts & soules of His poore people. The Lord recompence your worke, & a full reward be given unto you of the Lord God of Israell.

* Rev. Thomas Harrison, D.D., was chaplain to the Governor of Virginia; but, his teachings not being agreeable to Sir William Berkley, he came to New England in 1648. He married a daughter of Samuel Symonds. In 1650, he went to England, and was settled at St. Dunstan's in the East, London, where he was distinguished as a divine. He afterwards preached in Dublin. He is the author of several theological works. — *Calamy, Account*, &c., p. 121; *Contin.*, &c., p. 169; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

Sir, had your propositions found us risen up, & in a posture of removing, there is weight, & worth, & force enough in them to have stakd us down againe, but the good hand of the Lord hath put the same care & considerations into the harts of some amongst us, & since you haue permitted & encouraged us to giue you an account of our matters, we shall be bold to doe it, when the mind of the Lord shall be made out unto us, & to seke & take directions (& if you please commands) from you, for such shall all your advices be unto us, which are dictated & breathed from so much goodnesse, swetenesse, affection, experience, prudence, piety.

I dare not make this most worthy bearer waite any longer for this unworthy paper (for such is the conception & birth of this abortiue) but with the earnest addressement of my heart & soule, commending your most worthy selfe, & all those precious saints of the Most High under your government, (the excellent ones of the earth) to that Eternall Refuge, & those Everlasting Armes under whose wings you haue learnd to rest & trust, I humbly take my leaue & remaine, Sir,

Your poore unworthy servant to be commanded in the things of Christ, THOMAS HARRISON:

ELIZA: RIVER, this 2d of 9br, 1646:

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Harison from Virginia, per Maior Gibbens."

THOMAS HARRISON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrope, Esq: Governour of New-England, at his house at Boston, these with due respects present.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL & MUCH HONOURED IN THE LORD, — Your former Christian condescension in writing to me, encouraging me to this boldnesse, & your swete encour-

agements havinge much raised & refreshed my spirit, & strengthened my hands in the good worke of the Lord; I durst not let this opportunity passe me, without an acknowledgement of my great engagements. I haue little matter to present you worthye of your veiw: I suppose you are fully acquainted with the late plott of the malignants in England, in driving away the Parliament men from Westminster, who fled to the army for refuge, & were by them brought again to London, & plac'd in their houses, the authors & abettors of that unparalleld villany imprisoned, all those tumults turned wonderfully to the praise of God & advancement of the kingdom of Christ.* The malignants that come hither from the citty, & malecontents from the army, with deepest indignation relate, that what the Parliament haue a mind to enact & establish, they first communicate it to L. Generall Cromwell, & he to the Adiutators,† (soe are his pious assistants & associates termed) they to all the officers, these to the souldiers, & these last approvinge, petition for it to the Parliament, & then they vote & graunt it. Their printed pamphlets with rage & madnesse exclaime, this independent Parliament, backd by an over-awing, over-ruling independent army, will ruine them all, unlesse helpe come from heaven, for they can see noe hopes of any upon earth. Poore soules! they cannot see when good cometh; they forsake their owne mercies, & looke on them as miseries & mischeifes! Sir, what cause haue we to wonder at that rich & glorious grace, which hath wrought this.

The last newes from a sure & eminent hand is this: The King will not yet assent to the propositions,‡ but yet

* These events occurred in July and August, 1647.—*Carlyle's Cromwell, passim.*—Eds.

† For an account of these "Adjutators or Agitators," see Heath's "Chronicle," 2d ed., p. 127.—Eds.

‡ The king was then a prisoner at Hampton Court, from which place he fled, Nov. 11, and took up his abode at Carisbrook Castle on the Isle of Wight.—*Carlyle's Cromwell, passim.*—Eds.

makes forth a desire to comport & comply with the proposalls of the army, to which they labour to draw him fully over, with bands of loue. The Parliament proceeds to settle the affaires of the kingdome. That golden apple, the ordinance for toleration,* is now fairly fallen into the lap of the saints; no more compelling men to goe to their parish churches, or to sacrifice the abomination of their soules, or to offer up the sacrifice of fooles, &c: & yet all such as preach, print, or practise any thing contrary to the knowne fundamentalls of religion, the peace of the state, or power of Godlinesse, are excluded from tasting the swetenesse of this indulgence. The face of the kingdome begins to smile, as stroked & demulced by the hand of peace; only one letter, out of the north, tells me of another black cloud rising there; 45,000 Scotts ready to enter the kingdome. But I suspect the melancholly frame of the relators spirit, one Ffugill, lately cast out of the church at New-Haven, & I fear his spirit soe imbittered against the whole way & worke of Christ, that he cares not how many be made like him, in his ruinous estate & condition. Concerning our selues, we haue received letters full of life & loue ffrom the Earle of Warwicke, who engageth himselfe to the uttermost, to advance the things of our peace & wellfare; & the Prince of Peace himselfe hath hitherto bene soe tender over us, that He hath not suffered the least cold aire or breathing of any opposition as yet to fall upon us, to checke or chill this tender springe of His grace amongst us; a matter of noe small admiration, considering where we dwell, even where Satans throne is. 74 haue ioyned here in ffellowship, 19 stand propounded, & many more of great hopes & expectations. All these things, Sir, I represent unto you, as foode & fewell to that heavenly fire wherewith your heart & soule are filled & inspired, even the spirit, & life, & love of the

* Passed October 13th, 1647. — Eds.

Lord Jesus, who reioyceth over you with ioy, & ioyes over you with singing, Zeph: 3: 17: & hath thus long rested in His loue, & will rest in it to the dayes of eternity; & hath given you to reioyce in Him, & in the building up & compleating of his body, which is His fullnesse — Eph: 1: *ult:* Who is still gathering you up into Himselfe, & will never leaue you, till by the unfoldings of Himselfe unto you, your spirit be at last foulded up, & layd up in His Spirit, & be made one with it, 1 Cor: 6: 17: in whose bosome (the center of all happy soules) I leaue you, & remaine, Sir,

Your affectionately devoted servant,

Thom: Harrison.

Sir, be pleased to improue all your interest, & if you please your authoritie over the saints, for the continuance of their fervent prayers for us:

Nansemun, this 14 of the 11th mo: 1647:

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Tho. Harison, Dat. 14, (11) 1647, from Nanseman in Virginia."

THOMAS HARRISON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the Honourable John Winthrop, Esq: Governour of New England, at his house in Boston, these with humble respects present.

Honoured Sir, — I cannot but returne an humble acknowledgement of your great favour towards me, both in acceptinge my simple missiues, & vouchsafing me such swete & comfortable answers, full of life, & loue, & encouragement. If I mistake not the dilatings & reioycings of my heart & spirit, their springe & fountaine in the matter of toleration, was the apprehension (my informations caused me to take up) of a day of Jubile, dawning & opening itselfe to the Saints, that they may walke up to

their light in those administrations & formes of worship whereunto they haue attained; if any partake in this indulgence, besides the orthodoxall party, tis noe matter of exultation to me at all; nor yet am I (in the least) anxiously sollicitous, least that little sparke of truth should be oppressed or extinguished, by all the straw & stubble that is or can be cast in upon it; I know it shall arise & prevaile, & shine forth & shout up unto Victory in the day thereof: whether that day be now breaking or not, He best knowes who hath hid times & seasons in the hollow of His owne hand; if caution had not bene laid in before hand, my hopes would faulter & stagger upon the assaults of my last intelligence; which threatens thus. The Adiutators, (2 chosen out of every company to assist in consultation at the head quarters) are baptizd levellers: proiecting to bringe allmost a parity upon all persons in the kingdome, none to excede 400*lbs.* per annum: noe freman, to be without 10*lbs.* yearly rents, &c. This designe (if it be not a chimæra, formd & forgd only in malignant braines, whose well knowne fruitfullnes in furnishing the world with such Minervas, makes me still suspect, though I see it mentioned & called the Levellers doctrine by the Kinge himselfe, in his letter left upon the table when he escaped from the army, & since published to the kingdome) this proiect I say found many, even innumerable approvers & abettors, I mean all those who had little or nothing to loose or liue on, none but such exempt from painefull & pannicke feares. Bookes entitled Appeales to the people are put forth by Lilburne & others, informing them that now as well the Parliament, (as formerly the Kinge,) haue lost all their authority by male administration, turning all the arguments upon the 2 Houses, whereby they themselues haue battered & scourged the Royall usurpations & errours, perswading the people, that all power & soveraignty is devolud & come backe to its first subiect, viz. themselues, & instructing them for a new mint & modell

of government. The authors of these bookes were notably favoured & protected, & some of them forcibly freed out of Newgate; the Adiutators printing an accusation against Cromwell, intended to remoue both him & their Generall, & to take Lillburne into his roome; I mean for their Generall; (those are all said to be Anabaptists or Seekers, or I know not what); to prevent this the head quarters were broken up at Putney, & all the Adiutators scattered by the Generall & his seconds, immediately before the last ships coming away; part of this newes (such as it is) I had from the mouth of an old Jesuite, who wanted neither information to know the truth, nor malice to misreport & misrepresent it. Sir, whether it be true or false, the Saints in these goings downe of the sun had never more light to see why their Ffather hath thus farre removed them, nor ever more strong engagements to be thainkfull for it. My unfeigned desires to serue you haue turnd this paper into a Gazet; tho I am exceedingly straitned for time, yet not in heart, to remaine, Sir,

Your servant in the Lord

THOM: HARRISON.

THIS 10th of 2d: 1648:

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Harison from Nanseman. 10 (2) 48: pr Jos: Grafton."

LETTERS OF JAMES PARKER.*

JAMES PARKER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

ffor the rght [worshipfull] John Winthropp, Dep. Governor, theese presente in Bostowne.

Right Worshippfull & dearely respected, — I make bold in theese few lines to open my mind. I have received this inclosed from Mr. Nowell, to which I answeare as in Gods presence that the business he writes to me off, I cann say little off, to give it in as matter off certaintie, that my sayings should be matter off evidence; ffor it is neare 2 yeares, or more, since that the young woman did make her relation to me, & the young woman is now dead, about ½ a yeare since, or more, & her brother, to whome I suppose she spake as much too as either to my wife or selfe, is with you, at Wamouth I meane, & her husband that married her, & therefore I thinke this labour might have beene saved, & the greate noise that is about the country, that Mr. Parker, our minister, is sente for by a warrante (and how savorie that will prove to me or to the ghospell, I referr it to your selfe, for I cannot tell every man the occasion, & a fame is not easily silenced, but to soe many as I speake with I cannot but open it). It troubled me when I saw this enclosed, for two causes, ffirst, in regard the person that I suppose declared it to you, I only propounded it too, as a matter off secrecie, wherein I de-

* James Parker of Dorchester, styled by Winthrop "a godly man and a scholar," removed afterwards to Weymouth, of which town he was representative from 1639 to 1642. He went thence to Portsmouth, where he was invited to become their minister, but declined, although he preached for some years. A letter to Gov. Winthrop, written by him from Barbadoes, is published in Hutchinson's Collection. He died at Boston in 1666. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 133; ii. 93; *Hutchinson's Coll.*, p. 155; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

sired a little advice, and my trust is not answeared. And 2d, in regard the thing, at the worst, is but a heare say from one partie, & the ffellow denied it stiffly then, & shee is now dead. And all that I cann say, or my wife, about it is that he proferd uncleaness to her, & this shee complained not off to me, but from my wife I hard it accidentally, & examined the mayd, & to my apprehensions found it not worthy off complaint, because there were but hir affirmations, some weekes or months after the uncleane passages one his parte, and his deniall strongly; but to avoid the occasion for the time to come, I forwarned him off my howse, unless occasion cald him thither. And ffor any circumstances one one hand or the other, I dare not, neither my wife, speake one oath. Now, Good Sir, what other jealousies that either you or the Courte should have off me, that either my selfe or wife would countenance sin by concealing this person, I know not; only nakedly I have opened what I know, or my wife; only this warrant implies blame, but what ground yet I see it not, I wish I may, ffor I ame off this mind, that I love not to trouble Courte & Country, without I see God going before me in some plaine testimonie, unless it be in case off bloud, or some notorious crime, which is unnaturall, and then I desire my evidence to be cleare then, for things reveald belong to me to publish (but I will not be too bold). This warrant I heare were followed by Wilson with greate violence, as some such matter, as though it had concerned my life, or at least the welfare off the place where yet I live, & this I were told, they wonderd what the business ment. I had thought that our depositions might haue served in criminall matters, ffor shee then were a mayd. This is a greater thing is to me, then any thing that ever befell me in New England this many yeares, considering the employment I ame now uppon; and I had thought that I might have beene accounted soe faithfull to God & this state, that enquirie might first have beene made, before

it should have beene positively required off me, my personall presence, & wife & boy. What he cann say I yet know not, because I have not yet spoken with him, because I were at the Ile off Shoules when the warrant came (& yet ame with my wife), & that late, one the 5th or 6th day at night, the last weeke, I had this sente over to me, as matter off greate concernement, which I conceive not soe much. But pardon my weakness, ffor my trouble is much about it, not soe much ffor my selfe, if my hearte deceive me not, but ffor the poore people among whome I live, to whome I am in my spirit deepely engaged; and therefore doe earnestly beg that ffor the business betweene Dover & them, if it be alterd, it might be uppon apparente cleare ground, ffor such is there weakness, that they say that they sshall not put much confidence in the orders off the Generall Courte, if it be altered, & that chandge mostly argues infirmitie. And make this account off further trouble, ffor there necessitie cals for it, the other certainly doth not. But however, I could earnestly wish that it might be concluded now, if it may be, for my parte, ffor it fills the peoples hearts full off trouble, that we cann goe one with noe business for ordering off other affaires. And ffor there votes being refused, uppon what ground I know not, therefore I cannot speake to it, only I ever conceived them to be absolute ffree men, & to have there votes in the choise off all officers, by the last order made concerning them, but more I suppose we shall here, therefore I leave it ffor presente. Thus with my respect & service to the Governour, your selfe, Mr. Nowell, your sonn, I leave you & your more serious affaires to the Lord, able to councell you, & rest, yours to my utmost,

in any service ffor you & the Country,

JAMES PARKER.

I desire, if what we have wrote concering Meigs business of suspition off uncleaness satisfie not, we may not be

compeld to come into the Bay, but rather let vs send our depositions ffrom the hands off some Commissioners here, but if we shall be compeld to come we subjecte. We fforgott to write to your sonn, to give him notice that we desired Mr. Williams to be propounded ffor a Commissioner.

FFROM THE ILE OFF SHOULES,* this 10th off the 4th moth, 1644:

I could desire to heare ffrom your Worshipp some word off answeare, & what newes you have with you.

I wrote to your worshipp about 14 dayes agoe, about divers other things, but since I received the letter againe. But this business puts other propositions out off my mind.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. James Parker, Rec: (4) 13,–44. Mr. Williams to be a Commissioner."

JAMES PARKER TO JOHN WINTHROP.

ffor the rght Worshippfull John Winthropp, Dep: Governour, theese in Bowstowne presente.

RIGHT WORSHIPPFULL, — Still enquiring, as it were my bounden dutie, how it wente with your selfe, concernig some things, at leng[th] I hard that the Lord had cleared your name & repute, & layd that which some would have had to have beene yours, one the backs off them which opposed you. I account it favour to my selfe in your worshipp, not only in regard off the respect I owe you, & deepely ame engadged to you, as alsoe in regard many yeares since some care by a freind off mine, desired from you to me (which care with love I have ever found) but likewise because off my poore desires were to him whoe breakes the snares off men which sometimes he would lay,

* The writer was probably at this time a resident of Portsmouth.—EDS.

& to him that delivers Israell out off all his trouble, I say both publicke & private, ordinarie & extraordinarie [*torn*] you, & therefore I desire to give thanks to him wh [*torn*] doth exist & failes not, but will appeare after He h[*torn*] ffitted his (as to pray for mercie, soe) for it. And therefore I [*torn*] & shall greately desire & endeavour that God would bring your gray hayres with honour to the dust. Though experience every day, every where, proves it that there is noe stabilitie in the arm off fflesh, especially in the common people. But I shall not make too bold, this is but my respect to you, having & being desired to give in my testimonie about Mr. Smyth, therefore I tooke this occasion in theese ffew lines ffirst to presente my respect to your selfe. Ffor newes, here is a Dutch ship come in, I meane a Dutch man in a ship, that were the Major Sedgwicks. All sorts off commodities, fraite with all. Mr. Guard is dead, & left little manifestation off any breaking off spirit, only cried out much off the people, that they had broke his hearte. And soe grew some times mazd with it. Mr. Hull offerd to preach yet his funerall sermon, & did, and the people all solemnly interred him with there armes. That province is greately distracted. Mr. Vines saith he is removing.

I desire your worshipp advice in what I have wrote about Mr. Smyth. Though there is nothing but to my best knowledge is truth, only I know in some cases it is daungerous to give under a mans hand concerning mens carriages, because I doe not know what may be proved against him, though I know nothing. Therefore may it please your worshipp according to your wisdome to give him, I meane Capt: Smyth, this or not; & soe with my due respects to you, I rest, I hope, ever

Yours to my utmost, JAMES PARKER.

STRAW BERRIE BANCKE, the 28th of the 5th, 45.

JAMES PARKER AND DANIEL GOOKIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull Mr. John Wintrope at Peaquitt, thes ddd with speed and truste, I pray.

Honoured Sir, — I make bould to present thease few lines to your Worshipp, to put you in minde of the pasages that did pas betwene your selfe and me, conseringe your farmme at Shawshin. Sir, you may remember you did put me in truste to se the farmme layed out. To that ende, you ded procure the Court grants of the said farmme, which you ded comitt to my keeping, that so I might know how to acte in it. The Courte was pleased to apoynte a Comitte to lay it out, but as yet it is not done. When it will be don I know not, but Mr. Dudleys farmme adioyning to it beinge acording to order layed out, I doe know where and how it doeth ly; and partly how it is bonded: and Sir, you may remember you did impoure me to se the farmme disposed of by way of improouement, for your vse and benifett, which I could not doe any thing in to this tymme; but now ther is probabillity of a plantation goeinge forward at Shawshin,* I doe conseiue ther will be summ benifett to your selfe in takeinge summ order about the disposing of it by way of improovmente, to the saide plantatione to which it doeth belonge. Sir, I am informed that summ of Woeberne hath sente to you to hire the meddow of yow that doeth belonge to the said farmme, and they will improoue it to Woeberne; which, if you should please so to dispose of it to themm, it is conseiued will be a hindrance to yourselfe and disaduantagious to the plantatione of Shawshin. I canot but informme you, Sir, that the partys of Woeberne, that haue a desire to hire it, haue this present summer mowne a good part of your

* This place was next year incorporated into a town, and called Billerica. — *Mass. Col. Rec.*, iii. 38. — Eds.

meddows without any order, and caried away the hay to Woeberne. I haue demanded satisfactione for the hay they haue mowne, but can not retaine any satisfactione for the samme. I wolde intreat you to let me receiue a few lines fromm you, what you will haue done therin, and what your worships pleashure is furder conseringe the disposall thareof. Hauing not else at presente, with my seruice to your selfe remembred; I reste

Your seruante in anye thinge to my power:
for your selfe or yours, JAMES PARKER:

SHAWSHIN, this 11th day of the 7th mo: 1654:

SIR, — Hauing sight of this letter vnto you concering the lands belonging to you at Shaw Shin, I haue made bold to add my vote, intreating you so to dispose therof, as may best conduce to the furtherence of the plantation inteneded their; which I doubt not but wil be more for your profit, & beter for the publike, then to let or sell it to such as may improue it to another place, more remote, or keep great stocks on it, to the preiudice of a village neere it. I hope your prudence & publike spiritt will accept of this aduise from him that desires to honer & serue you in the Lord. DAN: GOOK[IN.]

12TH 7 MO. 1654.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Capt. Gookin & James Parker, abt: Shawshine."

LETTERS OF JOHN NORTON.*

JOHN NORTON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the right Worshipfull and his much honored John Winthrop, Esq. Governour, at his howse in Boston.

Honoured Sir, — So hath the providence of God ordered that nowe not onely for my brothers sake but allso for mine owne in him I am by these becom a petitioner vnto your worship, wherein what effectual fauour you shall according to your wisedome and in the Lord expresse towards me, I shall looke at it as the pledge of your loue in time of neede and not to bee forgotten in time to come.

Sir, so it is that my brothers† affection and heart being nowe set vpon Mrs. Luce, his first encouragement from hir father, then hir mother, which I mention not without the acknowledgment of their loue to him, and very contentfull to me therein; and since this last weeke a mutual engagement on all hands respectively, Mrs. Luce free and cheerfull, myselfe beeing an eye and eare witnesse, in passing hir consent therein, besides the many expressions since

* Rev. John Norton, an eminent divine, born in 1606 at Starford, or, as Mr. Savage thinks, at Bishop Stortford, Herts, was educated at Peter-House College in Cambridge, where he was graduated A.B. 1623–4, and A.M. 1627. He was afterwards chaplain to Sir William Masham. It was his intention to have come to New England, in 1634, with Shepard; but they were prevented by a violent storm, and Norton did not come over until the next year. "The ship wherein he was, was by contrary winds put into Plymouth." He preached there all the winter; but went to Ipswich the next year, where he was ordained, and continued to labor until the death of John Cotton, when he was invited to Boston. In 1662, he was sent with Bradstreet to London, as agent for the Massachusetts Colony. Having accomplished the purpose of his mission, he returned the same year; and died April 5, 1663. — *Winthrop's N. E.*, i. 175; *Bradford's Plymouth Plantation*, p. 343; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† William Norton of Ipswich, who came over in the "Hopewell," 1635. He married Lucy, the daughter of Emanuel Downing. — Eds.

of hir contentment taken therein, and his heart farther engaged; thereby it seemes one John Harrold that liueth with you hath vnseasonably, and (I leave it to your wisedome if so hee haue done) howe sinfully, so practised and disturbed hir, as that vpon a suddaine shee, both vnexpectedly and greiuingly vnto him, seemed to recede from him in hir affections, and so, without any other expressions on hir part, hee was constrained to leaue hir.

Sir, my desire to yourselfe is that for my sake you would consider of vs both heerein, vse some meanes to remedye that John Harrold's doing my brother and me in him so much and vnseasonable wrong. I cannot but wonder at the practise of that young man, as I am informed, but I reckon my selfe safe vnder your shelter in that respecte, so farre as you shall see cause.

Seueral particulars my brother hath beene tooe much wronged allready in, whome I thought none had beene so sorely disaffected to, as this plot, for surely so it discouers it selfe, sheweth some to bee.

Sir, my brothers heart is much, very much troubled, and set vpon hir, nor doth hee hearken vnto any nowe but hir, heere or elswhere, which mooueth me the more to write for your helpfullnes heerein. I shall not further trouble you, in hope you will both ease him and me in time. I leaue you to the Lord Jesus.

In him your Worshipps to love and serue you

JOHN NORTON.

M. 11, 26, 48.

Sir, Remember me to Mrs. Luce.

Let not J. Harrold knowe I haue made any mention of him vnto you; it seemeth hee hath a letter, as it is called. You may learne by Mrs. Luce or otherwise enough, &c.

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Norton about his bro: & N: L: D."

JOHN NORTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

For the worshipfull his much honoured freind, John Winthrop Esq: at his house in Hartford, these dd.

Honoured Sir, — This day I received yours, the testimonie of your loue and careful courtesie in sealing vp the letter you sent to me. It came from the Dutch Governour, and the paper torne and sealed againe was but itselfe an inclosure. The letter itselfe inclosed came to my hands since, with one seale and that vntouched. Howsoeuer, there was no matter of priuacie & moment, onely salutations and remembrances concerning his sonne who liueth with me. I finde my selfe more vnfit to so great a iourney then formerlie, in which and other respects I hope they who are concerned will see cause to excuse me, and think of some more fit for such a seruice. The Lord Jesus bee with you and yours. My wife presents hir respects vnto yourselfe, with whose affectionate remembrance to Mrs: Winthrop, I pray ioyne mine.

Sir, Your worships to serue and loue you,

John Norton.

Boston, 1, 21, 58.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Norton."

JOHN NORTON TO WILLIAM GOODWIN.*

For the Reverend Mr. Wiliam Goodin at Hartford on Connecticut.
[*Address in the handwriting of John Winthrop, jun.*]

Deare Sir, — Besides this poore testimonie of loue and respects vnto your selfe, I could not satisfie myselfe by a verbal remembrance onely without writing to signifie vnto

* A notice of William Goodwin will be found on p. 44 of this volume, in connection with several of his letters. — Eds.

you the great comfort of the churches in the continuance of your reconciliation hithervnto, with there hopes in the Lord that the Tempter shall not againe render the labour of your Brethren in vaine. Some late report of an agitation at Hartford, concerning a question relating to the Brethren of Wethersfield, occasions some thoughts amongst vs, lest the enemie should thereby stirre vp newe troubles amongst you; but wee encourage our selues that you will bee careful to prevent him in the beginning, and our prayer shall bee (God assisting) accordingly.

Any newes here Capt. Cullick will acquaint you with. Hee hath at times spoaken to me touching some discouragement lying vpon yourselues, the vndertakers of the newe plantation, by reason of the grant of two farmes, &c. Sir, it is very little, rather nothing that I can looke at myselfe, as able to bee of any vse vnto any concerned therein, onely my readynes in the Lord to endeauor to saill as may become me, to remove any difficultie, I suppose you doe not doubt of. Nowe He by whome you haue beene borne from the wombe, beare, carry, and deliuer you in your old age. Wee both affectionately and respectiuely salute you both; pray for, in Christ Jesus,

Yours euer, JOHN NORTON.

BOSTON, 1. 26. 1660.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Norton, teacher of Boston, to Mr. Goodin."

LETTERS OF JOHN HAYNES.*

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured ffreind Jno. Winthropp, Esqu. att Pequoit: these bee dd.

Sir, — I received yours by Tho: Stanton. That you mention concerninge Tho: Newton, thus much for answear. Although wee are easily sencible of your exigents in the thing you exspresse, & should as readily have condiscended to your desires, were the case grantable by the lawe of God or men, but such is the deplored condicion the party has plundged himselfe into, that renders him vtterly incapable of baile, being accused of a capetall crime, himselfe breaking prison, & resisting the persewers of him, adde much to his guilt. Robin, your fathers Indian, was with vs, & desires in the behalilfe of himselfe & some others sett downe with him, that they may have a convenient place assighned them wher the English shall apoint, & they will attend order in it, only requests that they may have, this planting time now to come, parte of the ould broke vpp ground, to vse, for this yeare, vntill they can fitt the other place & ground for vse; this hee sayes, yourselves are willinge withall: if soe, wee alsoe aproove of it. My poore distressed wife is yett alive, but this month or more was seldom free from her most violent fitts, only this 2 or 3 dayes at present is free from them. Wee both

* A brief notice of John Haynes, Governor of Massachusetts and Connecticut, may be seen in volume six of the present series of these Collections, p. 354, prefixed to his letters. — Eds.

present our loves to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrop, & Mrs. Lake, rest & remaine

Your loving ffreind, Jo: Haynes.

Hartfd. this 27th the 11th mo: 1649.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines about Tho. Nuton."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Sir, — I understand by Mr. Blinman you are safely retvrned to your owne habitacion, which I am gladd to heare. My wife is att present free from her ffitts, otherwise in state much as when you were heere. Our desires remaine the same for seeking out for remedy in her crasey condicion (the Lord prospering endeavours,) & to that end thinke to come downe (in time convenient) to your plantation, only att present this chimera seemes to obstruct, wherin wee crave your advice. Soe it is, as I suppose you have in parte heard already, that my wife for this ten weekes has not hadd the course & custom of woemen vppon her, which formerly failed not, except with child; own therfore this causes the quere & doubt, whether a way & course of phisicke may bee vsed to one in such a case, especially whether the same phisicke may bee administred safely, which your selfe intended, & might best sute the present aparent distempere. I should ernestly desire, by the first opportunity, a word from you in answeare heerunto. Wee both salute your selfe, Mrs. Winthropp, & Mrs. Lake, Mr. Blinman & his, & rest

Your loving ffrinds, Jo: Haynes.

Hartf., this 7th of the 6th mo: 1651.

It is desired that you would please to keepe this secrett, because wee know not as yett how this may be [*illegible.*]

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected frind, Jno. Winthropp, Esq. att his howse att Pequoit, these bee dd.

Sir, — Your last I received by Jno. Gallopp. Your free exspressions of readines to minister reliefe (the Lord prospering endeavours,) towards my distressed yoakefellow, much oblidges mee, &c. What to resolve vppon concerning my sending of her to your parts now, (as the case stands) I am as yett at a losse, only purpose, desire, & shall waite, vntill neare the time towards winter, when my thoughts were formerly to haue sent her. It may (before that time) please the Lord to cleare vpp the way to vs, by somme chandge, that may happen, various from that thinges are att present; for her condicion now is much the same as when your selfe was heere, litle alteracion of her fitts apearing, att times. If ther could bee any thing administred safely att such a distance, that might any way abate the violence of her fitts, in case the other thing formerly mentioned remaine, that should hinder the comming downe to you vntill that past, & fitter season for her taking such phisicke as might in reason hitt the humor that causes her distemper, without feare of preiudice in other respects, as now it is with her, I should bee right glad to vnderstand it. Noe more att present, only our kindest remembrannces to your selfe, Mrs. Winthropp, Mrs. Lake, Mr. Blinmann & his, with many thankes for your courtesies.

Your vnfeighned ffrind, Jo: Haynes:

Hartf. this 27th of the 6th mo: 1651.

My wife sends Mrs. Winthrop a few aples, for a token, with this by Jno. Gallopp.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Sir, — The prisoner you sent vpp, together with the examinacions, &c., came safely. Hee is committed for the present, vntill further order, & I am gladd to heare of yours & Mr. Blinmans safe retorne from the Baye. My wives present condicion renders her altogether incapable of cominng downe to your parts this winter, for soe it is, what wee formerly conceited probable is now palpably manifest, she prooves with child, & is now quicke &c., & since that intermission of her violent fitts & groaning noise, only remaines somme litle motion of her body, but full of paine all over her, especially her right side, insomuch that she cannot turne herselfe in her bedd without other help; & about 3 weekes has had a kind of burninge feaver one her, mostly in afternoones, her water very high colourcd, with much weaknes, only at present the burning is well abated. She has alsoe a short cough, breaths shorte, stuffed at the stomache, but rayses not ought; very troublesome it is. If your selfe please to commend any safe direccion to her, that she might in this case attend, or any ointment for her painfull side, wee should bee thankfull. Noe more at present, but our kindest saluts to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, Mr. Blinman, &c., desirous to heare from you by the first oportunity, rest

Your assured ffrind to his power,

Jo: Haynes:

Hartf. this 19th of 9br, 1651.

My wife has paine alsoe on her left side, although the most is one the right side, wher the incision was. Her illnesse & the latenesse of the yeare will stopp, I feare, my comminge downe to you vntill the springe.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Worthy Sir, — I received your last, together with the cordiall you sent, & shall carefully preserve it vntill a time of neede, acçording to the rariety therof. You very much oblidge mee, & for your tender care & helpefulnes to my poore distressed yoakefellow, your readines heerin emboldens mee to frequent adresse, as occasion presents & neede requires. I blesse the Lord her violent fitts are but seldomm, only heate and colour remaines as formerly hinted; in the afternoone, presently after her eatinge, her cough is abated, & her selfe able to sitt vpp in a chaire at night for three or fower howres, befor she goes to rest, which for the most parte is pretty tolerable, &c. For the party you mention, overtaken with excessive drinkinge, I knowe nothinge but the thing may bee respited vntill my comming downe to your parts in the springe, (the Lord giving leave). I shall adde noe more att present, only our thankfulnes & respects to your selfe & Mrs. Winthropp, together with our remembrance to Mrs. Lake, Mr. Blinman & his, & rest

Your assured ffrind, Jo: Haynes.*

Hartf. this 10th of the 11th mo: 1651.

I received a word from Jacob Waterhowse, concerning the ffine laid one him, &c. You may please to acquaint the Constable that hee may suspend his *distringas* for it at present, vntill that bee examined, which hee pretends, of the Countries being in his debt, &c.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

---

* The preceding and other letters, relating almost entirely to the sickness of Haynes's second wife, Mabel Harlakenden, and not referring to public affairs, would not be printed in this collection, but for the information they give as to the condition of medical practice in the Colonies. — Eds.

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected ffrind, Mr. Jno. Winthropp, Esq: att his howse in Pequoit, these bee dd.

Sir, — I received yours by this Indian, & shall impart the contents to the Commissioners, which indeed I have in parte done already. Ninecrafts cariadge (if trew as related) will doubtlesse bee very ill resented by you. I could wish you would give him to vnderstand thus much. It might hapily in time prevent further trouble that may befall him. Hadd I time to expatiate, cóuld willingly give you account what newes from England, &c, that came to hand, it being a litle history, rather than a lettre, the cheife observable occurences for two yeares past. You shall have sight of it att my comming to you, which wilbe at the end of harvest; only briefly thus much att present: Scotland is in a manner wholly reduced; the Parl: Army ther have peirced thorough the country, soe far as the Orcades Ilands, & taken them alsoe, only Argile & 2 or 3 other lords stood out vntill of late, but now are all come in, &, by ther Deputies, subscribed to the vnion: for all the rest of the counties by ther Deputies peticioned for an vnion with Engl: & it is granted by the Committe that the Parliament sent; soe that all ther owne lawes & customes are made null, & they are become one Commonwealth with (E) & governed by its lawes. They are to have Representatives sitt in the howse of parliament in (E:) when & as many as the howse shall order, & thinke meete. Ireland alsoe is wholly reduced. Limbricke & Galloway taken inn; not one Towne of strenght left in the enemies hands, nor any army of thers apearinge, only the Tories in the north parts, which are a company of theeves, that live in mounteines & boggs, held it for a time, but of late they have alsoe peticioned for free leave to depart the kingdom, &c. The Hollander in his treaty

for peace with vs, seemed to delay ther progresse, casting ther eye one the Ffrench affaires, whether the king & Condy would accord, if soe, it was thought they would breake with vs; for nothing but necessity causes them to comply; but my last from my sonne, in E: dated the 11th of May, gives the treaty as very hopefull of progresse; for wheras they had imbarqued our shipps vppon the Councell of States answeare to ther Articles, sett them att liberty againe. It seemes ther is clashing in (E) betweene the grandees of the new ruling party. Ther was a Catechise lately in print ther, that denied the divinity of Christ, yett ther was motions in the howse, by some, to have it lycenced by authority. Cromwell mainly oposed, & at last it was voted to bee burnt, which causes much discontent of somme, & not without some fruits of it, unmeete to relate in this waye of intelligence. I have given you a litle tast and abridgment of thinges. My respects presented to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, Mr. Blinman, & shall say noe more, but request you to reade that I am

Your assured ffrind & servant,

Jo: Haynes.

Hartf. this 3d day of the weeke, 1652.

Collonell Cooke, that went from Cambridge in the Bay into Ireland, is slaine by a party of the Tories, as hee was traveiling to Dubleine.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected ffrind, Jno. Winthropp, Esqr. att his howse in Pequoit, these bee dd.

Kind Sir, — My wife safely arrived att my howse befor the Saboth, the last day of the weeke. She came from Mattabeseck by land, one parte of the way, aboute 3 mile by carriage, the rest of the way vppon horse backe, some-

what wearied with her jorney, yett (I blesse the Lord) free from her fitts, ever since she came, only daily she takes of the powders you gave her, finding her fitts workinge about her, & therfore feares they will soone bee done, especially that kind of powder which is to prevent her ffitts; craves alsoe (if she may not bee overbould), further supply of the same. She was att the meetinge in the fforenoone, last Lords Day (which caused wonderment to many that sawe her, & knew former weaknesses); she is able to goe about howse, all the day, as occasion requires. I would hope she still gathers strenght, only complaines much of her side & head. Thus it pleases our wonderworkinge God, with his blessinge vppon the meanes & your endeavours, to doe great thinges for vs, filling our hartes with gladnes & thanksgiving, & our mouthes with praise to the God of all our good. Mr. Michell, pastour of the church att Cambridge, came to our towne above a weeke since; wee, enquiringe after the wellfare of our ffrinds in the Bay, vnderstand by him, that the former calamity of the fluxe & vomiting breakes out sudely of late in severall townes ther, & some have sodeinly dyed of it, & amongst the rest (which I am sorry to relate) the Lord hath taken away your brother Mr. Adam Winthropp,* who lay sicke but 3 dayes, before hee went to his perpetuall rest. Mr. Deane Winthrop is alsoe ill of the same disease. The Lord helpe you to beare your losse, (for may hee not doe with his owne what hee please?) in moderating your sorrowes, & cause you withall to reioyce in his name. Noe more at present, but our loves & service presented to your selfe & Mrs. Winthrop, with many thankes for your often kindnes & care towards my deare wife, & to reade that I am

Your assured loving ffrind, Jo: Haynes.

Hartf. this 12th of the 7th mo: 1652.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

* Mr. Savage says that he died August 24th of this year. — Eds.

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Kind Sir, — Wee are in good hopes of your safe retorne to your owne home from the Baye before this comes att you, as alsoe that you will please to make one voiadg into our parts yet before winter. I heard you had a purpose to come vpp with your sonnes to Mr. Ffitch, & was glad of that oportunity to speake with you, hoping then to see you at my howse, as the place of your residence the time you abide amongst vs. You shalbe kindly welcome. My wife continewes, (I blesse the Lord) still free from her violent ffitts & motions, only her feares are more then a litle of ther returne, for shee feeles them often working inwardly about her, & soe long as her preventing phisicke (I mean that powder) lasted, she alwaies at those times tooke of it, & sencibly perceived it stopped them, but that is all spent, & soe is all the rest almost, both drinke & powders. I am bould therefore to crave, in her behaulfe, new & fresh supplies in that kind, by the first oportunity. Ther went about a common disease of cowlds & coughs amongst vs, & she caught it, which wee fear was one cause of an ill effect, namely, her starting for three or fower nights, as alsoe another cause might bee, her courses formerly stoping, &, these two last months have brake downe, the last month but moderatly, this month in great aboundance. She finds a paine in her left legg, and burninge working vpp all that parte of her body one that side, to her head. She takes of her diett drinke dayly, except at those times, & hath alsoe taken of the working powder 3 or 4 times, & it hath wrought very kindly alwaies, both causing vomiting & purdginge. The last time she tooke it, it freed her both of her cough & cowld. I make bould thus to acquaint you with her state, as well knowing your

willing readines to minister what releife you can (the Lord still blessing endeavours,) (for which I am exceedingly obligded,) & what I cannot recompence, I hope himselfe will score one with you. Thus desiringe to heare from you & of you, our service of love & respect presented to you, Mrs Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, & Mr. Blinman, &c., I rest Yours much oblidged,

Jo: Haynes:

Hartf., this 28th of 8br 1652.

I heare that Mr. Blinman is somewhat vnsetled in his spirrit, by reason of somme affronts, by ill disposed persons ther. I am sorry to heare it, but hope hee will not offer to pluck himselfe from you or vs (by engadging himselfe elswher) without consulting Magistrats & Elders heere; for the Court have done that for helpe to the place for your, his, & the Churches sake, that I am confident would not otherwise have beene granted.

Alsoe my wife is at times troubled with fainting fitts. I desire your advice whether she might not take of red cowes milke as formerly she did of goates milke. Those papers that were to make the vomiting drinke are neare spent, but my wife feares she hath not the right way of compounding it, for she doth not find it worke in that manner to cause vomiting, as at Pequoit. A word for better direction.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his verry good ffrind Jno. Winthropp, Esq: att Pequoit, these bee dd.

Sir, — Since your departure from vs, it hath pleased the Lord to visite my wife with a soare paine one her

backe, betweene her shoulders, streaming downe her left arme, much as it was when Mr. Russell was heere. If you could direct to any plaisters or the like, that might minister ease to her, I should bee thankfull for the same. Bee pleased to send it by Mr. Lord. Wee have noe salletoile (?) as yett, but wee heare ther is somme comminge by a vessell that wee exspect. I hope you are safely arrived, & found all well at your home. Wee have noe further exspresses from the Commissioners then what you know, only from Newhaven wee have heard severall rumors that the Dutch Governour have hired many Indians betweene Hudsons River & Delaware to bee assistant to him, & to assault the English ; how trew, I know not, but they seeme to give somme creditt to it. I hope your men are in readines, that were apointed for service, in case ther should bee any going forth. Not else to trouble you att present, but hearty comendacions to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, Mr. Blinman. I rest

Your loving ffrind, Jo: Haynes.

Hartf. this 31th of the 3d mo: 1653.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much respected ffrind, Jno: Winthrop, Esq: these bee dd.

The 24th of the 5th mo : 1653.

Worthy Sir, — Yours I received by this Indian, wherin you seeme to desire to know if any newes from (E), & soe it is that last night came company from the Bay, with lettres, & I am right glad of this oportunity to give you to vnderstand the some in breife of what wee heare, namely this. Ther are 3 ships come into the Baye, the first by the way of Ireland, that brought 90 passendgers for servants ;

the 2d, one of Charlestown is master; the 3rd, Mr. Addington, who sett saile the 17th of May: who bringe newes from (E.) of astonishing nature: take it thus. The Parliament of England & Councell of State are both disolved, by whom & the manner this. The Lord Cromwell Generall went to the howse & asked the Speaker & Bradshaw by what power they sate ther. They answeared by the same power that he woare his sword. Hee replied, they should know they did not, and said they should sitt noe longer; demanding an acompt of the vast sommes of mony they had received of the Commons. They said the matter was of great consequence, & they would give him acompt in tenn dayes. Hee said noe; they had sate too long already (& might now take ther ease,) for ther inriching themselves & impoverishing the Commoners: & then seazed vppon all the Records. Immediatly Lambert, Leivetenant Generall, & Hareson, Maior Generall (for they two were with him) tooke the Speaker Lenthall by the hands, lift him out of the chaire, and ledd him out of the howse, & commanded the rest to depart, which fortwith was obeied, and the Generall tooke the keyes and locked the doore. Within 48 howres this new Governement was sett vpp & acted in full power. Admirall Deane & Monke, with all ther capteines, sent a Declaration, that they would serve the Commonwealth vnder this new governement, & would alsoe adventure ther lives against ther common enemies. In ther disolvinge the Parliament, they declared that ther were some amongst them truly godly, and sought not themselves, but the good of the Commonwealth, others were malignant, a 3d party negligent; soe that these that sought the good of the Commonwealth were interupted by the many voates of the rest. Ther is a very strict course taken for exhawsting great sommes of mony from severall of the Parliament men, Treasorers & other officers of the State. Somme give this reason for this sodeine chandge, that the Generall acquainting severall parliament

men with this desighne, they disrelish it (& although secrecy and indemnity was by them promised) yet discover all to the howse; whervppon they speedily that day intended to passe an act to perpetuate ther sittinge, notwithstanding ther many promises to the contrary, for giving way to a new Representative; and withall had formerly commanded the Generall to draw vpp his fforces & march for Scotland (the highlanders being vpp ther); hee sents ther purpose, to convey him farr of, & then a new army should have bine raysed, to ateine ther owne purpose, &c.; but hee seemes to atend ther commands, drawes vpp his forces att Hownslow Heath presently, sends many of them into the citty to guard it, & then goes to the Parliament: & others say this, that the cries of the oppressed perveiled much with him, for ther were many ladies & gentlew: had lent great sommes of mony to the Parliament, for setting out the fleete, that came to require it againe according to promise, but was denied by the howse. Alsoe that many widowes that lost their husbands in the maritime & land service, came to peticion for their husbands areares & that was alsoe reiected, besids many peticions, the country & army joyninge, for the easinge the Commons of those heavy taxes, &c., & for acompte from those that had received the Commons monies. They had only pleasant words, but noe redresse. These thinges, say they, hastned the declaracion of that ould principle (*Salus populi suprema lex*), &c. Ther is report alsoe of a strandge vision att Ffranckford in Germany the last winter. Ther was seene a proper man & the sighne of the crosse, hee hanginge vppon it, with many wounds, acompanied with innvmerable Angels. A godly minister aproaching to veiwe the sight, towld the people: It was only the prince of the ayre came to delude them, & hee was presently smitten dumbe. That the Jewes from Hungaria haue sent to England for safe convoy for ther great Rabbi Abraham to come thither to consult, &c., before ther next meeting, & it is granted. Ther is relation

alsoe of the severall fights with the Hollander, but that is too lardge, & I shall therfore issew at present, &c.

My sonne Cooke writt to me, that came last night, that hee had procured an able servant, a widow woman of about forty, came from Ireland, but was brought vpp with the English, & cann speake English: He commends her highly for her care, paines & skill in dayry, washing & the like. The tearmes these: eight pounds is to bee paid to Mr. Oliver in corne or beefe, in October next, her time fower yeares. I knowing your neede, more than my owne, at present, have advised him to send her vpp to you, not doubting but you would gladly accept her & the tearmes.

Wee commend our loves to you, Mrs. Winthrop, Mrs. Lake, & Mr. Blinman. My wives working phisick is all spent. Wee crave new supply. The last she tooke was borowed, & it wrought not: might she not therfore safely take a greater quantity at a time? A word ther, if you please. I shall say noe more at present, but rest

Your assured ffrind, Jo: Haynes.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

JOHN HAYNES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much honoured ffrind, Jno. Winthrop, Esq. att his howse in Pequoit, these bee dd.

Sir, — I received the powder you last sent, together with your kind token, a fatt goate, for which I retorne harty thankes. Thus it pleases you still to lade mee with your kindnes, my selfe too short and awanting for requitall. If this Irish woman is come vpp to you (your selfe befor being supplied) I pray lett her by the first oportunity bee conveied to vs, for I did soe order it, hoping to have pleasured, not to burthen you. Mr. Eaton writt lately to Capteine Cullicke that the English have hadd another fight

at sea with the Hollander, (besids what wee had formerly,) & have obteined another glorious victory over them. Thus it pleases God to goe out with our nation to vindicate our iust quarrell. Your youngest sonne, (Mr. Waite) hath bine somewhat ill of late complaininge of a paine in his belly, & withall lookes somewhat heavy eyed, not soe ready to stir vpp & downe as formerly, yett keepes not his bedd, but rises dayly, & seemes for the most parte to have a pretty good stomache to his meate; only wee judge it best, for the while, that hee keepe his chamber. Wee gave him wormeseed, (as supposing it might bee wormes, by reason this is the time of yeare for fruite, & youth will hardly bee restreined wher ther is plenty,) I thinke, vppon it Mr Ffitch said hee voided some wormes, but in regard the paine in his belly followed him still at times, wee gave him Cardis,(?) & that, wee hope, did him somme good. This daye wee thinke to give him two graines & a haulfe of your powder, in case hee still remaines ill. Wee conceive yourselfe would doe the like if you were present, & somme of vs have bine ill much in like manner, & these thinges were present helpe to them (the Lord blessinge the meanes) which caused vs thus to act. Mr. Ffitch would doe nothing without my advice & concurrence with him, & my skill is litle or nothinge, only I did as for my owne, & would in truth (in your absence) take the like naturall care, if in my power to doe ought that waye. I hope ther is not the least daundger, yett I could not but acquaint you with it, because it may please God to direct you to advise for the best, & to send something vsefull for him in that case.

My wife continewes much as formerly: she took the yellow powder twise, & only vomited it vp againe, & it wrought noe other or more; alsoe, since J. Gallop was heere, she tooke the working powder, 2 graines, but it wrought not at all, insomuch that she at times is sicke at her stomache; yet her apetite better then formerly.

I have not further to imparte att present, only our

respects to yourselfe & Mrs. Winthrop, with our considera-cions to Mrs. Lake, [and] Mr. Blinman, rest

Your assured loving ffrind, Jo: HAYNES:

HARTFD. this 14th of the 6th mo: 1653.

Your sonne became ill vppon Thursday last weeke, & soe hath continewed at times ever since.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Haines."

LETTERS OF THEOPHILUS EATON.*

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his Honoured friend Mr. John Winthrop, at his house in Pequott, dd.

Sir,— Yours of the 4th I have this day received, wherein from Vncus you informe what cruell usage a Pequott Indian findes from Ninigrett, and what danger he is in. I feare the Niantique Sachem, as other Indians of his ranke, are apt to be injurious, but I understand not their quarrells, and have cause to question whether Ninigrett will respect the advice of a single Commissioner, but if any message, fit for me to send, might save an innocent Pequotts life, I could be content you used my name wth your owne therein. Vncus told me he would meete the Commissioners at Plimouth, the 2d of September; he may then informe more satisfyingly, and receive their answer; but if the Pequotts thinke the tribute justly due, long forborne, and lately with much moderation required, should ingage the Colonyes to protect them in their quarrells and miscariages, one with, and against another, they mistake, and will (I conceive) be otherwise informed by the Commissioners. With my best respects, I rest

Your loving friend

Theoph: Eaton.

Newhaven, August 5th, 1652.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Eaton."

* A brief notice of Eaton is given in 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., vi. 344; where may be found other letters of his.— Eds.

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Honoured Sir, — Having heard by many how our good God hath blessed your indeavours, and lately to Mrs. Bishopp, and vnderstanding Mr. Davenport, our highly esteemed & duely reverenced pastour hath sent this bearer, Jno. Thomas, with a horse, desiring, if your occasions will give way, you would be pleased to give him a vissit at New Haven, and advise for recovery of his health, if the Lord see good; I cannot but joyne in the suite, earnestly intreating that if you can order patients, & settle occasions, you would presently make a[*torn*]hether. I am assured of your constant readines to improve any ability God hath given you for the good of others; but in any advice or help to Mr. Davenport, you shall doe good to many. I hope I neede not inlarge, but with due respects to your self, yours, Mr. Blindman, & other friends, in hast, rest,

Your loving friend, Theoph: Eaton.

New haven, July 5, 1654.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Eaton."

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured friend, John Winthropp, Esqur, at his house in Pequott, dd.

Honoured Sir, — Since your departure, both our teaching officers have expressed their purpose of removing from these parts, which is like to prove a sad affliction, if not the breaking of this church. Mr. Davenports ground is to preserve his life, which we all know, the 6th Comandment requires every man by all due meanes to attend, but what his disease is, whi it should be conceived curable in

England,* and not here, what necessary physicall materialls may not some way or other, in their strength and vertue, be brought from thence hither, we understand not.

This bearer, a member of our church, and with us, much interrested in the case, hath no other buisnes, but to advise with your self. God hath made you an instrument of much good to many, and, I am assured, you looke on him, as a publick blessing to this place and these parts. What help you can afforde him, will redound to the good of many. I neede not inlarge, well knowing your readines to improve your tallents, and that you wilbe tender of our condition.

I heare by Henry Lines, you neede some workemen for your house. If we might be of any use to you therein, we should gladly further your conveniency. With my due respects, &c. in hast, I rest

Yours in all service of love,

THEOPH: EATON.

NEW HAVEN, July 24th, 1654.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Governour of New-haven, about Mr. Davenport."

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much honoured friend, John Winthropp, Esqur. at his house in Pequott plantation, dd.

HONOURED SIR, — In my last, September 28th, I declared the desire of Newhaven church and towne, to enjoy you, and the tallents our good God hath intrusted you with. I also added my apprehensions of the same desire, in the neighbouring plantations. Our Generall Court are here now mett, upon other publick occasions, and in their name I am now ordered to give yow a further invitation, so that

* It appears by this, that Mr. Davenport had intended to return to England about this time. If such was his plan, it was never carried into effect. — EDS.

your coming wilbe acceptable to the Jurisdiction. Upon your resolution herein, I shall put forth the utmost of my indeavours, both for a fitt vessell, and house. In hast I rest Yours in all service of love,

THEOPH: EATON.

NEWHAVEN, October 4th, 1654.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Governour Eaton."

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

. . . . . John . . . . . s house in . . . . . tation dd.

HONOURED SIR, — I hope you have received my last letter, dated the beginning of this month, and the latter end of the last, and should be glad to heare of your purpose to satisfie the expectation & desires of many in these parts. I am assured you have heard of our thoughts to send over my daughter Hopkins in the ffleete now hastening their returne. Vpon conferrence with our Reverend pastour, Mr. Davenport, this day, he shewed me a short passage in one of your letters, importing some danger to her in a winter voyage. I therefore send this Indian, desiring your serious advice therein. My son* wrote for her by the ffleete in Ffebruary, and againe in June last. I know he much desires her, but his tender love would not expose her to danger. Major Sedgwick sends a vessell for her, and Captaine Cullick† hath made some provissions, and from hence we shall adde, what we conceive may be for her comfort; but whether her condition may beare the cold and stormes of such a voyage I understand not, but intreate your judgment in the case. Without weighty grounds I would not faile his expectation, nor adde to his affliction by increasing her distemper. Let me

---

* See 4 Massachusetts Historical Collections, vi. 325. — EDS.

† John Cullick, of Hartford and Boston. — EDS.

also intreate your judgment, whether in an ordinary way of providence, by meanes here to be attayned, there be hope of her recovery; which may be a motive to detayne her this winter, & incourage a tryall, and among other considerations, I hope an argument to hasten you to us, which would be very acceptable to very many. With our due respects to your self, and yours, I rest

Yours in all service of love,

THEOPH: EATON.

NEWHAVEN, Octobr $\frac{16}{17}$th, 1654.

I desire you to hasten back the Indian, because we expect the vessell suddenly.

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured friend John Winthrop, Esquire, at his house in Pequott, dd.

HONOURED SIR, — Yours of the 16th of January I received a fortnight since, by this Indian, who came from Concord. I thanke you for the intelligence you sent me, which was more full then what we had from Ffairfeild, where Captaine More put in, but since we have received letters from England, with some printed weekely informations. I suppose your self, by letters, either from England, or from Boston, may now have more full satisfaction, then you had by the vessells which put in at Pequott I; shall therefore give onely a briefe touch of the last part of the newes, as it comes to us. The Parliament begann to sit the 3d of September, and after they had chose a speaker, &c., they put themselves into a grand Committee, and fell upon a great question, in whom the Legislative power ought to lye; and after some debate, it seemes the greater part of the house, as unsatisfyed, were prepared to vote against the present powęr, the 12th of September,

but that morning many troops of horse appeared early, both at Westminster & in London, the parliament dores were lockt up, and such members as came to attend the service of the house were directed to goe into the Painted Chamber, where the Lord Protector made a speech unto them, which gave such satisfaction that about 200 have since ingaged to owne the present Goverment, settled in a Protector & Parliament, but probably with some alterations, from the tennour of the Instrument published. How farr the Lord Protectour will condescend, I yet heare not, the last of my letters being dated the 15th of September.

My wife with thankefulnes acknowledgeth the good she hath found by following your directions, but doth much desire your presence here, as soone as the season, & your occasions will permitt, both in refference to my daughter Hopkins, and my daughter Hannah, who hath bin excercised these 4 or 5 dayes with vapours rising (as we conceive) out of her stomack into her head, hindering both her sleepe & appetite to meate, and apt to put her into fainting fitts, whether from winde, or the mother, or from what other cause, I cannot informe. In hast, with my due respects to your self & Mrs. Winthrop, I rest,

Yours in all service of love,

THEOPH: EATON.

NEWHAVEN, Ffebr. 3d, 1654.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Governour Eaton."

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured friend, John Winthropp, Esqur. at his house in Pequott, dd.

HONOURED SIR, — The affections and desires of these plantations are towards you, as was more fully exprest

when you were last with us. Our Townes men (in particuler) have desired me to signifie, that if our wise and gracious God incline your spirits to settle here,* they shall receive it as a pledg of favour, and the time now (at least) hastening, wherein you purposed to returne, and to administer such further help as God shall inable you to some here, who both neede and desire it, wherein we have all a speciall eye to our Reverend pastour, Mr. Davenport, and my self and wife joyne with him, our daughter Hopkins, to whom it may please the Lord to make you an instrument of much good. Besides other things you left for her, the 9th of this month, she tooke the first potion of purging phisick, which I heare wrought well. Our townes men have sent this bearer, brother Moulthrop, to attend you and yours hether, but if any thing, by them unthought of, should hinder your coming so soone, and that his family occasions require his returne; upon notice of your minde, we purpose either to send him, or some other to assist you and Mrs. Winthropp in your journey, when your self shall appointe. With our due respects to your self and her, I rest,

Yours in all service of love,

THEOPH: EATON.

NEWHAVEN, Aprill 12th, 1655.

---

* Reference is made, on p. 72, to the frequent desire expressed on the part of the citizens of New Haven, that Winthrop should take up his residence among them. Mr. Davenport and Gov. Eaton were very urgent; one reason being that Winthrop's medical knowledge and skill were in great requisition there. In a former volume of these Collections is a letter from Davenport to Winthrop, dated Nov. 22, 1655, in which the latter is informed that his house at New Haven is all furnished, and every thing made ready for his reception; but from Eaton's last letter to him in this volume, of Jan. 4, 1655–6, he appears to be still residing at Pequot (New London). He probably removed to New Haven sometime during this year, and in 1657, after having been chosen Governor, he took up his residence in Hartford. See p. 84, *note*. The Rev. Leonard Bacon in his "Historical Discourses," pp. 325, 326, states that Winthrop's house in New Haven was "on the west side of State Street, near where it is now intersected by Court Street. The town bought that house for his accommodation, offering it to him as a gratuity. He refused to come under any such obligation as would be imposed by his acceptance of such a gift." Accordingly, he bought of the town the house and lot, "with all the accommodations thereto belonging," for £100, to be paid for in goats upon "Fisher's Island." — EDS.

My daughter Hopkins hath kept her bed since she tooke her purging phisick, and my wife is in some doubt whether she should give her any more of it, till she have your advice.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Eaton, Governour."

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worshipfull, and his honoured friend, John Winthropp, Esqur, at his house in Pequott, dd.

Honoured Sir, — That afflicting hand which, as I conceive, doth exercise the whole Country, is stretched out here, and over this ffamily in particular. My daughter Eaton was not well when you went hence, but her distemper did sadly increase the 14th of this month. My son sent Edward Preston the 16th, to intreate your presence or counsell, but he returned the next day & informed us that your owne ffamily, or some part of it, were ill, and your self from home. It pleased the wise God to call her to rest yesterday, about noone. She is to be buryed this evening, but my son,* partly with greife, and partly with this distemper, is also cast upon his sick bed. He is taken with this cold & cough, a paine in his right side, he is much stopt in his stomack, and feaverish, hath a payne in his head, is very hott, hath bin bound in his body these two dayes. His payne at present is somewhat removed to his right shoulder, and comes cross his breast, his distemper began, as is conceived, upon his returne from accompanying you, and hath increased much since, but is grown more violent since her death. His sleepe last night was unquiet, full of short broken slumbers, & he vomited 3 or 4 times, and with some streyning, a litle blood was

* His son Samuel, who, with his wife, died during this month. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

mixed. We much desire your presence here, if your family can spare you; if not, such directions, as you judg meete. With our love, and deare respects, I rest,

Your loving friend, THEOPH: EATON.

NEWHAVEN, July 19th. 1655.

This bearer hath [a] horse for his owne ease to Pequott, but for your conveniency back, if you can come, he will attend you on foote.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Eaton, Governour of Newhaven."

THEOPHILUS EATON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured friend John Winthrop, Esqur. at his house in Pequott Plantation, dd.

HONOURED SIR, — Yours of December 26th I received the 29th, and thanke you for your readines to impart any newes you receive. This winter season makes passages from the Massachusetts troublesome and slow, both by land and sea. By Edward Perkins I received a letter from Mr. Rawson, dated November 26th. Capt. Leveret, Mr. Cutting, &c., were not then gone, nor any shipp arived from England. He writes nothing either concerning Mr. Garrets being taken by the Turkes, or concerning St. Domingo.* I hope the former may be a mistake, from Providence, Warwick, or Road Island. The latter I should gladly heare confirmed. Mr. Pell of Ffairfeild and brother East of Milford have bin some weekes expected, and many would be glad to heare of them, though I hope they are safe. My daughter Hopkins hath taken some of her phisick, according to your direction, and it hath wrought kindely. The good Lord, in his time, give the desired

* The writer refers to the expedition against St. Domingo under Admiral Blake, in which Edward Winslow was engaged as commissioner, and during which he died. — EDS.

blessing. My self, wife, and daughter remember our due respects to your self, Mrs. Winthropp, and all yours, desiring much to see you here. In hast, these Indians staying (who report from other Indians, that the great Mohawkes, as some call them, have offered a late injury and affront to the Dutch, at & about Aurania ffort, in plu[n]dering them, taking away by force gunns, powder, shott, coates, &c., but hereof thay can better informe, & you can better understand them.) I rest

Your loving friend, THEOPH: EATON.

NEWHAVEN, January 4th. 1655.

Severall in Newhaven & Brainford are willing to help forward in the Iron worke, but doe much want both incouragement and direction from yourself.

LINES ON THE DEATH OF THEOPHILUS EATON,

BY REV. ABRAHAM PIERSON.*

ON THE HONOURED THEOPHILUS EATON, ESQUIRE, GOVERNOUR OF NEW HAVENS COLONY.

A MAN renowned, a man of note & fame,
Theophilus Eaton, his famous name,
His faith & workes so cleerly shone,
That of ten thousand saints like him scarce one.

* The Rev. Abraham Pierson, the first minister of Southampton, L.I., was born in Yorkshire about 1608; was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was graduated in 1632; and is said to have preached in or near Newark before coming to New England. He was admitted to the Boston Church, Sept. 5, 1640, but settled in Lynn, and the same year removed to Long Island. In 1644, he went with a part of his congregation to Branford, Conn., and became the first minister of that place. He removed to New Jersey in 1667, and was one of the original settlers of Newark, where he died Aug. 9, 1678. A letter from him to John Winthrop, jun., is printed in 3 Massachusetts Historical Collections, x. 69. — *Sprague's Annals; Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

The hurt of youth he tymely did prevent,
Was God's convert; to Christ gave full consent,
The principles he held were strong & cleere,
His greatest, choycest wisedom was God's feare.

His knowledge & wisedom were so profound
That deepest causes he would quickly sound.
Yet councell from others he oft would crave,
The poore opprest he readily would save.

In courage Lion like, and yet a Dove,
Moses like for meeknes, truth, peace & love.
A righteous judge he was, all men can tell,
Exactly to do iustice he lik'd well.

Was diligent his office to fulfill,
He put forth all his strength to do God's will.
He walkt with [God], a saint of high degree,
Like to just Noah, as all did cleerly see.

Like Abram from his country God him cal'd,
Amongst lively stones in's howse him vpwal'd.
As Isaack he was wont to meditate,
Like to David, as in his howse he sate.

Like Jacob, as a prince power he had,
With God & men, his face was seldom sad,
As Joseph a prosperous man he was,
In him the spirit, but all flesh is grasse.

Joshua like strong, & of good courage hee,
A terrour to the vile, they would him flee;
But to the saints he stretched out his hand,
Them he esteem'd the precious of the land.

Caleb like he had another spirit,
Eminent graces he did inheritt,
He follow'd God fully with his whole heart,
With resolution fixt, he fear'd no smart.

As Samu'll for the people he did pray,
In matters of iudgement he shew'd theire way.
Like as Jonathan he did work with God,
In holy paths he duly dayly trod.

As David he was iust, rul'd in God's feare,
To God in holy duties he drew neere;
For wisedom (as Solomon) he was rare,
For the Rule of the people he tooke care.

As Ezekiah had a perfect heart,
He was grave councell ready to impart.
Josiah like, a zealous man was hee,
Humble, tender, each truth desir'd to see.

As Nehemiah, for God's day he prest,
Th' eschewing evill, & a blessed rest;
Incourag'd the ministers of God['s] word,
Carefull, couragious i' th' vse of th' sword.

He sougth the welfare of the country all,
He was a choyce blessing to great & smal.
Like Mordecai al's brethren him esteem'd,
Promover of theire wealth & peace him deem'd.

Like holy Job for patience he excel'd,
His state & family did wisely weild.
He was a loving husband to his wife,
A man of knowledge, lov'd peace, eschew'd strife.

Tender of, as to his children was hee,
Cheifely desired God's people they might be.
His servants can assert his pious care,
For councell & holynes he was rare.

Peace he lov'd, and peace he made 'twixt m[en,]
The peace maker's blessing comes on him then.
Cordiall to his ffriend was he indeed,
A faithfull councellour in all his need.

To each true Church he was a loving ffriend,
The care thereof he did to Christ commend.
I' th' civill state he was our hord of gold,
He wisely did our lawes & orders mould.

In's house of iudgement, mercy he did sing.
In our Courts of iustice he sate as King.
His comely person few could parralell,
The pleasant stories he was wont to tell.

His mem'ry strong, his speech acute and grave.
The pithy maxims he [was] wont to have.
All these sweet ornaments he had of Grace,
Vpon him with beauty did shine God's face.

In all the changes of his life, hee held
The Orthodox truth, th' Hetrodox he queld.
He had a quick passage vp to heaven,
Was well, & sick, and dead in houres seven.

Yet death was not sudden to him, to dy
Hee'd learnt, & was prepar'd i' th' grave to ly.
He thought of these changes before they came,
Was ready for them, & embrac't the same.

God's angels attended his blessed soule,
Convoy'd him to glorie, wherein the roule
Of God's elect, his precious name was found;
There he God's great prayses shall ever sound.

Christ Jesus bid him welcome to his joy,
No kinde of sorrow there shall ere annoy.
His body is at rest, within the grave,
Vnspeakable glorie his soule shall have.

He cleerely sees Christ Jesus cloth'd with flesh,
The angels great & saints with glorie fresh.
Heav'ns beauty bright with strength on him doth shine,
In such estate as never shall decline.

Now church, family, country, all may mourne
Their precious choycest ffriend from them is torne;
To heav'n hes gon, at Christ's right hand he sits,
His ioy is great, his glorious crowne him fits.

Great saint of God, thou art exalted high,
Above th' vnworthy world & cloudy sky,
Thou famous wast on earth, but now exceedes
All mens' conceits in glorious degrees.

Thou wast our chariotts & horsemen eek,
The welfare of God's people thou didst seek.
But now farewell, thou glorious saint on high,
After thé, father, father, wee do cry.

But sith thou'rt gon to rest, & heav'nly ioy,
And canst here no further be our convoy,
We leave thee on the throne at Christ's right hand,
Begging a like man in thy place to stand.

The blest, most holy God doth ever live,
All kinds of needfull guifts to vs to give;
Oh let him double on our Rulers all
The spirit: that their work may never fall.

The lesse power & help from man we have,
The greater assistance from God's let's crave
That his owne will & work may prosper well,
And he from vs a savour sweet may smel.

"Quid magistratum decuit quod defuit illi?
Ingenio, mente et memori, linguaque suavi,
Judicioque animâ sophiæ quis præstitit illi?
Extitit in tantis quam rara modestia donis?
Hunc nostræ nobis noxæ eripuere, futuræ
Quis scit an hæc præeant diræ præsagia cladi?"

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Peirson's Elegie vpon the death of Mr. Eaton."

LETTERS OF THOMAS JAMES.*

THOMAS JAMES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right worshipfull John Winthrop: att his house in Pequot, dd.

Worthy Sir, — My best respects salute you, &c.

The occasion of my writing is upon a request of the Sachim of Montacut,† whose sorrowes & sad condition, I shall not neede, I suppose, to informe you. The thing that he desires me to write to you of is, concerning his great feares he is in, not onely in respect of former taking of his daughter‡ [and] the rest of the captiues, lest they should make them away; but he is in exspectations of further assaults from them. The thing that he earnestly desires is that the wompam which he sent ouer to the Narrohiggansit Sachim, (which he heares is intercepted by Mr. Stanton,) might be sent vnto him with all the speed that may be. He sayth though they should dele deceitfully with him, & still detaine his daughter, with the rest of them, he

* Rev. Thomas James of Easthampton, L.I., son of the minister of the same name in Charlestown, was born in England, and resided with his father for some time in New Haven. He was freeman in 1645; and in 1650 removed to Long Island, where he continued till his death in 1696. He was early engaged in teaching the Indians upon the island, and received for several years an allowance from the Society for propagating the Gospel in New England, in recompense for his labors among them. — *Thompson's Hist. of L.I., second ed.*, i. 316; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† Probably Montauk. The sachem's name was Wyandanck. — *Thompson's L.I., second ed.*, i. 293. — Eds.

‡ The writer refers to the attack of Ninigret on the Long-Island sachem, while he was engaged in celebrating the nuptials of his only daughter, who was among those carried away captive, while the bridegroom, with many others, was slain. "By the exertions of Lion Gardiner, the hapless bride was redeemed, and restored to her afflicted parents at Smith's house," in Narragansett. In acknowledgment of this favor, the noble-minded chief presented to Gardiner "a deed for a part of the territory now comprised in the limits of Smithtown." — *Prime's Hist. of L.I.*, p. 94.; *R.I. Hist. Coll.*, iii. 50, 51; *Thompson's L.I., second ed.*, i. 306, 456. — Eds.

doth not so much care for his money: he would not be wanting (as he sayth) in any meanes wherby he might recouer them; however, he hopes it may be a meanes to preserve them from farther violence, which otherwise his enemies might exercise towards them.

So I rest, Yours to commaund in any office of loue,

THO: JAMES.

EAST HAMTON, Septem: 6:*

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Th: Jeames."

THOMAS JAMES TO THE GOVERNOR AND ASSISTANTS OF CONNECTICUT.

To the Right worshipfull the Governor, Mr. Winthrop, & the Assistants at Southamton,† dd.

HONOURABLE SIRS, — Yours we receiued by the Indian, & most of the towne being abroad in the feilds & woods, they could not be acquainted with the contents of it, till it was late; but, vnderstanding that you were gone to Southamton, were troubled att it, as being frustrated of their exspectation, in seing your faces here; not from a loathnes to come so farre, for they say they can be content to goe 3 tymes so farre vpon any service whereby they may be any way benificiall, or to meete with you, but the matters are of such concernment now to be transacted for the future setlement of vs & ours after vs, that yet the whole towne doe earnestly beseech & humbly request that they may haue your presence here, & therefore, to that end, haue sent their messengers & horses, that you may be accommodated for the journey, which is but short, & the

---

* This letter was probably written in 1654. — EDS.

† This letter may have been written during the visit, in June, 1664, of Winthrop and three of the Assistants (Allyn, Willis, and Young) to Long Island, according to the request of the General Court of Connecticut, "to settle the English plantations on the island under this government." — *Public Records of Conn.*, i. 427; *Thompson's Long Island, second edition*, i. 114. — EDS.

way good: therefore we hope it may not be prejudiciall to our honord Governor. There are severall things of weight to be treated of, & for that concerning the Indians, though the messenger be gone for them, yet one was here since, & desired me, of himselfe, to write that their matters might be heard att Easthamton, for they are neither willing nor able, as he said, to come to Southamton, the Squau Sachem being lame.

So with all humble respects, we rest,

Yours, the Inhabitants of Easthamton.

THO: JAMES, *in name of rest.*

The Indian was here was the Pequot Sachime, husband to the Sanck Squaw.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. James of Easthamton."

THOMAS JAMES TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipful John Winthrop, Governour, Hartford, dd.

EASTHAMPTON, Novem: 25, 1667.

HONOURABLE SIR, — Haueing this oportunity, I make bold to present a few lines to you: my purpose was full to haue seene you before this tyme, & had I known the Commissioners of the Colony mett at Hartford this year, I should haue put forth my vtmost endeavours to haue presented my selfe before you. I used all the meanes I could, in way of enquiry of all I could meete with, where you met this yeare, but could get no information till it was too late. Sir, I receiued a letter from Boston very lately, (viz. the 12d this instant month,) subscribed by your name & Mr. Willis & the rest, mett att Boston last year, bearing date Sept: 12, — 66. When it came to my hands, I was much troubled I had it no sooner; but the fault was in the

messenger by whom it was to be sent, (it seemes) that I had it not sooner. I hope I gaue the President att the Bay full satisfaction for my not writing, & giueing an account of the matters concerning the Indians in season, if it came to his hand, & the rest of you, for this year past. I can say lesse then formerly, in respect of my vnsetlednesse: for I was intended to haue remoued, with severall of my brethren who are gone, as Mr. Bond, & others, who are remoued beyond N. Yorke; who were exceeding desirous to haue me gone with them, & settled a plantation in those parts; & my resolution was once so to haue done, but God, who hath the hearts & ways of all in his own hands, hath ordered it otherwise, so that I am still here. When it came too, the people here by no meanes could be perswaded to be willing to part with me vpon that account, so that I am here still, but, by reason therof, lesse hath beene done then otherwise might haue been; though I haue not been wanting, this yeare, to instruct the Indians, as I haue had opurtunity. I heard from the Governor lately, who desires me to goe on in the worke begun, and he sent me word he hopes I shall want no encouragement in it he can obtaine, though att present he cannot doe as he would in that respect, in regard of the troubles haue beene of late in England; but, as I gaue him to vnderstand, so I say to yourselfe, I hope it is not any outward respects to my selfe shall be the motiue to carry me on; yea, though nothing should be afforded me, yet I shall not be wanting to forward the work, according to the ability & opurtunity God shall put into my hands. I doe not repent me of the labour & pains I haue taken to obtaine that portion of their language I haue, for I am employed from one end of the Island to th' other, about setling matters between English & Indians, & some haue motiond it I might be sworn generall interpreter for the Island, which as yet I haue altogether refused. The work I find too heauy, to attend my ministeriall function amongst this people where

I liue, & to attend the Indian work as I would & ought, to giue a satisfying account to your Honours; but I hope, & I haue good grounds so to thinke, that if God continue life & health, I may, with Gods blessing on endeauors, giue you a better account by the next session, if I can vnderstand where it will be. In your letter was expressed that you were not vnwilling to giue full encouragement, if I attended the work wholly; this I shall consider of. I was ouer the maine last summer; some frends were earnest with me about a remoueall to that side, about Fairfeild, & to asist in the ministry there, & to bestow part of my tyme amongst the Indians, & the rather, because Mr. Peirson was leauing your parts. I was not altogether auerse to the motion: I told them they might speak with your Honour about it, & send me word back, but I heard nothing from them since. I should rejoyce much if God so ordered it I might liue vnder your goverment againe, but our tymes are in Gods hand. Sir, if I could vnderstand when your residence would be att N. London, I shall, if God afford oppurtunity, come ouer to you. So with my humble service to you & yours, thanking you for all former kindnesse & respect to me, I rest

Your humble servant, THO: JAMES.

Sir, I commend my best respects & service to Mr. [Will]is, & to any other of the Commissioners, as you haue opurtunity, & to Mr. Allen, senior.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Janes [*sic*] of East Hamton, rec. Dec: 25: 1667."

LETTERS OF JOHN DAVENPORT.*

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured freind John Winthrop, Esq. these present in Pequot.

Honoured Sir, — I thanck you for your speedy answer of my last by the returne of your Indian. Brother Lynde advised me not to pay him, but to leave it to you to satisfye him; saying that you could better treate and agree with them then I can. I cannot well satisfye my selfe in following this counsail, unles you will put both this & all other charges that any way befall, upon occasion of my concernments, upon myne accompt; in hope & expectation whereof I am glad that you have such a messenger at your command, by whom I may heare from you, as my case may require. Since the change of the season, I find that as it growes cooler, my spirits are more at liberty, & returne nearer towards former strength; but the cause of my weakening still remaines as before. Sir, not knowing when I shall have an opportunity of sending to the Baye, & hearing that a vessel is bound from Milford to Boston, in

* John Davenport, one of the "four famous Johns" commemorated by Mather, with Cotton, Norton, and Wilson, was born in Coventry, in 1597; entered Merton College, Oxford, in 1613; and, after two years, removed to Magdalen, where he received the degree of B.D. in 1625. After leaving Oxford, he was preacher at St. Stephen's, Coleman Street, London. Being complained of, in 1633, for nonconformity, he went to Amsterdam. He came to New England in 1637, with Eaton and Hopkins, arriving at Boston 26th June; and, the next year, was one of the settlers of New Haven. Here he continued for nearly thirty years, when he removed to Boston; and was installed over the first church in December, 1668. He died 15th March, 1670. Several of his letters to Winthrop are printed in the ninth and tenth volumes of the third series of these Collections, some of which had previously appeared in the appendix to Bacon's "Thirteen Historical Discourses." — *Mather's Johannes in Eremo; Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

hopes that it may touch at Pequot, I have made bold to send the inclosed unto you unsealed, that you may read it, and explaine, or add, or put out what you please. Seing in yours to me the quantity of saffron, licquorish, & anniseeds is not mentioned, nor is it declared that the rest of the particulars, besides corall & pearle, are not to be had at Mr. Davis, if they cannot be procured at the shipps, my purpose is to wright unto London by the 1st opportunity, before the departure of this fleete, for the things you are pleased to mention. But I much doubt that we shall not receive them in the beginning of the spring, for shipps seldom come to Boston till May. But I wayte upon God, &, *eo nomine*, shall not neglect any meanes, in using whereof I may serve his providence, with hope & expectacion of his blessing, through Jesus Christ. Dr. Choyse (?) hath none of the bookes mentioned in your note. He is now upon a voyadge for Virginia, with Mr. Allerton. Sir, I earnestly looked over your letter for some word of incouragement to expect your wintring with us, at least. Be pleased to declare your purpose, that a convenient house may be ready for your reception & intertainment, as well as our hearts are. I was sorry for a passage in your postscript, that you doe wholly decline & resolve against transportacion without charge to yourselfe, seing it is but æquall that what is done for our benefit, should be without charge to you, & the contrary is not æquall. You may be pleased to choose a vessel, to your owne content, & to agree for it, if you have any at hand, but let it be upon us to pay for it, or, if you still resolve against that, let that be done which will be to your owne contentment, onely, if you cannot accomodate yourselfe with a vessel there, let not that hinder your coming to us, but let us have notice of your mind, that we may provide & send one for you seasonably. I am sorry for the continuance of the agues with you. The Lord Jesus rebuke them, & restore health to the plantacions. I heare Mr. Stones ague hath left him. Blessed be God. Present

my service & my wifes to Mrs. Winthrop & Mrs. Lake. The Lord Jesus dwell with you in peace & loving kindnes! In whom I rest Your obliged freind,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, this 27th of the 7th m. 1654.

The messenger is more slow to returne then I expected, as the date will shew; but I think he stayed for brother Lynde. If the pinnase from Milford be gone, be pleased to speed away the inclosed to Boston by the 1st opportunity, by land or sea.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrope, Esqr. Governour of Connectacut Colonie, these present in Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — Though my spirit is much streightned & indisposed for wrighting letters, by that late dreadfull stroake upon us, from the hand of the Most High, in the loss of our incomparable Governour * & my faithfull freind, under which we still bleed, and, I feare, unto the death of our politique body; unles God be pleased to shew himselfe in the mount, above all that we can aske or thinck; yet I willingly take this sad occasion to salute your selfe, and Mrs. Winthrope, respectfully & affectionately, in the Lord, in boath our names, who long to see your face, in your best season.

The inclosed, whereunto this serveth for a cover, will shew you what the case & desire of brother & sister Herrymans is. With them I also joyne my humb[l]e request, that you will be pleased to consider and advise speedily,

---

* Theophilus Eaton, who died Jan. 7, 1657. — EDS.

that, if it may be, his eyesight may be preserved and his eye healed. Being assured of your readynes hereunto, as unto every worke of mercy, I cease to diverte you from the weighty affaires under your hand, & to detaine you from this present necessary worke of mercy, which craves your serious consideration & speedy helpe. The Lord guide you in boath, & prosper all your endeavours for the good of many, & of this our brother! My sonne also presents you with an account of his negotiation about the buisenes you commended to his care. Farewell in our Lord Jesus. In whom I rest Sir,

Your obliged freind & servant in the Lord,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, this 21 of the 11th m. 57., in the evening.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, about G: Herrimans ey."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrope, Esqr, Governour of Connectacute, these present in Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — Though, this being the last day of the weeke, & by Mr. Blynmans staying, the Lords day, at Gillford, I am dissappointed of his expected helpe; so that the wholl worke of preaching boath times, and administring the Lord['s] supper, lyeth upon me, whereby I am constrayned to be as breife, in these lines, as I may; yet, seing a worke of mercy towards brother Herryman, by his wifes desire, urgeth me to wright at this time; this messenger, brother Molthrope, purposing to travaile from his farme to youward, betimes on the 2d day; I may not omit this opportunity of saluting your selfe & Mrs. Winthrope, & yours, in boath ours & my sonnes names, with all due respects & sincere love, in the Lord. For brother Herryman; they have applyed what you sent to his eyes, & finde

some benefit by it; for it opened the liddes gradually, by litle & litle, and gave him ease. But, upon the opening of his eyeliddes, they find that in the eyes, where the sight was, is a mattery substance which brother Peck thinckes flowed out of it, (peradventure it is the chrystaline humor;) he saith it is ragged, or like white ragges undissolved, which yet, he thincks, may be easily dissolved; and from the ball of the eye groweth a carnous substance, which covereth the neather eye lid all over, and at the end of it, in the corner of the eye, by his nose, is a tumor of a pretty bignes. Hereby, his eye seemes to be as 2 eyes, to them that looke upon it; yet sister Herryman saith she can see his eye under that excrescence. The excresence is red, & so is his eye. On the 5th day last he tooke the powder, which worked very well, but most upwards, which, sister thincks, increased the swelling about his eye. Brother Peck thincks that his eye hath no sense [in] it, nor can they yet say whether the sight be wholly lost, or not, till that white mattery substance be taken away which is before it; about which he doth not take any course till your further advise come. He thincks also that what you sent works too slowely, but that we leave to your wisdom, as also to advise what you judge best for the future. He purposeth to put a litle sugar candie into it for the present, which, he saith, may doe some good, & no hurt, til they may receive further directions from your selfe. My wife presents, with her service, the remaynder of the rootes she sent you before, as a testimony of her readynes & desire to be any way serviceable to you, to whom we boath owe much more then we are able to performe. The Lord Jesus dwell with you in peace! In whom I rest

Sir, Yours exceedingly obliged

JOHN DAVENPORT.

NEWHAVEN, the 30th d. of the 11th m. 1657.

Sister Herryman came to me since I wrote thus farr, & saith that her husband could stirre his eye yesterday a litle, & this day more, & that that excrescence from the ball of his eye (which she likeneth to a wheate straw, & toucheth the underlid,) lookes a litle paler then it did, & that the eye lid growes more plyable, & he can open it a litle himselfe. That tumor by the side of his nose, she saith, is about the bignes of a litle pea. The white that covers the black & darke colour of his eye is as bigg as a penny, & in the middest of that is that ragged matter I wrote of before. Brother Herryman thincks that he pricked his eye with the bodkin, & that might cause this ragged thing about his eye. Sister Herryman & he boath thinck that what you sent workes well; for he findes that he can stirr his eye, which before was as a thing dead, & other good effects. He is also at good ease.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, recd: Feb: 3:"

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured freind John Winthrop, Esqr. these present at Hartford.

Honoured Sir, — The frequent raines & other seasons have hindered the passage of my returne of answers to your loving lines, which else had bene in your hands before this time. You are still pleased to multiply obligements upon me [*A line erased*] by the cordiall you sent me a 1st & 2d time, unto which is added your serious invitacion of me, my wife, & sonne, unto your house, that any farther meanes might be used for my good. Sir, I am exceedingly ingaged to you & Mrs. Winthrope for your greate love herein [*A line erased*]. My wife hath bene very dilligent in what you committed to her, as taking delight to be any way serviceable to you. She hath spoken twise with Mrs.

Eaton. Her answer is, that she would speake with your selfe. She speakes no further to that matter, but asketh, When you will come? Nor doe I see what answer she can well give; for, though she be sole executrix, yet the estate is to be divided, according to the will, and she hath but her part. Nor hath she yet given in an Inventory to the Court. For your ground; my wife, speedily, even the same day she received your letter, spake with sundry about it, and received this answer, that there is no Indian corne to be planted, in that quarter, this yeare. Brother Boykin,* who hath formerly used some of it, was willing to have taken it, but saith it is overrun with wild sorrel, and it will require time to subdue it, & put it into tillage, being at present unfit to be improved, yet if you let it for some considerable tim, he is willing to be one, in conjunction with others, to take it. Goodman Finch was in our harbour when your letter came, & my wife went presently downe, & met with yong Mr. Lamberton, to whom she delivered your letter. She spake to one or two to goe aboard his vessel, but he set up saile & went out, but shortly after he came in againe; then Mr. Lamberton spake with him; he offered some so bad beaver that my wife would not take it. That which he hath paide is 2*l*, wanting an ounce, at 7*s* per pound. My wife spake twise with him her selfe; he saith the debt is 30*s*, & he will paye the rest a fourtnight hence. Thus you have an account of the particulars mentioned in your letter. We did hope to have seene your selfe & Mrs. Winthrope here before this time, which we shall be glad of, in your best season; but rather, which we most desire, to see you, with your familie, settled here, in your owne house, as a fixed dweller among us. My unfitnes for so long a journey, and your

* Jarvis or Gervase Boykim came first to Charlestown from Charington, Kent, in 1635 or 36. He removed to New Haven in 1639. — 3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.* viii. 276; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

multiplicity of buisenesses there, together with sundry other consideracions, plead irrefragably against my coming to Hartford at this time; yet some here, if they knew the time when you will be pleased to remove from thence, to settle here, will gladly make a journey thither, to accomodate your remoue, and to attend you therein. I shall now cease to diverte your mind from more weighty affaires, by more lines, onely, with presenting myne, my wifes & sonnes humble service to your selfe & Mrs. Winthrop, with my affectionate salutacions to your daughters. I commend you, Sir, to Gods gracious guidance in the greate affayres under your hand, & to his blessing upon your selfe & family, & rest in him, Sir, Yours obliged

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, the 20th d. of the 2d m. 58.

Postscr. Sir, I am ashamed to send this letter thus blurred & blotted, but I have not time to wright another, brother Herryman, the bearer, being to goe early in the morning, whereof I knew not til late this evening. One thing my wife desireth to add, viz., that she received for you, of Mr. Goodenhouse, 30*s* worth of beaver, & 4*s* in wampam. She purposeth to send your beaver by brother Alsop to the Baye, when the best time is, to sell it for your advantage, & afterwards to give you an account what it comes to. Mr. Goodenhouse makes account that this is his wholl debte. Your letter to Sarjeant Baldwin my wife purposeth to convey to him by the 1st opportunity. Sister Holbadge hath paid to my wife, in part of her debt to you, a bushel of winter wheate. There rests, she saith, 10*s* more, which she will pay as soone as she can.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull his much Honoured freind, John Winthrope, Esqr. Deputy Governour of Connectacut, these present in Hartford.

Honoured Sir, — I received 2 letters from you, & returne many thancks to you for them boath, & for the intelligence contained in them. The death of those 3 men, & the mortality in the countreyes in England, are sorrowful tydings. That which concernes the Lord Fairfaxe answers my former opinion. I hope we shall speedily receive our letters from London, and thereby the true state of the publick affaires there, &c. Dr. Wright hath twise written to me to encourage my returne to London. However God shall be pleased to order my way, I am truely sorry for the loss of such a man,* whose hearte was towards God, & his people. Concerning our Court matters here; the last Election-day was the saddest to me that ever I saw in Newhaven, by our want of him, whose presence, &c, was wont to make it a day of no less contentment then solemnity. Being weary, after my sermon, I was absent from the Court. The 1st newes that I heard from thence added to my sorrow; for I heard that Mr. Goodyeare was wholly left out in the choyse of magistrates; whereas I had bene secure, thincking they purposed to choose him Governour.† But, the day following, upon enquiry into the cause of it, I received such answer as cleared unto me that it came to pass, not by any plot of men, but by the overruling providence of God. For the proxies generally voted for Mr. Goodyeare to be Governour, & Mr. Leete, Deputy, and none of them gaue theyre votes for Mr. Goodyeare to be

---

* Gov. Eaton, who had died the preceding winter. — Eds.

† At the Court of Elections, held at New Haven, 26th May, 1658, Francis Newman was chosen Governor, in place of Theophilus Eaton, deceased. Goodyear died in October following. — *New Haven Colonial Records*, ii. 231, 268. — Eds.

Deputy Governour, if the former fayled, nor to be magistrate, but put in blancks to boath, taking it for granted that he would be chosen Governour. But, before they proceeded to election, some of the Deputies of the Court propounded and urged the necessity, or great expediency, in respect of our condition, at present, of having the Governour present among us. Hereunto the freemen generally consented, & hereby the election fell upon Mr. Newman to be Governour, & Mr. Leete Deputy Governour, for this yeare. To this latter the proxies, for the most part, concurred, & most of the present freemen. The votes of the present freemen & some few proxies carryed the election for Governour to Mr. Newman by plurality of votes, which he strongly refused, but importunity of many in the Court, at last, overcame him to accept it; and some of Mr. Goodyeares freinds & relatives spake earnestly, when these 2 were chosen, to hinder his being chosen to magistracy, alleadging such reasons as they had.

What the minde of God is herein, time will shew. The Court sate, since the election, til this day, & have passed thorough many weighty buisenesses, by the helpe of Gods presence with them, to good satisfaction, both to themselves, & others. Give me leave to add a touch upon your buisenes about your lead mine, which I make bold to suggest, onely unto your selfe. I am informed that one found in a letter written to another from London, that lead is of good value, probably above what you know. My wife telleth me that she spake with one, who told her that he found, in that letter, that they will give 8*l* *per* tunn for lead in the bigger peeces, & 5*l* *per* tun for the smaller peeces, and 20*s* *per* tun for the dust of it, which, it may be, you cast away, as of no use. This intimation may be of use to you, we boath thought, to prevent some loss you might sustaine by those that will, probably, be trading with you for the lead, knowing of what esteeme it is in London,

& concealing it from your selfe, for theyre owne advantage. My sincere love maketh me thus bold to acquaint you with any thing which may be *e re vestrâ*, to know. I hope Mrs. Winthrope & your wholl familie is in health, because I know nothing to the contrary. The good Lord continue it, with his favour & loving kindnes in Jesus Christ to your selfe & them all. We boath, with our sonne, present our humble service to you boath, & our affectionate salutacions to them. The Lord Jesus dwell with you in peace!. In whom I rest,

Sir, Yours much obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORT.

NEWHAVEN, the 3d d. of the 4th m. 58.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr Davenport."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his honoured freind John Winthrope, Esq. Deputy Governour of Hartford, these present in Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — I wrote my former letter in such haste that I forgot one particular, which, having a litle more time, I shall now add. One Mr. Blackleach of Boston is come hither with commodities. He was wholly unknowne to me before; but he came to our house, & had speech with my wife, & while they were in discourse, I came into the roome, & welcommed him, &c. He knew not where to bestow his goodes at present, & propounded whether he might be at your house, til he could looke about him, to provide for himselfe elsewhere. I told him I knew not how soone yourselfe might come. He answered that he would bee ready to leave it at a daies warning; onely he desired to be there, for the present. Hereupon I made bold to consente that he might be in your hall, for the present. I now heare that he hath writ-

ten to yourselfe * for liberty to lay up his barrels of porke & corne, &c., that are to be paid him for his goodes, in your garret. I heare also that brother Andrewes hath moved for the use of a roome there, this winter, without which he is likely to want the liberty of the ordinances, all this winter, being very weake, & unable to come from the farmes to the towne, every weeke. I promised, & my wife also, to speake to yourselfe about that motion, if we had mett with you at Hartford, which we should have done. But you was absent, & after my returne home I heard no more of brother Andrews his motion, & thereby it was out of my minde when Mr. Blackleach spake to me. Brother Andrewes doth not desire to use the garrets. But I shall leave the wholl buisenes to be issued as your selfe shall judge best. Farewel. Yours obliged

JOHN DAVENPORTE.†

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenporte, about Mr. Blackleech & G. Andrewes."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worthily much Honoured John Winthrope, Esqr. these present at Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — Two letters I received from you, the 1st dat. Sept. 29, the 2d Nov: 14. The 1st I have already answered, I perceive, to your satisfaction, & I hope, Capt. Clarke & Mr. Paine will proceed with encouragement upon our Governours letter to them, though I read not the contents. For he telleth me that he wrote to the same purpose, as I did to your selfe. Before that, I received a letter from you, with a packet, that was brought to Boston from Newfoundland, for which, & your care about

---

* See letter of Blackleach to Winthrop, printed in this volume, pp. 149, 150. — EDS.

† This letter appears to have been written in October, 1658. — EDS.

transmitting it safe to my hands, I humbly returne many thancks to you. The packet was from Brother Hooke, who presents his respectful salutacions, in the Lord, to your selfe & Mrs. Winthrope, & among other things, gives me notice of the decease of your brother,* with whom he dined once at his owne house, & another time at Mr. Peters his house, and speakes honourably of him, but saith that he had not seene your son,† whence I collect that he was gone to Scotland, or some whither else. He also makes mention of a captaine that was hanged for robbing your brothers house, with some others, all having theyre faces covered with theyre handkerchers, but this captaines cover fell off from one side of his face, whereby your brothers 2 servants knew him. But, at the gallows, he denied the fact, yet was executed, because he was looked at as a man of so large principles & conscience, that his word was not to be regarded. Sundry other things also he communicated to me, *quæ nunc transcribere longum esset*, & I am put upon streights, having heard, late this night, that the bearer, Mr. Pinchins man, is to be gone early in the morning. For the other letter; I have spoken with Mr. Crane & Brother Cooper, once & againe, about the contents of it. Here is no question made of your reall intendments for the good of the iron worke, & of this place, nor suspicion of your seeking selfe-advantages thereby, to the hurt of this place. They know not your publick spirit that have any such surmises. But you are so well knowne here, that you may be secure in this, that all here have such assurance of your affections to the publick good, that no such lowe & unworthy thoughts of you are in any of theyre mindes. Though you have bene pleased to signifie your willingnes to surrender your interest, requiring nothing but what you have lent to the worke; yet I finde no willingnes in them to

---

* Col. Stephen Winthrop. His will was dated 3d May, 1658, and proved 29th August, 1658. — Eds.

† Fitz John, who early went to England. See Savage's "Geneal. Dict.," iv. 608. — Eds.

cloze with that motion. As for the 7*l* to be paid to Mr. Lake; you will receive theyre answer inclosed, whereunto I shall add, that, upon my further urging them to pay it to Mr. Lake, & to put it unto the general account, they replyed, that they could not doe that, til they might speake with your selfe, that, upon sufficient reasons received from you, they might satisfie those that intrust them. They are now, upon the failing of the stones sent by Mr. Goodyeare, solicitous that they[re] worke may not faile; and understanding, by John Heardman, that there are good stones to be had at Quarry-Hill, 20 miles from London, which are used in an iron-worke, 4 miles off from that place, & found to be good; they are wrighting to Capt. Clarke & Mr. Paine, to intreate them to make vse of theyre correspondents in London, that these stones may be procured, & sent by the first shipp in the spring. He saith they may be bought for 20*s* per tun, which is farr below what the merchant at Milford demands for bringing stones from the Isle of Wight. They also desire the helpe of your letter to Capt. Clark & Mr. Paine to further this designe. Sir, be pleased to present, with myne, my wifes & sons humble service, together with your selfe, to Mrs. Winthrope, with many thancks to her for our loving intertainment at your house. We all wish unto you boath many blessings & comforts in the marriage of your daughter,* which, we suppose, is now finished.

The Lord Jesus dwell with you in mercy & peace & loving kindnesses, & multiply blessings upon your branches! In him I rest Yours ever obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, the 18th day of the 9th m. 1658.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport."

---

* Elizabeth Winthrop, who married Rev. Antipas Newman, of Wenham, in 1658. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Honoured John Winthrop, Esqr., Governour of Connect-acute, these present.

Honoured Sir, — Mr. Rutherford being now arrived here from the Baye, telleth us that Mr. Yale is come, which also his letter to me from the Baye confirmeth. He saith sister Hannah Eaton * is offred an husband; a godly man, who hath 2 children, & 200*l* per annum. He purposeth to come with brother Alsop, who is expected here speedily. I have a letter from my brother Hooke, but no intelligence, since the change of government, from him, though from other hands I have. One letter I send you to read, with desire that you will returne it to me againe, at your leasure, that I may answer it. I have also sundry weekly Intelligences, but in them there is not much news since the change of goverment. I have sent you 3 or 4 other bookes, which I have not yet time to peruse, nor scarse my letters as I would, being filled with impediments at this time. Were you here, I could take up your spare time with pleasing diversions, by reading varietyes of occurrences in the world. All the use that I make of such things is to see how things worke towards the accomplishment of the prophesies that concerne these times, & to know how to pray suitably to changes of providences.

Present myne, my wifes & sons humble services, together with your selfe, to Mrs. Winthrope, & our loves to yours. I feare how it is with Mrs. Pierson, having heard nothing from thence all this day. If she be alive, the Lord send forth his word & heale her, & many sick &

---

* Hannah, youngest daughter of Theophilus Eaton, married July 4, 1659, at London, William Jones, who came next year to New England, in the ship with Goffe and Whalley, the regicides; and settled in New Haven. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

weake persons among us! Farewel, in our Lord Jesus, in whom I rest, Sir, Yours obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORT.

NEWHAVEN, the 29th d. of the 5th m. 1659.

The messenger sent last yeare is returned to the Baye, & hath brought 30 tun of stones for the iron worke.

Excuse my hast.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, Rec: July: 28:"

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the honoured John Winthrope, Esqr., Governour of Connecta-cute, these present in Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — I suppose Mr. J. C. hath reported unto you what he received (by word of mouth, because I wanted time & liber[ty] to wright what I would) from me, for that end, concerning the state of affaires in England, upon this unexpected change, whereby the Lord Protectour* is reduced unto the state of a private gentleman, by his voluntary act, at the persuasion of the Lord General Fleetwood, Lord Disborough, &c., yet the Colonels & cheife leaders of the army in Scotland (among whom I find your wife's brother, Colonel Read his name) have petitioned the revived long lasting Parliament, now reassembled upon the desire of the army, to allow the last Lord Protector 20,000*l.* *per annum* during his life, whereof 10,000*l.* *per annum* is to be inheritance to that house, in recompence of his fathers faithful & honourable services for the good of the Commonwealth. It is also, by others, desired that the Lady Dowager may have 10,000*l.* *per annum* conferred upon her, during her life, as a marke of honour & thanckfulnes in reference to her deceased hus-

* Richard Cromwell: his father, Oliver, had died 3d September, 1658. — EDS.

band. The people seeme to be very well pleased with this change, & to promise to themselves great good thereby. But *quicquid id est, timeo Danaos vel dona ferentes;* I suspect that Jesuites have an hand in turning the wheele, to introduce the K. of Scots; wherein I am the more strengthned by an offer of 40,000*l.* made by a Quaker, as it is said, for White Hall, which, together with Hampton Court & Greenewitch & other of the Kings houses, is set to saile. Probably, the Jesuites purse shall pay that summe, in the name & by the hand of a Quaker, to settle there, in time, a Jesuites Colledge. For the marriage betweene France & Spaine, & the foiles of the K. of Sweden, & the interest which they may gaine in the K. of Scots, may fill them with hopes of reducing England *sensim, sine sensu*, to become, as in former times, the Popes asse againe, which may make way for the slaying of the witnesses, which is the 1st thing to be done, before theyre rising, & the burning of Rome, & the calling of the Jewes. But I forget that you are upon your journey to the Baye, where you will receive full intelligence of all things. My brother Hookes letter was written before this change. He purposed a letter, &, I beleive, hath written one, to your selfe, though it is not yet brought to my hand, because he doth not mention your name in my letter, & because, in his former letters, he promised to wright unto you. The Lord make your journey safe, comfortable, & prosperous! We want your presence here exceedingly. Many among us are sorely visited & distressed, & some distracted, in the paroxisme of theyre disease, for a time, which taketh them in theyre heades with extreme paine, as sister Beamont, brother Myles & his son; his daughter also hath bene neare unto death, but I hope that, through the mercyes of God, they are somewhat better. All John Thomas his house have bene downe, his wife is stil very weake, & himselfe not strong, & all brother Doelitles house, excepting himselfe, *cum multis alijs.* Mrs. Pierson is in a hopeful

way. Mr. Pierson hath bene touched, so that he could not keepe the fast, last 4th d., but wisely tooke the physick in the beginning, & will, I hope, doe well. Many questions my wife hath about the various exercises of people under this afflicting hand of God; some she purposeth to send inclosed in this; to which, if you have time to returne an answer, be pleased, together with it, to returne to me my copie in your hand of Mr. Hopkins his will. Myne, my wifes & sons humble respects being presented to your selfe & Mrs. Winthrope, & our love to yours, I rest

Yours obliged, JOHN DAVENPORT.

NEWHAVEN, the 5th day of the 6th m. 1659.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, rec: [*illegible.*]"

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the honoured John Winthrop, Esqr., Governour of Connecta-cute Colonie, these present in Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — I received, by brother Wakeman, 3 letters to my selfe, (besides those that my wife & son received, together with your bountiful supplies of medicines for our sick neighbours & freinds, which are many,) for which your great labour & liberality of love, I returne many hearty thancks, being exceedingly obliged to you for the same. I received also my copie of Mr. Hopkins his will, & Mr. Lyngs letter & the printed papers, which last you might have retained with you. I shall onely, at present, add that since my wrighting to you, I have received letters & bookes, & written papers from my ancient & honoured freinds Mr. Hartlib,* & Mr. Durie,† wherein I finde sundry rarities of inventions, & projects for common good,

* Samuel Hartlib, the ingenious author of many works on agriculture and natural history, was the son of a Polish merchant, and is supposed to have come to England about 1640. Milton addresses to him his Tract "Of Education." — EDS.

† Rev. John Dury, a Scottish divine, and a member of the Westminster Assembly. — EDS.

of sundry kindes, which I long for an opportunitie to communicate to your selfe, might your first leasure give us an occasion of personal discourse together. They are too many to be transmitted unto you by passengers, & yet such as, I beleive, will affoard singular contentment to your publick spirit, & probably you will finde some particularities among them, which may be advantagious to your private proffit, in the improvement of your Fishers Island, &c. I cannot conceale any thinge from your selfe, such is my unfeigned love, that I can conjecture may be *e re vestra* to know. Your report of Mrs. Winthropes illnes & danger would have deepely afflicted me, had it not bene allaied with the hopes of her recovery, yet, as it is, we cannot but sympathize with her & your selfe, in this afflicting providence; yet so as acknowledging Gods mercy, to his praise, who ordered the circumstances of it so favourably, that it should befall her, while your selfe was present with her, that she might have thereby both comfort & helpe for her cure, by his blessing. The good Lord goe on in healing to heale, & in restoring to restore her unto perfect health & strength, with a sanctifyed & blessed fruite of this his Fatherly chastisement; that you may rejoyce together in his goodnes all your daies, & be satisfyed with his mercies in Jesus Christ! I am sorry for the sicknes & weakenes of your 2 daughters, beseeching the God of our life & health to send forth his word of blessing with the meanes to heale them, & to sanctifie them, with the rest of your branches, to himselfe, in Jesus Christ! In whom I rest,

Sir, Your much obliged freind & servant,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, the 19th day of the 6th moneth, 1659.

POSTSCRIPT.

SIR, — Because I cannot, by a pencile, I must, under a vaile, represent unto you my wifes deepe sense of your

tender affections & greate love towards her, expressed in your letter to my son, wherein you was pleased to shew how the report of her least illnes affected you. For I want words to declare her transcendent thanckfulnes for the same.

Concerning Mr. Yale; she hath treated with him as effectually as she could, & more fully then she would, if it had bene for her selfe, for your having the linnen, & pewter, & cushions; urging the full consent of his mother, under her hand. But to that he replyed that his mother was now dead, & so her act was void, & that he is bound to attend his order, which is to send them to England. My wife told him that she did not doubt that, if Mrs. Hannah knew it, she would consent. But he stil insisted in his want of power to doe it. The chayres & stooles, of which you spake, Mr. Yale is willing to sel. If Mrs. Winthrope please to have them, my wife would doe her indeavour to answer her desire therein, upon notice from you. My wife thincks you had better buy new linnen in England, & you will there have better pennyworths; for Mr. Newman, our Governour, hath now a suite for a table cloath, a dozen of diaper napkins & a towel, of Dammask fashion, for 26 shillings.

We long to heare of Mrs. Winthropes perfect recovery, & of perfect health restored to your familie; *quod facit Deus! Etiam atque etiam vale.*

Tuissimus, J. D.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport; rec: Aug: 20."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the much honoured John Winthrope, Esqr., Governour of Connectacute Colonie, these present in Hartford.

Honoured Sir, — Having received 2 letters from you since your returne from the Baye, one dated the 16th of the 9th m., which was delivered unto me on the 23d day, after the ordinacion of brother Street to be our Teacher,* whilest we were at supper: the other dated the 2d d. of this 10th m., brought by John Thomas, by whom I should have returned answer of the 1st, if he had given me seasonable notice of his journey to Hartford. Both these letters, I perceive, you was pleased to wright at such houres in the night, as rather called you to refresh your body, wearyed with the labours of the day before, with rest & sleepe, then to minde such offices of love as added to your labour & hindred that rest which nature required. But such is the power of your love, that it will not yeeld to nature, to be thereby hindred in its course & exercise. Myne owne heart would accuse & condemne me as unthanckful, if I should not answer your love with such returne as I may, at present, though the notice of John Palmers journey towards you is given me at a time when I am full of buisenes in preparing for the lecture, having bene hitherto much hindered by inevitable diversions. Sir, the hurt that befell so many, by theyre owne rashnes, at the Draw Bridge in Boston, being on the day that the Quakers were executed,† was not without God's special providence, in judgment & wrath, I feare, against the

* Rev. Nicholas Street was ordained as teacher at Taunton, probably in 1637, on the same day that Hooke was made pastor. After Hooke had left New Haven, where he had been teacher with Davenport, for England, Street was called to take his place; and was inducted Nov. 26, 1659, as has generally been supposed. — *Emery's Ministry of Taunton*, i. 156-164; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† William Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson, Quakers, were executed at Boston, Oct. 27, 1659. On the return of the people from the execution, a portion of the drawbridge fell,

Quakers & theyre abettors, who will be much hardned thereby. But so it must be, by theyre obstinacy, who having sinned out theyre light, stumble & fall at every event of his providence, whom, in the Trinity of persons, they denye, & reject in his written word, *qua tale*, & his ordinances in the churches, & his magistrates in the Commonwealth. I am sorry for Sir George Booth,* especially if it be he who I think it is, a gentleman about my age, & who was of Waddam-Colledge in Oxford, in my time, & accounted very hopeful then, & since he inherited his fathers estate, which was greate, he was accounted religious, at least, a freind to the godly partie, in Cheshire, where he was of eminent note & powerful influence, throughout that countie & the neighbour counties. I doubt, he was more acted by ill counsailours then by his owne spirit, in this greate enterprize, which a litle *προνοια* would have stopped him from, as that which would be frustraneous, as to his intendment, & bring certaine ruine upon his person & familie. But it is the Lord, whose judgements are unsearchable, who hath thus left him, that we may learne, by his example, to feare alwaies, & to walke continually in exercise of our dependance upon him, for the guidance & government of his holy spirit, in all our waies, & to beware of me[n] who offer themselves as freinds, & guides, & counsailors, that we be not drawn by

---

and several persons were injured, some of whom died in consequence. — *Bishop's New England judged, edition of* 1703, p. 135.; *Sewel's Hist. of the Quakers*, p. 226 ; *Hull's Diary, in Archæol. Amer.* iii, 189. There were two bridges at this period over the "Mill Creek." The one in Hanover Street, which was the most ancient, was always known as the "Mill Bridge;" the other, in the present North Street, late Ann Street, and earliest known as "The Fore Street," was invariably designated, in the old records, as "The Drawbridge." — *Communication from Dr. N. B. Shurtleff.* — Eds.

* Sir George Booth, Bart., of an ancient family seated at Durham Massey, Cheshire, was connected with the presbyterian party, but, after the death of Cromwell, placed himself in communication with Charles II ; and, in July, 1659, appeared in arms against the Parliament, and took possession of the city of Chester. Being defeated by Lambert at Winnington Bridge, he attempted to escape in disguise, was arrested, and imprisoned in the Tower, but was released Feb. 22, 1660, on giving bail for £5,000. After the Restoration, he was created Baron Delamere of Durham Massey. He died in 1684. — *Rose's Biogr. Dict.* — Eds.

them into præcipices. I am very sorry that the General Court at Boston did not accept Colonel Temples* motion, which had bene a cleare way, & incomparably the best expedient for freeing all the Colonies from the Quakers, who would have feared that kinde of banishment more then hanging; it being a real cutting them off from all opportunities & libertie of doing hurt in the Colonies, by gaining proselytes, which would have bene more bitter then death to them. I blesse God for your safe returne, through such inconveniences in your way. The Lord preserve your life & health, for the good of many! My wife humbly thancks you for the supply you sent her by John Tomas, & craves pardon for her boldnes in that kind so frequently. We had good hope that we might have injoyed your much-desired presence with us before this time, & doe now wish that when you come next, you will be pleased to bring your familie, & dwell in your owne house among us, if your occasions will permit it. My wife prayeth yourselfe & Mrs. Winthrop to accept a small token of marmalet of quinces, which she hath made as good as she could, & hopes you boath, & your daughter, Mrs. Ann, will find them to be good & comfortable for your stomachs & spirits. The booke concerning bees, which you desired, I now send you, by John Palmer, & with it 3 others, viz., 1. An Office of Address, 2. An Invention of Engines of Motion, 3. A Discourse for divisions & setting out of Landes in the best forme, &c. These 3 are small bookes in 4to: I shall add unto them a 4th booke in 8^{o}, called Chymical, Medicinal, & Chirurgical Addresses. These are a few of many more which are sent to me. I hoped for an opportunity of shewing them to you here, & shall reserve them for you til a good opportunity.

---

* Sir Thomas Temple, appointed, by Cromwell, Governor of Acadia, in 1657. He proposed to transport the Quakers, at his own charge, from the colony, and support them for a time. The offer was well received by the magistrates, but rejected by the deputies. — *Bishop's New England judged, edition of* 1703, pp. 157, 158. — Eds.

My ancient honorable freind, Colonel Bel,* died last sommer at Barbadoes, where he was the 1st Governour, & so continued many yeares. With much importunity he desired my settling there with him. I received a letter from him the last winter, full of love, & a token in sugar, & returned an answer with a token, by Mr. Palmes, which never came to his hands. He was 70 yeares old, when he wrote to me.

My wife prayeth me to add a word about the marmalate, that if you find sinamon in it, you shall not need to feare binding, for she hath put other things into it, which are opening & cooling. One that was very ill found much good by it, which she addes, to encourage you to take it. And, about the supply you sent, she saith that though she desired it for the good of the people that needed it, yet she had rather have bene without it, then you should get hurt by sitting up too late. The Lord recompence all your labour of love, in mercyes to you & yours! My selfe, wife, & son present our humble services to yourselfe & Mrs. Winthrop, with our affectionate salutacions to all your children. I rest

Yours much obliged, JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, the 6th d. of the 10th m. 1659.

POSTSCRIPT.

SIR, — I am mindful of our debte, for our part in the vessel that transporrted us, with you unto Seacunck. But we neither know what it is, nor in what we are to make paiment, nor to whom; whether to Mr. Bryan, or to his son, or to your selfe, if you have already discharged it. Be pleased to certifie me concerning the premises, that I may do accordingly.

---

* Philip Bell, Esq., was appointed Deputy Governor of Barbadoes, in 1641, by Maj. Hunckes, the former Governor, who left the island in that year; and Bell, in 1645, received a commission as Governor in Chief. — *Edwards's Hist. of the British Colonies in the W. Indies*, i. 322. — EDS.

The canded comfrye-rootes which my wife sendeth to you are not so white as she desireth. The reason, she saith, is because they were boyled with Barbadoes sugar, though clarified, yet they were canded with white sugar: but, she saith, they would have bene whiter, if they had bene canded with loafe sugar. The taste nevertheles is good. She prayeth you to excuse the colour, & to accept her love in so small a thing.

The letter, as you see, was not sent according to the date, & the messenger is altered, from John Palmer to John Thomas; because the former stayeth in these parts longer then we expected.

The 8th d. of the 10th m. 59.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, about the Quakers executed."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull & worthily Honoured John Winthrope, Esqr. Governour of Connectacute Colonie, these present at Hartford.

Honoured Sir, — I received, by Mr. Goodwin, the Intelligences from England, which I now returne, with many thancks, by the same hand. Here is a report brought from Virginia, by a ship lately arrived there from England, in 5 weekes, that the King of Scots is in London, which I doe no more credit then that report of the Quakers, concerning General Munkes being in London, & sole General, by Lamberts and Fleetewoodes laying downe theyre commissions, or the establishment of the presbyterian way. All which, I hope, with many other rumours, will be found not true, in sundry particulars, when we shall receive our letters from England. Besides that ship at Cape Anne, Lieutenant Cooke speakes of another also, at Cape Codd,

which, I thinck, is that of which sister Atwater wrote. Major Hawthorne & your brother, Mr. Richards, went out of this harbour, in the evening after the 6th day, towards Road Island, purposing to travaile, by land, from thence to Boston. The Dutch Governour complemented with them, in liberal intertainment; but, for the principal buisenes about which they came, he denied to give them liberty of passing up the river, alleadging that it would cost him his head, if he should permit that; & some of the Dutch traders threatened that themselves would cut off his head, if he should grant that unto the English; yet he offered them, to refer the wholl matter to England & Holland, with acquiescence in theyre determination; which our freindes refused, urging theyre line; against which the Dutch Governour demanded, why they had not claimed it all this while? They answered, that they finde more need of it now then formerly. He pleaded long possession. They replyed that the English had right to Hudsons River before them, & proved it more largely then I can now declare. The issue is, they parted placidely, and our freindes are to make theyre report to the General Court, at Boston. In conclusion, they told them that they should returne again, towards the end of summer. I perceive, if that buisines proceedes, as Major Hawtherne thincks it will, all the Colonies are likely to be ingaged in a warr with the Dutch. Concerning what you are pleased to propound, I shall take the 1st opportunitie to speake with the Townesmen, that a good part of that which they are to paie, in reference to the house, be paide, according to your order, to Mr. Yale. I could wish that you had expressed *quantum*. I understand, by Mr. Goodwin, that his house is hyred for you to dwell in. The courses that the General Court take about Mr. Hopkins his legacie seeme to me very strange, viz: that they would know what portion of it they shall have, & yet hinder his Trustees from receiving what belongs to that estate, by seques-

tracions, one after another, whereby the estate will suffer no small loss, some being ready to deliver up what they had purchased, because they will not have a litigious title, & one hath waved his bargaine, upon that account: others, who were ready to have paid what they owe to the estate, now refuse to paye, pretending the Courts order, whereby, when the sequestracion shall be taken off, there is danger that, through loss of the season, when they were prepared to paye, there will be a loss of the payment itselfe, the debtours pleading theyre dissabilitie now. And the pretence whereupon the sequestracion is the 2d time laid on, is, that the Inventory is not given in, whereas some of the Court, it seemes, knew that it was left with our Attorneies in Hartford, by Capt. Cullick, with a trust to be by them presented to the Court, which they also acknowledge, & take the blame wholly upon themselves. But I doe not love contentions. We have agreed in the answer, which I send inclosed. Myne, my wifes, & sons humble services being presented to yourselfe & Mrs. Winthrope, with our affectionate salutacions to your daughters, with my hearty desires & prayers continued for an abundant blessing from heaven upon you boath, & all yours, in N. E. & Old. I rest Yours ever obliged, &c,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, the 20th d. of the 2d m. 1660.

Sir, You may please to communicate the inclosed to the General Court, or theyre Committee, as our joynt answer.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport about Mr. Hopkins legacy."

JOHN DAVENPORT, JOHN CULLICK, AND WILLIAM GOODWIN TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

[*Enclosed in the preceding Letter.*]

Honoured Sir, — Captaine Cullick and Mr. Goodwin have bene with me, by whom I understand that some were appointed, both from the General Court and from the Towne of Hartford, to speake with them, to know what portion of Mr. Hopkins his estate (with the disposal whereof, for the ends specified in his will, we are entrusted) shall be allowed unto the said Colonie or Towne. Our joynt-answer thereunto is, that the General Court be pleased to declare, 1. That they accept of that copie of Mr. Hopkins his will, which is delivered unto the Courte already, as authentical & sufficient for the end whereunto it is produced. 2. That the said Court acknowledge us three to be invested with power, by virtue of the said will, to dispose of the estate bequeathed unto us, according to the true mind and intent of the Testatour, to our best understanding. 3. That all sequestrations, encombrances, and disturbances whatsoever from that General Court be so taken off, that we may prosecute & settle the buisenes that concernes our Trust, without impediment or interruption. These things being done, to our satisfaction, we shall seriously consider what answer we may give to the præmised quæstion, according to God, & the Trust committed unto us.

In witnes whereof we subscribe our names at Newhaven, the 19th day of the 2d moneth, in the yeare 1660.

John Davenporte.
John Cullick.
Will: Goodwin.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, Capt. Cullick, Mr. Goodwins answer about Mr. Hopkins legacy."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

Honoured Sir, — Having so sure a conveyance, I returne the inclosed, with acknowledgment of my very greate obligement unto you, for your labour of love, in putting such a taske upon your selfe, at such a time, as the transcribing of the weekely intelligence from the 3d to the 10th of the 3d m., and in gratifying mee, so unworthy, with the perusal of it, whereby I understand the state of the publick, in our deare native countrie, and doe wish that sundrie of our relations & freinds were well settled in these ends of the earth. I heare nothing yet concerning Capt. Pierse his arrival, which I much wonder at, for I perceive that he hath bene about a quarter of an yeare in his voyadge. I wish that he be safe. I am in expectacion of our Teacher's returne, with bro: Rutherford, every houre. In the letter which Mr. Richards conveyed to me from him (for which I returne hearty thancks to him, & for his kinde acceptance of such intertainment as we could make, on the suddaine, with my resalutations to them boath) brother Streete reporteth a strange passage which he heard at Boston, which, it may be, will minister some matter of laughter unto you, as it doth of indignation unto me. It is this. A company being mett some where in England (he thincks they were 5th monarchy men) and Sir Henry Vane with them, it was propounded that, seing Christ was not yet come, they should thinck of some one that should be cheife among them, til he shall come, and that being consented to, it was considered whom they should choose, and it was concluded, with common consent, Sir Hen: Vaine; thereupon one rose up with a viol of oile, which he poured on Sir Hen: Vaines head, and called him King of Jerusalem. *Sit fides penes Authorem.* Men, it seemes, are serious about setting up Kings; our

comfort is, that the Lord raigneth, and his counsels shall stand. In rightly obeying this King we shall become faithful to whatsoever powers he settes over us. We have much sicknes among us, both in the farmes & towne, by the afflicting hand of the Most High renued upon us, righteously. Some wholl families & sundry particular persons. Some have greate paine in theyre heades & stomacks, some, violent evacuacions upward & downeward, some burning, &c. My wife also, having wholly spent your supply, is destitute of Rubila, which some have desired, but returned empty. My wife tooke the pilles you formerly commended to her, in the evening after the last Lords day, about an houre before supper, and found good effects of the operation of them the next morning (onely it was sooner then formerly, about one o'clock in the morning, & with much more gryping then before, which my wife imputeth to her costivenes about a weeke together, after she had taken the Rubila) though she was weakened thereby, all the day after, and is so stil; (if it should continue, as she is distemperd, she desires to know whether she should take the rubila, or the pilles) yet, I believe, the blessing of God hath done her good thereby, for which, as for many favours, be pleased to accept our joynt thancks, who cease not to pray for your continuance in health, and for the blessing of God upon all your indeavours for the good of many, with returne of an 100d fold in mercies and loving kindnesses, to you boath, & to all your branches.

Be pleased to present myne, my wifes and sons humble services, together with your selfe, to Mrs. Winthrope, and our respectful, affectionate salutations and thancks to Mr. & Mrs. Richards. The Lord Jesus dwell with you in peace! In whom I rest,

Sir, Yours exceedingly obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, the 1st d. of the 6th m. 1660.

Auctarium.

Honoured Sir, — The unexpected opportunity of transmitting these lines, which I gladly embrace, did both streighten me in wrighting the premises, and thereby occasion my forgetfulnes, being in hast, of that which I should have added, in answer to your former very loving lines, which I received the last weeke, in answer to myne, concerning my wifes weakenes, & my bodily distemper. We boath returne many hearty thancks to you for your good directions, which we keepe, as precious, to follow them, as occasion may require. I hope that, by the mercy of God, my body is about to returne to its former state, the paine being much abated, and that difficulty & frequent *irritus conatus egerendi* ceasing in a good degree. I am now content to let nature acte of itselfe, in hope that by Gods blessing upon suitable diet, I shall be well againe, in due time. Though we are sorrie that we shall want your precious company so long, as til the Commissioners come, yet we are comforted with hope of injoying it then, and Mrs. Winthropes, &c., with you, at our house, which we pray you to accept for your and her lodging and intertainment, with assurance of our rejoycing in that hope.

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrop, Esqr., Governour of Connectacute, these present at Hartford.

Honoured Sir, — *Scio sapiunt Phryges.* If I had as wel used my προνοία in preparing a letter, as I was dilligent in hearkening after opportunities for transmitting it, I had not bene thus surprized, before I had begun my letter. Brother Benham, just now, telles me that his companie is gone before; & he is going to Hartford. I blame him

for not letting me know, last night, but in vaine; yet I urge his stay, a very litle, that I may write these few lines, whiles he is buisied about making up your curtaines, which had bene with you, before now, if my wife could have procured him, or John Thomas, to have carryed them. I hope you will now receive them, by him. Concerning the matter of the Indians, I hope Mr. Gilbert hath or will give you a cleare account. If the Indians, you are pleased to mention, should revenge themselves upon ours, they will greately wrong the innocent; for our Indians had no hand in that buisenes, nor have spoken the least word, for ought I can learne, to animate our men to what is done. And that which, it seemes, bro: Yale & bro: Cooper have spoken to your Indians, I never knew, nor heard of, but by your letter. Nor will there be any thing done by any of ours to hinder your Indians in theyre hunting. But for the purchase, it was made above 20 yeares past, without any seeking, on our part, upon an offer made to our then Governour, &c. It was of Mantoweeze that the land was bought, whereby N. H. bounds extended neare unto the Cold Spring, beyond Pilgrims Harbour. But of these things, if you desire it, our Governour will give you full intelligence, when he shall be able, which, I hope, will be shortly, for the wrightings of that transaction are in his hands. The other buisenes, which concernes the paiment of Mr. Jones, is so farr ended as that you may cast off all care about it. For Mr. Jones tould me, speaking with him about it, that he accepts the Townesmen for his paymasters, & doth not looke to you for it. By a letter from Capt. Gookin, I understand that the 1st worke the King did, after his settlement, was the solemne funeral of his father; & the next, was the pardoning of all, but 7; & the 3d was a serious urging the Parliament to be speedy, in paying the souldiers & navie theyre arreares. There is a truce with Spaine, in order to a peace. We heare, from Manatoes, that the Hollanders are likely to

fall off from Spaine. *Hæc raptim.* My selfe, wife, & son present our humble services to yourselfe & Mrs. Winthrop, with our affectionate salutacions to yours. I rest,

Yours exceedingly obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

NEWHAVEN, the 30th day of the 8th m. 1660.

Bro. Streete came to see me yesterday.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport about the Indian purchas of N : H : bounds."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrope, Esqr., Governour of Connectacut, these present in Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — It was in my purpose to have written more largely to you then the hast of this unexpected sad occasion will permit. Therefore, respiting that to a fitter season, I shall limit this to the present case, which you will find reported, as it was told my son, by the sickmans wife, who is Joseph & Timothy Nashes owne sister, a member of our church, & now in danger to be left a yong widow, with sundry small children, if God take away her husband, a member also of our church, called Talmage.* Be pleased to take his case into your serious consideration. And the Lord guide you to præscribe what he will bless, for the helpe & recovery of him, upon whom a wholl familie dependes for daily bread, as the onely instrument in Gods hand for theyre outward subsistence ; and who is approved in the church, as a man fearing God and faithful in all his dealings with men ! My wife & son joyne with me in presenting our humble services to your selfe &

* Robert Talmage, of New Haven, who married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Nash. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

Mrs. Winthrope, with our affectionate salutations to yours; with our desire that you would desist from your purposed voiage for England,* at least, for this yeare; for sundrie reasons, which to me seeme weighty, but I want time, at present, to offer them to your consideracion. The Lord guide you in such resolucion & acting in this matter as may be safest for your selfe, & best for your familie, &c! In whom I rest Sir, Yours obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORT.

NEWHAVEN, the 16th of the 4th m. 1661.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, about Goodman Talmage sickness."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO ELIZABETH WINTHROP.

To his Honoured freind Mrs. Winthrop, these present in Boston; or leave this letter, with the packet, at Mr. Amos Richardsons, merchant in Boston, to be delivered to her hands with safety & speed.

HONOURED MRS. WINTHROPE, — This is onely to salute you, with due respect & sincere affection, as one to whom I confess my selfe to be exceedingly obliged, and to cover the inclosed, from your precious husband, that it may come safe to your hands, by this our approved freind, Capt. Clarke, who, I know, will speedily deliver it to yourselfe. From one passage in your worthy husbands letter, I perceive that he longed, in winter, for the returne of the spring, that he might take the first opportunitie of return-

* This letter was written on the 16th of June, nine days after the General Court, at Hartford, had voted £500 to defray the Governor's expenses "in reference to his intended voyage to England, if his purpose and resolution do still continue to go, in regard this court hath made choice of his worship to be an agent to further our welfare, in presenting our Address and Petition to the King's Majesty, and to improve his abilities and procure us a Patent," &c. — *Pub. Rec. of Conn.*, i. 369. Winthrop sailed not long after on this mission. He had left Connecticut as early as July, as appears by a letter of William Leete in this volume, dated Aug. 6, 1661. — EDS.

ing unto you, which confirmes my beleife of what Capt. Seely reportes, that we may expect his returne, by the will & blessing of God, some time the next moneth. The good Lord, whom windes & sea obey, fill his sailes with favourable windes, & carrie him & his companie, as upon eagles wings, farr above the reach of all hurtfull dangers, and make his returne full of comforts & blessings to you & your family, & to many others, for whose good he hath allwaies bene ready to improve his precious talents & time! If Capt. Clarke returne, by the way of Hartford, to Boston, he will bring you another letter, of later date, inclosed to Mr. Willis. You will also receive from me, by this bearer, bookes of newes, which, when you have perused, he desires they might be sent to Mr. Stone or Mr. Willis, for freindes there to see. Be pleased to present my respectful salutacions to Honoured Mr. Symons & his wife, to your son and daughter Newman, & to your daughter, Mrs. Lucie, & to all yours. The Lord Jesus dwell with you & them in mercy & peace & loving kindnesses! In whom I rest Yours exceedingly obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORT.

My wife & son present theyre humble service to yourselfe, with salutacions to all yours, affectionately.

N. H. the 14th day of the 2d moneth, called April, 1662.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, 1662."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrope, Esqr., Governour of Connectacute, these present at Hartford.

HONOURED SIR, — These are to congratulate your safe arrival & returne to your familie, where you have bene ardently desired, & long expected. Blessed be our good God, in Jesus Christ, who hath, at last, mercifully brought

you off from Court-snares, & London-tumults, & European troubles, & from all perils at sea, and hath præserved your præcious life & health, & who hath carried your selfe, with your 2 sons, &c., as upon eagles wings, above the reach of all hurtful dangers, unto your habitation, & who hath kept your deare wife and all your children alive, & made them joyfull by your safe & comfortable returne unto them !* Together with them, I also, & my wife, & son, & daughter, rejoyce herein, as in a gracious answer of many praiers; & in persuasion that you are come with an olive branch in your mouth; according to the encouragement and assurance which I have received in some letters to my selfe, from Captaine Scot, & from Mr. Hatsel; & from one sent to Mr. Leete, which is either the protograph, or a copie of your letter to Major Mason, which seemes to be written by your selfe, but the seale was broken open before it came hither. Whether he hath that letter from Major Tomson, which you mention, or not, I know not. But, I heare, he hath one from Mr. Whitfield, the contents whereof I have not heard. Sir, give me leave to take notice of one passage in yours [that there is nothing but missunderstanding that could occasion such apprehensions of anie injurie done to N. H., or theyre concernments: & those freinds above mentioned were fully satisfied thereof, & wondered much that it was not better understood *by yours.*] It was written, in the line, *them;* that being blotted out, it is interlined, *yours;* which makes the sense of the wholl verie darke to me. For if, by *yours*, be meant our Committee of Magistrates, Elders, & Deputies, entrusted by the Freemen of this Colonie to treate with our freinds of Connectacute; I shall wonder at theyre wondering. For, 1, that manifest injurie is done to this Colonie, is proved by instances in the wrightings sent to

* The charter obtained by Winthrop, uniting the two colonies of Connecticut and New Haven, had been sent over the year before, — 1662. It arrived after the May election. Winthrop tarried longer abroad, and had now but recently arrived at Hartford. — Eds.

Connectacute & to England. 2. Nor did we missunderstand the Patent, but saw & pleaded that N. H. Colonie is not mentioned therein, & that it was not the Kings purpose, nor yours, to destroy the distinction of Colonies, nor our Colonie-state; &, in that confidence, desired that all things might stand, *in statu quo prius*, til your returne; which when we could not obtaine, we were compelled to appeale to the King; yet, out of tender respect to your peace & honour, advised, as you know, our freinds to consult with you, before they prosecuted our appeale, or delivered my letter to my Lord Chamberlaine. Our freindes at Connectacute regarded not our arguments, which yet, I know, are pleadable, & would beare due weight in the Chancery, & at the Council Table, & one of them yourselfe is pleased to establish, in your letter to Major Mason. 3. Nor is it to be wondered at, if we had missunderstood the things which we wanted meanes to understand from your selfe, who, neither in your letter to me, from London, dat. May 13, 1662, which I received by Mr. Ling, nor in your nexte, dated March the 7th, this yeare, signified to me any other thing, then that New Haven is stil a distinct Colonie, notwithstanding the Connectacute Patent. I doe the more insist in this, because I am told that Mr. Stone, in a letter which he sent unto one in Fairefield (*ni fallor*) saith that he had received a letter from Mr. Winthrope, who wondereth that N. H. doe quæstion theyre being under Connectacute, or to that purpose; which is understood as concluding the dissolucion of this Colonie, which, I perceive by what yourselfe & others have written, is a missunderstanding of your meaning, so that the missunderstanding is to be wondered at in them, not in us. As for what Mr. Leete wrote to your selfe, it was his private doing, without the consent or knowledge of any of us in this Colonie, it was not done by him according to his publick trust, as Governour, but contrary to it. If they had treated with us, or should yet, as with a distinct Colonie, we should

readily agree with them in any rational & æqual termes, for the settling of neighbourly peace & brotherly amitie betweene them & us, mutually, who have alreadie, as you see, patiently suffered wrong, for peace sake, in hope of a just redresse, at your returne into these parts. I would not have mentioned these matters, in this letter, (which I intended onely for a supplie of my want of bodily fitnes for a journey to Hartford, to give you a personal visit, in testimonie of my joy for your safe arrival & returne) but that the expression 'forenoted compelled me to speake some thing to it. I long to see your face, and am in hope that shortly, after your first hurries are over, we shall injoy your much desired presence with us, in your chamber at my house, which shall be as your owne, while it is myne. Then we may have opportunity, by the will of God, to confer placidly together, & to give & receive mutual satisfaction, through a right understanding of what is done in our concernments. My selfe, my wife, my son & daughter, doe joyntly & severally præsent our humble service to your honoured selfe, and Mrs. Winthrope, with our respectful & affectionate salutacions to your 2 sons, & to all your daughters, praying that blessings from heaven may be multiplied upon you & them, through Jesus Christ, in whom I rest, Honoured Sir,

Yours obliged to honour & serve you in the Lord,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

N. H. the 22th day of the 4th moneth, called June, 1663.

Postscript. The freshest newes here, & that which is, *e re vestrâ*, is, that they have bene blowing, at the iron worke, and have runne, from the last 6th day to this 2d day, 5 sowes of iron, which are commended for very good; & this night, its thought, they will run another; & begin to morrow to make pots. The worke is hopeful, but the workemen are thought to be very chargeable, & froward.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, rec: Jun: 23."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrope, Esqr. Governour of Connectacute, these present.

Honoured Sir, — My love to your person constraineth me, upon this occasion, to wright a few lines to you, if by any good meanes any inconvenience to yourselfe may be prevented. The acting of your General Assembly will seeme very strange, if not irrational, to unbyassed observers or hearers thereof; 1, that they take accusacions against such a man as Capt. Scot,* from such witnesses as his accusers will be found to be, against whom he hath declared his exceptions before our Magistrates & your Marshal, & which will be allowed as sufficient to dissable theyre testimonie, in any Court in England. 2. That your Marshal was sent to Newhaven, Milford, Stratford, &c., to apprehend C. S., as if these townes were alike under Connectacute jurisdiction. And this, he saith, is done by order from your General Court. 3. That his Commission, as he saith, is to accuse any that doe not obeie it, as abettors & concealers of a notorious malefactour; which he did twise, most absurdly; 1st, against our Deputie-Governour, before he had given any answer. The 2d time, to boath our Magistrates, & those of the Committie then present, who onely required to have a copie of this Commission & charges against C. S., promising that when they had considered it, they would give theyre answer in wrighting; & in the meane time, Mr. Jones, reading that Article of the Confœderacion which concernes that case, he promised to performe it punctually, yet, after these

* The action of the General Assembly, in the case of Capt. Scott, may be seen in the Public Records of Connecticut, i. 418, 420–422, 424, 430, and New-Haven Colony Records, ii. 541. — Eds.

passages, he so protested, whereupon he was told that he was a rash man, & that your General Assembly would not justifie him therein; yet he stood to it, that it was according to his order. 4. Nor doth the law of England allow that any man shall be proclaimed a malefactor, &c. til convicted. Many things I might add, but am called off. For yourselfe, Honoured Sir, I feare you will not doe your selfe right, unles you protest against these irregular, illegal, I had almost said, unchristian actings, and enter it upon record. You now see, I suppose, that we have abundant cause to refuse union with that Colonie, which multiplies injuries against us, without ceasing. The Lord Jesus be with your spirit & familie! In whom I rest,

Sir, Yours obliged, assured,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

N. H. the 22d of March, 166¾.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, senior."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Honorable John Winthrope, Esqr. Governour of Connecticute Colonie, these præsent in Hartford.

HONORABLE SIR, — It seemes that the difference betweene Mr. Leete & Mr. Rossetter is brought upon the stage againe, to be tryed & issued in a special Courte; & a new Jurie is impannaled, not of his compeeres, but of others, which is the occasion of my putting pen to paper, at this time. Your selfe well know who said, *Judicis officium est, ut res, ita tempora rerum.*

Quæ rere (and he addes for himselfe) *quæsito tempore, tutus ero.*

Tutum is the end of all lawes & governments, as well in reference to particular persons, as to Republicks. If the time when the subject of this dispute, viz., the assembling

of sundrie at Gilford, upon Mr. Leete, our then Governors letter to the Townes about Gillford, be duely considered, 3 things will conduce to his safety.

1. That it was when this Colonie was a distinct jurisdiction within itselfe, & ought to have bene conserved in its distinct liberties & priviledges intyre by the other Colonies by virtue of the solemne Confœderacion betweene the 4 United Colonies, of which Connectecute is one, which Confœderacion is evidently violated, if Connectecute now bring things under their judicature, which were then done in this Colonie, So that this case is *lis pendens coram non-judice.*

2. That what was done therein was done in their necessary defense, threatning words having bene given out by Mr. Rossetter*, at Gillford, & actions suitable thereunto having bene done by him & his companie, to the terrifying of the inhabitants there, before Mr. Leete sent abroad to call in helpe. Now self-defense against injuries & violence acted, or threatned, though it be provided for by armed men, cannot be accounted a riot, in the case of a particular person, either by law or reason; much less in the case of a Towneship. But they compassed about the plaintiffes house. Be it so; yet if it was onely to secure him from coming forth to do mischeife, whom they looked at as the author of their causeles trouble & danger, the peace was not broken, but preserved thereby. But they stood with their guns charged, &c. Yet, if they did no hurt to any; that served onely to shew that they were in readynes to defend the place & the inhabitants, for whose helpe & safety they were sent. But Mr. Leete sent his warrant to call Mr. Rossetter before him. Mr. Leet, being Governor, made a warrant, onely to know of him what

* Bray or Bryan Rosseter is here referred to. He had a son John. The names of both are frequently found in the records of the New-Haven Colony. They were not friendly to that jurisdiction. John was tried for sedition. — See New-Haven Colony Rec. ii. *passim.* — Eds.

the cause was of such disturbance & affrightments of the people. And yet, at the intreaty of some of your Magistrates, then præsent, it was stopped, & the serving of it was prevented. But Mr. Rossetter was forced to flie from his house at midnight. That was without just cause, no hurt being intended to his person, if the common safety might be otherwise secured. And it is most probable that Mr. Rossetter did so flie, in a malicious designe, to possess others with the greater præjudice against Mr. Leete, as seeking his destruction, which was farr from his intendment. But the Court at Hartford had before promised Mr. Rossetter & his party protection. But not in their irregular & injurious acting against their neighbours. Nor was theire accepting them into theire Colonie, when they rent themselves from this, before matters in debate were issued betweene these 2 Colonies, justifiable before God or men, & must be answered for before the righteous Judge, in that day. Therefore their promise of protecting them from this Colonie, to the Government whereof they were bound to be subject by an oath of fidelity, was sinful, and much more, if they performe it, by protecting them in doing evil, & in giving just offenses to this jurisdiction.

3. That his complaining to the Court at Connectecute for this cause is after he had bound himselfe by his solemne Agreement under his hand, that he would never trouble Mr. Leete, &c. for the future, without the advise or consent of old Mr. Allin, Mr. Willis, Mr. Street & my selfe, which he hath not had nor sought, at this time. It will concerne your selfe and the Courte, to be well advised that nothing be done in this matter, to the dishonour of God, & to the justifying of the guilty, & to the condemning of the innocent. For, I beleive that, in a faire & impartial proceeding, Mr. Leet would be justified, as a præserver, & Mr. Rossetter condemned as a disturber, of the common peace. Be carefull that parties be not

judges; & let the judges minde theire charge, in 2 Chron. 19. 6, 7. The people here, as I am told, looke at themselves as censured or acquitted, in Mr. Leetes censure or acquittance, so farr as it is not for his personal miscarriages, but his regular actings, in his publick capacitie, according to his publick trust. Sir, these things I make bold to suggest unto your selfe, out of my wonted faithfulnes, with which, I hope, you will excuse my boldnes, & well accept my love. My selfe, my wife, my son & daughter returne our thancks to you for our last injoyment of your presence & helpefullnes, & we all present our humble service to Mrs. Winthrope, & our respectfull salutations to your sons & daughters. I rest in Jesus Christ, Yours obliged, assured,

JOHN DAVENPORTE.

N. H. the 11th d. of the 5th m. 1665.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, sen: Rec: July 13, 1665."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Honorable John Winthrop, Esqr. Governour of Connectecute, these present with speed, at his house in Hartford, with the packet.

HONORABLE SIR, — These few lines, in the midst of sundry distracting buisenesses upon me, at present, tend onely to returne many thancks for your kinde letter, & to usher the packet of intelligencies which I received from London, by Capt. Martin, which, I thinck, you will willingly peruse, if you have not seene them alreadie. I thought to have proposed a motion for your wrighting to the Governour of Mattachusets, that a day might be agreed upon, wherein all N. E. might, with one accord,

bewaile the burning & devastacion of that greate citie;* but even now, an order is come to us from the Court for a fast to be kept publickly in these churches, on the 1st Wednesday in April, which will be the next 4th day. The warning is too short for so sollemne & extraordinary a duetie; yet we purpose to obeie it, as it may please God to inable. I also thought to have added some thing concerning the Synod, whereunto I suspect that we are not regularly & orderly called, by the Courts order, for many reasons which are of weight with me, who desire to see a due order attended in all things, *nedum* in so weighty affaires. But I shall suppress that, for the present, & also our just greivance for the ill usage of the messengers sent from these churches to enquire of the causes of that scandalous division in the church at Hartford, to the end that we might consider fit expedients for the quenching of that fire, & for the settling of trueth & peace among them, as we are bound to endeavour by the communion of churches. This some of the Magistrates laboured to hinder, by sending the Marshal to convent them before them, & by reproving them before many witnesses. The cheife actors herein were [the 2 Allins & Mr. Talkot.†] I might add also a wrong done to this & the neighbour Townes, by an unrighteous order (as the Assistants & Deputies from these Towneships declared it to be in the Court at Hartford), for a rate to be paid by them to Mr. Rossetor. But I am loath to trouble you with complaints of things done in your absence, & without your consent. To the Most High we commend our cause & case. For yourselfe, Honorable Sir, I am desirous to assure you that I am as heartily yours as ever, alwaies mindful of your love, & of my strong engagements for the same, together with the

* The writer alludes to the great fire of London, which occurred in September of the preceding year. — Eds.

† The words included in brackets are erased in the original. — Eds.

effects thereof toward me & myne, who do joyntly & severally present our service to your selfe & Mrs. Winthrop, with our affectionate & respectful salutacions to all yours; praying that all blessings may be accumulated upon you & them, through Jesus Christ, in whom I rest

Sir, Yours exceedingly obliged,

JOHN DAVENPORT, Senior.

N. H. the 27th d. of the 1st m. 1667.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, rec: Mar: 29: 1667."

JOHN DAVENPORT TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Honorable John Winthrop, Esqr. Governour of Connectecute, these present in Hartford.

HONORABLE SIR, — I made bold to send inclosed, in my last letter to your selfe, a letter præpared for General Nichols, if you approved it; else my desire was that you would be pleased to returne it to me, with your advise. But I have not heard whether you received it, or not, which makes me sollicitous about it. Having this occasion (by my deare wifes weakenes, & some discouraging apprehensions in her mind thereby,) of sending againe unto you, I thinck it my duety to second her desire of your making a journey to us, if it may consist with your health, in this hot season, & with your liberty in other respects. Our motion argueth our confidence in your love, whereof we have plentiful experience, unto our great ingagement for the same. My wife tooke but halfe of one of the papers, but could not beare the tast of it, & is discouraged from taking any more. I perceive that some speech with your selfe would best satisfie her; but if Gods providence puttes a barr in the way, we are called to submit thereunto. I shall cease to divert your minde from other

necessary affaires, at present, & commend your selfe & all yours to his grace (our service to Mrs. Winthrop, together with your selfe, being præsented) in whom I rest,

Honorable Sir,

Yours obliged, assured,

JOHN DAVENPORTE, Senior.

N. H. the 10th of the 5th, 67.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Davenport, senr. rec. July 10, 1667."

LETTERS, ETC., OF JOHN HULL.*

JOHN HULL TO JAMES RICHARDS.

To my lovinge & respected freind, Mr. James Richards, these I pray you in Barbados.

Boston, 6 of 5th, 1654.

Deare & lovinge ffriend, & Beloved in the Lord, whose well being & well doinge is by me not a little set by; I was loath to let this opertunitye slipp of wrighting to you; & when distance of place hindereth me from walkinge with you & speaking mouth to mouth, yet it is noe small favour that wee may give each other, now & then, a visitt in such a way as this; & though I should forget, or neglect to doe my duty in this respect, yet the Lord, I hope, is neare at hand, and a full supply of what ever we may seeme to want. The Lord helpe vs both to be frequente in our remembrances one off another, at his throne, when our bodyly eyes cannot behold each other, yet let our hearts be firmly knitt, & the eye of our soules, looking to that ever flowing fountaine of all suply, of what ever wee may seeme to be deprived off. The Lord make

* John Hull was born, Dec. 18, 1624, at Market Hareborough, Leicestershire, Eng. He came to New England, with his father, Robert Hull, in 1635, and was admitted freeman in May, 1649. In 1652, he was appointed, with Robert Sanderson, "for the melting, refining, and coining of silver;" and by them the first money coined in New England was struck. He represented Wenham, Westfield, and Salisbury, successively, in the General Court; was Treasurer of the Colony in 1676, and an Assistant during the last four years of his life. He was one of the founders of the Third or Old South Church, in 1669. He died Sept. 30, 1683. His diary, kept from 1638 to 1682, has been published by the American Antiquarian Society. — *Hutchinson's Mass.*, i. 178; *Archæologia Americana*, iii. 117, 316; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

vs both more & more sencible of the emptyness & instabillitie of what ever is most aceptable, satisfieng or constant in the acount of men who have their portion heer, but let vs account our selves but as strangers heere, & therefore not to regard the heaping vp of tresure of earth, which will be but as soe many waights & cloggs, to draw downe our spirits, & to make the treu tresure less conspicuous. Wee have soe much of the old man in vs, that will make such lessons to be harder learnt, but the Lord, if he please, can soone teach it vs, either by discovering such sweetness & transendent exellency, in & from Jesus Christ, or by lainge some bitter pill vpon the sweetest morsells that the world will afford; & truely he that hath the most of the outward blessings of this life, & looks on them aright, he will find it is soe much trouble & sorrow, added to what we had before, & who would reach, & runn, & strive after that?

The Lord keepe you, my deare brother, close to him selfe, in the middest of these many snares you may meet withall; & remember David saith, he had rather be a doore keeper, &c: vnto his gracious guidance I commend you, & take my leave, resting Your loving freind,

John Hull.

Indorsed by James Richards, "Mr. Jno. Hulls letter to J: R: per Mr. Holinworth."

JOHN HULL TO JAMES RICHARDS.

Boston, 10 of October, 1654.

My Loving Brother in the faith of Jesus Christ,— Whose companie hath beene many a tyme a reffreshing vnto my heart, & whose absence is noe less greife, yet God, that hath the sole dispose of vs & all our tymes, & who hath apointed the bounds of our habitation, will, I hope, make vs gainers by that which may at present seeme to

be a loss. We have not opertunitie to speake mouth to mouth, as we were wont, & which is most desirable amongst sociats; yet let vs not be wanting to improve those opertunityes as we find God putting into our hands, to adventure a little inke & paper in these flotting vessells, over the vnconstant waves, & they may pointe out to vs some thing of our vnseteledness, in this vnconstant world, & therefore weane vs from any intense pursuit affter fading comforts, which are allso many tymes ballanced with as much cross as comfort.

Deare freind, I should rejoyce to see your saffe & prosperous returne into the place (I beleive) of your hearts desires, but Gods tyme it is the best. If I should propound any matter of encouradgment, that may have any atractive force, I should be glad. We have good hope of Mr. Nortons abode with vs, & that it will not be long ere that case, soe long depending twixt Ipswidge, & vs, & him, find an issue. Your mother desired me also to enforme you that Mr. Gibons of Hartford was prety earnest with her about you know what;* & told her that iff she would give one hundred, he would make her worth three hundred. If your heart have had any recoylinge aboute it, since your departure, you may againe revolve it in your thoughts, and se whether Providence may not speake some thinge. Pray remember my love to Mr. John Woodmansey, vnto whom I would have wrighten, but that his father tells me he is like to be gone for England before it come. Present my respects to Mr. Grizell, & in a speaciall maner to Mr. Paull Allestrey: & thus, with my loving affection againe presented, I take my leave, resting

Your reall freind, JOHN HULL.

Indorsed by James Richards, "ffrom Mr. Jno. Hull: per Mr. Gilpin."

---

* Richards married Sarah, the only child of William Gibbons, of Hartford. — EDS.

WARRANT TO JOHN RICHARDS.

14 of October, 1658.

To Mr. Jn° Richards, Constable.

By virtue heeroff you are to take your first convenient opertunity, and distrayn at Dear Island, vpon the Estate of Wm. Wenborne or Jno. Bak, to the valew of three pound, ten shillings, due to the Town of Boston for rent of the said Iland, & likewise for forbearence or non payment of the same, since the first of March last. You may ad to it also, soe much as shall defray your necisarie charge in performance heeroff. That this is the determination of the select men, I at their request, doe attest by my hand.

JOHN HULL.

Nov: 12: 58.

Distrained 4 yew sheep, prized per Mr. Robert Breck & Goodman Kelly at 5 *ll.*

	ll:	*s:*
Due for rent & forbearnce till Nov: 12: 58.	3:	14:
Charges, men & boate.	0:	8:
Serving Execution, 6*d* per mile, 12*d* per *ll*,	0:	7:
	4:	09:

JOHN HULL TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the right Worshipfull my much Honored freind, Mr. John Winthrop, Governour of the Collonie vpon Conecticutt, these I pray you. By Tho: Watkins.

Boston, 5th of 1st, $16\frac{60}{61}$.

HIGHLY HONOURED & DEARLY RESPECTED SIR,—My humble & dutifull respects I heerin present vnto your self, together with my partners; having received formerly two or three letters from your self, & not knowing whether your selfe might not expect a few words from vs, to en-

forme what we received from you, & what disposall we made off it; with your gentle pardon for our former neglect heerin, I make bold at present to represent your account, as followeth.

Mr. Jno. Winthrop is *Dr.*		Mr. Jno. Winthrop is Contra *Cr.*	
30th of 8th (56) To a thimble 3*s.* To a bodkin, & a pair of Buttons, 10*s.* 3*d.*	0: 13: 3.	1660 15 of 4th. By eight Bushell 3 pecks and half of wheat, sold vnto Arthur Mason, at 4*s* 3*d* per bushell.	1: 17: 9.
To 3*s* left vnpaid formerly	0: 3: 0.	Sept. 5. Rec: by Goodman Codman ten bushells, sold at 4*s.* 3*d.*	2: 2: 6.
November 2d (59) To one silver Tunn.	2: 6: 0.	Sept. 17. By two skinns of Bever, 3 lb. 3 oz. sold at 7*s* lb.	1: 2: 4.
October 7: (60) To one silver Beker.	3: 10: 0.		
	6: 12: 3.		5: 02: 7.

Sir, — The first wheat I could have sold for 4*s* 6*d* the bushell, but that it had much damage by weevells. That I was forced to give him 3 months tyme to get 4*s* 3*d*, or else could have had but 4*s* in mony for it; but have in both done as well as I could for your worship; & likewise the bever I took my selfe; but indeed it was mean, & I gave you in it 3 or 4 shillings more then I should have given to another. Iff you please to accept what I have done as I have placed it in your account, I am heartily glad; iff not, I shall doe what you please. Your plate we have the number of ounces in our booke, & if, at any tyme with in a twelve month, you send other good old silver in the roome off it, we shall accept it, and return you the overplus, iff not for the remainder. You may at your own leasure send any grain, or furrs, which is most accomodable to your selfe.

[*The remainder of the letter is destroyed.*]

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Hull of Boston, rec: Apr. 2."

LETTERS OF WILLIAM LEETE.*

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To his much honoured worthy ffreind Mr. John Winthroppe, at Pequit, these present.

Sir, — I haue, according to your lettre from Seabrooke when you went hence, desired to haue accommodated you with a parcell of sugar, by the messenger that fetched some for Mr. Ffitch; but he comeing on ffoot, could not carry any more than what he came for, nor could I meet with another opportunity since, vntill now; nor can I prevaile with him to bring so much as I would haue sent, because the messenger comes on ffoot from Seabrooke to Pequet; wherefore I am necessitated to craue your acceptance of a very mean token, farre below a due expression of our bounden respects; but hopeing of your condiscendency vntill some further opportunity more fully to expresse our selues, we are bold to present you with what might be caryed now, with renewall of many thankes from my selfe & wife, for all your loue, presenting our respects to yourselfe & Mrs. Wintropp yet vnknowne, hopeing & desireing some further acquayntance, entreating you would please to bring somewhat, that you may conceiue best for our little daughter, and I shall rest Yours to be commanded

Will^m Leete.

Guilford: 6: of the 1: mo: (55.)

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete."

* William Leete came to New England with Eaton and Hopkins, in 1637. He signed the plantation covenant of New-Haven Colony, 1 June, 1639, was an Assistant there for fifteen years, from 1643 to 1657; Deputy Governor in 1658; and Governor from 1661 to 1665. On the union of the Colony with Connecticut, he was chosen an Assistant, and, in 1669, Deputy Governor. On the decease of Winthrop, in 1676, he succeeded him as Governor, and was annually re-elected to that office until his death, in 1683. When the regicides, Goffe and Whalley, sought refuge in New England, in 1660, Leete exerted himself for their protection. The letters of Leete here published show him to have been a highly accomplished writer. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshippfull Mr. John Winthrope, Governour at Hartford, Connectacut, these present.

Much Honoured & Deare Sir, — We are ashamed of our so continued & encreaseing boldnes, onely one comfort is that we haue to deale with a lasting ingenuity in the abstract. But, seeing it is so, I shall yet adventure to present another passage of our affliction on another childe, to your consideration for advice. Our youngest childe, about 9 weekes old, haueing euer since it was 3 or 4 dayes old, hath apeared full of red spots or pimples, somewhat like to measels, & seemed allwayes to be bigg, and to hang ouer on the eybrowes & lids; but now of late the eye lidds haue swelled & looked very red, burneing exceedingly, & now at last they are so sweld vp that the sight is vtterly closed in, that he could not see, nor for seuerall dayes, nor yet doth, & the verges of the lids, where they close, haue a white seame, like the white heads of wheales, wherein is matter; it is somewhat extraordinary, such as none of our woemen can tell that they haue euer seene the like. If it please the Lord to direct your thoughts to any meanes safe and suitable, in your apprehensions, for the cure, we entreat you would comunicate so soone as opportunity presents. And with our cheife thankfull respects to yourselfe & Mrs. Wintrope, Mrs. Lucy & the rest of yours, I commend you all to the Almightyes direction & blessing, & remaine

Yours most really to loue & serue you to his power,

Will^m^ Leete.

Guilford, 29°: 1: mo: (58.)

Graciana seemes somewhat to gather strength, though very little. But blessed be God for it, whome we beseech

for help to prise the least fauor, & to be prepared to beare & improue the greatest affliction.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshippfull John Winthrope, Esqr. at Hartford, these present.

Much Honoured & Deare Sir, — Both my selfe & wife desire to present our cheife respects to your selfe & sweet Mrs. Winthrop, with many thankes for your so curteous entertainment of our daughter, whome (we feare) hath beene a troublesome ghuest, but we haue learned long since to presume farr vpon your kindnes. But that we might no longer, at this time, proceed in so doeing with her, I haue sent my sonne & man, that so if you please to send her back, accompanyed with one of your daughters to change ayr here a while, we shall take it kindly, & shee may be accommodated hither, where shee or any of yours shalbe heartily welcome, whether now or at any other time. Sir, you were pleased to furnish my wife with more cordiall powder by John Crane, for Graciana, but no direction within or amongst the papers can we finde; but truly one of the most needfull directions is how to make her willing & apt to take it; for though it seemes very pleasant of itselfe, yet is she grown marvailous aukward & averse from takeing it in beer. Wherefore I would entreat you to prescribe to vs the varyety of wayes in which it may be giuen soe effectually; wee doubt els it may doe much lesse good, being giuen by force onely. Shee remaines much at the same passe still, with trembling leggs, &c., yet are not we without hope that the Lord may looke in favour vpon vs for cure in his good time;

meanewhile we begg of God the guift of faith & patience, &c., and desire euer to remaine

Your cordiall, endeared, & engaged ffreind to serue you WILL[M] LEETE.

GUILFORD, June: 22th, (58.)

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "[M]r. Leete."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor his much honoured worthy ffreind, John Winthropp, Esqr., these present.

HONOURED & DEARE SIR, — I perceiue by my cousen Newman that you haue had excercise from insolency of some Indians about Mr. Brewsters & Robert Leighs.* I did feare it might so come to passe, when as it should be knowne to them that the order made in (57), for repelling such hostile attempts to the affront & disturbance of the English, did extend but to oppose them in such actings with[in] one mile of any towne or plantation, & not about remoter ffarmes, which defect may draw on more boldnes in them, to our trouble, than Englishmen can well beare, & were better by such meanes haue beene endeauored to be prevented, then the consequences endured in these or worser events. But truely, (vnderstanding the Massachusets backwardnes to medle with such Indian matters, vnlesse vpon direct and intended war, or murder of English,) I know not what may be safely done vntill a meeting of the Comissioners, onely to warne them, & shew much dislike or offence taken at their so carying, & to giue them notice of intendment to complaine against

* See a letter of John Mason's to the Governor and General Court of Connecticut printed in this volume, p. 423. — EDS.

such actors. But I am assured of your greater wisedome to direct in such affaires than that any skill of mine can adde supply, onely because our Governour wished me to write my thoughts to yourselfe, I have presumed thus farr. Sir, my wife desired me to renew the report of our youngest childe his starting, & sometimes almost strangling ffitts, like convulsions, which haue more frequently afflicted the infant of late than formerly. We are apt to conceiue it probable to proceed from more than ordinary painfull breeding teeth, although he be a childe that is full of moist and grosse humors also, for which we haue giuen him some phisick, & doe hope he findes good thereby; yet if any thing you may please to thinke further necessary to be done, we should gladly haue your advice, & readily to obserue accordingly. His eyes are very often sore, which caused vs to vse all the glasse of eye watter vpon one and other of our children, sundry of them haueing need thereof, and findeing good thereby; we are againe bold to send the glasse by William Stone, with desire of a little further recruit. And with both our cheifest respects to your selfe & good Mrs. Winthropp, with all the rest of yours, all or any of whome we should be glad to see, & to show what loue or respects vnto, what is within our poore compasse, & with hearty desire of the Almightyes reward for all your labour of loue, I rest

Your assured louing ffreind to serue you,

Will^m^ Leete.

Guilford, Apr: 5t: 1659.

Our daughter Graciana begins to slide a chaire before her, & walke after it, after her ffeeble maner, which yet is somewhat more than formerly shee could doe; blessed be God, & thankes to you as his cheife instrument in that mercy hitherto.

Sir, I would desire when you have opportunity to speake with the Ffarmington Indians, that you would please to acquaint them that we haue taken & hired

some Mohegin Indians for to plante and worke for vs this sommer, whome we would not haue them to molest this somer, as we haue engaged them not to doe to those Indians.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete about ye Indian businesse & his childr: ilnesse."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshippfull John Wintropp: Esqr: Governour, These present. Hartford, at Connectacut.

Honoured & Deare Sir, — Wee have for some time waited with expectation to haue seene you at Guilford; but though more weighty imployments doe detaine you at home, yet, haueing an opportunity, I thought not meet any longer to delay our thankfullnes, for your many fauours, & late large token, very pretious to vs here; for we haue not had such a loafe in our house sundry yeares, so farr surpassing all our vsual Indian loaues. I wish we haue not too much vnfurnished Mrs. Wintropps closet; if so, truly we are in too meane a condition to make an answerable recruit. I hope our heart shall euer remaine free, if the Lord please to capacitate vs for some requitall: meane while we are enforced onely to returne wordes, with hearty affection, entreating your noble minde so to accept from those who haue no other comely thing to returne. Wee have no newes to present you with all, but wait daily for intelligence by your way. I received a lettre from Mr. Higginson, by Maior Hawthorne, but nothing of new newes in it, onely one passage by a shipp from Ffrance, that there is much beating vp of drums for volunteers, to enthrone the king of Scots againe in Scotland, with much confidence. What these strange changes may giue advantage to that way, none knowes. The good Lord turne all

for good to his people in Old & New England, and prepare vs all for the worst that may fall out. Wee both desire to present our cheifest respects to yourselfe and kinde Mrs. Wintropp, Mrs. Lucy, &c., & rest

Yours cordially to be commanded,

WILL^M^ LEETE.

John and Nab: present their seruice to you all.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet, Apr: 24, 1660."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the right worshippfull John Wintroppe, Esqr: Governour: these.

GUILFORD, ffebr: 7th 1660.

MUCH HONOURED SIR,—Yours of Jan: 26 (60) I receiued about Mr. Schellings* boy, who hath beene a great excercise to vs all, & a great affliction in speciall to our neighbours at Milford, who have suffred (as is calculated) a 100*li* or there abouts; & the lad apearing to be one of pregnant witt & very wicked, in his constant course, besides in this matter, himselfe acknowledgeing that he was vpwards of the age you mention; nor was any thing proued of counselors or confederates in the one fact, nor so much as pretended by himselfe in the 2d fact (for he fired 2 houses there).† We then (not knowing of any other freind at hand) sent vnto his grandfather, &c., before sentence, & told him that we sent to him or them out of respect, that if they had any thing to say in the behalfe of

---

* Jacob Skillinger was a Dutchman, who afterwards is found at New London. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

† The name of this youthful incendiary was Jacobus Loper, an apprentice to Hans Albers, a Dutchman, living at Milford. The proceedings of the court in the case of Loper may be seen at length in the "New-Haven Colony Records," ii. 384 *et seq.* — EDS.

their kinsman, it should be heard, or if they would doe any thing for him, in point of satisfying the damnifyed persons, whose right by law the boy was, for their reparation, it should be attended to prevent, what the law otherwise enioynes; & we should perswade to moderation, &c. They answered they could doe nothing, or would not, vntill by advise with his father at New London. We then granted liberty for them so to doe, and respite that part ofs settence for selling the boy, vntill a convenient time for returne from his father. Thus was the matter left at Court. But, since your lettre, I haue, out of respect to your selfe, sent to perswade further to moderation, & I doubt not but that if any reasonable sum were tendred, to the value of the boyes worth, though abundantly short of their losse, I should prevaile to issue with them, which I hope wilbe apprehended to bee so much as rule and reason calls for. If not, I hope I should receiue anyfurther good advise, or show any iust fauour you should request, who, I am assured, would moue for nothing contrary to righteousnes. Wee aprehend those seamen you mentioned were a wicked crew, and like to doe as bad exploits. But its *secundum allegata et probata, &c*, that must guide vs in sentence. I thanke you for your former lettre & newes, but haue nothing in like kinde to repay or returne, onely with hearty & cheifest respects to yourselfe, good Mrs. Wintroppe, with all yours presented, intimating our present state of health, throughout our family, who all present their seruice, &c. I rest

Yours cordially, &c. WILL^M^ LEETE.

I entreat your fauour in respect of 2 Indians & their wiues. The name of the one Wutsnequam, the other is one that the Englishmen ordinarily call Strongliquors; two Mohegins, that doe liue as seruants vnto mee for planting corne, cutting wood, &c., this winter & the next sumer, & haue kept here, not medling with the quarrels

of Vncus, &c.; that you would please tell your Indians of them & their relation to mee, & that you expect they should obserue the Comissioners order in respect to such Indians, not to molest them, while they so serue the English, but that they goe & come in safty, about such occasions for the English, in any of the Colonyes.

Wm. Leete.

Sir, — I am bold to adde a word more about my son Andrews starting fits, which doe againe begin, though as yet not to conuulsions, stupifying as formerly; to entreat your help by such meanes as you think best. Henry Lines tells vs that he hath beene so, & found help by some phisick you gaue him, but not your Rubila: we ernestly entreat you would consider vs in the matter, & doe as the Lord shall direct, & so further oblige vs to be

Yours, &c. Will^m Leete.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete, rec: Feb: 19: 1660."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshippfull John Wintroppe, Esqr., Governour at Hartford, Connectacut, these.

Honoured & Dear Sir, — I am sorry that I haue slipped some opportunityes of late, for writeing to present our respects, &c. But the true reason was that I expected to haue seene you, either here or at Newhaven before now (as we heard), yet seeing that your occasions doe still deferre your comeing, I thought not longer to delay, & I am the rather hastened to acquaint you with a matter which is fallen out, by an arrest which Mr. Rossiter, (out of his slight esteeme of publique instruments in this Colony, & confident boasting of his great interest with you) hath, by pur-

suit of one of our neighbours to Seabrooke, laid vpon him there; but withall tells him that his ayme is rather at mee in that matter, wishing him to get mee to be his atturney, which, though I chuse not as so becomeing an employment, yet am resolued not to disowne the buisines, nor to be outdared by him in that which is the ground of the mans speaking about Mr. Rossiter, which was, that when I heard how Mr. Rossiter had reported against me, that I had taken 20*li per annum* seuerall yeares, which was (as he saith) granted to mee but for one yeare; I showed my selfe troubled at his speech, & expressed that I thought it was in effect, as to say, that I had cousened the Towne of 20*li per annum*. Now this neighbour relateing my sence of his speech, is thus catched vp and handled, & boasting expressions of great apearance from Connectacut on Mr. Rossiters behalfe. We are slow to beleeue any such matter, against the freindship or faithfullnes of neighbours combined to encourage each other mutually in jurisdiccion, yet I thought meet to acquaint your selfe, & by you the rest of your magistrates (as you please) with these occasions, that so you may improue your interest to proteckt any vnneighbourly or vnpeacable actings in these more perilous times, that may be contriued by such who may be disposed to widen or augment differences & diuisions. The matter is depending for an issue at our Court of Magistrates, betweene mee & Mr. Rossiter, I beeing vrged thereto by these his dareing doeings. And I hope, vpon that & other accounts, respecting him, iustice wilbe done (if the Lord assist) so that I would hope there wilbe no necessity for you to trade or trouble your selues, in a matter so catched out of our handes, to set your Court on work to vye their iudgments with ours. If you shall think fit to counsell or caution vs in that or any thing els, according to your godly wisedome and Christian loue hitherto practised betweene these jurisdiccions, I doubt not but it wilbe respectfully considered, in sence of our owne ffeeblenes.

And we have strong confidence that no perversnes in any shall by you be gratifyed, to publique inconvenience; wherefore I shall say no more, hauing no newes to transcribe, but onely presenting mine, my wiues & childrens loue, respects & seruice to your selfe, Mrs. Wintropp, Mr. Waight, Mrs. Lucy, &c., I commend you [to] the Lord. I rest

Yours euer cordiall to command WILL^M^ LEETE.

GUILFORD, Apr: 11th (61)

My wife entreats some more of your phisick, although shee feareth it to haue very contrary operations in Mr. Rossiters stomach.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete, Rec: Apr: 12, 1661."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshippfull John Wintroppe, Esqr.

HONOURED SIR,—I waited with expectation to haue seene you at Guilford or met you at New Hauen, to haue presented you with something I had prepared, petition wise, for the king; that, if you had pleased, we might haue had your furtherance about it; but not meeting you, I went towards New London, thinking to finde you there; but when I came at Seabrooke, I heard of your being gone neare a week before,* and so I was wholly disapointed; since which time I haue sent it to the Councell at Boston, as also a letter from our Generall Court, signifying our accord to owne their adresse, & to acknowledge our selues in like relation & with like affection to his Majestie. All which I suppose we should haue done by you, could we haue seene you & yours, & had your consent; for we are

* Winthrop was now on his way to London, on the business of the Charter, and may at this date have sailed. — EDS.

desirous euer to maintaine the stamp of the Vnited Colonyes; but seeing wee were disapointed, we were necessitated to apply our selues to the Bay, & are thither now sending this enclosed letter & petition, yet least any miscarying or interruption there should fall out as from them, & for fuller testimony of vs & our loyalty to his Majestie .
I haue sent th . . . . . .
selfe would st . . . . . .
for our ac . . . . . .
. . . . . .
& hope it shall not meet with a check from his Maiestie. If it should, it would greiue me, but if it finde fauour, & herein his Maiesties clemency shall further shine, as towards such despised ones; it will bring forth (I beleeue) great cheering & cordiallnes, with growth of loue & loyalty; which I shall seek to further as I shalbe in capacity. Good Sir, minde vs, & with first opportunityes please to deale vpon our account. I haue written to the Bay, that some apt personage may be procured to be the Common Agent for New England, to wait vpon all turnes when any thing *pro* or *con* sho[uld be] on hand about New Englands affaires, [*torn*] which, I am informed, they think needfull also. I wish that you & wee could procure one Pattent, to reach beyond Delawar,* where we have expended a 1000*li* to procure Indian title, veiw, & begin to possesse. If warr should arise betweene Holland & England, it might suit the kings interest; a little assistance might so reduce all to England. But our chiefe ayme is to purchase our owne peace, which I desire wee all pursue, as I hope you will, & for which we pray, as for your health, successe, and welfare, with chiefest respects to your selfe, Mr. Ffitts & Mr. Wait,† wishing your safe &

* See, in reference to the projected settlement upon the Delaware, the "New-Haven Colony Records," ii. 128, *et seq.* — Eds.

† Fitz John and Wait Still, the two sons of John Winthrop, Jun. — Eds.

speedy returne to your good ffamily & vs that long for it, resting Yours cordially to loue & honour you,

WILL^M^ LEETE.

GUILFORD, Aug: 6, (61)

Pray Sir, giue vs a word of intelligence how matters goe, timely, as may concerne vs.

If anything be needfull as to forme or emendation in writeing, Good Sir, let it be done, & we shall recompence it.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr: Governour of Connectacut Col: These dd.

MUCH HONOURED & DEAR SIR, — By this first opportunity with or indeed somewhat before my meet capacity to write, by reason of extraordinary paine in the one side of my face & teeth, I have adventured to performe that duty to congratulate your so safe returne,* which hath long been sought, waited & hoped for, as the medium to bring a comfortable issue to our perturbing excercises, allwayes giueing out my confident apprehensions of your acting in the Pattent buisinesse so as to promote peace & loue to mutuall satisfaccion, without any intendment to infringe our liberty or priveledges in the least thereby, when you came to manifest your ingenious sence of thinges; and therefore all my labouring with our neighbours of Connectacut hath beene for a respite of all actings till your returne, & that no preparations might be giuen in that interim, to hinder a louing accord & complyance betweene vs, which

* Winthrop had now but recently returned to Connecticut, from his visit to London. See letter addressed to him, from Davenport, on page 521. — EDS.

truely I am & euer haue beene a freind to encourage, according as I haue said, or at any time wrote to your selfe or Mr. Stone. But I fear some phisitians of our time may be too highly conceited of cureing diseases by violent fomentations, which I euer iudged not to be your method, but rather by graduall ripening & softning supplements, which I am yet more confirmed to beleeue since I see your letter vnto Maiour Mason, a coppy whereof Maior Thomson & Mr. Scot sent inclosed (as they say) in one from them, all which letters haue beene opened & tossed vp & downe about the cuntrey in reports, before they came to my veiw, which is but euen now done, & so if any inconvenience be thereby occasioned, I hope you will not impute it vnto me. But truly I hear of great irritations of spirits amongst our people, by reports of opposite speeches or writeings, that are said to come from yourselfe; but I hope all will come to a fair reconcilement in due time, & which I still wait & long for. Thus hopeing you will pardon the want of more ample expressions, or other attendance vpon you, in time of my long continueing illnes, with all humble & best respects presented to your selfe, good Mrs. Wintrop, Mr. Ffitz John, Mr. Wait, & all yours, I take leaue, resting

Your assured lo: ffreind to serue,

WILL[M] LEETE.

GUILFORD, June 25, (63)

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet. Recev: Jun: 25, 1663."

On a slip of paper, folded around this and the preceding letter, "Mr. Leet his letter about procuring Pattent."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshippfull John Wintrope Esqr., Governour of Connectacut Colony, at Hartford, These.

Much honoured Sir, — In my last I informed you of your very acceptable lettre sent vs by Maiour Thompson & Mr. Scot ioyntly attesting it; the purport whereof suited well with mine to you in England, to make your Pattent a covert, but no controule to our Jurisdiccion, vntill we accorded with mutuall satisfacon to become one, which I have beene, & still am a freind to promoue in a righteous & amicable way.* But truely (I think) a iust expedient hath not hitherto beene seasonably attended to accomplish the same; but rather that which hath irritated, & so conduced to the contrary; which to behold, hath beene a griefe to some. To see the strings of the instrument so stretched as to make it vntunable to play in consort, the cheife musick which I delight to hear, especially in iarring times; & therefore hoped & longed to see it taken into the hand of a more knowing artist, & one apt & inclined to make vniteing & composeing melody, as (in my vnderstanding) was sweetly begun to be sounded in the language of your letter. But as yet we finde not such harmonious effects, to ensue in a practicall way, as were to be wished for. Wherefore I am desired by our Comittee, or some of them, to write vnto your sélfe, ernestly entreating, that you would please to send vs a plaine, positiue, & particular answer in writeing to this question, viz., whither the contents of that your letter aforesaid, shalbe performed to vs or no, according to the genuine sence thereof. Good Sir, be pleased that either your owne, or your Comittees

* Leete was not personally opposed to the union of New Haven and Connecticut, as were Davenport and the other public men of the former colony. See Davenport's letter on page 521. — Eds.

answer may be sent vs by Mr. Peirson, who intends to visit & wait vpon you for the same, as I also should haue done, had not something more than ordinary interrupted, together with some hopes we might enioy your presence here, before your goeing into the Bay, as was intimated to vs. So with many thankes & cheifest respects presented from my selfe & wife vnto you all, acknowledging our great engagement, for your loue & sympathy in your last expressed, I take leaue & remaine

Your cordiall ffreind & servant,

WILL^{M} LEETE.

GUILFORD, July 20: 1663.

SIR, — Hearing that you sought for your owne coppy, but could not finde it when Mr. Jones & Mr. John Davenport were with you, I haue hereinclosed sent a true coppy of your letter as it came to my handes.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete, rec: July 22, 1663."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured John Wintroppe Esqr., Governour at Hartford, These.

MUCH HONOURED SIR, — I comeing to New Hauen, heard a large, ample testimony giuen in concerneing the violent surprisall of Capt. Scot, to be as followeth, viz: That he (by an vnvsuall warrant vnder the hand of a Mag: charged with some delinquency touching the King) was in hostile wise seised, in time of parly, with promise of safty, by a kinde of an army, part English, & part Indians, at hand; & taken violently from off his owne land & possession, held by Pattent vnder the Broadseal, then & there showed vnto the surprisours, as also was a Comission vnder the Kings signe manuall, for his conduct & assistance. This

besides that knowne buisinesse of a letter to the four Colonyes, with which he is in present pursuit of his Majesties pleasure thereby declared, & is daily expected by our confederates to dispatch that occasion. Yet all seemes to be slighted, & he, his Majesties domestick or publique servant, & one of considerable interest & expectation at Court; also a knowne freind to this Cuntry, an enemy to the N: E: enemyes, & that hath effectually prevailed against them to divert some designes hazardous to the cuntry (as we are credibly informed by a person of eminency from Boston); & yet he must be so ignominiously handled & interrupted. And that after, if not because in part, he asserts the Kings prerogatiue & the Dukes interest vpon Long Island, opposite to Connectacuts claime by the Charter, or at least to some Gent: there, manageing with boldnes vpon that account; and opposite to the Dutch encroachments vpon some English towneshipps there, who are (by Articles in his custody) reduced to their soueraigne. This seemes strange to me, as (I beleeue) it will to your selfe, when you know of it, & how he hath beene branded with the infamy of a notorious malefactor, & so dealt with all thus farr. Wherefore I could not forbear (in faithfullnes & loue to your selfe & all others of your Magistrates & Gent: as are yet free of these actings) but cautionarily to signify my desires, that you would keep clear from all guilt by intermedleing, or tacite consenting therevnto, but to manifest the contrary & interpose: ffor assuredly this action, & the maner of it (as it is attested) is like to be so vniuersally euilly resented in N. E. & in Old, that it will gaine some to prosecute for vindication in a high degree, what euer doe become of Mr. Scots person; also (I fear) Mr. Gold is like to make vse of this, but as a slender apology to wipe out the dint of his charge, nor any other who may haue sentenced Mr. Scot before he be heard, & that fatally, if some testimonyes be true; who also say that your selfe, Maior Mason, Mr. Daniell Clarke & others that Mr. Woolcot

showed your selues against such fetching vp, or so notorious charging Capt: Scot. Doubtlesse it is not like to proue an expedient for quiet accomodation of the cuntry, if my vnderstanding faile not.*

I therefore (knowing your wisdome, faithfullnes, and moderation) thought it both Christian & freindly duty to suggest as before, and that we might acquit our selues from all maner of silent complyance with doings of that nature, but to witnes the contrary in dislike. If you shall desire to know an account of some caryages by vs in favour to the Capt: vpon his pursuance of [his] Maiesties said seruice, I suppose Leiftenant Ffiler can informe, vnto whome I haue told the substance of our action. And (possibly) some Gent: of ours may also visit you at Hartford the next weeke, & discourse matters as freinds to peace. If any scruple or obiection shall bee, that dealing or witnessing ought to be in point of sin or irregularity charged, it wilbe a matter considerable vnto whose cogniscance it properly belongs, while he did reside vnder the priveledge of his owne Charter; what the persons are informeing or witnessing, & vpon what occasion; also what exceptions he makes against the persons competency to iudge with you; & what ffairnes of tender hee makes to submit to a tryall by any others in the Cuntry, or in England before his owne Master, to stand or fall, &c. But I fear I may be too tedious, & shall therefore comend your selfe & the whole matter to the most holy, gracious, & wise God, to accomplish his owne praise in his owne way, & with all honourable respect & loue presented, rest

Sir, Yours cordially to serue,

WILL^M LEETE.

NEWHAUEN, Mar. 31: (64)

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete."

---

* See Davenport's letter to Winthrop, p. 525. — EDS.

WILLIAM LEETE AND ROBERT CHAPMAN * TO THE GOVERNOR AND ASSISTANTS OF CONNECTICUT.

ffor the much honoured Governour John Wintroppe, Esqr. & Magistrates at Connectacut, These present.

Honoured Gentlemen, — Vpon the last Wednesday in June, 1665, we went to New London, according to the order of the General Assembly,† which we there desired Mr. Bruen to read & record, as also to take notice of our appearance there, to attend the same. Thither came Vncus, & made his complaint of sundry wrongs which he had received from the English, for non-performance of an old Covenant made with the Gentlemen at Hartford; & for that seurall tracts of his land are possessed & witheld from him, part by the inhabitants of New London, part at Athemonosseck, some at Mattabeseck, some about Shatetucket; no agreement being as yet made with him, nor due satisfaction giuen to him for the same; by which meanes he is vtterly impoverished & so dispoiled of his cuntry: that he hath not a competency of land left for himselfe & his people to subsist vpon: he further saith, that he hath for sundry yeares addressed himselfe to the Court at Hartford, to be heard & righted, but could neuer be attended for an issue. Wherefore he is weary of such Court attendance, intimating that if (vpon this once more signification of ours) there be no effectuall course taken for a faire & iust issue, he then shalbe enforced to apply himselfe vnto King Charles his Commissioners for releife. Now fforasmuch as we were not in a capacity to trade in the disquisition and determination of those matters, by reason of the faileing of some of the Comittee apointed,

* Robert Chapman was of Saybrook. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† See the order in Connecticut Colonial Records, ii. 16. A union of the government of New Haven and Connecticut having taken place, Leete was, at the election, 11th of May of this year, chosen an Assistant. — Eds.

yet hearing these cryes & clamors, we thought it our duty to make report thereof vnto yourselues, with desire that you would improue your discretions to treat & deale with him yourselues, or accord with him about a refferrence vnto meet persons, that may bring matters to a settled issue; & that a ffirme & clear title may be gained & stated, of all the landes which the English doe possesse, of that which he either offerrs to proue his, or hath specious pretences to claime an interest in; that so all showes of scandall before the natiues may be remoued, & trouble to the cuntry from them may be prevented, so much as in vs lyeth. New London men made a tender of some satisfaccion to Vncus, according to a Court Order formerly, but that satisfyed not, because he said that he could not spare all the land they desired, nor accept the price; at which the Towne seemes to be much troubled. We did what we could to mediate betweene them, but to no availe. The good Lord direct you in a way for peace with righteousnes in this & euery other buisines; which is the prayer of Gentlemen Your humble seruants,

WILL^M^ LEETE.
ROBERT CHAPMAN.

NEW LONDON, June 30th, 1665.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete & Mr. Chapman from N: London, about Vncas. Rec: Jul: 9: 1665."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshipfull John Wintroppe, Esqr., Governour of Connectacut Colony, These.

HONOURED SIR, — I being prevented (by your more suden departure from Hartfourd) of speaking with yourselfe there, as I had purposed to doe, in pursuance of the

matter respecting my son & Mr. Jordans davghter,* whose affections seeme to be inseparably knit each ton'ta other, & so obseruably noted to be throughout the cuntry, so as it would be a thing destructiue to themselues & dishonorable to vs all, if Mr. Jordan should not consent; about which we (as yet) haue no letter from him, this year, neither are like to haue, in answer to my propositions sent to him the last year, but came not to his hand, as Mr. Whitfeild writes. I therefore (being about to send the same againe to him, by the first season or opportunity of sending for England) am bold to entreat that favour, which you so freely tendred me as we rode together from Newhauen to Hartford, the last spring, on that behalfe, viz: to write to Mr. Jordan, & improue your interêst & argument both, to gaine his consent. In our discourse I told you that I had signifyed to Mr. Jordan that I would pay the iust price for Mr. Jordans accommodations of land in Guilford, & on it build a comfortable house, & giue it my son, & ioynture his daughter in it; which I againe shall tender, or to giue my son two hundred pounds in other cuntry pay, if he shall chuse that rather. Now, kinde Sir, if you please to set in with me vpon the account, & to set on the matter by better illustration than I may or can comelyly speak in my owne case, or please to hint a word of what you conceiue may be hopefull in point of some more land to be added to my son, as from the cuntry, by your fauour to the match, (possibly) it may goe farr with Mr. Jordan, especially if you please to get some of your more considerable ffreinds to promoue it; all which I leaue to your better discretion to manage, onely doe ernestly desire that you would not omit the first opportunity to send & to doe vs the vtmost furtherance you can, as in a matter of great moment with vs, & so ourselues &

* Andrew, son of Governor William Leete, married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Jordan, 1st June, 1669. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

both the young ones shall acknowledge, greatly bound to honour & serue you: were not the separation personally ruinous, & that mutually, it would not so much affect vs; yet, haueing done our duty, we desire to leaue it with the Lord; & with all honourable respects presented, rest:

Yours cordially to serue,

WILL^M LEETE:

SEPT: 12: (66)

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr., Governour at Hartford, Connectacut, These.

GUILFORD, NOV: 19: (66).

MUCH HONOURED SIR, — I received a lettre from Mr. John Allin, dat. Nov: 15 (66), signed by your order, & seuerall Assistants there, concerneing one Dennis Crompton, who had beene summoned to our County Court, but refused to apeare, so that stands there still depending for an issue, & he to be dealt withall, according to law in that case provided, if not legally prevented. The short of the case is, that one John Bishop & the said Dennis did secretly take, & in the euening or night carry into another towne & sell a mare of another mans: this Dennis being one that hath beene found tardy in seuerall pilferings before. Of this the man complaineing to me, but conceiuing the proofe not yet so full as might be requisite, I granted him a warrant of hue & cry, to search after the mare which, (he said) he apprehended to be stolen, & to gaine an authentick discouery of the persons that had convayed her away; that so the estate might be returned to the owner, the persons examined, & dealt withall according to law, by which hue & cry the mare was found out, & the

persons also were discouered. Then she was deliuered by Mr. Griswold to the messengers of that warrant accordingly, & so into the handes of the law; but presently taken out of their handes by his atachment, without mentioning therein the action laid, the person against whome, or the time when to be prosecuted. The said messengers returneing & so reporting, I gaue a warrant to bring the persons to examination, & they not denying the fact, but John Bishop pretending a right to the mare, & refuseing to put in security to answer the plaintiffe, I let it passe vnder an ordinary summons. They being settled inhabitants here, herein (I think) I went below what I might, if not what I should haue done, as the case is circumstanced; yet I finde not in that law (which is prouided against robbing or theft of all sorts of goodes whatsoeuer) any iniunction to send to prison or require bail, but onely a liberty so to doe. Now, Sir, that being all the law which is here made to administer by in such cases or facts, which law sets a penalty below life, limbe, or banishment, I know no other Court but that of the County, which I might imediately bring them vnto for a tryall, without doeing iniury to the County priveledge, which is their due, & our duty by oath to make good vnto them, for the Common weale & peace sake & conscience to Godward. If I haue erred, I entreat your freindly advice & light from the law here established for conviction & reformation; that so I may not be left in a streight betwixt the County and yourselues at Connectacut, or to hazard the offending of the one or the other, by breach of law; or most of all to offend God or conscience. Thus haueing related what of the law I know, as to this case, & to County Courts, in reference therevnto, I pray you to let me know the law by which a County Court may be interdicted from proceeding in such a case depending before them; or how a matter within their limits and cogniscance can be taken out of their handes (without their consent & before issue there) by any of

our lawes, that I may acquaint others therewithall who are also Magistrates vnder oath bound to obserue the same, & I hope will; that all things may be caryed on amongst vs so as that righteousnes, loue, & peace may be maintained, by our mutuall encourageing & helping each other, & iniquity may stopp her mouth. Not els, but our cheife respects presented to your selfe & Mrs. Wintroppe, &c., resting Yours to honour, loue, and serue,

WILL^M LEETE.

Good Sir, vouchsafe me a plenary answer by the bearer to the premises; as also a word whither you receiued a lettre from me into the Bay, by Mr. Walker, & what you were pleased to doe for my son Andrew in that matter specifyed.*

[The following reply to this letter is found on the same sheet, in the handwriting of John Winthrop, Jr.]

The Answer to the letter above written was as followeth:

HARTFORD, Nov: 30: 1666.

HONORED SIR, — Yours of Nov: 19: I received this afternoone. I suppose Mr. J. Allin hath written fully about the matter your letter mentions. Being desired by the Magistrates, who could know nothing of the case but what the mans owne confession did produce, which was so plaine an acknowledgment that he had failed appearance at the County Court, that I could on the suddaine thinke of no way but that he must be committed, which all the Magistrates present did concur in their apprehensions therein; only vpon consideration, the case might admitt security to be given for his appearance, the magistrates thought it necessary to bind him over to the next Court of Assistants, that being (as they remember) before that County Court, &, if there be cause, they may remitt them to the

* See the preceding letter, dated Sept. 12, 1666. — EDS.

County Court; but the Magistrates heere did all looke at the act, so farr as his owne acknowledgement did make it knowne to them, to deserve no lesse then what was done, or (as was mentioned before) to be imprisoned; which yet vpon further consideration they saw cause to abate: but for the case itselfe, that he should have answered, there could not heere be any way of inquiry into it; but both that & the other crime of neglecting his appearance according to summons, I doubt not but the Court will doe therein according to what shall appeare vpon the hearing, in a righteous proceeding, according to the nature & meritt of the crimes, with a due observance of all iust priviledges claimed or necessary for County Courts; and wilbe, I beleive, zealous for establishment of the free current of justice in them, & for the punishment of any contempt, or disapointment of the due procedure of the course of Judicature, as well there, as in any other Court. I see no cause that you should imagine any imputation or blame vpon what you did in giving out an ordinary summons: I know it wilbe well approved of all, and you may gather so much in that you see the magistrates heere have bound him over to answer for not attending that summons, though no otherwise notified to them but by his owne relation; and you may be assured they had no other consideration therein of the case for which he was summoned to answer, then that some fitt course by that meanes might be then appointed for the due triall of that also, that the way of Justice might not be intercepted or evaded. You need not doubt of any errour in that your proceeding; it was the right way you tooke to bring it to the County Court, as far as I can judge; and you see all the Magistrates that were then heere, have testified of his neglect, of not accordingly answering when he was inioyned. I hope it is and wilbe the desire & indeavour of the magistrates heere to concur with you, that all things may (as you will advise) be caried on amongst vs so as that righteousnesse,

love, and peace may be mainteined by mutuall incouragement, and is also the concuring desire of

Your affectionate freind, J. W.

For my honored frend, William Leet, Esquire.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete: rec: Nov: 30, 1666."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP.

ffor the Right Worshippfull John Wintroppe, Esqr. Governour at Hartford. These.

Honoured Sir, — I haue beene ernestly moued by a neighbour to entreat your consideration & help for their childe, who is greatly afflicted with a weakenes in his back, so that he growes fast towards being vselesse & helplesse, as his elder brother is already, & past cure (in their & others apprehensions.) I fear so of this, if the Lord afford not some speedy help: wherefore I beseech you to consider their affliction, & if any thing can be advised or done, I pray let vs vnderstand what & when you can, & they will send one to wait on you for it. Goodman Hollibut hath seene the lad, & can relate or describe his state, & will send backe what you shall please to write, in which letter I would entreat a word of your newes from England, as your leasure will permit, or so farr as may be comunicated, touching [the] Kings matters, &c. Not els but all honourable respects presented from my selfe & wife, & all ours, vnto your selfe, Mrs. Wintrope, the Captaine, Mr. Wait, & all yours, resting

Yours endeared & obliged to serue, Will^m^ Leete.

Guilford, Mar: 21: (67)

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. W: Leete, about a sick child of one in Gilford: rec. Mar. 28: 1667."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured Governour Jo : Wintroppe, Esqr. at Hartford. These present.

July 5t: (69)

Much Honoured Sir, — I receiued your last lettre, dated June 30, (69), wherein you are pleased to desire me to stop an execution that had long since beene granted by our County Court, at which I was not present when it was done, yet, so soone as I receiued your lettre, I spake with our Townes Agents in that case, & with the constable, manifesting what I had receiued from your selfe, & adioyneing my request for such a suspencion, out of my respects to your selfe & the rest of the magistrates mentioned. The answer they gaue me was, that it was too late to stop the execution, ffor it was serued already, & the day apointed for apprisment & issue, according to Mr. Rossiters agreement. I desired them to respite that vntill I might write to your selfe about it; that, (with much backwardnes) they consented to, & with proviso that it might be speedy & without detriment to the case. I promised to send, so soone as I had an opportunity; but they are so iealous of my slownes & his subtlety to divert or procrastinate from an issue, & make them further trouble hereby, that I had much adoe to prevaile, because I was not furnished with the particular reasons to convince them of the regularity or important cause to stopp. They say he chose & agreed to goe to the County Court ffor tryall, & promised to attend it; yet there came not, nor impowered an atturney to plead his cause, & onely sent papers, as to contemne & abuse the Court; nullifying their authority, &c.: whereas he might haue showed any iust plea to vindicate his cause, but did not, & so the Court proceeded & granted this execution in May last, which

hath since beene deferred till of late, to see whither he would haue presented any thing at the Generall Court about it (as was intimated or giuen out) but they meeting with nothing there, they thought it necessary, vpon their trust committed to them by the Towne, to denie the execution, as they haue done. They are apt to wonder that Mr. Rossiter should so long be borne with, while he goes on to trouble both County, Towne & Cuntry, with unnecessary pleas and papers, so abusiue; & think it were well, if yourselfe & the gentlemen there would please to set themselues to an endeavour to prevent; yet this is suggested with humble submission to your wisedome & pleasure therein, but such talke I meet withall, & doe therefore hint it & leaue it; I being looked at to haue beene the most backward to doe iustice against Mr. Rossiter, which hath made him encrease in those boldnesses, &c. But I am necessitated to break off too abruptly, with giueing thankes for your loueing lettres, begging pardon for this decurtnes, & presenting all best respects to your selfe & all; ffrom him who is Your honours devoted to serue:

W: Leet.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet: recd. July, 7, 1669."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the Right Worshippfull John Wintroppe, Esqr., Governour of Connectact Colony at Hartford, These.

Right Worshipfull & much honoured Sir, — Hearing this night late of your returne from Boston, I thought convenient to giue your honour & the gentlemen at Hartford some account of what my selfe & the Magistrates have been pressed to doe in refference to preseruing the Churches peace, in their iust rights, in carying on the

administracions in publique at Stratford * as the enclosed will show. The necessity of obseruance of our lawes, the honour of God, the sanctification of his sabbaths, the peace & welfare of the Church, hath put vs vpon so doeing, & so presently; there haueing beene done too much to the contrary that way already there; otherwise we should haue forborne vntill a more generall consult with your selfe & the gentlemen there. But haueing done, we doubted to recall our action, yet haue we suspended the declaration thereof at Stratford, vntill this messenger, Mr. Chanceys, returne, hopeing that your approbation thereof may adde strength to the thing, praying that you would put your further sanction thereto, to still those troubles, vntill the Generall Court shall see cause to say more to the case, or contriue any further expedient. I cannot further enlarge so late in the night, but onely congratulate your welcome & safe returne, with seruice & best respects to your selfe, Mrs. Wintroppe, & all yours, resting Yours cordially, to be comanded,

WILL^M LEETE.

NEWHAVEN, Nov: 24. (69)

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete. Nov: 24: 1669."

[ORDER OF THE MAGISTRATES AT NEW HAVEN, ENCLOSED IN THE PRECEDING LETTER.]

1. Considering that Mr. Walker & those with him never had any Court graunt to cary on publique ministerial exercises on the Lords Dayes, in the meeting house att Stratford, but as it was limited by the Order in May last, & terminated in October following to end: soe that

* The writer refers to the troubles connected with the settlement of the Rev. Zechariah Walker, over a portion of the church in Stratford, Conn. Mr. Walker was born in Boston, in 1637; and was educated, according to Mather, at Harvard College, but left without obtaining a degree. He preached first at Jamaica, L.I.; but removed, in 1668, to Stratford. For an account of the ecclesiastical difficulties in this church, see Cothren's "History of Ancient Woodbury," pp. 33–36, 48–52, 115–121, &c., and "Public Records of Conn.," ii. 110, 111, 123, 124. — EDS.

then they had non left by law to pretend to, but which shold be after graunted.

2. Non such was to them after graunted by October Generall Court, vnles the Church there be willing. Soe that the Church not being willing, that Court graunts them not liberty soe to exercise there.

3. The said Generall Court (in case of such vnwillingnes or not agreeing by the Church) graunt them liberty to meet distinct & by themselves apart, elswhere.

4. The Court at Ffairefield adviseth & expects theire carefull obseruance of the Courts graunt & order; accounting delinquency therein for a misdemeanour to be wittnessed against as well in that party as any other.

5. All such misdemeanours being against lawe made for Church Liberty, peace & proteccion, in caryeing on theire publique Administracions for Sanctificacion of the Saboath; wee take ourselvs oblidged by oath to withstand & forbid, as Magistrats & keepers of peace & order for God & the King in this Colony.

Theise are therefore in his Majesties name to require & injoyne Mr. Walker & those with him to forbeare to manage or cary on any of his Ministeriall exercises in publique worships, in the meeting house at Stratford, on Lords days or other dayes, to the hinderance of the said Churches Administracions, on any part of the day, vntill the Generall Court shall see cause to giue further order, as they will answear the contrary at theire perill.

Wm. Leet.
Wm. Jones.
Benjamin Ffen.

N: Haven, 24: November: 1669.

To the Constable of Stratford, to be published to those concernd.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Copy of the Magistrates Order at N: Haven, about Mr. Walker, &c."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

NEWHAUEN, Apr: 13: 1671:

HONOURED SIR, — Your courteous lettres, both of the 6th & 7th instant, I received, together with the novall and medicinall papers inclosed, as an additionall & coniunct testimony of your freindly & benevolent frame remaineing towards vs, who are both vnworthy & vnable to retaliate. I thanke you for such sympathy & sence of my then more infirme state, by all which you are pleased to multiply obligacions, & bring vs further into debt who are too much insolvent already: yet I trust there remaineth a willing minde when as our abilityes & opportunityes may be wanting. I haue hereinclosed Governour Louelace his lettre according to your order; but the instructions are with Mr. Eliot for perusall, as also was apointed. Here is no newes with vs, but of Mr. Malbyes ariuall safe at Nevis; that ship he went in being there cast away by herracane after the goodes were landed, & he since gone for England. Goodman Glover of N: H: saith that he heard at Long Island that Capt. Peirce was ariued in England safe; but when I asked him who told him so, he had forgot; which makes me to desire to haue some better footing for beleife. Here is also much speech about Commissioners & ffriggots comeing to N: E: but how that intelligence comes is also darke & doubtfull. I reioyce to hear of the health of all your family at home & abroad; sorry to hear of the greife & damage to those of your relations at Antego,* though vnknowne. It is good newes to hear of the two churches at Hartford thriueing in their distinct state. The good Lord grant an encreaseing of brotherly loue in the simplicity of the gospell. Notwithstanding our different

* Winthrop's brother Samuel lived at Antigua, of which island he was Deputy Governor. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

attainments in light disciplinary, but yet there may be a ioyntly aymeing to lift vp Jesus Christ in holynes both of heart & life; that so the brazen wall of our security may yet stand; & our beautifull gate of spirrituall priveledges may not be burnt vp; but peace & truth may be our portion to enioy all our dayes, & left to our posterity, by wisedome & faithfullnes in our generation, [a] worke incumbent on vs. Please to favour vs with what newes may come to hand, as your leasure & opportunityes will permit. I shall not be further troublesome at present, onely to present you with all service & best respects, & that to all yours, in behalfe of all mine, who am

Yours cordially to honour & serue,

WILL^M LEETE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leete.

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

GUILFORD, December 11th, (71)

HONOURED SIR, — Hearing this day of your returne from Boston, where (as was reported) you had beene vnder some illnes or indisposition of body, which makes your safe returne more gladsome newes, & a word of the certainty from yourselfe may augment the consolation in vs, who (I hope) doe heartily reioyce in your welfare vniuersall, though our capacity be very feeble to minister any furtherance significant; as you are both apt & able for vs to doe. We haue no newes to present you withall but hearkening after what may come by your selfe, vpon so late a returne from Boston, by this bearer, whome I send with my youngest daughter,* that comes to dwell with

* Probably Graciana, the youngest daughter then surviving, who "lived long infirm in body and mind." — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

Sergeant Watts, I purposeing that she should there continue for a settlement, as I am advised by some freinds at Hartford; & I am the more encouraged, for that she may be so near a tender inspector, to see how it fares with her in seuerall respects. She wants a naturall mothers helpfullnes;* yet I trust the Father of mercyes will looke after her, & help me in all parentall duty towards her. We hear of old Mr. Kitchells † death at Arthur Cull, ‡ & Mr. Peirsons reviuall, with great mitigation of his strong paines. But not els that is worth signifying hence; shall therefore with presentation of service & respects to your selfe, Mrs. Wintrope, & all yours, conclude: ffrom

Your reall freind & servant,

WILL^M LEETE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet: rec. Dec: 14."

WILLIAM LEETE AND OTHERS TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Honorable John Winthrop, Esqre., Governour att Hartford. Hast, post hast. Theese.

MUCH HONOURED SIR, — After your honour, with the rest of the gentlemens perusall of the papers of intelligence, heerwith sent, from Capt. Treat, &c.; wee humbly suggest to your consideracions whether it be not adviseable (as matters stand, & the imminent danger therefrom to these parts, if not to whole N: England[s] safety & peace) that yourselves sending speedy advertisement to the Bay, of the present chang at N. York,§ the enemy strength

* Leete's first wife, Ann, the mother of all his children, was buried Sept. 1, 1668. He married his second wife, Sarah, widow of Henry Rotherford, in 1671. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

† Robert Kitchell, of Guilford, who removed to New Jersey in 1666. — EDS.

‡ The towns in New Jersey, when referred to in the Dutch records, are designated as "Achter Kol," which name, corrupted to "Arthur Kull," is now applied to the Sound between New Jersey and Staten Island. — *Coll. of N. J. Hist. Soc.*, i. 15, *n.* — EDS.

§ England had commenced another war with the Dutch, and a small squadron was sent from Holland to prey upon English commerce; which, after successful operations on

in ships of war & men, as reported, &c., whether a meeting of the Comissioners, with all speed shold not be desired at Hartford, to consult what is best to be don for comon safety, both for sea and shore. And soe meeting, whether some meanes may not be vsed by messenger, as the custom is, to the Assistants, for knowledge of theire further designes. Or, if not by the Comissioners, to deale that way, & theire owne mocions will sooner make discovery off whether to call a Generall Court be not necessary to such & like ends; being matters of soe great import to the whol, & a speciall to ourselvs; and whether it may not be matter of serious consideracion, the enemy soe neere our sea coast towns, & may in few houres, by smaller vessells now vnder theire comand, manned & fitted out to be vpon vs at theire plesure, that some ayd from your parts be at hand heereabout, as at least in a present readines vpon call or sending for, as need shall require, we shall leave to your prudent consideracions, desiring the only wise God, in his mercy, to guide your & vs for the best: desiring your advise in these matters; with due respects and service presented, rests . Yours to serue

WILL^M LEETE.
WM. JONES.
JOHN NASH.

N: H: 2: 6: 73.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet & Mr. Jones, Aug: 2."

[ON A SLIP OF PAPER ENCLOSED IN THE PRECEDING LETTER.]

HONOURED SIR, — While others haue beene striueing about larger tracts, Mr. Ben: Blackman hath beene with vs to complaine that his mother is still hindred from her quiet possessing her widowes mite of land at Stratford: it being almost the all of her liueing; & this notwithstand-

---

the coast of Virginia, entered the harbor of New York, July 30, and, without firing a single shot, received the submission of the fort; and, soon after, of the whole of New Netherlands, which was restored again next year. — *Holmes's Annals*, i. 364, 366. — EDS.

ing the Generall Courts owneing the awarde which doth confirme it vnto her. Wee were not willing to signify our advice separately to Mr. Walker, not to interrupt further her possession & lose; & so to continue the trouble betwixt them, especially in such difficult dayes; we rather desire that your selues would send down your advice in the case vnto him, to forbear greinding a dyeing relation, by streining vpon vnnecessary contests, to such a longitude, about so small a temporary matter, with which advice we cannot but readily comply & subscribe our selues

Sir, Your honours really to serue,

William Leete.
Wm. Jones.
John Nash.

N:H: Aug: 2: 73:

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr: Governour of his Majesties Colony of Connectacut, at Hartford. These.

Guilford, June 21: 74:

Honoured Sir, — Although I thought it not necessary, or worth the charges of sending a messenger on purpose to giue an account of our buisinesse at Narraganset, so much obstructed, because that (I presume) is done already by a more sufficient hand; yet I receiuing the inclosed lines vpon this last day, in the afternoone, by Mr. Eliot, who called at Mr. Smiths the Thursday before; iudged it behoouefull to transmit that vnto your honour, & the gentlemens consideration, for what or when any thing further is meet to be done, for the more effectuall stablishing our Government there, & countermanding theires of the Island, who are resolued not to surcease the exerting authority vpon the place, vntill they be suppressed by power, as they told vs to our ffaces. Nothing lesse must issue the contest

betwixt them & vs, but power, or by our ioynt addresse to his Maiestie for determination. They are so strongly riueted vnto their third argument, viz: their being put into possession of the Government, by the kings honourable Comissioners upon their determination of that matter, & that in your presence, with some other of our gentlemen, who all consented or complyed with the same, being sent as Agents to attend for that purpose, on Connectacut Colonyes behalfe, which wee denyed the memory of, either of sending so to submit any thing of our Charter right to their authority or arbitrement, or that your selues did consent to any such determination, but they seemed very confident in both; yea, Governour Cottington told vs (that had yourselfe come in my stead, as he expected, to see the Narraganset) he was assured you would not offer to deny that such was your agency & consent to that issue, & that you would not offer to oppose them therein, & therefore they were resolued, by the grace of God (as he said), to hold the Government vpon that ground. Their being almost beaten from their plea of patent right, or the pretended agreement, which seemes to be the onely consideration vpon which his Majestie conceded vnto that enlargement of their pattent bounds vnto Paucatuck riuer, with the *non obstante* to ours; but yet vpon this last string they will hold fast, so that I see not what shall issue, vnlesse power be sent to surprize the opposers of our authority in their act of opposition, viz., the Road Island Government; which, (had we beene furnished for when there,) I think the gentlemen in company with me would haue adventured to haue done; yea, they were ready to haue done it, as we were, had I had so good courage as themselues: if so, it had beene a braue exploit. But it seemed too hard & strange for mee to adventure vpon then: yet if your selfe & the rest see meet for such an action now, if they be still sitting there, or at some other fit season, I shalbe no opponent to it. But haueing thus represented, & the messenger staying,

must craue your excuse to break off suggestions, & with seruice & best respects presented vnto your honour, [and] the rest of the Assistants, with all yours, conclude

Your honours most affectionately to serue,

WILL^M LEETE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet, about Naroganset & Road Iland, &c."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr. Governour of his Majesties Colony of Connectacut, at Hartford. These.

GUILFORD, Apr: 8: 75.

HONOURED SIR,—Some afflicting excercise of a long illnes continueing upon my son Williams wife (which herselfe is best able to describe & informe) giues me this occasion, on their behalfe, to sollicite your honour to comply with their supplication, for such phisicall advice & attendance as the case may need & require, in their seeking help from God by your meanes, which suits best with their owne inclinations & Mr. Eliots advice to them, & shee seemes to be the more hopefully encouraged therein, from the benefit our neighbour Mencooks wife hath lately found by what your honour did for her, in a condition not much vnlike my daughters (as shee conceiues). I can write nothing about the distemper, nor doe I see it necessary, seeing that her selfe comes vp, who is or should bee competent to make knowne her owne state & case in such bodily concernments; yet at their desire, I haue taken the boldnes to conioyne my request with theirs for your favour in the matter, as before. It is not from any forwardnes to encrease your too much trouble vpon such accounts, but childrens necessityes alledged are apt to be very cogent with parents to make supplement vnto their needs, in what

they can. This, I hope, will plead my excuse, & prevaile with your honours double ingenuity & mercifull disposition to doe for them as the Lord shall direct, whose guidance & blessing in that & in all other your good workes, I would euer implore. Wee haue no newes, foraigne nor intestine, onely may tell of Mrs. Eliots late miscarying of her conception, yet hopefully recouering, though not yet abroad. Mr. Eliot himselfe is vnder Mr. Greenlands* mercuriall administrations, with some encouragement in its operations, yet the issue is all with God. Not els, but presenting cheifest respects to your honour, Mr. Palmes, & all yours, ffrom

Your affectionately engaged to serue, WILL^M LEETE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., " Mr. Leete, rec : Apr : 10."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr, Governour of Connectacut Colony, at Hartford. These.

GUILFORD, Aug: 16: 1675:

HONOURED SIR, — Since my declared purpose to haue come to Hartford this day, I haue beene vrged with arguments to forbear, from an apprehension that it may be needfull that I stay here or at New Hauen, ffor calling a Counsell here, vpon occasion of any trouble which may (probably) break out from that great concourse of Indians at Wyantanuck; & it is said to me, that there is number enough at Connectacut already, for a Counsell, & may be orderly called by your selfe there, but not so here, without me. Some vrgeing of these things doth retarde my comeing as yet, haueing receiued no answer from my last letter

* Henry Greenland, a physician born about 1628, was of Newbury, from 1662 to 1675. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

tó your selfe, & to send againe for your advice; it being my desire to be where God would haue me to bee, & doe what he would haue me to doe, without sinister respects. Doubtlesse it is a darksome day, & troubles doe threaten on euery side, & how safe travaileing single may be ere long, none knoweth. I pray therefore to haue your honours & the Counsells advice, both where & what to doe in this matter about comeing or staying, with a word of what further intelligence you haue since the matter at Quawbaug, by Leiftenant Omstead; whither the Bay haue poured in fforce into those parts, as they did into Plymouth, or no. That might at least hinder the congression of neutrall Indians, & animate such to fall in with the English, when they see themselues like to be more safe & hopefull of victory with them, then with the Indians, & in so doeing (I thinke) we should not be wanting to ioyne & doe our part, & so to make vp seuerall competent armyes to reside where they might be for best advantage to secure the English & surprize the enemy, as God may giue them opportunity. Sure it seemes high time to doe our vtmost, both to heauen by prayer, in a constant extraordinary way, by course in our Countyes, & on earth by multiplying armes, in obedience to Gods call to that duty also, euen to make war our worke, vntill the Lord shall gratiously please to bring the matter to some issue; otherwise the Indians may grow stronger, & the English weaker & more disheartened. We haue our men in readynes, according to the Counsells order. Great care is meet to be taken to provide store of bisket, which is most conservable & transportable provision for a woods march, & may serue alone in case of need. It may be very vsefull to encourage, & well to reward all cordiall Indians, who doe exploits against the enemy any where. Maiour Gold & Treat, I hope, will doe their vtmost to gaine intelligence of the Wyantanuck designes, as they may. Much iealousy is here what it may bee. The good Lord counsell vs from his infinite wise-

dome, & strengthen both our hearts & hands by his mighty Power & divine Consolations in Christ Jesus: which, with cheifest respects, is all at present ffrom

Your honours with the rest of the Councill, in all humility to serue, WILL^M LEETE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet, rec: Aug: 16:"

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr: Governour of his Majesties Colony of Connectacut, These, at Boston.

HARTFORD, Sept: 21, 1675:

MUCH HONOURED SIR, — As to those misreports about Indians westward stirring, &c., I vnderstand you haue already bin better informed, & so I need say nothing, haueing enough of other reall & sad storyes to excercise our thoughts & hearts, as (I doubt not) is sent to Boston before this time; which fills our hearts & heads with fears & cares what the issue may be, in hazard to those Townes & ours also; while the Bay doe so long withold to supply sufficient number to conioyne with ours for prosecution of the enemyes vigorously; they being seuerall hundreds, as is said, & very likely so, when as they were able to swallow vp about 80 men suddenly, with Capt. Lothrop, & are so cunning at scouting & ambuscados in their knowne advantages aboue ours. This makes many of our people thinke that expedient of the Mohocks very adviseable (if not necessary) to extirpate the enemy, or by other Indians, if they could (by purchase or pay) make it their reall interest to pursue to effect, least those Indians, so heightend in pride, should lord it ouer them all tirannically, if they prevaile against the English. Wee are not satisfyed that guards or garrisons in particular townes, dis-

tant from the seat of war, should be brought vpon the common account, for men or charge; but if so, then one 4th part of the men in our Colony may be reckoned garrisons, with the fforts in almost all our townes may be so accounted. Wee are heartily glad to hear of your honours safe ariuall, and well being at Boston, but more at your safe returne, to be an help in these so ouerbearing difficultyes, which doe so distresse vs here; & we very much want Mr. Richards also, & Mr. Willis; which with best respects & desire of the prayers of all Gods people, to shine out with favour vpon vs thorow this darke cloud, is all at present ffrom

Your honours affectionate reall ffreind & servant,

WILL[M] LEETE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet, rec. Sept: 24:"

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr. Governour of his Majesties Col: of Connectacut, These, at Boston. Hast, post hast.

HARTFORD, Sept. 23: 1675:

HONOURED SIR,—Since my last to your selfe, I had some speech with Mr. Richardsons son, that dwells near Ninegret, & speakes of Ninegrets profession of fidelity to keep close to his covenant with the English, for his part, also its said that Sucquansh & the rest of those Sachems who haue many captiues, came in & surrendred themselues to them, in hopes of mercy, by their mediation. They plead (as Mr. Richardson saith) some difference betwixt such as are taken by them, & those that so haue surrendered themselues to mercy, especially sundry of them being of their blood relations & affinity, whome to surrender for slaughter or forraigne captiuity, doth run hard against the graine of

nature to be so surrendred. This workes much with me to desire & wish for as much condiscention to them as may be herein complyed withall, in so difficult a time, actuall murderers excepted, & rather to study some expedient of a placide composition, for those captiues, then by an ouer vigorous & hasty attempt to inforce their deliuery of them in hostile wise, least the cuntry should be more enflamed, with more enemyes in armes in seuerall parts, when so little can be done to subdue those that are embodyed in one part, & they already so, being so many in number, & so heightened in pride, & furnished by successes against vs. Doubtlesse the war with these alone, onely by English handes, is like to cost many liues, & yet hardly feasable to extirpate them, in an ordinary way, they being so cunning in a sculking ambuscadoe maner, to make advantage of the woods, & so accurate markes men, aboue our men, to doe execution, whereby more of ours are like to fall, rather then of theirs, vnlesse the Lord, by speciall providences, doe deliuer them into our handes; in expectation whereof, the good Lord guide the Comissioners to a right vnder standing of the foundations of the war, both in that & in this part of the cuntry, begun at Narwootuck, where many of the English haue so signally fallen. And if our worke be to pursue, great numbers must be sent from Boston, to doe in it to effect, we hauing done our most, which signifyes little to reach the desired end; as Maiour Pincheon (I suppose) hath informed. These darknesses vpon our English meanes makes me apt to thinke that the Comissioners haue a price in their handes, (by those captiues with the Narrogansets & with Vncus, many of which they desire to retaine & redeeme) that can be no wayes better inproued, than to purchase so many foreskins of these Philistines now in hostility. These captiues & hopes of plunder, or other rewards of English ffreindship, would probably goe ffarr to make them espouse the quarrell, as their owne interest, & pursue it, & so the English armyes

need but back them, & secure ourselues, &c: if so, it may saue both blood & treasure, if the Lord favour vs in it, which may be hoped, seeing the ground of the so engageing the Indians is taken from themselues, viz: to redeeme those desired captiues, which may fairly be propounded to be life for life. But I can but sugest to your better wisedomes, what hath so arisen in my shallow apprehension, vpon discourse with Mr. Richardson as aboue said, beseeching the Almighty & Onely Wise Counsellour to guide & blesse all your weighty affaires to a happy issue, in our Sions peace & welfare, thereon depending, vnder our God, in Christ Jesus; which is all at present, with cheife respects & seruice to all the honoured Comissioners, ffrom

Your honours sincerely to serue, WILL^M LEETE.

Others of our Counsell are of the same apprehension with me herein, though not enough together at this instant, to write as from the Counsell. Pray craue pardon for my boldnes from the Comissioners, if you see cause to shew my scribling to them.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet, rec: Sept: 27." In another place, "Mary Bill,* 14 y. at red lyon: 4 gs. & 2 g. ddd."

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr. Governour of Connecticut Colony, These. Hast, post hast.

HARTFORD, October 21, 1675.

MUCH HONOURED SIR, — The expedient you mention in yours of 16th instant (about the secureing those surrendred Indians that are with Narrogansets, & by them to be

* Mary, daughter of Thomas Bill, of Boston, born 15 August, 1661. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

deliuered to the Comissioners within the time prefixed) doth well relish with our apprehensions; to be placed on Long Island, or the like, vnder confinement, vpon paine of death, &c., some other Indians, as Narrogansets or Pequots, &c., vndertakeing to be their guard till further dispose; yet with hopes of redemption, when the war may be brought to an issue; & that in expectation of freedome from slaughter or fforaigne slavery, when that issue is attained; with declareing also, that whateuer Indians shall accomplish an end of the war, satisfyingly to the English, they shall redeeme the captiues; & haue good recompence for what they doe. (Possibly) this may make them strenuous to vse their vtmost endeavour to accomplish an issue, for such an interest to themselues; which is otherwise tremendously difficult & hazardous to all our plantations to be attained; yea, vnfeasable; vnlesse the Bay will lanch out with extraordinary numbers, which with vs is impossible to be done, for we remaine exceeding weake at home, while nothing is probable to be done to effect against the enemy abroad, saue onely to bee a guard to those townes, or to make some short excursion vpon the apearance of scouts or small partyes, that wilbe little to their suppression; & winter now growes on apace, & the cuntry here is greatly vnprovided for it, & as much endangered as any other part of the cuntry. Capt. Wait Wintroppe is chosen Comissioner in Mr. Richards his stead, who cannot be spared from hence now. Wee haue great confidence that your honour & the Captain will studiously labour all expedients to accommodate for prevention of increaseing the war, & to bring an issue, if God will; & to see that nothing be charged vpon common account for war, that is not properly so belonging, nor any thing aboue our proportion, men or money, &c. I neuer so much wanted & wished for your selfe at Hartford, as now, where I haue beene held here amidst the confluence of dolefull tideings, even daily, like Jobs messengers, which I

find very consuming to my life; the intelligence whereof doth, I presume, reach your eares, but at Boston may not so deeply touch the heart with feare & care. Yet I doubt not but that you doe both pitty & pray for vs; as we desire to doe here for your selfe, with all the Comissioners & Councill there; that the Lord would so guide to right counsells, & blesse all endeavours to grant an expected end to this dreadfull war, & to hasten our fitnes for such a mercy, which is all; with cheifest respects to your honour, all yours, & to the honored Gentlemen Comissioners & Councell there, ffrom

Your affectionate freind & servant,

Will^m Leete.

Wee are somewhat agreiued, that the Bay gentlemen should so fault vs, for drawing a sword out of a scabberd whereinto they had thrust it, to saue our owne head; when they knew we had beene forward, euen to workes of supererogation, while themselues might be reputed defectiue.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet. r: Nov: 8:"

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the honourable John Wintroppe, Esqr: Governour of his Majesties Colony of Connectacut, at Boston. These.

Hartford, Jan: 5: 75:

Much Honoured Sir, — By yours of December 25, & by those from the Comissioners therewithall sent, we vnderstand of aditionall fforce thought needfull to be raised, for further prosecution of the enemyes in this winterly season: from which advice we differ not in iudgment, nor shall delay our endeavour to comply. But, from the disproportionate stroke that hath fallen vpon this Colony in

the last engagement (which seemes to be the first of an offensiue war that we had our hand in, our doeings being onely defensiue before,) we are so far disabled, by losse of choice men & armes, that we cannot answer in proportion to what is propounded by the honoured Comissioners; yet shall endeavour, as we may, to supply what is consistent with the guarding our ffrontier townes, that doe now lye next & very near the seat & strength of the enemy enraged; which the Comissioners likewise advise, & was done by vs for our neighbours vp the riuer of the Massachusets Colony, for a long time, who may therefore now make vp the more liberally in this addition, when as the war is at our doores, & they also more able to accomodate, & to furnish men suitably with armes, clothing & amunition necessary. We are not backward, nor were our men slack in this most hazardous late adventure, whence it came to passe, that almost the one halfe of the loss & wounded is fallen vpon our 315 men.* But that which is some greife to hear of, is that amongst the souldyers, there should be some surreptitious, vnciuill, if not inhumane deportment towards the liueing & dead, as is reported. Our endeavour hath beene to send sober men. Good Sir, intimate a desire vnto the Bay Gentlemen to doe likewise; that so, while we are vpon serious inquiry to finde out the provocations in our dwellings amongst all ranks, we may not admit or suffer an Achan in our camp, to hide stolen stuffe, or to carry worse or more vncomely then the heathen towards their fellow souldyers. I would not reflect vpon any for sending mercenaryes, but intreat due care & inspection may be had to prevent such enormityes, and the Lords provocation thereby not to goe forth with the Armyes of Israel. If any late newes be from England or Europe, especially from Maiour Thomson, of that affair

* This was at the Narraganset swamp-fight of 19th December, 1675. The Connecticut forces suffered much more than any other. Their whole number of killed and wounded was about two hundred. — *Trumbull's Conn.*, i. 338–340. — Eds.

committed to him, it would be very acceptable to be transmitted by the first opportunity that your leasure may transcribe the intelligence. I am here almost totally confined in your absence, by the gentlemens great importunity, to attend these tiresome occasions, in this day of trouble & war, wherein I beg prayers, from your honour & all good freinds, for guidance & supportment; & with best respects presented to your honour, Mr. Wait, & all yours, Governour Leveret, the Comissioners, & other gentlemen, as opportunity presents, subscribeing

Your affectionate ffreind & servant,

WILL[M] LEETE.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet: rec: Jan: 20:"

WILLIAM LEETE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

ffor the much honoured John Wintroppe, Esqr. Governour of his Ma[ties:] Colony of Connectacut, These.

GUILFORD, March 10th, 1675:

MUCH HONOURED SIR, — John Rogers* of New London being by warrant convented before me to be examined of sundry criminall miscariages complained of against him; there was laid to his charge such terrible crimes by him comitted, repeated & aggravated, as I haue not met with all in one person accused in my veiw, as horrible ffornication, sodomy, bestiality, & attempts of murther; brought to light occasionally by Mr. Mathew Griswold, in vindication of his daughter,† the wife of the said Rogers, of who[m] he had

* John, the third son of James Rogers, of New London, and the founder of the sect of Rogerenes, of whom a small number still remain in that vicinity. Rogers died 17 October, 1721. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.; Caulkins's History of New London*, pp. 201, 221. — EDS.

† Elizabeth, daughter of Matthew Griswold, was married to John Rogers, October 17, 1670, at Black Hall, in Lyme; the ceremony being performed by the father of the bride. In May, 1675, she applied to the Legislature for a divorce, which was granted Oct. 12, 1676. She afterwards married Peter Pratt. — *Caulkins's New London*, pp. 203, 208. — *Public Records of Conn.* ii. 292. — EDS.

said that the divell had revealed to her all his horrible sins, confessing so much before sundry persons, & that they were all true, as his wife did know off.

Herevpon his wife was inquired of before his face & mine, what she had to say to those matters: shee made a particular relation; that shc, being troubled in her minde with some suspicions of vncleane cariages or practises of her husband, & declareing the same to him, he haueing so answered, that what she instanced in or inquired about was true, & much more then she knew of; acknowledgeing both facts of bestiality, sodomy, fornication, & attempt to murther to a negroe woeman, after he had gotten her with childe.

Hee being asked what he had to say for himselfe, & pressed often to deny or confesse all or any part, telling him, that it was his duty to clear his owne inocency, by denyall, so far as hee could, or to giue glory to God by confession. But he said, if they should accuse him for murthering a thousand men, he would giue no answer, but stand or fall by the witnesses, & neither say guilty nor not guilty; or that the things were true or false: nor would he giue any reason why he did so carry it

Being told then it might (in such criminall & capitall accusations) be taken for a confession; yet he persisted obstinately, & said he would never giue any other answer. Vpon these grounds, respecting such horrible capitall crimes, I knew not how to forbear sending the said Rogers to Hartford Goale, there to remaine for a tryall at the Court of Assistants, in May next; bindeing the said Mr. Mathew Griswold, his wife, & daughter, then to giue in testimony against John Rogers abouesaid, of these matters. I have also sent his *mittimus* to the Goaler accordingly, together with which I thought it becomed me to giue your honour & the rest of the gentlemen this breife account of a sorrowfull subiect; with best respect & seruice ffrom Your honours to comand,

WILL^M^ LEETE.

They speake of his acknowledgeing as if the diuell extraordinarily did help in accommodateing wilde bruits to serue his base lusts. How that should be without familiarity, I see not. Doubtlesse the sad story presents vs with an excerciseing case, concerneing one that is taken aside with strong delusions; & is rebaptised by Crandall,* & attained to high assurances vnder horrible guilt; but I haue not medled with him vpon those accounts, as he expected, to make a martir of him, which [he] would desire to boast of.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Leet, rec: Mar. 11: 1674." [*sic.*]

---

* John Crandall, of Providence, who married a daughter of Samuel Gorton, and probably adopted his opinions. Crandall was imprisoned at Boston, in August, 1651, as a Baptist. — *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

LETTERS OF REV. WILLIAM HOOKE.*

WILLIAM HOOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

For the very much honoured Mr. John Winthropp, Esq., at his house at Pequot, or else at Newhaven; Theise.

MUCH HONOURED SIR! — I received your welcome lines, & cannot do lesse then returne a few to you, though I have had many to write, & in the midst of sundry diversions, & not being very well at present. But I should be guilty of much vnthankfulnes, if I should not make a reacknowledgment of your much love to my selfe & myne, both at N-haven & Boston. My eldest daughter is marryed; but, as yet, not very healthy. She had a very greate cough & cold this last winter, when my other two daughters were also ill, but are somewhat in better health of late. I am well acquainted with your brother, the Colonell, & have beene kindly entertained by him; but your sonne I have not, as yet, had the happines to see & salute, & to bid welcome to my house, as I have greate cause, when I see him. Mr. Peter is in good health. It was not long since that he & I dyned with Colonell Winthropp, together with Captaine Chamberlaine, who marryed (as I take it) Mr. Coggins wifes sister. [*Two lines erased.*] I visite him now & then, & dyned with him, to-

* The Rev. William Hooke was born in Southampton, Eng.; son of a gentleman (*Generosi filius*), as expressed on the Register of Trinity College, Oxford; where he received his first degree in 1620, and that of A. M. in 1623. He preached, either at Exmouth or Axmouth, in Devonshire; but came over as early as 1639, and settled in Taunton. In 1644, or the next year, he removed to New Haven, and was associated with Davenport, as teacher of the church there. He returned to England, in 1656, where he was made domestic chaplain to Cromwell, and master of the Savoy. He died, March 21, 1667, according to Trumbull; but Calamy gives the date, 1677. Two of his sermons, preached at Taunton, were published in London. A letter from Hooke to John Winthrop, jun., is printed in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., i. 181; and a letter to Cromwell is in Thurlow's "State Papers," i. 564, 565. His wife was sister of Whalley, the regicide. — *Emery's Ministry of Taunton*, i. 63–155; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — EDS.

gether with the Colonell, your brother, & his wife, not very long since. Mr. Maydstone,* of whom I wrote vnto you, is the same man you mencion in your lettre, whose mother was sister to your father's 2d wife.† He & I do sometimes speake together of your father, & of your selfe. It is a very greate mercy, that your sonne came not in Mr. Garrets vessell, which we feare is cast away.‡ The voyage that I tooke in it, when I left you, was the last that it made from N. E. to Old; & then it was thought too old to make any more voyages. The losse of so many desireable persons therein, is much to be lamented. Mr. Pierce his ship came over the seas with very greate difficulty. Sir Kenelme Digby is not, as yet, returned, & therefore I can give you no account of him; I suppose he is in France. As for Intelligencies, I have but little to say. The State heere hangs still vpon vncertaine points, & is ballanced onely by the hand of the Almighty, who ruleth in the midst of our concussions. The dissolucion of the last Parliament puts the supreme powers vpon difficulties; though the trueth is, the Nacion is so ill spirited, that little good is to be expected from these Generall Assemblies. They have beene much in counsell, since this disappointment, & God hath been sought by them, in the effectuall sense of the need of help from heaven, & of the extreme danger impendent on a miscarriage in theire advises. But our expences are so vast, that I know not how they can avoyde a recurrence to another Session, & to make a further tryall. The King of Nations is the God of the spirits of all flesh, & he knoweth how to order both men & things. The land is full of discontents; & the Cavaleerish party doth still expect a day, & nourish

* An interesting letter of John Maidston is printed in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., i. 185–198. — Eds.

† Thomasine Clopton, daughter of William Clopton, Esq., of Castleins. — Eds.

‡ Capt. Garrett sailed from Boston for London, in November, 1657, and was never heard of afterwards. Thomas Mayhew, jun., with Jonathan Ince, Nathaniel Pelham, and John Davis (the last three graduates of Harvard College in 1650 and 1651), were passengers in the ill-fated vessel. See note, on p. 35 of this volume. — Eds.

hopes of a Revolucion. The Quakers do still proceed, & are not yet come to their period. The Presbyterians do abound, I thinke, more than ever, & are very bold & confident, because some of their master-pieces lye vnanswered, particularly, theire *Jus Divinum Regiminis Ecclesiastici*, which I have sent to Mr. Davenporte. It hath beene extant, without answere, these many yeers. The Anabaptists abound likewise, & Mr. Tombes hath pretended to have answered all the bookes extant against his opinion. I saw him presenting it to the Protectour of late. The Episcopall men ply the Common-Prayer booke, with much more boldnes then ever, since these turnes of things, even in the open face of the City, in severall places. I have spoken of it to the Protectour, but, as yet, nothing is done in order to their being suppressed. Heere are some good Churches, & many good soules, & praying ones, who are our best vpholders in these tottering times. I know not, yet, what Mr. Goodyeere will do; the ebbe is so low in the State, that he could not have come at a worse time, hardly, for help about your iron-worke, or in reference to any other designe for the good of N. E., which will require any greate cost. I vnderstand that you do sometimes make your abode at N-haven, in neare neighbourhood to Revd. Mr. Davenporte. I reioyce for you both, in the comfort of your mutuall society & sweete contentment each in other. Sir, I must take my leave at present, & bid you farewell, leaving you, with Mrs. Winthropp & yours, in his bosome, who will never leave you nor forsake you. To his grace in Jesus Christ committing you, I still abide, Sir,

Yours, ready to serve you to my vtmost,

WILLIAM HOOKE.

SAVOY: Apr: 16, 1658.

My wife presents her humble respects to you, & I, with her, the same to Mrs. Winthropp, and to your sons & daughters.

WILLIAM HOOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

For the very much honoured Mr. John Winthrope, at Pequot in New-England: These.

Much honoured Sir! — The remembrance of your many kindnesses shewed to me & myne in N. E., calls for a thankfull acknowledgment from me in a few lines from Old, for my ill habit as to bodily health will not permit me to write much. I have beene setled at the Savoy for the space of 12 moneths, yet holding my relation still to Wh: H., the same as in the late Protectours time; for you have heard of his death long since, I suppose, who dyed, 7br 3d last, vpon the day that the greate victory was obtayned at Dunbar, & likewise at Worcester; & which day hath since beene kept in a way of Anniversary Thanksgiving for those two eminent victories. This was the day of his death & glorious triumph, though a day of lamentacion to many whom he hath left behinde him. His daughter, the Lady Cleypoll, dearly beloved of him, dyed at Hampton Court, (where then his family was) about a moneth before him, which made a deepe impression vpon his heart. There was a most terrible thunder the night before that night wherein she dyed, which brake a stand in the Parke neare the house, into (I suppose) hundreds of shivers: and there was as terrible a winde on that weeke wherein he dyed, which did rend many greate trees, & tore vp some by the rootes. Many prayers were put vp solemnly for his life, & some, of greate & good note, were too confident that he would not dye. He had the help of five or six very able physicians, but no help was effectuall to save his life. I suppose, himselfe had thoughts that he should have out lived this sicknes, till neare his dissolucion, perhaps a day or two before; which I collect, partly by some words which he was said to

speake vpon a day of humiliacion which we had for him in Wh: H., I take it, about a weeke before he expired; & partly, from his delaying, almost to the last, to nominat his successor, to the wonderment of many, who began sooner to despaire of his life. His funerall pompe was very greate, the relacion of it enough, I thinke, to fill halfe this paper. Multitudes of mourners, & Wh-H. hung with blacks, & some roomes vnder foote also; some with black velvett, & all things (almost) covered with mourning. His eldest sonne succeedeth him, being chosen by the Councill, the day following his fathers death, whereof he had no expectacion. I have heard him say, he had thought to have lived as a country gentleman, & that his father had not imployed him in such a way, as to prepare him for such employment; which, he thought, he did designedly. I suppose his meaning was, lest it should have beene apprehended, he had prepared & appointed him for such a place; the burden whereof I have severall times heard him complayning vnder, since his comming to the Government, the weighty occacions whereof, with continuall oppressing cares, had drunk vp his fathers spirits, in whose body very little blood was found when he was opened; the greatest defect visible was in his heart, which was flaccid & shrunk together; yet he was one that could beare much without complayning, as one of a strong constitucion of brayne (as appeared when he was dissected) & likewise of body. His son seemeth to be of another frame, more soft & tender, & penetrable with easyer cares by much, yet he is of a sweete countenance, vivacious, & candid, as is the whole frame of his spirit, onely, naturally, inclyned to choler. His reception of multitudes of Addresses, from Townes, Cities, & Countyes, doth declare, among severall other Indiciums, more of ability in him, then could, ordinarily, have beene expected from him. He spake also with generall acceptacion & applause, when he made his speech before the Parliament, even farr beyond

the Lord Fynes. The Parliament hath now sate about 8 weekes, & little, yet, is done. It is a very compound assembly; the parts are especially, Cavaleers, Comon-wealth men, & such as are for the presentt Government; for there are not a few such, who would introduce & vphold the old wayes, lawes, & worships, & the former Monarchy, as 'tis conceived. Sir H. Vane, Sir Arthur Hazelrigg, the Lord Lambert, & very many, not of the least note, are for a Comon-wealth; and neither of these two sorts do much regard the vpper house, as it is now constituted. Greate labouring there hath beene to nullify the election of the members for Scotland & Ireland, 'tis supposed, to lessen the number of the votes which take to the present Government. But the members are now setled, & now, I suppose, they will all fall to advising about transacting with the other house, as they call it, which was constituted by the humble peticion & advise, for a ballance betweene the House of Comons, & the Protectour. If this Assembly misse it, we are like to be in an ill condicion. The old wayes & customes of England, as to worships, are in the hearts of the most, who longe to see the dayes again which once they saw. We have had a very dry & dusty time, & cold, in Febr: & March, hitherto. There hath beene a pestilentiall disease among horses for these many moneths, & yet it ceaseth not; & a sickly time is feared among men, the small pox prevayling already, & the spotted feaver abroad. Sir! I shall be glad to vnderstand of your health, & of all yours, vpon all occacions. I with my wife present our humble respects to your selfe, Mrs. Winthrope, & all yours. The Lord vouchsafe the manifestacions of his favour alwayes to you & them, to whose free & rich grace committing you, I take leave, & rest Yours to serve you,

William Hooke.

Savoy, March: 30, 1659.

Since the writing of the former part, I heare that the lower house hath voted to transact with the vpper onely during this Parliament, excepting that they exclude not such of the old Nobility from joyning with that house, who carryed themselves well in the times of the late greate contests. But the hearts of very many are for the house of the Stewarts; and there is a speech, as if they would attempt to call the late Kings Judges into question: and likewise, that the widow of Dr. Huet (that late notorious traytor, who was put to death) will prefer her complaint against his Judges. I heard it from a Parliament man. I know not what will become of vs; we are eene at our witts end; & yet God's people, who are divided in Councill, Parliament, militia, are slow to combine, & to endeavour speedy vnion, though it be the onely outward meanes visible, of our safety. Neither are the feares of God's people (for ought I see) suitable to the appearance of danger; nor such a spirit of prayer stirring as sometimes there was.

The city, I heare, is full of Cavalleers. The first Speaker in the House of Commons hath beene very sick, & is not yet recovered; one Sir Lilbon Longe, (if I hitt his name right) was chosen in his stead, & he dyed suddenly; & now a 3d is chosen, one Sir —— Bamfield; I know not his other name. Mrs. Malbon lyeth now very sick of the dropsy, having kept her bed these many weeks; I came now newly from her; shee expects her greate change every houre. He also is an infirme man, & sometimes neare death. Your cosen, Mr. Maydstone, is in good health. He & I do sometimes talke of your father & yourselfe. As for Sir Kenelme Digby, I have not heard of him a long time. He is not (for ought I heare) in England. He is a greate schollar, but I heare no good of him by any.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "[Mr. Ho]oke."

WILLIAM HOOKE TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

These for the Worshipfull & much Honoured John Winthrope, Esq., at his house at Hartford, vpon Connectacut River.

Honoured Sir! — It was my vnhappines that I could not see you & solemnly take my leave of you before your returne for America; but you are not ignorant of my apology. It pleaseth God to lay me vnder this present exercise in my old age, to wayne me from the world before I leave it. I suppose you have heard the relation of the case, concerning which I have written to your old friend at N-H, from whom you may heare it, when you have opportunity to see him How I was dealt with by Mr. W., perhaps you have heard. I was never more cautious in any busines in my life, & had as much security from a man as I could desire; had he dealt fairely with others & faythfully with me, it had been well enough; but I rest satisfied in the will of God; & hitherto the Lord hath kept me. Had I inioyed wonted liberty, it is probable that I had sent my sonne Ebenezer with your selfe, to have attended you in your returne; yet, hearing lately what word you left with his master concerning him, if I should send him after you, & how he should be your owne servant, how you would vse him, & endeavour to set him in some such way as may (with God's blessing) in time prove a livelihood for him, & also considering the state of things here, deadnes of trade, & some vnaptnes in my sonne for the imployment he hath beene in, little likelihood (as the times are like to be) to do any good at it, & also knowing his inclinacion for to returne to your parts, &, in particular, to serve yourselfe; I have heerewith sent him vnto you, with my blessing & good will, & desirous that he may serve you foure yeers, at which time he will be about 24 yeers old, & let the time begin at his landing,

if you please. It is true, time hath been that his master did make some complaint of him to me, but of late both his master & mistresse have dealt kindly with him, & my wife speaking lately with his master, heareth nothing amisse of him, but onely touching his vnfitnes for his trade. And I must needes speake my heart, that I am grieved to part with him till I consider that it is like to be for his good, through God's blessing vpon your love to him & care over him, to which I heartily recommend him, entreating you that he may serve yourselfe, that your eye may be over him, & your instructions & counsells given him, vpon all occasions, for the good of his soule. And I hope that he will lissen to you, & observe you carefully, & also attend your matters diligently & faithfully. And it will be a reioycing to me, to vnderstand, by the good will of the Lord, that he is well delivered into your hands, & under your tuition & command. I know also how good a mistresse he is like to have of Mrs. Winthrope, to whom, with yourselfe, both I & my wife do humbly present our intyre respects, acknowledging alwayes ourselves very much bound to you for former kindnesses, when our dwelling was in the wildernes with you. My respects also to both your sonnes, whose welfare I heartily desire. The Lord be with you & all yours, watching over your family for good, guiding & prospering you in all your affaires, carrying you well thorow your pilgrimage till you arrive in glory. This is the cordiall desire of,

Sir! Yours to serve you in all love,

W. H.

JUNE LAST, 1663.

Let there be a writing betweene you & Ebenezer.

My brotherly love & true respects be presented to Reverend Mr. Stone.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Hooke, about his son."

LETTERS OF RICHARD BELLINGHAM.*

RICHARD BELLINGHAM TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Honoured John Winthrope, Esqr. Governour at Canetticote, these.

Honoured Sir, — Being informed that Captaine Scott† is, by the authority of your Colony apprehended, and at present a prisoner, in order to a further tryall, I conceiue that it is not unseasonable to giue you an account of what is understood by good hands, concerneing the gentleman, that he is one for whom his maiestye hath respect, and that, dureinge his lait residence at Court, he approued himselfe faythfull to the interest of his majestye, & of his subiects in these Vnited Colonies, seekeing by all meanes to take of the scandals, reproaches and calumnies cast upon us by those who sought not his maiestyes interest, but the vtter ruine of the Plantations in these parts. Now the end of my writeing is not from any desire to intermedle with your affaires, nether would I be understood to preiudicate a

* Richard Bellingham was Recorder of Boston in Lincolnshire from 1625 to 1633. He came to New England in 1634, was one of the selectmen in Boston the same year, representative soon after, and, in 1635, Deputy Governor. He was also for some years Treasurer of the Colony; and was chosen Governor in 1641. He served in that office ten years in all, and consecutively from 1665 to 1672, inclusive. He died 7 December, in 1672, being above 80 years of age, and the last survivor of the Patentees in the Charter. — *Winthrop's N. E.* i. 145, 146; ii. 35, &c.; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

† John Scott, who has before been noticed in these letters, now living at Ashford, L.I., was arrested, by order of the General Assembly of Connecticut, in April, 1664, imprisoned at Hartford, heavily fined, and disfranchised, as a defamer of the king, and for other heinous offences. — *Public Records of Conn.* i. 420, 421, 430; *Savage's Geneal. Dict.* — Eds.

cause which I haue not heard; but onely as a faithfull freind, to be helpefull wherein I may, takeinge my selfe to be ingaged to giue you notice of the present reports of the matter, with the circumstances thereof, even by your freinds here; the heareing whereof, I must needes tell you, had an awefull impression upon some harts, feareing what may be the consequence thereof, if not by your wisedome and prudence prevented. And it shalbe my prayer and hope that the Lord will guid you to such an issue as may be to his honor. Thus with due respectes presented, I remaine,

Your loueinge freind, RI. BELLINGHAM.

Others of the magistrates consentinge hereunto.

BOSTON, 14°. 2ª. 1664°.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. R: Bellingam."

RICHARD BELLINGHAM TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshipffull John Winthrop, Esqr. Governour of his Majestyes Colony of Conecticott, these dd.

SIR, — I received a letter from yourselfe & Council, signed by John Allin, dated from Hartford, July 10th, 1666, the which I haue communicated to the Council of this Colony, the 17th instant, who, after some debate & consideration had thereof, haue ordered our Major Generall to take order for the provission & safety of ours vppon the ryuer.

And in refference to what concernes the Colonjes mutually, our artickles of confœderation directing & concluding vs therein, wee know not how to propound any better expedient, then a regular observance thereof.

Sir, this being the result of the Councills debate con-

cerning that matter, I shall not further enlarge, but with my very kind respects to yourself, remajne, Sir,

Your very humble servant,

Ri: Bellingham, Governour.*

Boston, 18th July, 1666.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Bellingham, rec: July 26: 1666."

RICHARD BELLINGHAM TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Honourable John Winthrope, Esqr. Governour at Canneticott, These. 7. 6. 1666.

Honored Sir, — I receiued your letter of Agust 1, 66, wherein you mention the newes of the Capers † soe many wayes comeinge to you. I doubt not but that you haue alsoe receiued intelligence of their quittinge those parts, and upon the occasion, namely, the breach betweene them and the Indeans. One of them they killed, and others of them they haue taken away, soe as they durst not roue there any longer. It was a speciall hand of God to giue us such a deliverance at such a tyme, without any great trouble or charge to any of us. Blessed be his great name for it. The Lord knoweth how to deliver his. He hath done it, and will doe it in all ages. I cold fill this letter with variety of newes, many wayes, but I knowe your owne letters sent to you from a farre and from hence will giue you a iust account of many great providences of these tyme[s]. The Lord raigneth, and let us giue him the glory of all his workes in these last dayes of the world, which in due tyme will proue to be most excellent in the

---

* This letter, with the exception of the signature, is in the handwriting of Edward Rawson, Secretary of the Colony. — Eds.

† Privateers. — Eds.

sight of men and Angells. Every day, in all his providences, thorow out the world, He, the Holy One of Israel, gets glory to himselfe. For that end we are in beinge, and are every moment preserued; that we may all doe it willingely and freely and cheerefully, it is the earnest desire of

Your loueinge freind in all Christian service,

RI. BELLINGHAM.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Governr Bellingham, rec: Aug: 12: 1666:"

RICHARD BELLINGHAM TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worshippfull John Wintrop, Esqr. Governour of Conecticott Collony. These present in Harford.

BOSTON, 21th of the 2 mo. 1670.

SIR, — The Gouernour of Plymouth desyring to vnderstand what tyme may be most sutable for the Comissioners of your & their Collonies to be at Boston, in order to the accomodating matters respecting the Confederacy, I haue heerewith sent you a coppy of the Courts Resolue. Vpon that question, which limitts to noe particular day, in my aprehencion the first weeke of the Court will not be conuenient, but if so be that your Comissioners may be at Boston by the 17th of May, which will be the third day of the next weeke after the Election, it may be most sutable for least losse of tyme to yourselues. This I thought meete to accquaint you with, because the Secretary* cannot haue opertunity to vnderstand the Courts mind therein so as to giue you tymely notice, & you may rest assured that, God willing, I shall doe my vtmost that you may not haue any unnesesary detencion in that affaire. In the meane tyme,

* This letter, except the signature, is in the handwriting of Secretary Rawson. — EDS.

not willing to giue you further troble, comending you in all your weighty affairs to the Blessing of God, remayning, Your antient loueing freind,

Ri. Bellingham.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Gov^r Bellingham, & their Court Order, rec: Jun: 4. 1670."

RICHARD BELLINGHAM TO THE SELECTMEN OF BOSTON.

For the prudentiall men of Boston.

Complaint be[ing] made to me of the poverty, necessity and lamenes of William Norton, Laborer, who hath dwelt aboue twenty yeares in this towne, and nowe is like to perish, if some helpe be not afforded to him, now in such a case; you haueinge the guidance of the publick stock of this towne, cheefely for this very end, to releeue the distressed poor, needy, lame, and such as lye under the chyrurgians hands. Therefore I desire to present this necessitous case of this poore man to your charity and wisedome, that in his present distresse he may haue present help & releife, and the more exact you are herein, the more wilbe your comfort another day, and for the present it wilbe a great good to the whole society of this towne, whom the Lord hath blessed with aboundance of estates to supply the wants of our poore, miserable neighbours, of whom you will haue the care, and the blessing wilbe upon the whole towne.

Your loueing freind,

Ri: Bellingham, Governor.

1. 3. 71.

LETTERS OF SAMUEL GORTON.*

SAMUEL GORTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the much Honoured Joh[n] Winthrope, Governour of Conetecot, these with care present.

Honoured Sir, — May it please you to take notice, that of late we have receiued order, from his Maiesties Comissioners (for these parts) to prepare the businesse of the Nanhyganset Sachims, in order to a hearing before them, & that very shortly: their honour[s] informing vs, that it is his Maiesties will & pleasure, that the said Sachims & their men are to be protected from all violence & iniury, with respect to all Indians & English in the country. And, it being rumored that there are some Indians in readiness

* Samuel Gorton was born at Gorton, in England, about 1592. He arrived at Boston in 1636, but soon after went to Plymouth. After living there a year or two, he removed to Portsmouth, on Rhode Island; and thence, about the year 1640, to Providence. He was turbulent in his disposition; and every community wherein he cast his lot was anxious to get rid of him. About the year 1643, Gorton purchased land of Miantonomo at Shawomet, afterwards named Warwick. His right here was contested, chiefly by Massachusetts, which sent a force to capture him, and bring him and some of his companions to Boston. Here he was tried for heresy, and was convicted, and sentenced to imprisonment. Finally he was banished. After living for a time on the island of Rhode Island, Gorton, and his friends Holden and Greene, went to London, and preferred their complaints to the Parliament against Massachusetts. While in England, Gorton wrote his "Simplicities Defence," to which Edward Winslow, who was at that time in London, wrote a reply, entitled "Hypocrisie Vnmasked," &c. Gorton came back to New England in 1648, under the protection of the Earl of Warwick, and settled again upon his lands at Shawomet, which then took the name of Warwick, from the noble Earl of that name, who had befriended him. After the State of Rhode Island had secured its charter privileges, Gorton became a prominent and useful citizen. As he advanced in years, the temper of his mind, through his many sufferings, grew more in harmony with the spirit of the religion which he professed. He died in 1677. His age may be inferred, from an expression in one of the letters which we here publish, as 85.

These letters are written in a very elegant chirography, far superior to that of most of the letters we publish in this volume. See "Hist. and Geneal. Reg." iv. 201–221; Mackie's "Life of Gorton;" Staples's edition of "Simplicities Defence." — Eds.

to come out against them from beyond, or in, or about your parts, wee desire therfore, that your selfe will be very carefull that none be permitted to come through or out of your territories ffor any such purpose, or vnder any pretence whatsoeuer, till his Maiesties royall pleasure be further made knowne by his most honourable Comissioners; & so we take our leaue, & remaine, Sir,

Your humble seruant, SAMUELL GORTON.

WARWICK IN THE NANHYGANSET BAY, March 2d, 1664–5.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Gorton, Rec: Mar: 8: 64."

SAMUEL GORTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

WARWICK, August 11th: 1674.

SIR, — My spirit is much solicited at this iuncture of time to become an humble suter vnto your honoured selfe, being incouraged herevnto not only by mine owne obseruation, but also by intelligence receiued from eminent & skillfull persons these many years, concerning the many pledges that God hath betrusted you with, as so many talents to be laid out in exercise, that the increase may be extant in his honourable appearance. That which is the load stone effectuall to draw my heart in this my act, is your studious and elaborate dilligence, to bring forth the prints of Gods finger, wherewith he hath touched the visible vniuers, in generall; as also every individuall therein, with an instinct of nature, which either in a proper simple, or skillfully compounded substance, become phisicall and medicinall, as nessisary as food for the preseruation of the body of man vpon the face of the earth; if seasonably applied, according to that wisdome which hath sowne them abroad; which is that wisdome of God, in the composure of the histories and literall forme of the holy scriptures, vnder

which is contriued by God's secret and hidden deuice, that soule sauing mistery of God in Christ. And the forme of the letter shall neuer be lost, so long as the visible vniuers remaineth; vnto which all holy writt hath respect, but happy is he, and he, in whose heart the vale is taken away, which only giues entrance into the holy place, to conuerse with the liuely oracle in its owne proper language, which else where is not vttered, neither can be heard; which thing our young schollers, and old schoole men, are, and haue bin ignorant of, how to distinguish of the history and mistery of the holy word of God, to giue each its due, in its proper vse and natiue honour.

Honoured Sir, lest I preface too much, the ocation of this mine atempt is; it pleaseth God at this time to exercise me vnder a sore infirmitie and distemper of body, which hath held me now almost a whole moneth of dayes; for any thing I vnderstand, it is the paine of the stone in the bladder, or stranguarion, or both. My prouocation to make vrine is painfull, and so is the act, and though I striue, yet but small quantitie issueth from me, which in short time reneweth in like operation; but in the night season, when I sleepe, or am vpon any slumber, it doth issue from me insensibly, and I thinke more abundantly; and when I awake and am prouoked therto, it is as aforesaid; insomuch that my disease is vncooth, being for and against. I striue after power expulsiue, and also retaintiue, but neither the one nor the other answers to the desires and apointments of nature. Theirfore I am bound ouer to make mine appeale to your selfe, as an only instrument of my cure, if God please to doe it by life, in adding any thing to my dayes; and doubt not but as God hath giuen vnto you, so you will readily dispense and comunicate vnto others, in answer to his good ends, in the gracious disposure of his gifts; and I doubt not but as you vnderstand the nature of any perticuler simple, or composition by further vse of art, may make for the remouall or mitti-

gation of this my present distemper, you will please to send me such a portion, as your wisdome shall thinke meet, with your directions for application, by this bearer; and my thankfull acknowledgments shall be made manifest in what my abillity can reach vnto. * * * My body is not grosse, but spare, and hath bin, from my youth, healthfull, till this distemper tooke hold of me, and as active as most men of my age, either by horse or foot. I haue a competent appetite to food, which is nessesarily pleasing to sight, sent, and taste; and as youth and age may be considerable in way of phisick, my time vpon the earth, according to humane account, I reckon to be fourscore and two years. God will giue you to weigh and consider, and your returne shall be acceptable to my soule, as from him who hath betrusted you with his talent of inspection. In meane time I craue pardon for my boldnesse, as also leaue to subscribe my selfe, Sir,

Your humble seruant and supplicant,

Samuell Gorton, Senior.

SAMUEL GORTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the worthy and truly honourable John Winthrop, Gouernour of his Maiesties Collony of Conecticot, these humbly present.

Honoured Sir, — Yours of the 18th of August last I receiued in good time and season, the 21th of the same, in the euening, together with that packet directed to Mr. Richard Smith or his wife, which I dispatched to the Narraganset the next morning.

It may not be expected that I should find words to expresse the thoughts and dictates of my heart, in any sort to corrispond with your so indulgent and bounteous clemmencie manifested in your carfull, speedy and skillfull

returne made vnto my humble request; which I haue found by proofe and good experience farre beyond expectation.

The first of those cordiall and soueraighne powders which I tooke at the night season, according to direction; in which night I had more comfortable rest and sleepe then I had had in any night for the space of fiue weekes before; and when I was awake, not prouoked vnto vrine, though I lay waking a matter of two houres after day light; and when I was risen out of bed, it was with more freedome and ease; and not prouoked againe till about the space of fiue houres after, and for the issue in sleepe much abated. The next night I tooke againe of the same accordingly, and had like sleepe and rest, and issue in sleepe much more abated, then forbearing one night. The night following tooke the like againe, and after those three receptions, the retaintiue property performed its office in sleepe, and so hath continued; and after two or three nights I tooke of it once more, and a short time after I tooke of the other powders, of each of them two dayes, according to direction; and no other thing but my ordinary food; and I find my body at this time to be little differing from that which it was, before the distemper seized upon me, only somthing weaker, which before these receits my body was so sore that I could neither sit nor stoope, nor turne my selfe in bed, but with great paine. I had also an infirmitie tooke me for most part in the night in my thigh, and downe to my foot, which I thought might proceed from my other distemper: it was as a benummednesse, or like the crampe, which is taken away also; all which are to admiration, that a thing so little in quantity, so little in sent, so little in taste, and so little to sence in operation, should beget and bring forth such efects. Whether it may be a cure, God knoweth, or an intermission; it is no lesse marvellous. After reception of the antidotes, vrin was very muddy for the space of a

moneth, but since cleare as in any time of my life. It is said of Abell, though he be dead, yet speaketh; in like sort, though Dauid be dead, yet let my soule speake his language, when he fled from Absolon, only inverting the words, viz.; the Lord can make it a cure; but if he thus say, I haue no delight to intermit the disease any longer, yet here I am, let him do as seemes good in his eyes. He hath giuen me a bodily experiment of his power, together with the administration of wisdome giuen vnto his seruant, which I know not what it may differ from skill to find out the cause of the motion of the visible heauens, or of the ebbing and flowing of the ocean, or the breeding of a sensatiue life in such creatures as are void of seed of copulation. My soule seemes to me to be more prostrate at Gods footstoole, since the remouall of my greife (so miraculously) then it was in the midest of it. If your selfe had sent me the originalls or first beginings of these soueraighne powders, whether they come from the earth, as from beast, creeping thing, root, minerall, or precious things of the sea; without tempering, composing, and, in a sort, working the change of the nature of them all; or had but left me without direction in the application of them, they would haue bin farre from working such efect. Giue me leaue to professe a point of my faith from this alusion, namly, that such a thing it is to preach and professe the word of God without the interpretation of it in the change or translation therof into the mistery of Christ, which mistery is taught from the act of Gods creation, in the begining, vnto the decention of the New Jerusalem from God out of heauen, whether wrapped vp in way of history, proverbe, parable, allegory, promise, threat, or any litterall forme of the holy Scriptures: for there is no doctrine that beseemes the faith of the Church of God, which is not cast into the mold and forme of the Son of God, as hauing a true and reall respect vnto the misticall body of Jesus Christ; and it is not the proper oracle of God

vnvaled, but as the doctrine, what ever it be, hath the capassitie of the divine nature, and the truth of humane involued therin; therfore no word of God but it requires interpretation; for if we say there is one God, and do not interpret what he is in Christ, the deuil saith the same with trembling; and to speake of a Church, without interpretation of the Generall Assembly and Church of the first borne, where every one inherits the whole, and are sons of coequallity; otherwise we shall find that a Church will proue an emptie thing, for there is nothing subiect to humane sence or bodily presence, that did euer set forth the truth of Gods Church to be that which it is, for then it could not be Catholike; and to hold that Christ Jesus was not exhibited in the Church from the begining, is a point of soules disease and sicknesse, if not incurable; for that shift will not amend the malodie: that he was in purpose and promise in the begining, but not actually till some thousands of years after; which idolizeth the Lord to be like a corruptible man, whose purpose is one and his act another; which the diuine power of Christ admits not, for he is Jesus Christ yesterday, and to day, and the same for euer: the doctrine of faith in the mistery of Christ cannot admit of the distance of the tenses, preter, present and future; neither doth the Hebrew text allow it, but vseth them indifferently, one for another; neither can the truth of the mistery of faith be truly taught in any language allowing a distance of them; they are all one in the verity of the gospell, as really as the three heauenly witnesses are one; and to teach or professe otherwise, is to turne the gospell into the workes of the law, as false apostles haue euer done. The holy word of God is not a personall, but an impersonall word; it is not tied to perticuler person, time, or place; but it is a word of uniuersallity, because the Infinit and Eternall hath wrapped himselfe vp together with mankind in Christ, in all points and perticulers of the couenant of God, which couenant,

being eternall, concernes the whole race and reighne of Christ in his kingdome; and if we take not the eternity of Christ as compleat in being a Sauiour from the begining, with respect to time past, as we professe him for time present and to come; we are not faithfull Comunicants in the word of righteousnesse, but come to the feast without a wedding garment, and are no freinds to the bridegroome, for he wears no other robe but eternity; for mortallity is swallowed vp of life: for all the things of Christ take their vertue and demention from the diuine nature, and if we take a scantling of the word of God, that holds not proportion with eternity, the liuely oracle vtters not it selfe, but we become as speechlesse with respect to the pure language, for the humane spirit of Christ neuer tooke being nor forme, but in the eternall couenant, and the couenant of God, though it arise of twaine, yet it is but one contract, and the seed of copulation is of one kind; for where it is of two kindes it is an abomination to the Lord. It is said that Christ comes by water and blood, that is in the weaknesse of our nature insufficient in all things, and in the blood of conquest, as in red died garments from Edom and from Bozrah, mightie and able to saue; and these two are neuer seperated in Christ, that God may, for euer, be all in all; and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, and the Spirit is truth, and it is the truth of one kind of imortall seed of the gospell, though in a diuerse respect, as it is the truth of one witnesse, though in a threefold respect; for the Spirit moues not but from the Father and the Son, that is by the soueraighnity and submission which is in the word of God, wherin that threefold heauenly witnesse doth consist, as three consenting in one, for proofe of all things, according to the law of the spirit of life, which is in Christ Jesus. And it is to be noted that the soule or spirit of man contributes no more vnto the testimony of faith, then it doth to the worth and dignitie of the ransome, which depends wholly

on the diuine power; and where it is said that the Spirit it selfe beares witnesse with our spirit; the word SELFE is of great emphesis, properly intending the Spirit of God; in like manner as where it is said we know not how to pray as we ought, but the Spirit it Selfe maketh intercession for, or in vs (as the word will beare) with sighes and groanes that cannot be vttered; that is, not by the spirit or power of any creature, for they are of infinit and an incomprehensible nature; likewise the Spirit it selfe bearing witnesse intends properly the Spirit of God, without any assistance of humane nature in the testimony, no more then there was any assistance in the dead body of Christ in raising it selfe vp out of the graue; the mistery wherof the prophet opens, where he saith, thy dead men shall liue (aluding to the multitude of captiues in Babilon) yea, euen my dead body shall arise as infinitly multiplyed. The Spirit in like manner beares witnesse with our spirit, or in our spirit, not as our spirit being an assistant, but only a comunicant, not an agent; and it is said OUR SPIRIT, a word plurall and a word singuler ioyned together; the word OUR including all the holy sons of God, and that one Spirit of God testifying in them all, and on their behalfe what they are made and become in and by that one Spirit of Jesus Christ, who by one Spirit are all baptized into that one body, and are all made to drinke into one spirit; and there is no true testimony giuen of the gospell, but by the spirit of prophesy or interpretation; for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophesie, which is that spirit of the reuelation of Christ from the begining, and euer shall be. And if we do not interpret the submission of Christ and the soueraighnitie to be in one act, we giue not true testimony to the gospell, for the Son of God neuer was but in submission to all the things of God, and there was neuer submission in the Son of God, but in, and through, man's nature. Againe, the Son of man neuer was without authority ouer all things, and that could

neuer be without the power and authority of an Omnipotent God, therfore authority and submission in Christ are one act, once and for euer; and it is as farre out of the abillity of man to submit vnto all the things of God in Christ; as it is to get victory and haue power ouer sinne, death, hell, deuill, and all his instruments: therfore both submission and authority in Christ are of God, and such as go about to establish a doctrine of one vnitie betweene the Son of God and the Father, and another manner of vnitie betweene the Son of God and all true beleeuers, they go about to dig vp the gospell by the very rootes. And so do they also that say there are certaine properties and atributes in God, which are incomunicable with man, as not comunicated with the Church of God; for such may as well afirme that Christ, the Son of man is not perfect God, or else that he is not true man, if any attribute of God be not comunicated with the sons of men, or else they must hold a personall Christ, and if so, then what is in him is personall, also. It is said in describing of Christ in the gospell, In the begining was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God, &c. If this intend a personall Word, then what was in it must be personall also; and it is said, in it, or in him, was life; now, if this life was personall, it could not liue in Paul (as he afirmes Christ did) vnlesse the personallity of Christ liued in him. Againe, this life is light; which, if it were a personall light, it could not be that light which lighteth euery man that commeth into the world; which the scripture afirmes it dothe. Againe, if this light, which is Christ (as he saith, I am the light of the world), be a personall light, then he could not apply it vnto the disciples, and say, yee are the lights of the world. Againe, such as teach a personall Christ, as the substance and intent of the mistery of the gospell, they seclude the authority and reallity of the presence of the gospell from the Church of God vpon earth, both before Christ was borne of the virgin Mary, and since his ascen-

tion, carying mens minds either to death for redresse, or to a personall reighne of Christ on the earth, or to doomes day, so called, which is a vale spread ouer the face of teachers in these our dayes, as Moses was, vpon the face of Scribes, Pharises, preists, elders, and people of the Jewes in the dayes of Christ; for that humane body of Christ, borne in the dayes of Herod, was as true and reall a tipe or figure as Moses was; which body the Jewes did not only persecute and kill, but also in him they persecuted and killed the truth and substance of the mistery of God in and vnto themselues, which was the holy doctrine that he preached vnto the world, wherin the life of the Spirit of God in the sauing of men's soules doth consist. The word of God is an impersonall word, not tyed to one indiuiduall, and so is his work, and the worke of Satan also; no man can deny himselfe of being made in the image of God; it is not personall, as in Adam, the first man, only; none can deny himselfe of being an Apostata in the fall of man, neither can any deny himselfe of being ransomed by the death of Christ, therfore all wicked men, personated in false teachers, are said to deny the Lord that hath bought them. The Scriptures alude metaphorically to perticular persons, times, places, and things; but Christ is taught, and is the subiect matter in them all, according to the mistery of the Gospell; being concerned in them all, either in his humilliation or exaltation; and if he be faithfully brought forth, there is a vniuersallity in him, (or else he is denyed to be the Son of God) for he is the Son of Eternity, which involues all times; the Son incomprehensible, which comprehends all places; the Son multiplyed into all sons; for there is but one Sonship, which is in all; and he is but one thing, which is the substanciallity of all things; for all other things are but as the shadow to the reallity of the body. And the Spirit of God neuer moues in the faith of the gospell, but as it proceeds both from the Soueraighnitie and submission of the

Son of God, which were neuer separated in Christ, nor euer shall be; neither was there euer faithfull prayer or true prophesie in the Church of Christ, but such as comprehends them both, ffor personall prayers haue not in them the property of the spirit of intersession, for that comprehends the state of the whole Church. Againe, personall preaching hath not in it the spirit of true interpretation; for true interpretation breakes the bread of life, as fit food for the Church at all times and in all ages; and no man can iudge rightly of any saint of God, according to Gods word, but as that party sustaines the state of all Gods chosen, or else he is not invested with Christ, which is not a personall, but a vniuersall worke; neither can any iudge rightly of any of Gods implacable enemies, but as that party is of his father, the deuill; therfore it is said, we know that we are of God, and the whole world is of that euill one; therfore no personall workes, but workes of vniuersallity. And that doctrine which teacheth incomunicable properties in God, seemeth to be that which the apostle calls the doctrine of deuills; forbidding to marry, and comanding to abstaine; that is, forbidding the nearest comunion with God in his saints, and to abstaine from diuers and sundry properties in God; but he that denyes himselfe of any property of God in Christ may as well deny himselfe saluation by Christ; for saluation hath in it infinetnesse and eternity, or else it is not Gods saluation in Christ.

Sir, being I haue taken vpon me to confesse a point of my faith by an alution vnto the first principles or originalls of those rich and soueraighne powders which your bounty and benignity comended vnto me, giue me leaue to make an acknowledgment of another point of my faith, with an alusion vnto the affliction wherwith I was then exercised; and that shall concerne the crosse of Christ, which is a blotting out of that hand writing of ordinances that was against vs, and contrary vnto vs, he taking it out of the

way, and fastning it to his crosse, and hath spoiled the principallities and powers, &c. This hand writing of ordinances or decrees, which is the spoiling of principallities and powers, is all ceremoniall, perfunctory, outward and bodily worships, done vnto God as acceptable vnto him; they are all nailed vnto the crosse of Christ, dead and buried with him, as being no part of the spirituall worship, neither in way of the humilliation nor exaltation of Christ, whether in outward fasting and afflicting of the outward man, or in ioyfull thanksgiuing and feasting in the abundance of the creatures, for these things stand in the way of all mankind (being written naturally in the heart), and hinder him from God, without perticipation in the reallity of the crosse of Christ, which is their only death and burying place; whence I professe, that the crosse or humilliation of Christ (as in the intent of the holy scriptures) doth not consist in any thing subiect or proper to humane sence; all things subiect to humane sence being no more then figures, characters, and signatures of the same, but euery man is bound to interpret or translate all the miseryes mankind is subiect vnto, into the truth and verity of the crosse, which is a more beneficiall and glorious translation than to haue skill to translate Hebrew, Greek, or any other language into a mans natiue tongue. The crosse, or suffering of Christ is but one, for he died once to take away sinne, and rose againe to die no more; death hath no more dominion ouer him: humane sence neuer contributed vnto the sufferings of Christ, no more than it doth vnto his crowne and dignity, sitting on the throne of the Father, at the right hand of God; if it should add any thing therevnto, it must also add vnto the Father, for the Father and he are one; and the vertue of the humilliation and exaltation of Christ are of one time and continuation. The sufferings of Christ are of a hyer nature then humane sence can reach vnto: they are of infinit and an eternall worth; which they could not be, if humane sufferings were

in the least mixed therwith; for as the least point of time cannot be admitted into eternity, but eternity must loose its nature, euen so the smallest suffering humane cannot be admitted in the diuine suffering of the Sonne of God, without making spoile of the nature of the crosse of Christ; therfore it is said that God purchased the church with his owne blood, which doth not intend the blood in the veines of a mans body, no more then the life of the eternall Sonne intends the naturall life of a mans body, which seaseth in the departure of the soule from it, which life wicked men perticipate in, as well as the godly.

The sufferings of Christ haue a superemenencie in them, as well as the Sonship. Now if we be sons, then we are heires; and if heires, then are we coheires with Christ: euen so, if we be dead to sinne, and the things of this world, then do we comunicate in the sufferings of the Son of God, and the sufferings of the Son of God haue in them a coequallity, in whom, or in what time soeuer they are in excercise; therfore it is said that if we suffer with him, we shall reighne with him; if we haue fellowship in his sufferings, we haue also fellowship with him in his reighne. Now the Suffering, or Crosse of Christ is the taking of mans nature into vnitie with the Eternall Word, together with the deadly condition of mankind through sinne, to cary it away once and for euer; for it could not tary vpon the diuine power for the space of one moment of time; for if it had, death had held him, which the apostle affirmes was impossible. This deadlyhood or crosse, Christ oposeth to all troubles and vexations that the creature is subiect vnto, which the diciples of old, not invred vnto the substanciallity of the crosse, placed it in the troubles and vexations of this life, with the bodily departure of their Master, looking for a kingdome of an earthly nature also; but Christ drawes their minds from such things, saying, Let not your hearts be troubled, yee beleeue in God, beleeue also in me; for God is not made manifest but

through suffering, for when they desired to see the Father, hoping that he would bring an earthly kingdome, he saith, Beleeue me, the Father is in me, and I am in the Father, or else beleeue me for the very workes sake; which is such a worke as none can do but the Father, and vpon a double asseueration, affirms that he that beleeues in me, the workes that I do, he shall do also, and greater workes then these shall he do, because I go to the Father, that is, I suffer, and vndergoe bodily and outward afflictions, mockings, buffetings, persecution, imprisonments, stripes, and condemnation vnto death; these workes I do, saith Christ (for suffering is a worke of faith and labour of loue, for all the workes the fathers of old wrought, were all done through suffering, as Abel speakes through death; so all those workes summed vp in Hebr: 11th: were wrought through suffering, or else we bring them not to their true originall, which is Christ, and with respect to pangs and persecutions, Christ tells them that he doth those workes, and so shall they, in their passage through this mortall life. And greater workes than these, saith he, shall he do, that is, he, and he, euen euery true beleeuer, and he giues a reason, because I go to the Father; that is, they shall not only do with me the metaphoricall workes of suffering, but the reall and substanciall also, which is that suffering of death, wherin the saluation of mankind doth consist; for that death is their owne, by vertue of communication, as really as Christ himselfe is their owne; thence it is that he saith, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? and againe, I in them, and they in me; which is but one condition; and such is the onenesse of Christ, a worke so much greater then outward sufferings, as by how much eternity is greater then temporality, ffor he that hath fellowship and comunion with Christ in his sufferings, there is but one purse, one stock for comerse, one increase, which is the increasinge of God; and one losse or abatement, which is the anihillation of all carnall and worldly lustes;

from this reason of Christ going to the Father, I obserue that the true crosse of Christ transports the soule of man into the authority and power of Almighty God; theirfore he adds that whatsoeuer yee shall aske in my name, I will do it: the request is in his name or authority, and he also is the doer of it; no man comes to the Father but by, or in, the Son, that the Father may be glorified in the Son; and the Son neuer came to the Father but through suffering; for if the Eternall Son had euer had fellowship with the Eternall Father, in one diuine essence, simply considered, then the soule of man had neuer had fellowship with the Father, nor the Son; for the Lord our Righteousnesse changeth not. Wee are not to hearken to the doctrines of Schoole diuinity, Sennods, or Counsels, assembled by men, in this point, for the mistery of the gospell was neuer opened but by the spirit of faith; as in the true intent of the speaker; theirfore it is said, he beleeued, therfore he spake (that is, Christ personated in Dauid), we beleeue, and we also speake; that is, all true beleeuers personated in the holy apostles. Therefore Christ tells vs what sighnes or wonders shall follow them that beleeue, viz: they shall cast out deuils in his name or authority; that is to say, though a free and absolute acknowledgment that mans nature vniuersally, by the apostasie, is subiect to the deceit and power of Satan, yet faith can cleare the same nature in Christ, as neuer deceiued by the serpent, nor vnder the power of the deuill, for the space of one moment of time, which is a reall casting out of that spirit which calls it selfe by the name of Legion, ouer which spirit Christ euer was, and will be conquerour, who by death destroyes him that had the power of death, that is, the deuill. Againe, beleeuers speake with new tongues; that is, they vtter nothing of the oldnesse of the letter, as being any part of the mistery of the gospell, but are restored vnto that pure language which hath in it the newnesse of the spirit, both in prayers and prophecies, and all ordinances of the

church; that as God is a spirit, so they worship him in the truth of the same spirit. Another wonder is, they take vp, or take away, serpents; that is, they lift vp the mistery of Christ, as Moses lifted vp the serpent in the wildernesse, and therby take away the sting of all legall and false doctrine, which poiseneth the soules of men, as the biting of those fiery serpents, or seraphims, as the word is, poisened the people in the wildernesse; noting by that word, seraphims, the poisenfull preisthood of the world; for so the apostle, retaining the Hebrew phrase, vseth the word Cherub, for the ministry of the kingdome; and Seraph, for the ministry of the preisthood; and the mistry of Christ, truly opened, takes away the falsitie and abuse of them both, in the church. Againe, if beleeuers drinke any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them. Paul did drinke a deadly draught, to confesse himselfe the cheife of sinners, or the first of sinners; as though it were he that brought sin into the world; a draught fitter to moue despaire then otherwise. He drunke a deadly draught also to acknowledge himselfe an extortioner, a persecutor and a blasphemer. These are deadly draughts, yet Paul not hurt by any of these, but they are the diadem and glory of his apostleship. Such a draught did Dauid drinke, personated in Christ; I am a worme, and no man, an abiect and scorne of the people; and againe, I am as a beast before thee; yea, Behemoth, as the word is, viz., that great and vast beast, the Elephant. Agur also drunke a deadly draught; I am more foolish then any man, and haue not the vnderstanding of a man. These are deadly draughts, but being taken in by the spirit of faith, they hurt not; but only set forth the glory of the crosse and humilliation of the Son of God, the vertue and memoriall wherof shall neuer cease; contrarywise an vnbeleeuing and presumptiouse spirit drinkes great draughts of vaine arrogations, viz. I was made in the image of God, the remainders wherof remaine in me; I am redeemed by the blood of Christ; I

eat the spirituall meat, and drink the spirituall drinke, in the church wherof I am a member, &c. All these shall do no good vnto a carnall mind, but agravate and augment his owne condemnation. Such oposition is betweene faith and vnbeleife. ffurthermore they that beleeue shall lay their hands vpon the sick, and they shall recouer; by hand we are to vnderstand an holy administration of the word of God; so it is said that the word of the Lord came by the hand of all the prophets; and by sickness we are to vnderstand, properly, the disease of the soule, which is sin only, and the ministry of the word is not faithfully laid vpon sinne, but as it is reckoned and transferred vpon the Son of God; and then it becomes that wherin Christ takes his death, and in that death is the recouery of all diseases; so that he hath made a plaister of sinne to cure sinne. Such vse the wisdome and power of God hath made of it; and when sin is reckoned else where, it is not the sinne of mankind properly, but the sinne of the deuill, who is in direct oposition to the Son of God: therfore it is said, We know that we are of God, and the whole world is of that euill one, that is, of the deuill. The word, therfore, rightly and skillfully administred, concerning the disease of the soule, is the cure of the soule, and these sighnes or wonders acompany true beleeuers; for the word of God was neuer truly preached, without bringing forth and discouery of a miraculous act, which confounds all the humane and traditionall doctrine of the world, that must haue it from schooles and mens bookes, or else they cannot preach the word of God. There is nothing expressed in the holy scriptures, but the vse which God makes of it is to bring man vnto himselfe; otherwise all things could not worke together for the good of them that loue God; as, for instance, sinne is the worke of the deuill, and the pollution and destruction of mankind, but the wisdome of God hath made it the matter of the death of his Sonne, wherein the ransome and purity of mankind consisteth. In like manner, he was made

sinne in vs, (for so the word ought to be read, or else the text holds not proportion with it selfe) that we might be made the righteousnesse of God in him; the Son of God hath wrapped himselfe in our darknesse, to convey his owne light into vs: this is that new commandement that is true in him and in vs, because the darknesse is past, and the true light now shineth: ffor example, we know the aire is darke in its owne nature, but, the sun arising, it is made light: the aire doth not hinder the shining of the sunne, but is the meanes of conveyance of its beames ouer the face of the earth. Such is that light and darknesse spoken of by the Evangelist, saying, the light shined in darknesse, and the darknesse comprehended it not, or apprehended it not, as the word may be read; that is, it did not make seizure of the light to ataach or stop it, but proues a conveyance of it into the soule of man: of such nature is the death of Christ, through the sinne of man. The Son of God hath involued or wrapped himselfe in our nature, making himselfe therby of no reputation; the Greek word translated reputation signifies vaine, empty, nothing; which was to make himselfe in all his saints, the substance, fullnesse, and all things that are of God. In like sort he was made a curse, wherby to convey blessednesse vnto the sonns of men; and the shame and reproach of all men, to invest his chosen with the glory of the Father. There is nothing expressed in the Holy Scriptures, but the wisdome and power of God hath created it, and recreated it, for the conveyance of himselfe vnto his people, if the word of God be faithfully and skillfully interpreted; for Christ came to saue, and not to destroy; and where the Scriptures are not interpreted according to the end of Christs coming in the flesh, such misse and go besides Gods end in the exposition of them. The crosse of Christ, wherin saluation consists, is a vniuersall act, and concernes mankind in generall; and it is the second death only, wherin destruction takes place. Now the

second death implyes a first, which is mans apostasie in his falling from God, wherin he preserved and promoted the word and worke of the serpent, before the word and worke of God in the act of man's creation, esteeming the counsell and advice of the serpent, as the only pleasant and prudent way to make man like vnto God. And the second death is the contempt and villification of the word and worke of redemtion, as infinitly beneath the basest creature, esteeming it as the word and worke of Belzebub, the chiefe of deuils, which is a deniall of the vertue and power of the Son of God, in taking our nature into vnitie, called vnbeleife, which is a renouncing of the crosse of Christ, the conflicts wherof consist properly in the diuine power against sin and Satan, with which or with whom nothing else can incounter vnto victory. And such as aply humane sufferings to the conflicts of the crosse of Christ, they also aply themselues to the workes of the law for their Sauiour, by which no flesh can be justified. The worke of redemption is vniuersall, and concernes all men as really as the act of creation, or the act of the fall; for the Image of God, which is illimited, is concerned in them all; in the act of creation it is wholy inocent and vpright, in the fall and defection it is wholly falsifyed and corrupted, and in the restoration it is wholly repaired and renewed; or else the virtue of the crosse of Christ could not be as extensiue as mans sinne, neither could the reiection of Christ be laid to mans charge, as his sin, which is the proper, yea, the only condemnation of man, as in the sight of Almighty God. To deny therfore, the vniuersallity of any of these three estates, that haue passed vpon mankind, is to deny the faith of the gospell, and is the second death, which becomes a lake of fire and brimstone in the soule of man, a worme that neuer dies, a fire that neuer goeth out. The crosse of Christ cannot be terminated in any thing subiect to humane sence; for it is said, all that will liue godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution; againe,

he that suffers not is a bastard, and no son. What then shall become of all that die in infancie? They must either go downe to Sheol, or else into the Popes purgatory, to suffer there according to humane sence. What persecution did John the Baptist suffer, when he leaped for ioy in the wombe, at the voice of the salutation of Mary? It is possible infants may die at such an age; and was not the manchild taken from the wombe vp to the throne of God, to escape the rage of the dragon? It is to cruell a doctrine therfore to terminate the crosse of Christ in any humane or bodily suffering: we read not of any such thing in Enoch being translated and saw not death, nor in Lydia in receiuing the gospell, but all must haue fellowship with Christ in his sufferings, or else they shall not reighn with him. The acts of true religion are not personall, but haue a vniuersallity in them; he that prayes by a spirit that comprehends not all the elect of God, it is not the spirit of intercession; and that doctrine which is not food proper to all the saints of God (that euer were or shall be), it is not the bread of life; and then Christ Jesus is not in it, who is that bread. Againe, he that offereth any bodily act or trancient thing vnto God, as acceptable vnto him, it is but as the blessing of an idol. When I thinke therfore of the crosse of Christ, in which is death to all corruptible things, I cannot but wonder at the course of mans life vpon the earth; for this crosse is multiplyed with respect to the variety of virtue that is in it, infinitly more then all sicknesses, diseases, distempers, greifes, and vexations that the nature of man can be subiect vnto in this present life; and the Scriptures, alluding to the miseries mans nature is subiect vnto in this world, and in the world to come, sounds an alarme vnto all the sons of men to listen after the conflicts of the reall crosse of Christ, which the diuine power hath submitted it selfe vnto, in the satisfaction of diuine iustice, to bring the creature into the liberty of the sons of God, in that order of marshall dis-

cipline proper to the kingdome of God; therefore it is said kisse the Son, lest he be angry; that is, submit to the discipline of the Son, as the word kisse in that place signifies, as if he should say, yeeld yourselues ouer to that order of the conflict, which the Son of God hath infinitly and eternally performed and constituted, which is the bearing away of all guilt, and a purgation from all vncleanesse, vnto euerlasting acceptation of the Father, together with himselfe. And this crosse is but one, as Christ himselfe is but one, though infinitly multiplyed in the variety of it; the apostle Paul recites aboue thirtie perticulars in one chapter, as assumed vnto himselfe: how many then is there in the history of Christ and throughout all the Scriptures? And the vertue and glory of it is only in one Church of God, which is one and the same, from the begining till time shall be no more; for Christ is the first and the last, the begining and the end of all things; yea, he is that Alpha and Omega, aluding to the first and last letters in the Greeke alphabet, which comprehend all the rest of the letters, to the godlike composure of an apostolicall language in the church of God. This alarme to conflict is not to seuerall churches, for there is but one generall assembly and church of the first borne; therfore when heauen is opened, those seuen churches in Asia are but one throne, and one spirituall and miraculous kind of worship, and in truth one beleeuing saint of God may as well be called a church, as a company of people mett together on the earth; for whosoeuer he be that trusts in the Lord, is as Mount Sion, that cannot be remoued, but abideth foreuer. Neither can any saint of God be faithfully described, but as he hath respect to the whole body, which is Christ. Againe, the church changeth not, no more than Christ himselfe changeth; the alarme is not to another congregation or campe, but only to the variety of millitary excercise, which is so quick in performance, that the holy man Job had not time to swallow downe his spittle betwixt

them; therfore they are said to be in the twinkling of an eye, which confounds the world, in exposition of the scriptures, and Satan himselfe, that he cannot defeat Gods army, which hath such infinit variety of exercise, which host is said to be a double million of angels, or Chearfull Ones, as the seuenty interpreters translate the Hebrew word vsed in that place; that is to say, all such as glory and reioyce in the crosse of Christ, in which there is no more time of intermission, in its conflicts against sin and Satan, then there is any time of intermission in the intercession of Jesus Christ, and yet as full of variety as the starrs of heauen differ one star from another starre in glory, though they all receiue their luster from one and the same sunne.

Thus much of the crosse I humbly make bold to confesse, in way of alusion to the bodily affliction which I was vnder when I writ vnto you, which I thought had bin a harbenger to prouide me lodging in the graue; yet God imboldened me to manifest my condition vnto your hounoured selfe, and to good and admirable efect. Let me confesse a word therfore in alution to recouery, which God by your ministry hath wrought. And then I must say, Oh Sir, or let me looke vp and say, Oh Lord (as the Greek word implyes both), and it is a lordlike gift so to order the visible creatures as to become invisible in their operation; which gift we all ought to haue in such respect as all visibles refferre vnto the invisible God. Oh then, if men were inured to the order of the crosse of Christ, we should find as many alarmes of triumph as of conflict, for they are neuer seperated, no more than the submission of the Son and the Soueraighnity of the Father. And let me say further that if the crosse of Christ should at any time cease in the soules of the saints, with respect of its present being, in vertue and excercise, then should the victory and triumph of the saints cease also, with respect vnto its present being and excercise, which were no lesse than a ceassation of

the glory of heauen. I know this point is not extant in the common ministry, and I know also that it is the substance of the Kingdome of God, and as necesary to be knowne as Christ himselfe, whose Kingdome consists in his life and death, in his humilliation and exaltation, submission and reighne; for in his humilliation his iudgment is exalted; his ouercoming through death sets him in the throne of the Father. How many alarmes of triumph are sounded in the victories of the saints of God in the holy Scriptures, by an elegant alusion vnto the practise of mankind in hostile affaires, as by sound of trumpets, cornets, timbrels, tabers, harpe and musicall instruments; shouting, singing, erection of standard, displaying of banners, feasting, diuiding the spoiles, &c.

Oh, the depth of the fountaine of the crosse of Christ, which is that spring out of which all true triumph ariseth in the heigth therof; out of it Paul can say, in the person of all Gods elect, Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? And againe, in the distinguishing of the crosse he saith, In all these things we are more then conquerours; yea, he makes it the only matter of his reioycing and glory, saying, God forbid, or let it be far from me that I should reioyce in any other thing; for it is the only inlet of the Diuine Power into mankind, and therfore the inlet of all things in the kingdome of God. This Dauid knew, when his armes were made strong to breake in sunder a bow of steele, and his feet made like hindes feet, to leape ouer a wall; and when he returned not from the field till he had trod his enemies downe as dust, and trampled them as the mire in the street. The crosse of Christ once comunicated in, is no more terrible vnto faith, then the bride is to the bridgroome on the nuptiall day; nor is it to be diuided from the crowne and dignitie of Christ, no more then the couenant which God hath confirmed by oath is to be diuided or rent in sunder; which to do were no lesse then sacriledge. No man can looke vpon the crosse by

faith, but he must triumph as a victor, in and by Christ. Such as looke vpon the crosse as terrible, for the saints to vndergoe, they build their religion vpon the letter that kills, and not vpon the spirit that giues life. The contradiction of the law is in their religion, and not the hermony, and ioynt consent of the gospell. Such thinke they must suffer somthing for themselues, (as men) which is to deny the infinit sufferings of the Eternall Son. If we did but know the ioyfull sound, which is heard only in the sufferings of Christ, in what instrument soeuer it apears, or in what place or calling (as in this world) the hearer may be, they shall embrace one another as ioyfully as Joseph and his brethren did, acknowledging themselues to be of one lip and language, falling on the necke of each other, with ioyfull and submissiue teares, without any disparidgment vnto Joseph, as related to Pharoh and all Egipt. If we knew the prodigallity of mankind, which is to waste the whole patrimonie and bounty of the Father, and could forsake the feeding vpon the huskes of perfunctorie performances, and cast our eye vpon the substanciall bread, in our Fathers house, allowed vnto his seruants or ministers, then should we be met ioyfully afar of, or at the greatest distance of our prodigallity, with feasting and robes of honour put vpon vs, and the pleasant ditty of heavenly hermony heard among vs, though the elder brother, that neuer departed out of the house of the earthly tabernacle, whether prelacie or presbitterie, should be angry and grutch at it, who thinke there can be no glory but out of schooles, whose worke is to cast the scriptures into gramaticall construction; which hath euer bin the bar to shut out the knowledge of Christ, which men smooth ouer by a rhetoricall deuice to coyne a multitude of figures for that end and purpose. Such men do mince and clip the prodigallity of man, saying that the remainders of Gods image do abide in mankind by nature, though full and compleat in the act of creation; but they may as well

say that remainders of sin abide in Christ, who tooke the fullnesse of it vpon him, for our redemtion; where as Christ afirmes that the prince of this world commeth, and hath nothing in me. No more hath mankind by nature anything of Christ in him, who is the image of the Inuisible God. Let me vse this particle, Oh, once againe, which hath in it acclamation, lamentation, admiration, consolation, and supplication; whence I say, Oh, that I could study to conceiue and bring forth myselfe to be a seruant vnto you in any thing, whilst I liue on the earth; my muse should not cease till it were efected; and if death should make me an abortiue in that case, yet let it be accompanied with a Requiem at my departure, the burden wherof shall be this; that true Christian religion consisteth only in that wherin the soule of a beleeuer continueth still in comunion with the Spirit of God in Christ, when the naturall body is gone downe to the graue; for faith is that Hypostasis or subsistance and being of things hoped for; that is, faith giues subsistance and being to all things in the Kingdome of God, not only at present, in this life, but also to all things that shall be vnto eternitie.

Per me, SAMUELL GORTON, senior.

Post. These things I haue written vnto you, not because you know them not, but because you know them. 1 John 2 : 21.

WARWICK, Oct: 21, 1674.

Indorsed by John Winthrop, jun., "Mr. Gorton, of Oct : 21 : 1674."

SAMUEL GORTON TO JOHN WINTHROP, JR.

To the Right Worthy and truly Honourable John Winthrop, Gouernour of his Maiesties Collony of Conecticot, these humbly present in Boston, or else where it pleaseth him to reside.

Sir, — If it were a time of triumph I would hallow and shout vnto your honoured selfe, at this distance (conveniencie not admitting of a personall tender of my humble and affectionate seruice vnto you) as with respect vnto that wonder which it pleased God to worke vpon my late distempered body by meanes of your elaborate studies and great benignity in vouchsafeing the fruites therof vnto me; which infirmities were more numerous then was then expressed, either through forgetfullnesse, or rather the paines of those expressed seemed to abate the sence of the rest; but vpon the application of those cordiall and soueraighne remedies, according to your aduice, they all fled away, as though they had not bin, and so continue, to my daily admiration; and as I euen now said concerning acclamation, euen so doth my soule continually ecco to God with respect vnto his worke, out of which your selfe and skill may not be secluded; nor shall my spirit, God giuing strength, cease its entercourse herein; neither, I hope, my children after me; as an argument to depend vpon God, and reverently to esteeme of his giftes bestowed vpon his seruants, according to their vse and vertue by God's appointment and blessing.

Much honoured Sir, my thoughts are now in excercise concerning a body more generall and weighty; namly, the body pollitique of the English in these partes, though ordered in seuerall societies; many appearing as persons much distempered and disquieted, vpon that vnworthy Sachim his apearing in armes (called Phillip); on what hinge the ocation therof turned, I know not; but I little

thought so much harme would haue bin done as is already, in losse of English men, besides that vast charge and trouble.

Giue me leaue to draw out one mite, not to cast into the treasurie of your wisdome, who are richly and honourably furnished with prudence in these high and weighty concernments; neither do I assume the state of a widow, except legislatiue sicknesses and diseases can inervate contracts, and make void relations, but I humbly presume to take vpon me the dialect of an orphant, earnestly suing for a word of information and advice, according as your wisdome looketh vpon our present postures and liklyhood of future proceeds. Many people in these partes are like soules distracted, running hither and thither for shelter, and no where at ease; whole families together not leauing there houses only, but goods and liuelyhood also; which hath ocationed much more spoile then otherwise would haue bin; neither is it for the safe gard of a people to forsake their places, but rather to keepe their stations, and listen to Gods calling of them forth to stand together as one man, that every individuall may receiue the courage and power of the whole.

People are apt in these dayes to giue credit to euery flying and false report; and not only so, but they will report it againe, as it is said of old, report and we will report; and by that meanes they become deceiuers and tormenters one of another, by feares and jealousies. There is a rumour as though all the Indians were in combination and confederacie to exterpate and root out the English, which many feare (for my own part I feare no such thing), as though God brought his people hither to destroy them, by delivering them into the hands of such Barbarians; a people of the curse. I haue rather feared our vaine hopes, groundlesse expectations, and proud boastings, that they are, and will become Christians, when as in the meane time they are invested with nought else but litterall prin-

ciples and grounds of hipocrisie. The gospell is of a purer nature then to consist in visible orders, and ornaments, and telling of histories without reuealing the mistery therof, which is Christ in his saints the hope of glory. And though these be a people of the curse, and so are esteemed, in them against whom the sword is already drawne, vizd: Philip with all his knowne partakers; which sword may not returne into the sheath before the subduing of them. But as for others, which do not yet so appeare, it may seeme to be good to take the actings of such in the best sence, which hindereth nothing from a due observation and standing in readinesse, in case of further appearance, especially in those who haue voluntarily subiected themselues to his Maiesties royall father and his successours for euer, which hath bin accepted and publickly manifested, and themselues also proffessing and acting according to their alegiance; whom, if they should be seene in armes for their defence from the English, is very doubtfull might stirre vp many natiues to beare a part with them.

And if any should thinke that such a base people may be suddenly swallowed vp, as an oxe licketh vp hay; it may seeme to be inconsiderate, for the manner of their warre appears to be such that a rascall like boy may take his opertunitie to be the fall of the most hardy and puissant souldier, as soone as he is of riper years and greater experience. Againe, for marshall aray, according to warlike discipline (in all nations that read the Scriptures), for the safty of the body millitary, is an ocation for these men to make the greatest slaughter; also their flight is their honour, and the refuge which they betake themselues vnto is more pernicious to valiant souldiers then are bullwarkes, towers, castles, and walled cities. I remember the time of the warres in Ireland, (when I was young, in Queene Elizabeths dayes of famous memory,) where much English blood was spilt by a people much like vnto these, the

Earle of Terrone being their leader, where many valiant souldiers lost their liues, both horse and foot, by meanes of woods, bushes, boggs, and quagmires. Yea, in that warre diuers noble men, eminent for religion, lost their liues, whose names are vpon my heart still; and in my later dayes I haue bin in company with antient preachers of Gods word, men of God, now fallen asleepe, who haue lamented the losse of some of those noble men (naming them) with weeping teares, hauing in their life time bin intimate with them in religious and godlike concernments. And after these Irish were subdued by force, what treacherous and bloody massacres haue they atempted is well knowne.

I thinke not of these things in way of any discouragement of my selfe or others, in point of the ordinance of warre, but consider that all things may fall out alike to the precious and to the vile, in any outward or visible accurences. And such as perceiue the hand of God, and accept of it as his fatherly administration, and in the application therof calme and quiet all naturall zeale prouoked by selfe ends and sinister respects, I thinke is the only Religion that can be found in any warlike atcheiument, or in any visible ordinance whatsoever. My thinkes we haue no cause to suspect Gods hand towards vs in these partes, which hath remoued vs into a place more sutable to English bodies then other parts are: wherin the people are multiplyed beyond thoughts of heart, their affaires and imployes successfull, their courage not diminished, as apeares by their late going forth vpon this vnexpected ocation. And with all the natiues decreasing by warrs among themselues, and by diseases brought vpon themselues through voluptiouse courses, especially the young men. And if Gods hand make roome by such meanes for the spreading of the English, it seemes to be more sutable then the sword, vnto that Royall leaue which was giuen to his subiects to plant themselues in these parts: and also to the charge giuen

together with it, namly, that none of the English should take any lands from the natiues, without giuing them satisfaction for it. And it is to be doubted that the not obseruing this charge, is a great and vniversall grudge among the Indians at this day, while men take vp lands and plant vpon them as their owne, without any retribution, at the least not to the cheife Sachims, if any small thing at all to some base inferiour fellow; which makes the Sachims afraid, least by this meanes in short time they shall be spued out of the country, for want of land to reside vpon; and for ought that I haue learned, this was the proper cause of that barbarous slaughter made of our friends and neighbours at the Dutch plantation then was. Sir, my humble submission consists in my daily prayers to God for you and yours.

SAMUELL GORTON, senior.

WARWICK, Sept. 11th: 1675.

LETTER OF BRAMPTON GURDON.*

BRAMPTON GURDON TO JOHN WINTHROP.

To the worshipful & my verry louing fren[d] Mr. Jhon Wenthro[p]thes.

S^R^, — I thancke yow for your letter, & for the expressyo[n] of so many good purposes in the Howes of Commons. I met the Mayor of Sudberry on Fryday at the Lyon in Grotton; he tole me that Sir Ro. Cran tocke it verry vnkindly at his hand that he laburred not to chos yow a Burges thear, & yet he say Sir Ro. neuer mad his myend so knowen to him. Sir Go. Waldegre & I met thear to byend buchers & others. We suppprest Cosman from keping an alhous, & Mr. Warren spacke ernestly to leaue the towne to the dyreccon of the Doctor. It auayled not. It wear good if the Parlament would reforme the exaccyon of pore buchers. Sir Ro. Cran, I heare, is apoyented to lye tomorrow night at Burntwod. I pray see Sir Jhon Corbet before yow come awaye, & commend me to him. I will writ to him at more layseuer. We met my Sister Baker on Thursday at Wenham, & thear had a verry chearfule metteing. I prayes God for all his mersyes. Jhon Gurdon goo to morrow to Grases, & intend to stay theare for your commpany tile Thursday or Fryday. If yow haue any operteunyte, I pray tacke order for the payment of the money into the K. benche & the Marshalse. It

* A notice of Brampton Gurdon, of Assington, Suffolk, is given in 4 Mass. Hist. Coll. iv. 559, in connection with several of his letters to Gov. Winthrop. This letter appears to have been written to Winthrop at London, a few years before his emigration to New England in 1630. Sir John Deane, who is spoken of in this letter as not having "one hour" to live, died in 1625. — *Ms. Genealogy.* — Eds.

was sayed on Fryday morning by a seruant of Sir Jhon Deans that his master could not then liue one hower; but I haue hard nothing scins: & thus with my be[s]t loue to yow & to Mr. Downing, I pray God geue vs a comfortabule metteng; & so I rest

Your verry louing frend, BRAMPTON GURDON.

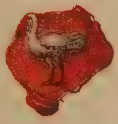
Assõn, this 19 Febru.

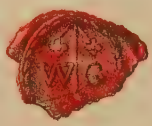
Fac-Similes

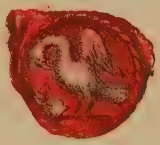
OF

THE AUTOGRAPH SIGNATURES AND OF THE SEALS
AFFIXED TO THE LETTERS CONTAINED
IN THIS VOLUME.

Fac-similes of Signatures and Seals.





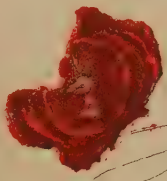


Thos. Dudley

Fac-similes of Signatures and Seals.

Thomas Ward

E. Symonds



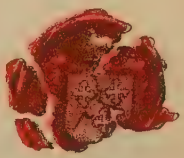
Herbert Pelham

Jon Blackleach Junior

Jo: Endecott

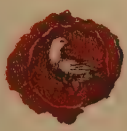
Fac-similes of Signatures and Seals.

Matt Boynton

Jo: Sandgill 

Wm Hooke

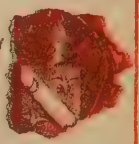
Hugh Peter



Ez. Rogers.

John Linder

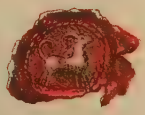
Richard Saltonstall



Tho: Shepard

Gilis Firmin.

Wm Coddington



Nehimiah Bourne

Samuel Maverick

Rich: Vines

Wm Hattrick

L. Wright

F Bulle. Gorges

Tho: Gorges.

Tho. Jermyn.

Edw: Godfrey

Geory Kebbe

Edward Coke.

Jo: Higginson

William Goddard

John Mason

Edward Parke

Fac-similes of Signatures and Seals.

Tho: Peter.

Thomas Harrison:

Jamb Parker.

John Norton.

Jo. Haynes.

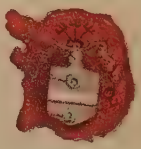
Fac-similes of Signatures and Seals.

Theoph: Eaton

Thomas James.

John Davenporte

John Hulk.

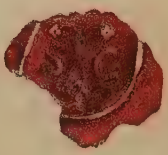
William Leete: 

Fac similes of Signatures and Seals.

William Hooke.

Rt. Bellingham.

Samuell Gorton



Brampton Gurdon

INDEX.

INDEX.

A.

Abachickwood, 415.
Adjutators chosen by the army, 436, 439, 440.
Agamenticus (York), 195.
Albers, Hans, 544, *n.*
Alchemy, 72–75, 77–80.
Alexander, Nicholas, banishment of, 291.
Alford, William, acknowledgment of Jonathan Brewster to, 70.
Algar, Andrew, 365, 370.
Allen, Mrs. Mary, 362, 374.
Allerton, Isaac, 488. Bond from Jonathan Brewster to, 70.
Allestrey, Paul, 535.
Allin, John, 559, 561.
Alsop, Joseph, 494, 501.
Anabaptists, 210, 589.
Andrews, William, 498.
Andros, Sir Edmund, attempted invasion of Connecticut by, 1675, 137.
Annumpequun, 423.
Arlington, Henry, Lord, 315.
Arnheim, Johann Georg von, reported death of, 14.
Artephius, 72, 74, 75.
Arthur Kull, N. J., 570.
Assembly of elders at Boston, 1657, 83, *n.*, 85.

B.

"Bachelor," ship, 54.
Bachiler, Rev. Stephen, 10, 364, *n.* Letters to John Winthrop, 88, 105, 108. To John Winthrop, jun., 98. To Margaret Winthrop, 99. To the Church in Boston, 100. Notice of, 88, *n.*
Bak, John, 536.
Baker, John, 178, 365.
Baldwin, Sergeant, 494.
Bampfield, Thomas, Speaker of the House of Commons, 593.
Barbadoes, 319, 510.
Barkley, Alderman, 386.
Barnardiston, Sir Nathaniel, 226.
Bartlett, William, 69.
Bastwick, ——, 334.
Battle between the English and Spaniards in the West Indies, 152. Naval, between the Spaniards and Dutch, in 1639, 219, 298.
Baulston, William, 110, 111.
Beers, Capt. Richard, slain near Hadley, 43.
Beggerly, Mrs., 156, 202.
Bell, Philip, Governor of Barbadoes, 510.
Bellingham, Richard, 375. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 596, 597, 598, 599. To the selectmen of Boston, 600. Notice of, 596, *n.*
Bellingham, William, 208.
Berkeley, John, Lord, of Stratton, 315. Notice of, *ib.*, *n.*
Biddeford patent, 337, *n.*
Biddeford, settlement of, 337, *n.*, 340, *n.*
Bill, Mary, 580.
Billerica (Shawsheen), 325, 446.
Binkes, Daniel, 88–96, *n.*
Binkes, Roger, 88–96, *n.*
Bird, Mr., 384.
Bishop, John, 559, 560.
Bishop, Mrs., 469.
Blackleach, John, 497, 498. Letter to John Winthrop, 146. To John Winthrop, jun., 149, 150, 151. Notice of, 146, *n.* Labors among the Indians, 150. Voyage to Jamaica, 151.
Black-lead mine, 405, 407, 408, 409.
Blackman, Benjamin, 571.
Blackstone, William, 195.
Blinman, Rev. Richard, 46, 82, 84–87, 284, 453, 455, 461, 490. Notice of, 82, *n.*
Boade, Henry, 353.
Boden, Ambrose, 376.
"Body of Liberties," 27.
Bond, Robert, 485.
Bond, Rev. Sampson, 319. Letter from Samuel Maverick to, 316. Notice of, *ib.*, *n.*
Bonython, Capt. John, 342, 356, 358, 365, 377, *n.*
Booth, Sir George, insurrection of, 1659, 508. Notice of, *ib.*, *n.*
Boston, town of, 536. Church in, 3. Letter to the, from Stephen Bachiler, 100. Synod at, 1657, 83, *n.*, 85. Execution of Quakers at, 1659, 507. Letter to the selectmen of, from Richard Bellingham, 600.
Bourne, Nehemiah, 431. Letters to John Winthrop, 297, 300, 302. To John Winthrop, jun., 304, 305. Notice of, 297, *n.* Voyage to England, 1639, 297, 300.
Boykim, Jarvis, 493.
Boynton, Sir Matthew, letters to John Winthrop, 167, 168. To John Winthrop, jun., 162, 164, 166, 168. Notice of, 162, *n.*
Bradbury, Thomas, and William Hooke: letter to John Winthrop, 195. Notice of, *ib.*, *n.*

Bradley, Peter, 233. Notice of, 81, *n.*
Bradshaw, John, 420, 463
Bradstreet, Simon, 99, 215, 217, 255, 287, 380. Appointed agent of the colony, at London, 135.
Braintree, iron-works at, 403.
Brewster, Benjamin, 423.
Brewster, Jonathan, 235, 541. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 66, 67, 69, 71, 72, 77, 81, 84. To Elizabeth Winthrop, 75 Acknowledgment to William Alford, 70. Bond to Isaac Allerton, *ib.* Notice of, 66, *n.*
Brewster, William, 66, *n.*
Bright, Henry, 385, *n.*, 388, 389.
Brookhaven, L.I., 184, 185, 190.
Buckingham, George, Duke of: expedition to the Isle of Rhé, 7, *n.*
Bull, Dixy, 18.
Burdett, Rev. George, 10, 335.
Burton, Rev. Henry, 16, 334.

C.

Campion, Clement, 334.
Capel, Lord, 432.
Carr, George, notice of, 255, *n.*
Carr, Sir Robert, 309, 311, 312.
Carter, Joseph, 20.
Carteret, Sir George, 315, 319. Notice of, 315, *n.*
Carteret, Philip, Governor of New Jersey, 319.
Cartwright, Col. George, 309, 311.
Casco, 371, 372. Rev. Stephen Bachiler invited to settle at, 100–105, 364, *n.*
Cassarres, Martin de Res, Marquis de, 429.
Cassasenaman (Robin), 415, 416.
Castle Hill, Ipswich, 123.
Cavaliers, 588, 592, 593.
Champernoon, Francis, 330.
Chapman, Robert, and William Leete: letter to the Governor and Assistants of Connecticut, 556.
Charles I., King of Great Britain, 22, 390, 436. Attempted escape from Carisbrooke Castle, 303, 432.
Charles II., King, 315, 316, 503, 511, 518, 543.
Charles, John, 55.
Chewte, James, 128.
Child, Dr. Robert, 282.
Choyse, Dr., 488.
Chute, Chaloner, Speaker of the House of Commons, 593.
Clarke, Thomas, 404, 407, 498, 500, 520, 521. Letter to John Winthrop, jun., 405.
Claypole, Mrs., death of, 590.
Cleeve, George, 88–96, *n.*, 104, *n.*, 329, 330, 342, 343, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 369, 373. Letters to John Winthrop, 363, 365. To the Governor, &c., of Massachusetts, 366, 371. Depositions taken before, 367. Notice of, 363, *n.* Deposition relating to Robert Nash, 370.
Coddington, William, 26, 110, 573. Letters to John Winthrop, 278. To John Winthrop, jun., 279, 280, 284, 286, 287, 291, 292, 293. Voyage to England, 280.
Codman, Robert, 36.
Codrington, Christopher, Governor of Barbadoes, 293.
Coggeshall, John, 110, 111.
Commissioners for New England, 40, 556, 568, 573. From Scotland, 1639, 221, 390. For Lygonia, 375. Of the United Colonies, 289, 417, 468, 484, 571, 574, 582, 583, 599.
"Company of Husbandmen," 88–98, 101.
Compton, John, 3.
Connecticut, attempted invasion of, by Andros, 1675, 137. Settlement of, 165, 166. Letter to the Governor, &c., of, from John Mason, 423. Visit of Gov. John Winthrop, jun., and Assistants, to Long Island, 1664, 483. Charter of, 522, 523, 550, 552, 554, 573. Letter of William Leete and Robert Chapman to the Governor and Assistants of, 556.
Connecticut River, settlements on, 66.
Cooke, Edward, letters to John Winthrop, 381, 383, 384. Notice of, 381, *n.*
Cooke, George, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389.
Cooke, Robert, 381, 382, 383, 384.
Cooper, Ruth, 199.
Corbet, Sir John, 632.
Cotton, Rev. John, 11, 100, 101, 187.
Cradock, Matthew, 30, 31, 226, 382.
Crandall, John, 586.
Crane, Jasper, 499.
Crane, Sir Robert, 499, 632.
Crispe John: letter to, from John Dye and others, 91, *n.*
Crompton, Dennis, 559.
Cromwell, Oliver, Protector, 287, 418, 420, 432, 436, 458, 463, 473, 502, *n.*, 587, *n.*, 589. Death of, 590, 591.
Cromwell, Richard, 502. Chosen Protector, 591.
Crygier, Martin, 61, 63. Notice of, 61, *n.*
Cudworth, James, notice of, 42, *n.*
Cullick, Capt. John, 451, 465, 471, 513. John Davenport and William Goodwin: letter to John Winthrop, jun., 514.
Cutting, John, 476.

D.

"Daily Direction, The," 207.
Dalton, Rev. Timothy, 102, 103.
Davenport, Rev. John, 15, 150, 469, 471, 589. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 487, 489, 490, 492, 495, 497, 498, 501, 502, 504, 507, 511, 514, 515, 517, 519, 521, 525, 526, 529, 531. To Elizabeth Winthrop, 520. Notice of, 487, *n.*
Davies, John, 161.
Davis, John, 35, *n.*, 588, *n.*
"Davis Papers," letters from the, 88–98.
Dean, William, 410.
Deane, Admiral, 463.
Deane, Sir John, death of, 632, *n.*, 633.
Dearing, George, deposition relating to Robert Nash, 368.
Deer Island, 536.
Delaware, expedition to, 1664, 309, 310. Proposed settlement on the, 419, 420, 549.
Desborough, John, 502.
Dick, Anthony, 398.
Digby, Sir Kenelm, 588, 593.
Dillingham, Edward, 253.

Dillingham, Mrs., 253.
Doggett, Thomas, 37.
Downing, Emanuel, 2, 13, 14, 20, 169, 387, 392, 449, 633.
Downing, James, 14, 19.
Downing, Lucy, 448, 449.
Downing, Mrs. Lucy, 158, 359.
Downing, Robert, 277.
Drawbridge, fall of the, at Boston, 1659, 507.
Drinking healths, 270.
Duchfield, Mr., 227, 228.
Dudley, Rev. Samuel, 327.
Dudley, Thomas, 253, 342, 375. Letters to John Winthrop, 110, 111, 112. Notice of, 110, *n.*
Duke, Mrs., 393.
Dummer, Richard, 30, 88–96, *n.*
Dunkirk, capture of, by the French, 429.
Dunster, Henry, President of Harvard College, 272.
Dury, Rev. John, 504.
Dustin, John, 415.
Dutch, The, on Long Island, 183, 184, 187, 188, 191, 192. Expedition against the, in 1664, 189. Hostilities with the Indians, 412, 477. War with England, 417, 418, 424, 570. At New York, 512. Capture of New York by the, in 1673, 570, 571. Settlement on the Connecticut River, 44, 193.
Dye, John, and others: letter to John Crispe and others, 91–94, *n.*
Dyer, William, 282, 283.

E.

Earl, Ralph, 191.
Easton, Nicholas, 282, 283.
Eaton, Hannah, marriage to Wm. Jones, 501.
Eaton, Mrs. Mabel, death of, 475.
Eaton, Nathaniel, 228.
Eaton, Samuel, 475.
Eaton, Theophilus, 184, 278, 381, 465. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 475, 476. Lines on the death of, by Rev. Abraham Pierson, 477. Death of, 489, 495.
Eccles, Solomon, banishment of, 291, 292.
Edmandson, William, 291.
Egerton, Anne, 207, *n.*
Egerton, ——, 207.
Elderkin, John, 232, 236, 237, 242, 248. Notice of, 33, *n.*
Election of Governor at New Haven, in 1658, 495.
Eliot, Rev. John, 151, 431. Letter to, from John Wilson, 3, 4.
Eliot, Rev. Joseph, 568, 572, 574, 575.
Endecott, John, Governor of Massachusetts, 113, 199, 336, 417. Letters to John Winthrop, 156, 157, 158. Commissioner on the Plymouth boundary, 158.
Epps, Daniel, 126, *n.*, 128.
Epps, Mrs. Elizabeth, 126.
Exeter, Rev. Stephen Bachiler invited to settle at, 105–108.

F.

Fac-similes of signatures and seals, 635.
Fairfax, Thomas, Lord, 495.
Farmington Indians, 542.
Fast, April 12, 1638, 157, 201. Proposed on account of the fire in London, September, 1666, 529, 530.
Feake, Hannah, 183.
Fellows, Richard, 405.
Fenwick, George, 53, 54, 167.
Fiennes, Lord, 592.
Fifth-monarchy men, 515.
Fire in London, September, 1666, 530.
Firmin, Giles: letters to John Winthrop, 273, 275, 276. Notice of, 273, *n.*
Fisher's Island, 505 Granted to John Winthrop, jun., 83, *n.*, 84, *n.*
Fitch, Rev. James, 466, 538.
Fleetwood, Gen. Charles, 502, 511.
Forth, Roger, 387.
Fox, George, 288, 289, 291, 293.
Foxcroft, George, 21.
Frankfort, reported vision at, 464.
Frost, Nicholas, 379.
Fruit-trees, 419, 421.
Fugill, Thomas, 437.

G.

Gallop, John, 197.
Gallop, John, jun., 236, 426, 452.
Gard, Roger, 345. Death of, 445.
Gardiner, Lion, 482, *n.* Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 52, 56, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64. Notice of, 52, *n.*
Gardiner's Island, 52, *n.*, 64.
Garlick, Joseph, 62, 63.
Garrett, Capt., 418, 476. Loss of his ship, 1657, 35, *n.*, 588.
Gibbons, William, 535.
Gibson, Rev. Richard, 355, *n.*
Glover, Henry, 568.
Goade, Thomas, 16, 17.
Godfrey, Edward, 342, 365. Letters to John Winthrop, 335, 377, 378. To John Winthrop, jun., 380. Notice of, 377, *n.*
Goodenhouse, Samuel, 494.
Goodwin, William, 511, 512, 514. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 44, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 514. Notice of, 44, *n.* Letter to, from John Norton, 450.
Goodyear, Stephen, 418, 495, 496, 500, 589.
Gookin, Daniel, 518. Letter (with James Parker) to John Winthrop, jun., 446.
Gorges, Sir Ferdinando, 88–96, *n.*, 342, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 360, 363, *n.*, 377, *n.* Letter to Sir Henry Vane, John Winthrop, and others, 329. To John Winthrop, 331. Notice of, 329, *n.* Grant of the Province of Maine to, 348, 353, 354.
Gorges, Ferdinando, Esq., notice of, 424, *n.*
Gorges, Thomas, 332, 345. Letters to John Winthrop, 333, 335. Notice of, 333, *n.*
Gorges, William, 377, *n.*
Goring, George, Lord, 432.
Gorton, Samuel, 279. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 601, 602, 604, 627. Notice of, 601, *n.*
Gostlin, Benjamin, 22.
Gostlin, Capt., 304.
Governor, election of, at New Haven, 1658, 495.
Graves, Richard, 55.

Greene, Ralph, 307.
Greenland, Dr. Henry, 575.
Greensmith, Stephen, 172, 338.
Griswold, Matthew, 405, 406, 407, 408, 416, 535, 560, 584, 585.
Guppy, Reuben, 335, 336.
Gurdon, Brampton, 11, 139, 226, 255. Letter to John Winthrop, 632.
Gurdon, John, 632.
Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sweden, death of, 15.

H.

Hale, Thomas, 19.
Hall, Samuel, 24, 26, *n.*
Hammond, Col., 432.
Hammond, William, 401.
Hampton, N.H., settlement of, 98.
Hardwin, Grace, 88–96, *n.*
Harison, Mr., 8.
Harlakenden Family, 136.
Harlock, Thomas, 39.
Harrison, Maj.-Gen. John, 463.
Harrison, Rev. Thomas, D.D.: letters to John Winthrop, 434, 435, 438. Notice of, 434, *n.*
Harrold, John, 449.
Hartford, 514. Seizure of Dutch possessions at, 193, 194. Divisions in the church at, 530.
Hartlib, Samuel, 504.
Haselrig, Sir Arthur, 420, 592.
Hathorne, Major William, 213, 214, 241, 312, 313, 512, 543.
Haverhill, settlement of, 27, 29, 274.
Hawkins, Capt. Thomas, 145. Letter (with Nehemiah Bourne) to John Winthrop, 207. Notice of, *ib. n.*
Haynes, Mrs. Mabel, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462.
Haynes, John, Gov., 5. Death of, 49. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 460, 461, 462, 465.
Healths, drinking of, 270.
Heath, Isaac, 4.
"Hector," ship, 19.
Herryman, John, 489, 490, 491, 492.
Hewes, Rev. Mr., 16.
Hewet, Rev. John, D.D., 208.
Higginson, Rev. John, 34, 35, 543. Letter to John Winthrop, 394. To John Winthrop, jun., 399, 400. Notice of, 394, *n.*
Higginson, Nathaniel, 399.
Hill, Valentine, 378.
Hispaniola, 152. Expedition to, 1654, 420, 476.
History of New England, by John Winthrop, 269.
Holbadge, Arthur, 494.
Hooke, Ebenezer, 594, 595.
Hooke, William (York): letters to John Winthrop, 195, 196, 197. Notice of, 195, *n.*
Hooke, Rev. William, 499, 501, 503. Letters to John Winthrop, jun, 587, 590, 594. Notice of, 587, *n.*
Hooker, Rev. Thomas, 10, 11, 381. Removal to Connecticut, 45.
Hopkins, Edward, 169, 381. Estate of, 50, 504, 512, 514.
Hopkins, Mrs., 471, 473, 474, 475, 476.
Howes, Edward, 16.
Howes, Mr., 1.
Howgall, Francis, 289.
Hubbard, Rev. Joshua, 293.
Hubbard, Thomas, 46.
Hull, John, 314. Letters to James Richards, 533, 534. To John Winthrop, jun., 536. Warrant to John Richards, 536. Notice of, 533, *n.*
Hull, Rev. Joseph, 378, 445.
Humfrey, John, 341.
Husbandmen, company of, 88–96, *n.*, 98, 101, 346.
Hutchinson, Mrs. Ann, 279.
Hutchinson, Edward, 110, 111.

I.

Ince, Jonathan, 35, *n.*, 588, *n.*
Incendiarism in Milford, Conn., 544, 545.
Inchiquin, Lord, 144.
Indian Bible (Eliot's), 151.
Indians, 546. Labors of Thomas Mayhew among the, 34, 36, 37. Attack of, on Saybrook, 1636, 56. Hostilities of the, 68, 82, 321–325, 411, 412, 413, 423, 426, 462, 518, 541, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 598, 627-631. Religious instruction of the, by John Blackleach, 150; by Thomas James, 485, 486.
Ipswich, church at, 121, 125.
Ireland, reduction of, by Cromwell, 457. War in, 600.
Iron-works, 500, 589. At Braintree, 403. At Lynn, 402, 403. At New Haven, 403, 404, 406, 477, 524.
"Isle of Wight" (Gardiner's Island), 52, *n.*, 64.
Isles of Shoals, 31, 377, 378, *n.*, 443.

J.

Jacie, Rev. Henry, 162.
Jamaica, voyage to, by John Blackleach, 151.
James, Duke of York, 310, 311, 315, 433.
James, Rev. Thomas, 278. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 482, 484. To the Governor and Assistants of Conn., 483. Notice of, 482, *n.*
Jeffries Creek (Manchester), 274.
Jenner, Rev. Thomas, 10, 334, 340, 341, 344, 350, 354. Letters to John Winthrop, 355, 356, 359. Notice of, 355, *n.*
Jesuits, 503.
Jews in Hungary, 464.
Jocelyn, Henry, 359, 360, 361, 371, 374, 376, 378, 379.
Jones, William, 501, *n.*, 570, 571.
Jordan, John, 399.
Jordan, Rev. Robert, 339, 364, 371.
Jordan, Thomas, 558.
Juppe, Thomas, 88–96, *n.*
Justification by faith, 257–265.

K.

Keayne, Robert, 370.
Kent, rebellion in, 1648, 303, 432.

Kirby, Francis, 224. Letters to John Winthrop, 18, 19, 20, 21. To John Winthrop, jun., 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. Notice of, 13, *n.*
Kirman, John, 88–96, *n.*
Kitchell, Robert, death of, 570.
Knollys, Hansard, 179.

L.

Ladd, Capt., 183.
Lake, John, 130, 204.
Lake, Mrs. Margaret, 129, 130.
Lake, Thomas, 431, 500.
Lambert, Lieut.-Gen. 463, 511, 592.
Lamberton, Capt. George, 208, 229.
Lamberton, ——, 493.
Langdale, Sir Marmaduke, 432.
Latour, Claude, Sieur de, 386.
Latour, Madame de, 386.
Laud, William, appointed Archbishop of Canterbury, 15.
Lead mine, 496.
Leader, Richard, 403.
Leate, Mrs. Ann, 570, *n.*
Lechford, Thomas, 27, 111.
Leete, Andrew, 546, 558, 559, 561.
Leete, Graciana, 539, 540, 542, 569.
Leete, William, 495, 523, 526, 527, 528, 529. Elected Deputy Governor of New Haven, 496. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 538, 539, 540, 541, 543, 544, 546, 548, 550, 552, 553, 557, 559, 563, 564, 565, 568, 569, 570, 572, 574, 575, 577, 578, 580, 582, 584 (with Robert Chapman) to the Governor and Assistants of Connecticut, 556. Notice of, 538, *n.*
Leigh, Rev. William, suspended, 8. Allowed to preach, 12.
Leigh, Robert, 541.
Lenthall, William, 463. Speaker of the House of Commons.
Levellers, 439, 440.
Leverett, John, Gov. of Mass., 130, 184, 476.
Lewis, George, deposition relating to Robert Nash, 369.
Lilburne, John, 439, 440.
Lines, Henry, 399, 470, 546.
Ling, Mr., 523.
Lockwood, John, 232, 236, 238, 239, 240, 242.
London, city of, 429. Riot in, 1648, 141. Sickness in, 1659, 592.
Long, Sir Lisleborne, Speaker of the House of Commons, 593.
Long Island, 64, 187, 250, 581. The Dutch on, 183, 184, 187, 188, 191, 192. Visit of the Governor and Assistants of Connecticut to, 1664, 483.
Long-Island Indians, attack of Ninigret on the, 482. Religious instruction of the, 485, 486.
Loper, Jacobus, 544, 545.
Lothrop, Capt. John, 577.
Lovelace, Francis, Governor of New York, 568.
Luxford, James, 202, 203, *n.*, 221, 224, 225, 228.
Lygonia, province of, 88–96, *n.*, 337, *n.*, 357, 359, 364, 366, 371. Letter of George Cleeve to the commissioners for, 375.
Lynch, Sir Thomas, Governor of Jamaica, 154.
Lynn, iron-works at, 402, 403.
Lyon, Thomas, 288.

M.

Mackworth, Arthur, 353, 371.
Maidston, John, 588, 593.
Maine, early settlement in, 88–96, *n.* Grant of the province of, to Sir Ferdinando Gorges, 348, 353, 354, 377, *n.*
Malaga, affairs in, 1646, 429.
Malbon, Mrs., 593.
Malby, Mr., 568.
Mamenatuck, 324.
Marblehead, 274.
Martha's Vineyard, shipwreck on, 1675, 42.
Mason, Capt. John, 522, 523. Expedition against the Pequots, 321. Letters to John Winthrop, 411. To John Winthrop, jun., 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 424, 425, 426. To Elizabeth Winthrop, 421. To the Governor, &c., of Connecticut, 423. Notice of, 411, *n.*
Massachusetts, letter to the Governor, Deputy, and Assistants of, from Richard Saltonstall, 253. Resistance to the royal authority in, 1666, 312, 313. Letter to the Governor and Council of War in, from Daniel Patrick, 322. Letter of George Cleeve, and depositions relating to Robert Nash, from the archives of, 366–371. Sickness in, 1652, 459.
Massachusetts Colony Charter, duplicate of the, 159 and *n.*
Massachusetts Company, 382.
Mattamuke (Windsor), Conn., 66, 67.
Maverick, Samuel, 380. Letters to John Winthrop, 307, 308. To John Winthrop, jun., 309, 311, 312, 313, 315, 319. To Sampson Bond, 316.
Mayhew, Thomas, 253. Letters to John Winthrop, 30, 32. To John Winthrop, jun., 31, 33, 34, 36, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42. Notice of, 30, *n.*
Mayhew, Thomas, jun., lost at sea, 35, 36. His widow and children, 36, 38.
Messenger, Edward, 409, 410.
Middleton, Col., 304.
Milford, Conn., incendiarism in, 544, 545.
Miller, John, 4.
Mitchell, Rev. Jonathan, 459.
Mitton, Michael, 365, 376. Deposition relating to Robert Nash, 369.
Modyford, Sir Thomas, Governor of Jamaica, 154, 313.
Mohawk Indians, 411, 413, 577. Hostilities of, towards the Dutch, 477.
Mohegan Indians, 325, 413, 543, 545.
Monhegen, trading-house at, 71.
Monk, Gen. George, 113, *n.*, 117, 463, 511.
Montauk Indians, attack of Ninigret on the, 482.
Moreton, Thomas, Bp. of Lichfield and Coventry, 7.
Morgan, Rev. Mr., 8. Death of, 10, 12.
Morris, Lewis, 288.
Morton, ——, 331.
Mott, Rev. Mr., suspended, 9.
Munhick (Windsor, Conn.), 67.

N.

Nansemond, Virginia, 437.
Narragansett country, jurisdiction over the, 294.—Swamp-fight, 1675, 583. Indians, 324, 325, 411, 413, 482, 579, 580, 581, 601.
Naval battle between the Spaniards and the Dutch, 1639, 213, 298. Between the English and the Dutch, 1653, 465.
Nash, John, 570, 571, 572.
Nash, Joseph, 519.
Nash, Robert, depositions relating to, 367—370.
Nash, Thomas, 519, *n.*
Nash, Timothy, 519.
Nebott, 57.
Neisse, battle near, 14.
Nepawbuck, Pequot Indian, 278.
New England, History of, by John Winthrop, 269.
"New England's Bloody Ensign," 186.
New Somersetshire, 90, *n.*, 337, *n.*, 363, *n.* Province of, 377, *n.*
New Haven, 182. Iron-works at, 403, 404, 406. Colony of, 424, 522, 523. Union with Connecticut, 552. John Winthrop, jun., invited to, 470. Election of Governor at, 1658, 495. Bounds of, 518. Order of the magistrates of, relating to the settlement of Rev. Zechariah Walker at Stratford, 566.
New Jersey granted to James, Duke of York, 319.
Newman, Rev. Antipas, 500, *n.* Notice of, 83, *n.*
Newman, Francis, elected Governor of New Haven, 495, 496, 506.
Newton, Thomas, 452.
Newtown (Hartford), Conn., 66.
New York, colony of, 317.
Nicholson, Joseph, 286, 289.
Nicolls, Col. Richard, 309, 310, 311, 312, 315, 318, 319, 531.
Ninigret, 422, 457, 468, 482, *n.*, 578. Arrest of, 426.
Norton, Rev. John, appointed agent of the colony at London, 135. His "Heart of New England Rent," &c., 287. Letters to John Winthrop, 448. To John Winthrop, jun., 450. To William Goodwin, 450. Notice of, 448, *n.* Removal to Boston, 535.
Norton, William, Ipswich, 448, 449.
Norton, William, Boston, 600.
Nott, John, 55.
Nowell, Increase, 253, 441. Letter to, from Daniel Patrick, 324.
Nye, Rev. Philip, 16.

O.

Olcott, Mrs., 241, 245.
Oldham, John, notice of, 66, *n.*
Otter, sent as a present to Charles I., 221, 299.
Oxenbridge, Rev. John, 292.

P.

Packer, John, 283.
Paine, William, 325, 498, 500. Letters to John Winthrop, 401. To John Winthrop, jun., 402, 403, 404, 405, 407, 408, 409, 410. Notice of, 401, *n.*
Palmer, John, 507, 509, 511.
Palmes, Edward, 232, 238, 241, 245.
Parker, Rev. James: letters to John Winthrop, 441, 444, 446. Notice of, 441, *n.*
Parkman, Elias, 255, 256. Notice of, 255, *n.*
Parks, Edward: letters to John Winthrop, 388. To John Winthrop, jun., 385, 387. Notice of, 385, *n.* Will of, *ib.*, *n.*
Parks, Henry, 385, *n.*, 386, *n.*, 388.
Parliament, 21, 224, 331, 353, 426, 429, 433, 436, 437, 439, 464, 472, 473, 502, 518, 588, 591, 592, 593, 632. Dissolution of the Long, by Cromwell, 463.
Parr, Thomas, 186.
Partridge, Capt. Alexander, 284, 285.
Patrick, Daniel: letters to John Winthrop, 321, 325, 326. To the Governor and Council of War in Massachusetts, 322. To Increase Nowell, 324. Notice of, 321, *n.* Death of, 412.
Peck, ——, 491.
Peirce, John, 307.
Peirce, Capt. William, 13, 20, 515, 568, 588.
Pelham, Herbert, 375. Letters to John Winthrop, 139, 140, 144. And Richard Saltonstall, petition to the General Court, 138. Notice of, 138, *n.* Appointed colonial agent in England, *ib.*
Pelham, Nathaniel, 35, *n.*, 588, *n.*
Pell, John, 476.
Penching, Rev. Mr., 8.
Pennington, Admiral Sir John, 298.
Pentucket (Haverhill), settlement of, 27, 29, 274.
Pequots, 468. Hostilities of the, 68, 278, 322, 394, 395, 396, 397, 414, 426. Expedition against the, in 1637, 321.
Peter, Rev. Hugh, 53, 113, 118, 120, 121, 157, 276, 277, 281, 429, 499, 587. Letters to John Winthrop, 199, 200, 201, 202. To John Winthrop, jun., 203.
Peters, Rev. Thomas: letters to John Winthrop, 428, 431. To John Winthrop, jun., 432. Notice of, 428, *n.* Voyage to England, 1646, 428.
Philip, sachem of Mount Hope, 627, 629.
Phillips, Rev. George, 401.
Phillips, ——, 199.
Pickering, ——, 178.
Picket, John, 87.
Pierson, Rev. Abraham, 504, 553, 570. Lines on the death of Theophilus Eaton, 477—481. Notice of, 477, *n.*
Pierson, Mrs., 501, 503.
Plague among the Indians, 1616—17, 337, *n.*
"Plough Company," 88—96, *n.*, 98, 101, 346.
Plough Patent, 346, 354, 363, *n.*
"Plough," ship, 89, *n.*, 101.
Plymouth, colony of, 579.
Plymouth-colony boundary, 158.
Porter, John, 110.
Presbyterians, 589.

Prince, Rev. Thomas, 411, *n.*
Providence (New), capture of, from Spain, 313.
Provost, David, 58.
Prynne, William, 334. Inscription on the walls of his chamber in the Tower, written during his imprisonment, 251.
Puckering, Mrs. Jane, 281.
Purchase, Thomas, 338, 339, 342, 373. 374. Notice of, 338, *n.*
Purchase, Mrs., 375.
Pynchon, John, 579.
Pynchon, William, 53.

Q.

Quaboag, 576.
Quakers, 511, 589. Persecutions of the, 186, 192, 286, 287, 288, 289, 291, 507, 508, 509. Executed in Boston, 287, 507.
Quick, William, 55, 323, 324.
Quillipiake (New Haven), 208, 209, 217.

R.

Rainsborough, Col., 304.
Rawson, Edward, 139, 476, 598, 599.
Reade, Edmund, 113, *n.*, 118, *n.* His will, 134, 135.
Reade, Thomas, 129, 135, 202, 203, 204, 282, 502. Letters to John Winthrop, jun., 113, 114. To Fitz John Winthrop, 115, 116, 117.
Rebellion in Kent, 1648, 303.
Res, Don Martin de, Marquis de Cassarres, 429.
Rhode Island, colony of, 294, 418.
Richards, James: letters from John Hull to, 533, 534.
Richards, John, 241, 343, 345, 512, 515, 573, 578, 581. Warrant to, 536.
Richardson, Amos, 426.
Rigby, Alexander, 88–96, *n.*, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 353, 358, 359, 363, 366, 367, 371, 372, 374, 376.
Riot in London, 1648, 141.
Roach, John, 88–96, *n.*
Robin, Pequot Indian, 452 (Cassasenaman), 415, 416.
Robartes, John, Lord, 320. Notice of, *ib.*, *n.*
Robinson, Francis, 365, 371.
Robinson, John, 88–96, *n.*, 361.
Robinson, William, execution of, 287, 507.
Rochelle, siege of, 1627–28, 7.
Rogerenes, 584, *n.*
Rogers, Mrs. Elizabeth, New London, 584.
Rogers, Rev. Ezekiel: letters to John Winthrop, 205, 206, 209, 211, 213, 214, 215. Notice of, 205, *n.*
Rogers, Rev. John, of Dedham, death of, 8.
Rogers, John, of New London, 584, 585.
Rogers, Rev. Nathaniel, 8, 276.
Rogers, ———, 232, 233.
Rogers, Thomas, 351.
Rome, dissensions in, 1646, 430.
Rosseter, Bryan, 400, 526, 527, 528, 530, 546, 547, 548, 564, 565. Notice of, 527, *n.*
Rosseter, John, 527, *n.*
Rowley, settlement of, 28, 205, 206, 210. Grant to, 215.
Roxbury, church in, 3. Indian school in, 431.
Royall, William, 365, 373.
Rutherford, Henry, 501, 515.

S.

Saco, 354, 356. Settlement of, 340, *n.* Sickness at, 357.
Sacowauein, 67.
St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London, 390.
St. Domingo, expedition to, 1655, 420, 476.
Salem, election of military officers, in 1637, 175.
Salisbury, settlement of, 196.
Saltonstall, Mrs. Merial, 282.
Saltonstall, Richard, 282. Appointed with Herbert Pelham, colonial agent in England, 138. Petition (with Herbert Pelham) to the General Court, 138. Letters to John Winthrop, 254, 255 To John Winthrop, jun., 251, 252. To the Governor, Deputy, and Assistants of Massachusetts, 253. Notice of, 251, *n.*
Saltonstall, Sir Richard, 252.
Sashious, Niantic sachem, 57.
Sassacus, 67, 68, 324, 325.
Savoy, Rev. William Hooke at the, 590.
Saybrook, attack of Indians on, 1636, 56. Hostilities at, 321, 322.
Scotland, 299, 300, 429, 432. Threatened invasion of England by, 437, *n.* Union with England, 457.
Scott, Capt. John, 188, 190, 315, 343, 344, 345, 349, 522, 525, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 596. Notices of, 315, *n.*, 596, *n.*
Searle, Daniel, Governor of Barbadoes, 65, *n.*, 293.
Sedgwick, Robert, 130.
Setaucket (Brookhaven), L.I., 184, 185, 190.
Shawsheen (Billerica), 325, 446.
Sheffield, Mrs. Deliverance, 157, 200, 201.
Shepard, Rev. Thomas, 29. Letters to John Winthrop, 257, 265, 266, 269, 270.
Shipwreck, on Long Island, 1636, 68. In 1668, 425. On Martha's Vineyard, 1675, 42.
Shurt, Abraham, 343.
Sickness in Massachusetts, in 1652, 459. In London, 1659, 592.
Simson, Rev. Mr., 16.
Skelton, Rev. Samuel, 202.
Skillinger, Jacob, 544.
Small-pox in London, 1659, 592.
Smith, Ann, 98.
Smith, John, 88–96, *n.*, 98. Deposition relating to Robert Nash, 368.
Smith, Richard, 291, 604.
Smithtown, L.I., 482, *n.*
Smyth, Capt., 445.
Snelling, William, 4.
Sowquasson, 411, 413.
Society for propagation of the gospel to the Indians in New England, &c., 38.
Spain, war with England, 152, 155. With Holland, 219, 298, 429.
Spofford, William, 168.
Stansby, John, 9, 10.
St. see "Saint."
Stansby, Rev. R.: letters to John Winthrop, 6, 7, 8, 12. To John Wilson, 10. Notice of, 6, *n.*

Starbuck, Edward, 379.
Staten Island, 315, 317.
Staunton, Thomas, 61, 414, 452.
Stevenson, Marmaduke, executed, 287, 507.
Stone, John, killed by the Pequots, 68.
Stone, Rev. Samuel, 488, 523, 551, 595.
Stoughton, Israel, 322.
Stratford, Conn., settlement of Rev. Zechariah Walker in, 566.
Stratton, Mrs., 202.
Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth), 109.
"Stray sow" case, 370.
Street, Rev. Nicholas, 515. Ordination of, 507. Notice of, *ib. n.*
Strongliquors, a Mohegan Indian, 545.
Stubbs, John, 292.
Sucquaush, 578.
"Susan & Ellen," ship, 223, 227.
Sybada, Kempo, 64. Notice of, *ib. n.*
Symonds, Harlakenden, 128, 133.
Symonds, Samuel: letters to John Winthrop, jun., 118, 121, 122, 123, 126, 127, 128, 129, 131, 132, 134, 135, 136. Grant of land to, in the Pequot country, 127.
Synod at Boston, 1657, 83, *n.*, 85.

T.

Tabor, Philip, notice of, 33, *n.*
Talmage, Mrs. Sarah, 517.
Talmage, Robert, 519.
Temple, Sir Thomas, 509. Notice of, *ib. n.*
Thomas, John, 507, 509, 511.
Thompson, Major, 551, 552.
Thompson, Maurice, 13.
Tillie, John, 54.
Tindall, Mr., 221, 226, 227, 388, 389.
Tinker, John, 21. Letters to John Winthrop, 218, 220, 223, 225, 229. To John Winthrop, jun., 229, 231, 232, 235, 238, 239, 240, 242, 243, 245, 246, 248, 249, 250. Notices of, 21, *n.*, 218, *n.* Voyage to England, 1639, 218. Chosen deputy, 247.
Toleration, ordinance for, 1647, 437.
Tower of London, inscription by William Prynne, on the walls of his chamber in the, 251.
Treat, Major Robert, 570.
Trelawney, John, 364.
Tucker, Richard, 346, 349, 350, 351, 357, 358, 362, 363, *n.*, 364, 365, 367, 369, 373.
Turks, defeat of the, 1664, 310.
Tyrone, Earl of, 620.

U.

Uncas, Pequot sachem, 67, 68, 122, 414, 468, 546, 556, 557, 579.
Underhill, John, 112, 322, 323, 336, 337, 338, 412. Expedition to Saybrook 1637, 321. Letters to John Winthrop, 170, 179, 180, 181. To John Winthrop, jun., 182, 183, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189. To the Governor and Deputy Governor of Mass., 178. Petition to the Governor and Assistants, 175. To the General Court, 177. Grant of land to, *ib.*
Upsall, Nicholas, 287.

V.

Vane, Sir Henry, 257, 268, 281, 515, 592. Letter to, from Sir Ferdinando Gorges, 329.
Vines, Richard, 88–96, *n.*, 329, 330, 355, 356, 357, 363, 364, 365, 366, 371. Letters to John Winthrop, 337, 338, 340, 342, 343, 346, 349.

W.

Waldegrave, Sir George, 632.
Walden, Richard, 379.
Walker, Rev. Zechariah, 561, 566, 567, 572. Notice of, 566, *n.*
Wallenstein, Albert, reported death of, 14.
Wannerton, Thomas, 178.
Ward, Rev. John, 274, 334. Notice of, *ib., n.*,
Ward, Rev. Nathaniel, 10, 125, 274. Letters to John Winthrop, 23, 26, 28, 29. To John Winthrop, jun., 24. Notice of, 23, *n.*
Waring, Richard, 240, 243.
Warren, Mr., 632.
Warwick, Robert, Earl of, 138, 437. "Warwick Patent," 1629. 159.
Waterhouse, Jacob, 456.
Watertown, Conn., 66.
Watts, Henry, 357. Deposition relating to Robert Nash, 367.
Way, Richard, 338, *n.*
Webber, Thomas, 428, 430, 431.
Weld, Rev. Thomas, letter to, from John Wilson, 3. Reply, 4.
Welles, Thomas, death of, 235.
Wenborne, William, 536.
Wentworth, Thomas, Earl of Strafford, 334.
Wequashcook, 414, 415, 416.
West-India company of Holland, 182.
Wethersfield, Conn., 66.
"Whale," ship. 95, 88–96, *n.*
Wheelwright, Rev. John, 104, 107.
Whetham, Nathaniel, 96, *n.*
Whitefield, Rev. Henry, 394, *n.*, 399, 522.
Whitehall, 503.
Whitmore, William H., 385, *n.*
Wiggin, Thomas, 380.
Wildboare, Mr., 110, 111.
"William and Francis" ship, 88, *n.*, 96.
"William and George" ship, 224.
Williams, Mr., 179.
Williams, Roger, 291, *n.*
Wills, English laws relating to, 132.
Wilson, Rev. John, 12, 257, 271. Letter to John Winthrop. 1. To Thomas Weld and John Eliot, 3. To John Winthrop, jun., 4. Notice of, 1, *n.* Letter to, from R. Stansby, 10.
Windsor, Conn., 66, 67.
Winslow, Edward, 138, 140, 144, 196, 420. 476, *n.* Colonial agent in England, 138.
Winter, John, 334, 342, 363, *n.* Notice of, 334, *n.*
Winthrop, Adam, 256. Death of, 459.
Winthrop, Deane, 388, 459.
Winthrop, Mrs. Elizabeth, 505. Letter to, from Jonathan Brewster, 75. From John Mason, 421. From John Davenport, 520. Death of, 136.

Winthrop, Elizabeth, married to Rev. Antipas Newman, 500.
Winthrop, Fitz John, 203, 400, 549. Letters to, from Thomas Reade, 115, 116, 117.
Winthrop, John, Governor of Massachusetts, 186. Letters to, from John Wilson, 1. From R. Stansby, 6, 7, 8, 12. From Francis Kirby, 18, 19, 20, 21. From Nathaniel Ward, 23, 26, 28, 29. From Thomas Mayhew, 30, 32. From Stephen Bachiler, 88, 105, 108. From Thomas Dudley, 110, 111, 112. From Herbert Pelham, 139, 140, 144. From John Blackleach, 146 From John Endecott, 156, 157, 158. From Sir Matthew Boynton, 167, 168. From John Underhill, 170, 179, 180, 181. From William Hooke and Thomas Bradbury, 195. From William Hooke, 196, 197. From Hugh Peter, 199, 200, 201, 202. From Ezekiel Rogers, 205, 206, 209, 211, 213, 214. From John Tinker, 218, 220, 223, 225, 229. From Richard Saltonstall, 254, 255. From Thomas Shepard, 257, 265, 266, 269, 270. From Giles Firmin, 273, 275, 276. From William Coddington, 278. From Nehemiah Bourne and Thomas Hawkins, 297. From Nehemiah Bourne, 300, 302. From Samuel Maverick, 307, 308. From Daniel Patrick, 321, 325, 326. From Sir Ferdinando Gorges, 329, 331. From Thomas Gorges, 333, 335. From Richard Vines, 337, 338, 340, 342, 343, 346. From Thomas Jenner, 355, 356, 359. From George Cleeve, 363, 365. From Edward Godfrey, 335, 377, 378. From Edward Cooke, 381, 383, 384. From Edward Parks, 388. From Lawrence Wright, 390, 391, 393. From John Higginson, 394. From William Paine, 401. From John Mason, 411. From Thomas Peters, 428, 431. From Thomas Harrison, 434, 435, 438. From James Parker, 441, 444. From John Norton, 448. From Brampton Gurdon, 632. Reply to Ezekiel Rogers, 214. His History of New England, 269. Answer to George Cleeves and others, 374. Death of, 280, 281.
Winthrop, John, jun., Governor of Connecticut, 378, 421, 481. Letter to, from John Wilson, 4. From Francis Kirby, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. From Nathaniel Ward, 24. From Thomas Mayhew, 31, 33, 34, 36, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42. From William Goodwin, 44, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50. From Lion Gardiner, 52, 56, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64. From Jonathan Brewster, 66, 67, 69, 71, 72, 77, 81, 84. From Stephen Bachiler, 98. From Thomas Reade, 113, 114. From Samuel Symonds, 118, 121, 122, 123, 126, 127, 128, 129, 131, 132, 134, 135, 136. From John Blackleach, 149, 150, 151. From Sir Matthew Boynton, 162, 164, 166, 168. From John Underhill, 182, 183, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189. From Hugh Peter, 203. From John Tinker, 229, 231, 232, 235, 238, 239, 240, 242, 243, 245, 246, 248, 249, 250. From Richard Saltonstall, 251, 252. From William Coddington, 279, 280, 284, 286, 287, 291, 292, 293. From Nehemiah Bourne, 304, 305. From Samuel Maverick, 309, 311, 312, 313, 315, 319. From Daniel Patrick, 321, 325, 326. From Sir Ferdinando Gorges, 329, 331. From Edward Godfrey, 380. From Edward Parks, 385, 387. From John Higginson, 399, 400. From William Paine, 402, 403, 404, 405, 407, 408, 409, 410. From John Mason, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 424, 425, 426. From Thomas Peters, 432. From James Parker and Daniel Gookin, 446. From John Norton, 450. From John Haynes, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 460, 461, 462, 465. From Theophilus Eaton, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 475, 476. From Thomas James, 482, 484. From John Davenport, 487, 489, 490, 492, 495, 497, 498, 501, 502, 504, 507, 511, 514, 515, 517, 519, 521, 525, 526, 529, 531. From John Hull, 536. From William Leete, 538, 539, 540, 541, 543, 544, 546, 548, 550, 552, 553, 557, 559, 563, 564, 565, 568, 569, 570, 572, 574, 575, 577, 578, 580, 582, 584. From William Hooke, 587, 590, 594. From Richard Bellingham, 596, 597, 598, 599. From Samuel Gorton, 601, 602, 604, 627. Residence at Saybrook, 52, *n.* At New Haven, 72, 470, 471, 474. Removal to Hartford, 84, *n.* Voyage to England, 1661, 520, 521, 548. Reply to a letter from William Leete, 561.
Winthrop, Mrs. Margaret, 158. Letter to, from Stephen Bachiler, 99. Death of, 141.
Winthrop, Samuel, 288, 289, 292, 388, 568.
Winthrop, Col. Stephen, 115, 256, 281, 282, 385, 387, 431, 587. Death of, 499.
Winthrop, Wait Still, 131, 466, 467, 549. Chosen commissioner for Connecticut, 581.
Wolstoncraft, Mr., 316, 317.
Wood, John, 19.
Woodbridge, Mr., 215.
Woodhull, Richard, 186.
Woodmansey, John, 535.
Wright, Dr. Lawrence, 226, 495. Letters to John Winthrop, 390, 391, 393. Notice of, 390, *n.*
Wright, Dr. Nathaniel, 390, *n.*
Wutsnequam, a Mohegan Indian, 545.
Wyantanuck, Indians at, 575, 576.

Y.

Yale, David, 501, 506, 512, 518.
York, James, Duke of, 310, 311, 315, 554.
Young, Capt. Thomas, 339.

Boston: Printed by John Wilson & Son.